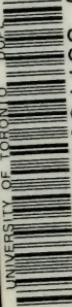


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY



3 1761 00361166 2







7

# The Bruce;

or,

The Book of the most excellent and noble prince  
Robert de Broyss, King of Scots.

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 5, UNTER DEN LINDEN.  
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.  
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

492  
30

# The Bruce;

or,

The Book of the most excellent and noble prince,  
Robert de Broyss, King of Scots:

compiled by

Master John Barbour,

Archdeacon of Aberdeen,

A.D. 1375.

EDITED FROM MS. G. 23 IN THE LIBRARY OF ST JOHN'S COLLEGE,  
CAMBRIDGE, WRITTEN A.D. 1487; COLLATED WITH THE MS. IN THE  
ADVOCATE'S LIBRARY AT EDINBURGH, WRITTEN A.D. 1489,  
AND WITH HART'S EDITION, PRINTED A.D. 1616;

WITH A

PREFACE, NOTES, AND GLOSSARIAL INDEX,

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.

BOOKS XI—XX, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

1874, 1877.

38071  
7/10/96

PR

1119

E5

no. 29,55

## [BOOK XI.]

And quhen this cunnand thus wes maid,  
Schir philip in-to Ingland raid,

Sir Philip goes  
to England, and  
tells the king

And tald the king all haill this tale,

4 he has a whole  
year allowed for  
the rescue of  
Stirling castle.  
[Fol. 37. E.]

How he [a] tuelf moneth all hale

8

Had, as vritin [wes] in thair tale,

King Edward is  
very glad, and  
thinks the Scotch  
are very proud  
12 and foolish.

Till reskew strewilling with battale.

And quhen he herd schir philip say,

That scottis men had set añe day

To fecht, and at sic space he had

Till purvay hym, he ves rycht glad,

And said, "it wes gret succuddry

That set thañe apon sic folye;

For he thocht to be, or that day,

So purvait and in sic aray,

That thair suld na strinth him with-stand."

And quhen the lordis of Ingland

16 The English  
lords rejoice  
likewise.

Herd at this day wes set planly,

[Fol. 82. C.]

Thai Iugit It to gret foly,

And thought till haff all thair liking,

*H has the Rubric—How Sir Edward  
withoutten sturne, Vndertooke the  
battell of Bannock-burne.*

1. *cunnand*] connand.

9. *at*] that. *at—he*] he sik leisure  
H.

2. *in-to*] in-till.

10. *Till*] To EH.

3. *this*] his. *haill this*] the haill

11. *succuddry*] sukudry E; suc-  
quidry H.

H.

12. *or*] ere H.

4. [a E] had C; but see next line.

13. *na*] name.

5. *as*] asit. [wes E] was H; war C.

14. *at*] that.

6. *Till*] To EH.

15. *to gret foly*] all to great foly  
H; all for to failly E.

8. *ane*] A.

16. *till*] to. *all*] them at H.

Wise men's  
intentions some-  
times fail.

Nothing may  
resist God, who  
controls all  
things.

Giff men abaid thame in fechting.

20

Bot oft falȝeis the fulys thought ;  
And wiȝ̄ menis etling cumis nocht  
Till sic end as thai weyn alwayis.

A litill stañe oft, as men sayis,  
May ger weltir aȝ̄e mekill waȝ̄e.

Na manis mycht may stand agaȝ̄e  
The grace of god, that all thing steris ;  
He wat quhat-to all thing efferis,  
And disponis at his liking,  
Eftir his ordinans, all thyng.

24

28

The vynnyng of strevilling be schir Eduard the bruce,  
thow the battale ves set our ȝer and day betuix  
hym and schir philip the mowbra.

When Sir Edward  
has made the  
treaty, he goes  
to tell his brother  
the king.

**Q** when schir Eduard, as I ȝow say,  
Had gevyn sa outrageouȝ̄ a day  
To ȝeld or reskew strewilling,  
Richt soyne he went on-to the king,  
And tald quhat tretis he had maid,

And quhat day he thame gevyn had.  
The king said, quhen he herd the day,  
“That wes vnwisly done, perfay,  
I herd neuir quhar so lang varnyng  
Wes gevin to so mychty aȝ̄e kyng

As is the kyng of England.

32

For he has now in-till his hand  
Ingland, Irland, and Walyȝ̄ alsua,  
[And] Akatane ȝet, with all tha

36

for the king of  
England possesses  
all England,  
Ireland, Wales,  
and Aquitaine,

21. *falȝeis*] faillys.

22. *wiss—etling*] ȝeit wyssmennys  
ay E ; yet wise men H.

23. *Till*] To EH. *sic*] that H.  
*as*] that H.

25. *ane*] A.

28. *to*] till. *efferis*] afferis E ;  
affereis H.

33. *or*] or to CH ; but E omits to.  
strewilling] strewillyne E ; Striuling

H.

34. *soyne—king*] to the king he  
went him syne E ; to the King then  
went he syne H.

39. *I*] Ik.

40. *ane*] A.

42. *his*] E om.

44. [And] so in EH ; but C places  
and after ȝet. *Akatane*] Aquitayngne  
E ; Aquitayne H.

That duellis vndir his senȝory,  
And of Scotland a gret party.  
And off tresour so stuffit is he,  
That he may vaseowris haf plente.

48

And we ar qwheyn agane so fele ;  
God may richt weill our werdis deill,  
Bot we ar set in Iuperdy  
To tyne or wyn than hastily."

"We are set,"  
said he, "in great  
jeopardy."

52

Schir Eduard said, "sa god me reid,  
Thouch he and all that he may leid  
Cum, we sall fecht, all war thai ma."  
Quhen the king herd his brothir swa  
Spek to the battale so hardely,  
He prysit hym in his hert gretly,  
And said, "brothir, sen swa is gañe

Edward replies  
that the Scotch  
can fight all the  
English power.

56

At this thing thus is vndirtañe,  
Schap we vs tharfor manfully,  
And all that lufis vs tendirly  
And the fredome of this centre,  
Purvay [thaim] at that tym to be  
Bowne with all mycht that euir [thai] may ;  
Swa that gif our fayis assay  
To reskew strewillyng throu battale,  
That we of purpoȝ ger thame fail."

60

Bruce says they  
must at any rate  
try and fight  
it out.

[Fol. 82 b. C.]

64

**T**ill this all thai assentit ar,  
And bad thair men all mak thaim ȝare  
For to be boune agane that day

All assent to this,  
and make all  
preparations.

45, 46. E transposes these lines.

45. *That*] EH om.46. *a gret*] ȝeit a E ; a great H.48. *vaseowris*] wageouris E ; wageours H.49. *qwheyn*] quhoyne E ; few H.58. *prysit*] praised H. *gretly*] gretumly.60. *At*] That EH.61. *manfullly*] manley E ; manly H

64. [thaim E] them H ; vs C.

65. *all*] all the. *with—euir*] on their best wise, that H. [thai E] they H ; we C.66. *that gif*] giff that E ; gif H. *assay*] will assay H.69. *Rubric in H*—The sembling of the English Oist, That with great power came and boast.*Till*] To. *all thai*] thai all. H has—On this wise all assentit were.

They provide  
weapons and  
armour.

The English too  
made greater  
preparations  
than ever they  
had made before.

The English king  
had with him  
many men from  
France,

the Earl of  
Hainault, and  
men of Gascony,  
Brittany, and  
others.

He gathered the  
whole chivalry  
of England;

On the best wiß that euir thai may.  
Than all that worthy war to ficht,  
Of scotland, set all haill thair mycht  
Till purvay thame agane that day ;  
Wapnys and armowris purvayit thai,  
And all that efferis for fichting.

And of yngland the mychty kyng  
Purvait hym on so gret aray,  
That certis neuir I herd ȝeit say  
That ynglis men mair [aparaile]  
Maid than thai did than for battale.  
And quhen the tym wes cummyn ner,  
He assemblit all his power ;  
And but his awne cheuelry,  
That wes so gret It wes ferly,

He had of mony a fer cuntry  
With hym gud men of gret bounte.  
Of franȝ aȝe worthy cheuelry  
He had in-till his Cumpany ;  
The Erll of hennaut als wes thar,  
And wyth him men that worthy var  
Of gascon and of almanȝe ;  
Of duche als and of bretanȝe  
He had wicht men and weill farrand  
Armyt clenly at fut and hand.

\*Of yngland hale the cheuelry  
\*He had thair gaderit so clenly,

72

76

80

84

88

92

96

72—75. H omits these lines.

75. Till] To.

77. efferis for] affeiris to E; affeered to H.

79. on] in EH.

80. neuir—ȝeit] hard I neuir E; I heard neuer H.

81. [aparaile E] apparell H; re-parale C.

82. than for] for E; for that H.

83. And] For EH.

87. a fer] a farre H; ser E.

89. aȝe] and H; E om.

91. hennaut] henaud E; Henault H.

93. gaseon] gascoyne. almanȝe] Almany.

94. duche—and] off the worthyast. bretanȝe] bretangny.

96. at] bath E; baith H. fut] head H.

97\*, 98\*. Apparently omitted accidentally in P; found in EJH. hale] to E; als H.

That he left nane mycht vapnys velde,	97
Or worthy war to ficht in felde.	
Of waliſ als wytl̄ hym had he,	
And of yrlande añe gret menȝe ;	100
Of pouty, aquytañe, and bayoñ	
He had full mony of gret renouñ.	
*And of Scotland he had ȝeit then	103*
*A gret menȝe of worthy men.	
*Quhen all thir sammyn assemblit war,	
*He had of fechtaris with hym thar	
Añe hundred thousand men and ma.	
And fourty thousand war of tha	
Armyt on hors, bath hede ande hand ;	
And ȝeit of thai war thre thousand,	
Wyth helit horþ in-till playn male,	
Till mak the front of the battale.	108
And fifty thousand of archerys	
He had, forouten the hoblerys ;	
With men on fut and small rangale,	
That ȝemyt harnaþ and vittale.	
He had so fele It wes ferly.	
Of cartis als that ȝeid thaȝe by	
So feill, that, but all thai that bar	
Harnaþ, and als that chargit war	
Of palȝeony and veschall vith-all,	116

97. *he—nane*] nane left that E ; nane were left H.

98. *worthy*] mychty.

99. *Of*] All.

100. *ane*] A.

101. *pouty*] poittyne E ; Poytow H.

102. *full*] EH om.

103\*—106\*. Not in E ; but found in H. And] H om. all—sammyn] altogidder H.

104. *tha*] so in EH ; written thai in C.

106. *ȝeit—thai*] off thai ȝeit.

107. *helit*] barded H. in-till—

male] in plate and mailȝe E ; in plait and mailyie H.

108. *Till*] To EH.

110. *the*] EH om. hoblerys] hoberleris E ; hobillers H.

111. *With—on*] And men of. and —rangale] left blank in E.

112. *ȝemyt*] keepeed H.

114. *that*] so in H ; thar E. thame] him H.

115. Sa feill, that by them that chargde were H (one line for 115, 116 ; H om. 119.)

117. *Of*] With. H has—With Pauilliouns, and that vessell bare.

also a large host from Wales,  
[Fol. 37 b. E.] Ireland, Poiton,  
Aquitaine, and Bayonne.

When all were assembled, there were 100,000 ;

[Fol. 83. C.]

104 besides 40,000 horsemen well armed, amongst whom were 3000 with horses covered with armour ;

108

also 50,000 archers,

and men of foot and army-followers.

furniture, wine,  
wax, food, &c.

All these took up  
a great deal of  
room.

There might be  
seen worthy men,  
and armed

knights, and  
sturdy steeds,

and helmets,  
and shields, and  
spears, enough  
to conquer the  
world.

They come to  
Berwick.

And apparall of chalmyr and hall,  
And vyne and vax, schot and vittale,  
Four scor wes chargit vith fewale.

Thai war so fele quhar at thai raid,  
And thar battalis war ek so braid,  
And so gret rowme held thar charre,  
That men that mekill host mycht se  
Our-tak the landis so largely.

Men mycht se than, that had beyn by,

Mony añe vorthy mañ and vycht,

And mony añe gayly armyt knycht,  
And mony añe sturdy sterand steid  
Arayit in-till so ryche weid,

And mony helmys and hawbyrschownys,

\*Scheldis and speris with pennownys,

And so mony a cumly knycht,

At semyt weill that in-to ficht

Thai suld vencus the warld all hale.

Quhy suld I mak to lang my tale?

Till berwik ar thai cummyn Ilkañe,

And sum thar-in thar Innys has tañe,

And sum lugit without the townys

120

124

128

132

136

118. *chalmyr*] chambyr E ; cham-  
ber H.

119. H omits.

120. *Four*] viii E ; Foure H. *wes*]  
were H ; E om. *fewale*] Fewall H ;  
pulaile E.

121. *at*] that E.

122. *ek*] EH om.

123. *rowme*] rout H. *thar charre*]  
thair char E ; they there H (*which  
destroys the rime*).

124. C has—That men that mycht  
that mekill host se; H has—That  
men that meekele Oast might see there;  
E as in the text, but with Than for  
That.

After l. 124 E wrongly inserts—  
Nerby quha sa wald be, which is l.

126 in disguise; P. omits it.

125. *Ourtak*] Ouertooke H. *so*]

EH om. Cf. I. 146.

127. *ane*] A.

128. *gayly—knycht*] armur gayly  
dycht EH.

130. *Arayit*] Arrayed ay H. *so*]  
EH om.

131. *And*] EH om. *hawbyrs-  
chownys*] haberownys E ; Haberiones  
H.

132\*. P. omits, probably by acci-  
dent. *with*] and.

132. *cumly*] cumbly.

133. *At—weill*] That it semyt.

134. *wencuss*] wencuss E ; vanquish  
H.

135. *mak to lang*] so in E ; make  
too lang H ; but C has—to long  
mak.

136. *Till*] To EH. *thai*] E om.

137. *thar—has*] has Innys EH.

In tentis and in palȝeownys.

**A**nd quhen the kyng his host has seyñē  
So gret, so gud men, and so cleyñē,  
He wes richt Ioyfull in his thought,  
And weill presumyt thar wes noct  
In varld a kyng mycht him vithstand ;  
Hym thought all wonnyn till his hand.  
And largly emang his men

140 The king of Eng-  
land beholds  
his army and  
rejoices.

144

[Fol. 83 b. C.]

The landis of scotland delt he then.  
Of othir mennis landis large wes he ;  
And thai that war of his menȝe  
Mannausit the scottis men halely  
With gret vordis ; bot, nocth-for-thi,  
Or thai cum all to thair entent,  
Howis in haill clath sall be rent !

148 He distributes  
the lands of  
Scotland among  
his men.

152

The kyng, throu consall of his meñ,  
His folk he delt in battalis ten.  
In ilkañe war weill ten thousand,  
That thought thai stalwardly suld stand  
In the battale and stoutly ficht,  
And leif nocth for thair fayis mycht.

He set ledaris till Ilk battale,  
Knawyn war of gud gouernale.  
And till renownyt Ellis twa,  
Of gloucester and [herfurd] var thai,  
He gaf the vanguard in ledyng,

156 He divides the  
army into ten  
companies, each  
10,000 strong.

160 Over each division  
he appoints a  
leader.

164 The Earls of  
Gloucester and  
Hereford lead  
the van.

140. *H has the Rubric*—How Englishmen manassed at will The Scots, and delt their lands till.

battells the Englishmen Were delt, and taught to Chiftanes then.

141. *so gud*] and sa gud E ; sa good H. and *so*] and sa H ; E om. so.

155. *he*] EH om. *in*] into H.

143. *presumyt*] supposyt that EH.

157. *thought*] lete.

146. *emang*] amang.

158. In battell, and sould hold their right H. *stoutly*] stythly.

147. *landis*] land.

159. *leif*] let H.

148. *landis*] lands H; thing E.

161. *Knawyn*] That knawin E ; That knawen H.

large] full large C ; but EH om. full.

163. [herfurd E] Herfurde H ; hef-furd C.

150. *halely*] hely E ; haillye H.

164. *vanguard*] miswritten vandgard

153. *Howis*] Holles H.

C ; waward E ; Vangard H.

154. *H has the Rubric*—In ten

- With mony men at thar bydding,  
Ordanit in-till full gret aray.  
Thai war so cheuelrūs, that thai  
Trowit, gif thai com to the ficht,      168  
Thair suld no strynth with-stand thar mycht.  
When the king  
had thus divided  
his army, he  
appointed his  
own division.      172
- Sir Giles d'Argentine and Sir Aymer de Valence attend him.      176
- He departs from Berwick.      180
- His host covers the country.      184
- The whole field gleams with armour.      188
- [Fol. 84. C.] That all the felde ves in añe leyñe
166. *gret*] gud.      167. *the*] E om.; H retains.      168. *in-to*] in-till.      169. *gyls de argente*] Geiles the Argentine H.
170. *ane*] A. *renȝe*] reyngȝe.      171. *of*] of the C; but EH om. the.      172. *vallanch*] walenee E; Wallance H.
173. *gret*] EH om.      174. *Atour*] Owt our E; Ouer all H.      175. *Armys*] armouris E; armours H.      176. *new*] bright H; E om.
177. *blenknyt*] blenked H; blomyt E.      178. *felde*] land EH.      179. *ves*] wes F seemed H.      180. *ane leyñe*] A leme.
- this kyn E; this H.      181. *I*] Ik.      182. *stering*] renouning H.      183. *Arly—raiss*] He raiss arly.      184. *ane*] A E; the H.      185. *helit*] couered H.      186. *And*] As. *so*] E om.      187. *feldis*] hilles H.      188. *Armys*] armouris E; armours H.      189. *new*] bright H; E om.
190. *blenknyt*] blenked H; blomyt E.      191. *felde*] land EH.      192. *ves*] wes F seemed H.      193. *ane leyñe*] A leme.

Vith baneris richt freschly flawmand,	192	
And pensalis to the vynd vaffand.		
So fele thai var of ser qwyntif,		[Fol. 38. E.]
That it war gret slight to deuif.		
For suld I tell all thar effer,	196	I could not, though I tried, describe them fully.
Thair countynans and thar maner,		
Thouch I couth, I suld cummerryt be.		
The king, with all that gret menȝhe,		
Till Edinburgh he raid on rycht.	200	They come to Edinburgh.
Thai war all out to [fele] to ficht		
With few folk of aȝe sympill land ;		
[Bot] quhar god helpis, quhat may withstand ?		
<b>T</b> HE kyng robert, quhen he herd say	204	King Robert summons his men in haste.
That ynglisȝ men, in sic aray		
And in-to sa gret quantite,		
Com in his land, in hy gert he		
His men be summond generaly ;	208	
And thai com all full villfully		
To the torwod, quhar at the kyng		They come to the Torwood.
Had ordanit to mak thar meting.		
Schir Eduard the bruce, that wes vorthy,	212	Sir Edward comes with a large company.
Com with a full gret Cumpany		
Of gud men armyt weill and dicht,		
Hardy and forsy for the ficht.		
Valtir, steward of scotland, syne,	216	Also Walter, steward of Scotland;
That than wes bot aȝe berdlaȝ hyne,		

192. *Vith*] EH *om. freschly]*  
freshly H ; fairly E. *flawmand*] so  
E ; flambisighand H.

193. *vaffand*] wawand.

194. *qwyntif*] quentiss E ; Coun-  
tryes H.

196. *For*] And EH. *effer*] affer.

197. *countynans*] contenance E ;  
countryrans (*sic*) C.

198. *cummerryt*] combryt.

200. *on*] him. *he-on*] are they  
commen H.

201. [fele E] feill H ; fale C.

202. *ane*] A.

203. [Bot EH] ; For C.

204. *Rubric in* H—How in this  
time assembled then, To King Robert  
hes certaine men.

210. *at*] that.

212. *that wes*] the EH.

214. *and dicht*] and dight H ; at  
rycht E.

215. *the*] to EH.

	Com with a rout of nobill men, That all be contynans mycht ken.	
and the good lord Douglas,	And the gud lord dowglas alswa Brocht with him men, I vndir-ta, That weill war oysit in fichting ; Thai sall the leſſ haf abasyng, Giff men betyd in thrang to be ; And avantage sall tytar se For till stonay thar fayis mycht, Than men that oysis nocth to ficht.	220 224
with men long inured to hard fighting.	The Erll of murreff, with his men Arrayit weill, com alsua then In-to gud cowyne for to ficht, In gret will to maynteyme thar rycht ; Vith othir mony gud barouñe, And knychtis of full gret renouñe, Com with thair men full stalwardly. Quhen thai assemblit worthely,	228 232
Also the Earl of Murray,	Of fechtand men I trow thai ware Thretty thousand, and sum deill mare, Foroutyn cariage ande pouerale, That ȝemyt harnaſſ and wittale.	236
and many other barons.	Our all the host than ȝeid the kyng, And beheld [to] thair contynyng, And saw thame of full fair effer ;	240
[Fol. 84 b. C.] They were 30,000 fighting men, besides keepers of the baggage.		
The king reviews them.		

219. *all—ken*] men mycht be contynence ken E; men be countenance might them ken H. *contynans*] written contynans C.

220. *And*] E om. *lord*] lord of.

221. *I*] Ik.

222. *oysit*] wsit E; vsde H.

225. *And avantage*] And thar avantage C; Awantage thai E; And ane auantage H. *tytar*] sooner H.

226. *till*] to EH, *stonay* E] astoney H; miswritten stonayit C.

227. *oysis*] wsis E; vses H.

228. *murreff*] Murray H.

231. *In gret will*] And gret will E;

And wilfull H. *to*] for to. *maynteyme*] manteym E; maintaine H. *rycht*] mycht.

232. Owtakyn thair mony barownys E; Outtaken mony other Baroun H.

233. *of full*] that of. *renoune*] renowne is.

235. *thai*] thai war. *worthely*] halely E; were haily H.

238. *pouerale*] purall H; pettaill E.

241. *[to EH]* be C. *contynyng*] contenyng E; conteeing H; contynyng C.

242. *effer*] affer.

- Of hardy contynans thai wer,  
Be liklynnes the mast [cowart] 244  
Semyt till do richt weill his part.  
The kyng has seyn all thair hawyng,  
That knew hym weill in-to sic thing,  
And saw thame all comonly  
Of sekry contynans and hardy,  
Forouten effray or abaysyng.  
In his hert had he gret liking,  
And thought that men of sa gret will,  
Gif thai vald set thair mycht thair-till,  
Suld be full hard till vyn, perfay.  
Ay as he met tha e in the way,  
He welcummyt tha e with gladsum fair, 256  
Spekand gud vordis heir and thair.  
And thai, that thar lord so mekly  
[Saw welcum] thame and so myldly,  
Ioyfull thai war, and thought at thai  
Micht weill put thame in-till assay  
Of hard fechting in stalwart stour,  
For till maynteym weill his honour.

**T**HE worthy kyng, quhen he has seyn  
His host assemblit all bedeyn,  
And saw thame wilfull to fulfill  
His liking, with gud hert and will ;

264 When he thus  
sees them all  
assembled,

243. *contynans*] miswritten contyr-  
nans C ; so also in l. 249.

258. *mekly*] blythly H.  
259. [Saw welcum E] So welcum-  
myt C ; Sa welcome H. *myldly*]  
hamly E , hamely H.

244. [cowart EH] coward C.

260. *at*] that.  
261. *Micht—intill*] Aucht weill to  
put thaim till E ; Aught well to put  
them in H.

245. *till—weill*] full weill to do E ;  
to doe full well H.

262. *in*] or E ; and H.  
263. *till*] to EH. *weill*] E om.

248. *comonly*] communaly E ;  
commonly H.

264. H has the Rubric—The part-  
ing of the Scots men, That in foure  
battells delt were then.

249. *sekry*] sic. *and*] and sa.

250. *Forouten*] For owt E ; With-  
out H.

253. *mycht*] will.

254. *till*] to EH.

255. *Ay*] And.

244

He marks their  
stout appearance,

248

252 and thinks his  
men will be hard  
to conquer.

256

He speaks good  
words to them.

260 They are of good  
courage.

he rejoices, and  
says,

" Ye see how the  
English come to  
rescue yon castle.

We have here  
30,000 men ; let  
us divide them  
into four  
companies,

[Fol. 85. C.]  
and go towards  
the New Park.

I think we shall  
do well to fight  
on foot.

[Fol. 38 b. E.]  
If we fight on  
horseback, they  
will beat us.

And to maynteym weill thair franchis, 268

He wes reiosit on mony wiſ;

And callit all his consell preue,

And said thame, " lordingis, now ȝe se

That ynglis̄ men with mekill mycht 272

Haf all disponit thame for the ficht,

For thai ȝoñ castell wald reskew.

Tharfor is gud we ordane now

How we may let thame of purpoſ,

And swa to thame the wayis cloſ,

That thai paſ nocht but gret lettyn.

We haf heir with vs at byddyng

Weill thretty thousand men and ma.

Mak we four battalis of all thai,

And ordane vs on sic maner,

That, quhen our fayis cummys neir,

We till the new park hald our vay ;

For thair behufis thaim [pas, perfay,]

Bot gif that thai beneth vs ga,

And our the marraſ pas ; and swa

We sall be at avantage thair.

For me think that richt speidfull war

To gang on fut to this fechting,

Armyt bot in-to licht armyng.

For schupe we vs on hors to ficht,

Syn that our fais ar mar of mycht,

And bettir horsit than ar we,

We suld in-to gret perell be.

And gif we ficht on fut, perfay,

276

280

284

288

292

296

268. *franchiss*] franchises H ; E om.

269. *reiosit*] ioyfull H. *on*] so CH ;

E om.

271. *lordingis*] lordis E ; Lords H.

*now*] now may H.

273. *for the*] to H.

276. *of*] of thair.

281. *all*] E om.

284. *till*] to EH.

285. [ *pas perfay*] passe perfay H ;

neidwais gay C ; nede away E.

286. *beneth*] will be-newth.

287. *pas and*] passe, and H ; pass-

and E.

289. *For*] And EH.

291. *in-to licht*] in light H ; in litill

E.

293. *Syn that*] Sen.

At avantage we sall be ay ; For in the park emang the treis The hors men alwais cummerit beis, And the sykis alswa thair douñe Sall put thame to confusiouñe."	300	But amongst the trees their horses will be a hindrance."
All thai consentit to that saw, And than, in-till aне litill throw, Thair four battalis ordanit thai ; And to the Erll thomas, perfay, He gaf the vaward in leding ; For in his nobill gouernyng And in his hye cheuelry	304	All agree to this, and they form the army in four divisions.
Thai had assouerans, trast trewly ! And, for to maynteym his baner, Lordis that of gret vorschip wer War assignit with thair menȝe, In-till his battale for till be. The tothir battale wes gevin to lede Till hym that douchty wes of dede, And prisis of gret cheuelry,	308	Thomas Randolph leads the van,
That wes schir eduard the worthy ; I trow he sall manteyme him swa, That [how] sa euir the gammyn ga, His fayis to plenȝe sall mater haf. And syne the thrid battale he gaf To valtir stewart for to leid, And till dowglaȝ douchty of deid. Thai war cosyngis in neir degré,	312	with many worthy lords under him.
Tharfor till hym betaucht wes he, For he wes ȝoung ; and, nocht-for-thi,	316	The second division was led by Sir Edward Bruce.
320	324	The third by Walter Stewart and lord Douglas,
328. <i>till</i> ] to EH. 329. <i>gret</i> ] hey. 330. <i>him</i> ] so CH; it E. 331. <i>[hom EH]</i> C om. 332. <i>he</i> ] thai. 333. <i>Till</i> . 334. <i>till</i> ] to EH. 335. <i>and</i> ] but.	Walter being under Douglas' protection.	

299. *cummerit beis*] E om.300. *sykis*] Syke H. *thair*] there

H; that ar thar E.

302. *to*] till.303. *ane*] A. 305. *to*] till.306. *He*] Thai.

309. Thai assoweryt rycht souerainly E; They had affiance souerainely H.

313. *till*] to EH.316. *gret*] hey.318. *him*] so CH; it E.319. *[hom EH]* C om.321. *he*] thai.322. *To*] Till.323. *till*] to EH.326. *and*] but.

[Fol. 85 b. C.]	I trow he shall sa manfully Do his dewour, and virk so weill, That hym shall neyd no mair ȝeymseill. The ferd battale the nobill kyng Tuk till hym-self in gouernyng, And had in-till his Cumpany	328
The fourth division the king commands in person,	332	
having the men of Carrick, Argyle, Cantire, and the Isles.		
	The men of carryk all halely, And of argile and of kentyre, And of the ylis, quhar-off wes syre Angus of ylis and but, all tha. He of the playne-land had alsua Of Armyt men aȝe mekill rout ; His battale stalward wes and stout.	336
He commands the rearguard, with the vanguard in front of him,	340	
the other divisions being on either side.		
	He said, the rerward he vald ma, And evyn forrowth hym suld ga The vaward, and on athir hand The tothir battalis suld be gangand Behynd, on syde a litell space ; And the kyng, that behynd thaim was, [Suld] se quhar thair war mast mystir, And relief thaim with his baneir.	344

**The battale of bannokburne, strykynge & vonyng  
be gud kyng robert the bruce.**

Thus king  
Robert

**T**HE king thus, that wes vicht and viȝ  
And richt worthy at all deuȝ,

348

327. *manfully*] manlily.  
 329. *ȝeymseill*] ȝemseill. H has—  
 That men shall of his deedes tell.  
 331. *hymself in*] his awne.  
 333. *all*] EH om.  
 336. *ylis*] Ile E ; the Iles H. *but*] Root H. *tha*] so in E ; written thai C. *all tha*] alswa H.  
 337. And of the plaine lands he had  
 ma H.  
 338. *ane*] A. *mekill*] Noble H.  
 341. *forrowth*] for E ; before H.
342. *vaward*] waward E ; Vangard H ; *miswritten* vawand C.  
 344. *Behynd*] so H ; Besid E.  
 346. [Suld E] Sould H ; To C.  
 347. *And*] And to C ; EH om. to *thaim*] them H ; thar E.  
*Rubric from C* ; H has—How King Robert gart pottes make, And couer them well, I vndertake.  
 349. *worthy-all*] awise at E ; at tentiue at H.

And hardy als atour all thing,  
Ordanit his men for the fechting.  
And on the morn, on Settiday,  
The king herd his discourrouis say  
That ynglis men with mekill mycht  
Had lyin at Edinburgh that nycht.

ordered his  
battle.  
352 On Saturday  
morning he hears  
that the English  
are at Edinburgh.

Tharfor, forouten mair delay,  
He to the new [park] held his way  
With all that in his leding war,  
And in the park thame herbryit thar.

356  
He sets off to the  
New Park.

And in añe playñe feld, by the way,  
Quhar he thought neid behufit avay.

360  
In the way thither  
he causes many  
small pits to be  
dug, knee-deep,

The ynglis men, gif that thai vald  
Throw the park to the castell hald,  
He gert men mony pottis ma

364

Of a fut breid round, and all tha  
Var deip vp till añe manis kne,

368 and as close  
together as cells  
in a honeycomb.

Swa thik, that thai mycht liknyt be  
Till añe vax-cayme that beis mais.

All that nycht travaland he vas,  
Swa that, or day wes, he had maid

Thai pottis, and thañe helit had  
Vith stikis and vith gyrs al greyñe,  
Swa that thai mycht nocth veill be seyñe.

On [sonday than] in the mornynge,  
Weill soyn eftir the sonne-Rising,  
Thai herd the meſ full reuerently,  
And mony shraf thañe deutoly,

372 These pits were  
covered over with  
[Fol. 86. C.]  
grass.

376 On Sunday  
morning the  
Scotch hear mass  
and are shriven.

350, 351. *So in H. E omits l. 350, but after l. 351 inserts—In gud aray in alkin thing.*

Thus.

350. *wes]* E *om.* *had]* has.

351. And then the Pots they couered  
had H.

352. *gyrss]* gres E; gersse H.

353. *[sonday than E]* Sunday syne  
H; settiday C (*by mistake*); cf. l. 352.

354. *the—reuerently]* thair mess  
commounaly.

355. *shraf thañe]* thaim schraif  
full E; shraue them full H.

(l. 368) *into maid.*

369. *All]* Thus all C; but E *om.*

Some of them  
dined not, but  
fasted on bread  
and water, as it  
was St John's  
Eve (June 23).

The king sees  
how the ground  
is all pitted.

[Fol. 39. E.]

When all are  
assembled, he  
gives notice

that all men  
whose hearts fail  
them are to go  
home.

I] Ik.

That thought till de in that melle,  
Or than to mak thar cuntre fre.  
To god for thair richt prayit thai. 380  
Thair dynit nañe of thame that day,  
[Bot, for] the vigill of sanct Iohñe,  
Thai fastit bred and vattir ilkoñe.  
The king, quhen that the meß ves doñe, 384  
Went for to se the pottys soyñe,  
And at his liking saw thaim maid.  
On athir syde the vay, weill braid,  
It wes pottit, as I haf tald. 388  
Gif that thair fais on horþ will hald  
Furth in that vay, I trow thai sall  
Nocht weill eschew foroutyn fall.  
Throu-out the host syne gert he cry 392  
That all suld arme thañe hastily,  
And busk thame on thar best maner.  
And quhen thai all essemblit wer,  
He gert aray thame for the ficht, 396  
And syne our all gert cry on hicht,  
That quhat sa euir man that fand  
His hert nocht sekir for till stand  
To wyn all or de with honour, 400  
For to manteyme that stalward stour,  
That he be tyme suld tak his way,  
And nane suld duell with him bot thai  
That wald stand with him to the end, 404  
And tak the vre that god vald send.  
Than all ansuerd with a cry,

378. *till de*] to dey.

381. *dynit*] deyit (!) E.

382. [Bot for EH] For it C.

*Also C inserts wes before of.*

383. *bred—vattir*] water and breid.

385. *for*] furth.

387. *the vay*] rycht.

388. *pottit*] potted H; pitty E.

I] Ik.

389. *will*] wald.

391. *eschew*] eschaip. *fall*] A fall.

392. *syne*] than.

395. *all*] E om.

397. *our—cry*] gert cry our all.

398. *quhat—man*] quha sa euir he war EH.

399. *till*] to.

402. *tak*] hald.

403. *nane*] E om.

405. *vre*] grace H.

And with a voce said generaly,  
That name for dout of dede suld fale,  
Quhill discumfit war the battale.

They reply that  
they will not fail  
him.  
408

**Q** when the gud king had herd his men  
Sa hardly him ansuer then,

The king rejoices  
greatly.

Sayand, that nouthir ded no dreid  
Till sic discomfort suld tha e leid,  
That thai suld eschew the fechting,  
In hert he had gret reiosyng.

412

For him thought men of sic cowy e,  
So gude so hardy and so fy e,  
Suld weill in battall hald thair richt  
Agane men of full mekill mycht.

416 He thought that  
such men would  
hold their own.

Syne all the small folk and pouerale  
He send with harnase and vittale  
In-till the park, weill fer him fra,  
And fra the battall gert thame ga ;  
And as he bad, thai went thair way ;  
Twenty thousand weill neir var thai.  
Thair vay thai held till a e vale.

420 He sends the non-  
combatants to the  
park.

The kyng left, with a e cle e men e ;  
The quhethir thai war thretty thowsand.  
I trow thai stalwardly sall stand,  
And do thair deuour as thai aw !  
Thai stude than rangit all on raw,  
Reddy for till byde Battale,  
Gif ony folk wald tha e assale.

424 There were 20,000  
of them.

428 The king had  
30,000 with him.

432

407. *a voce*] a woce E ; ane voyce H.

hardy H. *ande* C.

420. *pouerale*] puraill H ; pitall E.

421. *and*] and with.

423. *battall*] bataillis.

410. *Rubric in H*—How the King sent fra him all haill, His small folke, cariage, and vittaill. *had*] has.

426. *Thair—held*] Thai held thair way EH. *ane vale*] A wale E ; a valley H.

427. *ane*] A.

411. *him ansuer*] ansuer him.

429. *I—sall*] That I trow sall

412. *no*] na E ; nor H.

stalwartly.

414. *suld*] ne suld C ; EH om. ne.

432. *till byde*] to gyff hard.

416. *covyne*] covyne E ; hauing H.

The king bids  
them all be ready,  
for his foes were  
at Falkirk.

The king gert thaīe all buskit be,  
For he wist, in-to certante,  
That his fayis all nycht lay  
At the fawkirk, and [syne] at thai  
Held toward him the vay all straucht,  
With mony men of mekill mawcht.

436

Tharfor till his nevo said he,  
The Erll of murreff, with his menȝe  
Besyd the kirk till kepe the vay,  
That na man past that gat avay,  
For-out debat, to the castele.

440

And he said, that him-self suld wele  
Kepe the Entre with his battale,  
Gif that ony vald thair assale.

444

And syne his Brothir schir Eduard,  
And ȝoung valtir, the gud steward,  
With the lord dowglaȝ alsua,  
With thair menȝhe, gud tent suld ta,  
Quhilk of thame had of help mister,

448

Suld help with thaīe that with him weir.  
The king send than Iames of douglas  
And schir robert of keth, that wes  
Marshall of all the host of fee,  
The yngliȝ mennys com to se.

452

And thai lap on and furth thai raid ;  
Weill horsit men with thame thai had,

456

434. *Rubric in H*—How the King  
bade the Erle Mvrray, To keepe be-  
side the Kirke the way.

443. *past*] pass E ; sould passe H.  
*avay*] away E ; perfay H.

435. *into*] in.

444. *For-out*] Without H ; For to

436—439. That Englishmen with  
meeke might Had lyen at the Falkirk  
that night. And syne to him the way  
all straight Held, with their men of

E. to] E om.

445. *that*] E om.

449. *the gud*] the good H ; alsua E.

450. *With*] And EH. *dowglass*] off douglas.

453. *Suld*] And.

455. *of keth*] of Keith H ; the  
keyth E. *wes*] than was E.

456. *of fee*] of fe E ; in fee H.

457. *com*] comming for H.

458. *and—raid*] withoutten bade H

437. [syne E] C om.

440. *nevo*] newo E ; Nevoy H.  
*said*] bad E ; had H.

441. *murreff*] Murray H.

442. *till*] to EH.

And soyn the gret host haf thai seyñe	460	
Quhar scheldis schynand war so scheyñe,		[Fol. 87. C.]
And basnetis weill burnyst bricht,		
That gaf agane the sonne gret licht.		
Thai saw so [fele] browdyn baneris,	464	They see so many banners, stand- ards, pennons, and richly-dressed knights,
Standartis, pennownys apon speris,		
And so feill knychtis apon stedis,		
All flawamand in-to thair wedis,		
And so fele battalis and so braid,	468	
That tuk so gret rowmē as thai raid,		
That the mast host and the stoutest		
Of [crystyndome], and ek the best,		
Suld be abasit for till Se	472	
Thair fais in-to sic quantite,		
And swa [arayit] for to ficht.		
Quhen the discurrowris has had sicht		
Of thair fais, as I herd say,	476	
Toward the king thai tuk the vay,		
And tald him, in gret preuate,		
The multitude and the bewte		
Of thair fais that comme so braid,	480	
And of the gret mycht at thai had.		
And the king bad thame thai suld ma		
Na contynans that it war swa ;		
Bot bad thañe in-to commouñe say,	484	
		He tells them to report otherwise.

460. *Catchword in C*—Quhar scheldis schynand var so scheyne.

*best*] the grettest E ; the lykliest H.

472. *till*] to.

474. [arayit E] armyt CH.

475. *the*] thair EH. *has*] H om.

476. *herd*] ȝow.

477. *the*] thar.

478. *in gret*] in-till E ; into H.

481. *at*] that.

482. *And*] Than. *thai*] so E ; at thai C ; that they H (*which omits thame*). *ma*] so in EH ; written may C.

483. *contynans*] written contyrnans C.

484. *bad*] lat.

462. *basnetis weill*] bassynetis E ; Basnets H (*which reads sa bright*).

464. [fele E] mony CH ; see l. 468.

465. *Standartis*] Standaris and E ; Standers and H. *pennownys*] Pen-

salls H. *apon*] vpon H ; and E.

467. *flawamand*] flawmand E ; flawming H. *into*] in EH. *wedis*] ioly weedes H.

470. *stoutest* E] miswritten stout-  
ast C ; best H.

471. [crystyndome E] Christen-  
dome H ; cassidoune (*sic*) C. *ek*—

That thai com in-till euill aray,  
And confort his men on that viſ.

For often a single  
word causes  
discouragement.

For oftsiſ of añe vord may riſ

Discomfort and tynsall with-all ;

488

And throu a vord, als weill may fall,  
Confort may riſ and hardiment,  
That gerris men cum to thair entent.

And on the sammyn wiſ it did her ;

492

Thair comfort and thair hardy cher  
Confortit thame so gretumly,

That of thar host the lest hardy,

Be countinans, vald formast be

496

For till begin the gret melle.

[Fol. 39 b. E.]

Thus the king  
cheered his men.

**A**pon this viſ the nobill king  
Gaf all his men reconforting  
Throu hardy countynans and cher,  
That he maid on sa gud maner.

Thame thought that na myscheif mycht be  
So gret [with-thi] thai mycht hym se  
Befor thaſe, that suld swa engreiff,

500

That na hys vorschip suld thaſe releif.

His vorschip thame confortit swa,  
And contenans that he can ma,

That the mast coward wes hardy.

508

On athir half, full stalwardly,

Even the most  
cowardly took  
heart.

485. *euill*] ill H.

499. *Gaf*] Gauſ to H. *reconfort-*  
*ing*] recomforting E; great comfort-  
ing H.

486. *And*] To EH. *men*] E om.

487. *oftsiſſ*] oft times H. *of ane*]  
throw a.

500. *countynans*] written countrynans C. *and*] of.

491. *That—to*] May ger men do E;

503. [with-thi E] with thy H; with  
I that (sic) C. *mycht hym*] him  
mycht.

To gar men come to H.

504. *that—engreiff*] sua that thaſim  
suld greve E; thatould sa engreeue  
H.

492. *And*] E om. *her*] er.

505. *na*] ne. *That na*] Bot H.

494. *Confortit*] Comford.

506. *thame confortit*] comfort  
thaſim.

495. *That*] follows host in E.

509. *stalwardly*] sturdely.

496. *countinans*] written countinans C.

497. *till*] to EH.

498. *Rubric in H*—How with a  
hundreth the Erle Mvrray To aught  
hundreth battell gaue.

- The ynglis men, in sic aray  
 As þe haf herd me forouth say,  
 Com with thair battalis approchand,  
 The Banerys to the vynd vaffand.  
 And quhen thai cummyn war so neir,  
 That bot twa myle betuix thaim wer,  
 Thai chesit aȝe gud cumpany  
 Of men that wicht var and hardy,  
 On fair courseris armyt at rycht ;  
 Thre banrentis of full mekill mycht  
 War capitans of all that rout ;  
 The lord clyffurd that wes so stout  
 Wes of thame all souerane ledeir,  
 Aucht hundreth Armyt, I trow, thai weir.  
 Thai war all ȝong men and Ioly,  
 And ȝarnand till do cheuelry.  
 The best of all the host war thai  
 [Off] contenans and of Aray.  
 Thai war the farast cumpany  
 That men mycht fynd of sa mony.  
 To the castell thai thought to fair,  
 For, gif that thai mycht weill cum thair,  
 Thai thought it suld reskewit be.  
 Furth on thair way held this menȝhe,  
 And toward strewilling tuk the way.  
 The new park all eschewit thai,  
 For thai wist weill the king wes thair ;  
 Beneth the park [sa] can thai fair,
- The English approach, with waving banners.
- 512
- 516 They send forward a company of men.
- 520 Three bannerets are chosen captains; and Lord Clifford leads them.
- 524 They are young men, 800 in number.
- 528
- They make for Stirling castle.
- 532
- 536 They avoid the New Park.
513. *vynd vaffand*] vynd wawand.  
 516. *ane gud*] a Ioly E ; a ioly H.  
 517. Of wight men armed iolely H.  
 519. *Thre banrentis*] Four lordys E ; And great Lords H. *full*] EH om.  
 520. *all*] E om.  
 521. *lord*] syr the. *so*] E om.  
 522. *all E*] all the C. *ledeir*] ledar.  
 523. *Aucht hundreth*] viii c. *weir*] war.  
 525. *And*] EH om. *till*] to E ; for
- to H.  
 526. *The*] Off. *all*] ywill (!).  
 527. [*Off EH*] Be C.  
 531. *mycht weill*] weill mycht.  
 534. *tuk the*] held thair.  
 535. *The new*] Beneath the H. *all*] H om.  
 537. *Beneth*] And beneth C ; And newth E ; And beneath H. Yet And is not wanted. *park sa*] Parke sa H ; new park E ; park C. *can*] gan.

Earl Thomas  
attacks them,  
with 500 men.

Quhill neuth the kirk, in-till a rout.  
The Erll thomas, that wes so stout,  
Quhen he saw thaīe swa tak the playīe,

540

In gret hye went he thame agaīe  
With v hundred, forouten ma,  
Anoyit in his hert and wa,  
That thai so fer war passit by.

544

For the king had  
said, that a rose  
had fallen from  
his (the earl's)  
chaplet.

For the king had said hym roydly,  
That aīe rose of his chaplet  
Wes faldyn ; for, quhar he wes set  
To kep the way, thai men war past.

548

Tharfor he hastit hym so fast  
That cummyn in schort tyīe wes he  
To the playn feld with his menhe.  
For he thought that he suld amend

552

That he trespassit had, or [than end].  
And quhen the yngliō men him saw  
Cum on, forouten dreid or aw,

556

And tak sa hardly the playne,  
In hy thai sped thame, him agaīe,  
And strak with spuris the stedis stith,  
That bare thame evyn hard and swith.

The Earl cheers  
on his men,  
saying,

And quhen the Erll saw that menhe  
Cum so stoutly, till his said he,  
“ Beis nocth abasit for thair schor,

560

Bot settis speris ȝow befor,  
And bak to bak set all ȝour rout,  
And all the speris poyntis out ;  
Swagat defend vs best may we,

564

Enveronyt with thame gif we be.”

538. *Quhill neuth*] Weill newth E ;  
Vnder H.

553. [*than end EH*] thai wend C.

540. *swa tak*] sa ta.

555. *dreid*] dyn.

542. *v]* so E : aine H.

559. *hard*] and hard H.

545. *roydly*] rudly E ; rudely H.

561. *his*] his men H.

546. *ane*] A.

562. *Beis*] Be EH. *schor*] so E ;

547. *fallyn*] fallen E ; fallen H.

shore H.

549. *Tharfor*] And tharfor.

566. *Swagat*] That gate H. *defend*

—best] ws best defend.

And as he bad thaīne, thai haf doīe ;	568	
And the tothir com alsoyñe.		
Befor thame all thair com prikand		Sir William Dan-
A knycht, hardy of hert and hand ;		court precedes
He wes a weill gret lord at haīne,	572	the English host.
Schir Wilȝame dencort wes his naīe.		
He prekit on thame so hardely,		
And thai him met so sturdely,		
That he and horȝ war born all douñe,	576	He is slain at
And slayne richt thair for-out ransouñe.		once.
With ynglis men gretly wes he		
Menyt that day, and his bountee.		
The layffe com on thame sturdely ;	580	
Bot nane of thame so hardely		
Ruschit emang thaīne as did he,		The rest come on
Bot with fer mair maturite.		more slowly.
Thai assemblit all in aīe rout,	584	
And Enveronyt thaīne all about,		
Assalȝeand thame on [ilka] syde ;		They surround
And thai with speris voundis vyde		the band of
Gaf to the hors that com thame neir ;	588	Scottish knights,
And thai that rydand on thaīne weir,		
That doune war born, lossit the lyvis.		
And mony speris, dartis, & knyvis,		and throw darts
And vapnys, apon seir maneir,	592	and knives
Kest emang thame that fechtand weir,		amongst them.
That thame defendit so vittandly,		[Fol. 88 b. C.]

568. *thai haf*] sa haue they H.569. *com*] come on E ; came on H.570. *thair*] E om.572. *He wes*] And E ; And was H.573. *Wilȝame*] Gilȝame. *dencort*] de Amecout E ; the Hawcourt H.574. *He*] And EH. *on*] at H. *so*] E om.576. *war*] were H ; wes E. *all*] E om. *born all*] baith borne H.580. *thame*] ryght E ; full H.582. *emang*] amang EH.584. *ane*] A.

586. [ilka E] ilke C. And to the enemies in that tyde H.

587. *And thai*] Raue H (*for Gaeu* ; cf. I. 588).588. *Gaf*] H om. *to*] till.590. *lossit*] losyt E ; lossed H.591. *mony*] mony with C ; othyr E ; als H.592. *vapnys apon*] wapynnys on.593. *emang*] amang.594. *vittandly*] wittily E ; worthely H.

	That thair fayis had gret ferly.	
[Fol. 40. E.]	For sum vald schut out of thar rout,	596
	And of thañe that assalȝeit about	
	Stryk stedis, and ber douñe men.	
The English even throw at them swords and maces.	The ynglis men so roydly then Kest emang thame swerdis and mas,	600
	That [inwith] thañe añe montañe waſ	
	Of vapnys that war varpit thair.	
	The Erll and his thus fechtand war At gret myscheiff, as I ȝow say;	604
The Scottish band is outnumbered and surrounded.	For quhenar be full fer war thai Than thair fayis, [and all] about	
	Enveronyt war, [quhar] mony a rout	
	War roucht, and full dyspitfully	608
	Thair fais [demanit] thaim rycht stratly.	
	On athir half thai war so stad,	
Both sides are oppressed with the heat.	For the [rycht] gret heit that thai had, Of fechting and of sonnys het,	612
	That all [thair] flesche of swat wes wete.	
	And sic añe stew raiſ owth thañe then	
Horses and men raise a reek and a great dust, so	Of aynding, bath of hors and men, And of powdir, and sic myrknes	616
	In-till the ayr abovyn thame wes,	

598. *Stryk*] Stekyt E ; Sticked H.  
*ber*] bar E ; bare H.

599. *roydly*] rudy EH ; see l. 545.

600. *emang*] amang EH. *mas*]  
 masis C ; mass or masis E ; speares H.  
*Perhaps it should be suerd and mas.*

601. *[inwith H]* in myddis of C ;  
 ymyd E. *ane montane*] A mon-  
 teyle.

602. *vapnys*] wapynnys. *varpit*]  
 warpyt.

605. *quhenar*] quhonnar E ; fewer  
 H.

606. *Than*] For H. *[and all E]*  
 all wes C ; them all H.

607. *Enveronyt war*] War inwe-  
 round. *[quhar E]* where H ; with C.  
*a]* E om.

608. *and*] E om. ; them H. *dyspit-*  
*fully*] dispitously E ; dispitteously  
 H.

609. *[demanit]* demanyt E ; de-  
 mand C ; demained H. See l. 624.  
*rycht stratly*] full starkly E ; straitly  
 H.

610. *half*] side H.

611. *[rycht E]* CH om. *heit*] bar-  
 gane H.

612. *Of*] For EH. *of*] for EH.

613. *[thair E]* their H ; the C.  
*of*] with H.

614. *ane*] A. *owth*] out of E ; ouer  
 H.

615. *aynding*] aneding E ; breath-  
 ing H.

616. *and (2)*] that EH.

- That it wes voundir for till Se ; that they can  
Thai war in gret perplexite. scarcely see.
- Bot with gret travale, nocht-for-thi, 620  
Thai thaſe defendit manfully,  
And set bath will [and strenth] and mycht  
Till rusche thair fais in that ficht,  
That than demanit thame angrily. 624  
Bot gif god help thame hastily,  
Thai sall thar fill haf of fechtyng !  
**How gud Iames of douglas askit at king robert the**  
**bruce leiff to gang to supple Erll thomas randall.**
- Bot ouhen the nobill renownyt kyng, 628  
With othir lordis that war hym by,  
Saw how the Erll abaundonly  
Tuk the playn feld, Iames of douglas  
Com to the kyng richt quhar he was,  
And said, "A schir ! Sanct mary !  
The Erll of murreff oppynly  
Takis playne feld with his menȝhe !  
He is in perell bot giff he be  
Soyñe helpit, for his fayis ar ma  
Than he, and horssit weill alsua.  
And, vith ȝour leif, I will me speid  
To help him, for that he has neid ;  
All enveronyt vith fayis is he." 632  
The king said, "sa our lord me se,  
A fut till hym thou sall nocht ga.  
Giff he weill dois, let hym veill ta.
618. *voundir*] woundre. *till*] to.  
621. *manfully*] manlily.  
622. [and strenth E] strength H ; strinrh C.  
623. *Till*] To EH.  
624. *than*] thaim. *thame*] than.  
627. *Rubric from C.*  
630. *the*] H om.  
632. *A schir*] Sir, ah H. *Sanct*] Sancta H.  
633. *murreff*] Murray H. After
- 632 Douglas asks permission to help him. [Fol. 89. C.]
- 636 The king forbids Douglas to do so.
- 640 The Scotch are determined to conquer.
- When it is seen that Earl Thomas takes the open field,
- murreff C inserts all, which EH omit.  
634. *Takis*] Tayss the E ; Takes the H.  
635. *giff*] EH om.  
638. *leif*] leue.  
639. *that*] EH om. *has*] hes great H.  
640. *enveronyt*] umbeweround *fayis*] his fayis E ; his fees H.  
643. *veill*] weill.

But Douglas  
repeats his  
request.

Quhethir him happen to vin or los,  
I will nocht for him brek purpoſ."

644

" Certis," he said, " I will no viſ  
Se that his fayis hym suppriſ,  
Quhen that I may set help thar-till.

648

With ȝour leiff, sekirly I will  
Help hym, or de in-to the payñe."

The king gives  
him leave, and he  
goes.

" Do than, and speid the soyn agañe,"  
The king said: and he held his vay.  
Gif he may cum in tyme, perfay,  
I trow he sall hym help so weill,  
That of his fayis sum sall feill !

652

655

644. *him*] *so* H; *him euir* C; *euir*  
*him* E.

646. *he said*] said Iames E; said he  
H. *will no*] ma na EH. *viss*] wiss.  
649. *leiff*] leve.

650. *de*] die H.

652. *vay*] way.

654. *he—hym*] that he sall H.

655. *of*] all EH. *sum sall*] sall  
It EH.

## [BOOK XII.]

**N**ow douglas furth his way he tais,  
And in that self tyme fell, throu cas,  
That the kyng of England, quhen he  
Wes cummyn with his gret menȝhe  
Neir to the place, as I said air,  
Quhar scottis men arayit war,  
He gert arest all his battale,  
At othir als to tak consale,  
Quhethir thai vald herbery thame that nycht,  
Or than, but mair, ga to the ficht.  
The vaward, that vist no kyn thing  
Of this arest na thair duelling,  
Raid to the park all straucht thar vay,  
Forout styntyng, in gude aray.  
And quhen the kyng wist at thai weir  
In haill battale cuman so neir,  
His battale gert he weill aray.  
He raid apon añe g[r]ay palfray  
Litill and Ioly, arayande  
His battall, with añe ax in hande ;

4

8

12

16

20

Douglas sets forward.

The king of England halts his main army ;

but his vanguard rides on.

When king Robert perceives they are so near, he arrays his men, riding on a gray palfray, axe in hand.

*Rubric in H*—How the King slew Sir Henrie Bowm, With his handaxe, and strake him down.

1. *way he*] wayis. *he tais*] tane hes H.

5. *air*] ar.

8. *At*] And. *als*] alsua.

9. *herbery thame*] herbry thaim E ; harbie them H ; thame herbery C.

11. *vist—kyn*] wist na.  
12. *this*] his H. *thair*] his EH.  
14. *Fbrout*] For-owtyn E ; But H. *in*] into H.  
18. *ane gray*] ane gay C ; a litill E. H *hus*—Himselfe rade on a gray Palfray.  
19. *Litill*] Laucht E ; Proper H.

He wears a  
leathern hat,  
with a crown set  
on it.

[Fol. 89 b. C.]

And on his basnet hye he bar  
Ane hat off qwyrbolle ay-quhar,  
And thar-vpon, in-to taknyng,  
Añe hye croune, that he wes aña kyng.

24

And glowcister and herfurd wer,  
With thair battalis, approchand ner ;  
Befor thame all thar com rydand,  
With helme on hed and sper in hand,

28

Schir henry of bowme the worthy,  
That wes aña gud knyght and hardy,  
And to the Erll of herfurd cosyñe,  
Armyt in armys gude and fyñe ;  
Com on a steid, a merk-schot neir  
Befor all othir that thair wer,  
And knew the king, for that he saw  
Hym swa araynge his men on raw,

32

And be the croun that wes set  
Abovin his hed on the basnet ;  
And toward him he went in hy.

36

[Fol. 40 b. E.] And quhen the kyng so apertly  
Saw hym cum forrouth all his feris,  
In hy till hym his hors he steris ;  
And quhen schir henry saw the kyng  
Cum on for-outen abaysyng,

40

Cum on for-outen abaysyng,  
Till him he raid in full gret hy.

44

He thought that he suld weill lichtly  
Vyn hym, and haf hym at his will,  
Sen he hym saw horsit so Ill.

48

He rides fiercely  
at the king,

21. *basnet hye*] bassynet E ; Bas-  
net heght H.

22. *off qwyrholle*] off tyre (or cyre)  
aboune E ; with Carbuncle H.

24. *ane*] EH *om.*

25. *And*] And when.

26. *battalis*] bataill.

29. *of bowme*] the boune E ; the  
Bowme H.

30. *ane—knycht*] a wycht knycht

E ; a Knight H. *and* H] and ane C ;  
& a E.

32. *and*] ande C.

33. *merk-schot*] bow-schote EH.

36. *araynge*] arraying H ; rang E.

37. *that*] also H.

38. Alsua apon his bassynet E.

40. *quhen*] E *om.*

42. *his*] the.

48. *saw horsit*] horsyt saw.

- Than sprent thai sammyn in-till a lyng ;  
 Schir henry myssit the nobill kyng ; but misses him.  
 And he, that in his sterapis stude,  
 With ax that wes bath hard and gude  
 With so gret mayn roucht hym añe dynt,  
 That nouther hat no helme mycht stynt  
 The hevy dusche that he him gaf,  
 That he the hed till harnyȝ claf.  
 The hand-ax-schaft ruschit in twa,  
 And he doune till the erd can ga  
 All flatlyngis, for hym falȝeit mycht ;  
 This wes the first strak of the ficht,  
 That wes perornyst douchtely. 60  
 And quhen the kyngis men so stoutly  
 Saw him, richt at the first metyng,  
 For-outen dout or abaysing,  
 [Have] slayn añe knyght swa at añe strak,  
 Sic hardyment than can thai tak,  
 That thai com on richt hardely.  
 Quhen ynglis men saw thame stoutly  
 Cum on, thai had gret abaysyng ;  
 And specialy, for that the kyng  
 So smertly that gud knyght had slayne ;  
 Than thai with-drew thaim euir-ilkañe,  
 And durst nocht than abyde to ficht,  
 So dred thai than the kyngis mycht.  
 And quhen the kyngis men thame saw  
 Swa in haill battale thame vithdraw, 76

49. *Than*] EH *om.* *sammyn*] to-gidder H.

52. *ax*] the ax. *bath*] baith H; E *om.*

53. *ane*] A.

55. *dusche*] dynt H.

56. That ner the heid till the harnys clave E; The head right to the harness clause H.

57. *ruschit*] frusshit E; frushed H.

58. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.

59. *flatlyngis*] flatlynys.

65. [Have EH] Has C. *ane*] A (twice) EH.

66. *than can*] thar-at gan.

68. *stoutly*] sa stoutly E.

71. *had*] has.

72. *Than*] Then H; That E.

73. *than*] then H; ane E.

74. *than*] for EH.

52 King Robert,  
with one stroke  
of the axe,

56 cleaves his head  
in twain, but  
breaks the axe.

60

64

The Scotch  
knights take  
courage at this.

68

[Fol. 90. C.]

72 The English  
retreat.

The Scotch  
pursue.

A gret schot till thame can thai mak,  
And thai in hy tuk all the bak,  
And thai, that followit thame, has slayne  
Sum of thame that thai haf our-tane.

80

Most of the  
English escape.

Bot thai war few, forsuth to say ;  
Thar hors fete had ner all avay !  
But how sa quheyn deit thair,  
Reboytit felley thai war,  
And raid thair gat with weill mair schaīe,  
Be full fer, than thai com fra haīe.

84

When the King  
returns his lords  
blame him,

**Q** when at the king reparit wes,  
That gert his men leif all the chaf,  
The lordis of his Cumpany  
Blamyd [him], as thai durst, gretly,  
That he hym put in auenture  
To mete so stith a knyght and sture  
In sic poynt as he than wes seyn ;  
For thai said, “ weill it mycht haf beyne  
Caus of thair tynsale euirilkañe.”

88

saying that “it  
might have been  
the loss of us al”

The kyng, thame answer maid he nañe,  
Bot menyd his hand-ax-schaft, that swa  
Wes with añe strak brokyn in twa.  
The Erll thomas wes ȝeit fechtand  
With fayis apon athyr hand,  
And slew of thame añe quantite,  
Bot wery war his men and he ;  
The quhethir with vapnys sturdely  
Thai thame defendit manfully,

92

But the king  
only laments  
his broken  
battle-axe.

77. *schot*] schowt E ; shout H.

90. [him EH] C om.

78. *tuk*] gauē H.

92. *stith*] starke H.

82. *ner*] them H; E om.

94. *said*] E om. weill] H om.

83. *quheyn*] quhoyne. Except  
some part that died there H.

96. *thame—he*] answer has maid  
thaim E ; answer hes made right H.

84. *felley*] foulily E ; filthily H.

97. *that*] E om.

85. *gat*] way H.

98. *ane*] the E ; that H.

87. *at*] that EH.

101. *slew*] E om. *ane*] A.

88. *leif all*] all leve.

104. *manfully*] manley.

Quhill that the lord dowglaſ com neir, That sped hymē apon gret maneir. The ynglis men that war fechtand, Quhen thai the douglas saw at hand, Thai vayndist and maid añe opnyng. Sehir Iames dowglaſ, be thair relyng, Knew at thai war discumfit neir, Than bad he thame that vith him weir Stand still, and pref no forthirmar ; “ For thai that ȝondir fechtand ar,” He said, “ ar of sa gret bounte, That thair fayis [weill] soyn [sall] be Discumfit throu thar awn mycht, Thouch no man help thaim for to ficht. For cum we now in-to fechting, Quhen thai ar at discumfyting, Men suld say we thame ruschit had, And swa suld thai, that cauſ [has] mad With gret travaill and hard fechting, Leiſ añe part of thair lovyng. And it war syn to leiſ his priſ, That of sa souerañe bounte is, That he throu playn & hard fechting Has heir eschewit unlikly thing ; He sall haf that he wonnyn has.” The Erll, with thame that fechtand was, Quhen he his fayis saw brawll swa,	Douglas comes to help Randolph.
	108
	Douglas perceives this, and halts his men.
	112
	[Fol. 90 b. C.]
	116 He says he will leave Randolph to fight it out, and win all the glory.
	120
	124
	“It were a sin for him to lose his well-earned honour.”
	128

105. *lord*] E om.106. *apon*] on.107. *The*] And EH.108. *at hand*] nerhand E ; comming H.109. *Thai rayndist*] Thai wandyst E ; Euanishing H. *and*] H om.110. *Sehir Iames*] Iaines of. *relyng*] relying E ; reeling H.111. *at*] that.112. *he*] E om.

116. [weill E] all H ; will C. [sall EH] C om.

119. *For*] And EH. *in-to*] to the EH.121. *ruschit*] fruschit E ; rescued H.

122. [has E] had C.

124. *Leiss*] Loss or Less E ; LoseH. *ane*] a E ; a great H.125. *his*] thair E ; his H.127. *That*] And.128. *eschewit*] encheeued H.130. *thame*] that EH.131. *brawll*] brawland E ; reeling H.

Randolph presses the English hard,	In hy apon thame can he ga, And pressit thame so woundir fast With sad strakis, quhill, at the last, Thai fled and durst nocth byde no mar.	132
till at last they flee.	Bath men and hors slayn left thai thar, And held thair way in full gret hy, Nocht all to-gidder bot syndrely ; And thai that war ourtañe var slayñe.	136
Many were slain.	The layff went to thair host agane, Of thair tynsall sary and wa.	140
Earl Thomas and his men	The Erll, that had hym helpit swa, And his men als that war very, Hynt of thair basnetis in-till hy	144
[Fol. 41. E.] take off their helmets to cool themselves.	Till avent thame, for thai var hat ; Thai war all helit in-to swat. Thame semyt men forsuth, I hicht, That had fayndit thair fayis in ficht,	148
Of all his company he lost but one yeoman.	And swa thai did full douchtely. Thai fand of all thair Cumpany That thar wes bot aȝe ȝeman slayñ, Than lovit thai god and war full fayñ,	152
	Than lovit thai god and war full fayñ, And blith [that] thai eschapit swa. Toward the king than can thai ga, And till him soyne weill cumin ar	
	He askit thame of thair weill-fair,	156

134. *sad*] hard EH.135. *and*] that. *nocht byde*] abid

E ; abide H.

136. *men—hors*] horss and men EH.*slayn*] H om.140. *to*] till.141. *and*] *so* in E ; ande C.142. *helpit*] helpyn.143. *men*] E om. *very*] wery.144. *basnetis intill*] bassynettis in.145. *avent thame*] awent thaim E ;  
draw their breath H. *hat*] haite H ;  
wate E.146. *all helit*] all helyt E ; helit  
all C.147. *Thame*] thaim E ; They H.

I] Ik.

148. *fayndit*] fended H ; fandit E.*fayis*] faes H ; force E.151. *ane ȝeman*] ane ȝemane C ; a

ȝuman E ; a some few H.

152. *Than*] And. *thai*] E om.*war*] wes.

153. [that EH] wes C.

154. *can*] gan.NOTE. After l. 153, lines 169, 170  
appear in E, being misplaced.155. *soyne weill*] weill sone.156. *So in* H ; E has—He wyttet  
at thaim of thair far.

And gladsum cher to thame he maid,  
For thai so weill than born thame had.  
Than all ran in-to gret dantee  
The Erll of murreff for till se ;  
For his hye vorschip and valour  
All ȝarnit till do him honour.

The king  
praises them.

All run to see  
the Earl of  
Murray.

160

[Fol. 91. C.]

So fast thai ran till se hym thair,  
That neir all sammyn assemblit war.

164

And quhen the gud king can thaim se  
Befor him swa assemblit be,  
Blith and glad that thair fayis war  
Sa reboytit, as said wes ar,  
A litill quhill he held him still,

King Robert,  
finding them  
thus assembled,  
addresses them  
as follows:—

168

[Syne] on this wiȝ he said thame till.

“ **L**ordyngis,” he said, “ we aucht to luf  
Almychty god that sittis abuf,  
That sendis vs so fair begynnyng.

“ We ought to  
praise God for  
this fair  
beginning.

172

It is aȝe gret disconfortyng  
Till our fais, that on this viȝ  
Sa soyn reboytit has beyn twiȝ.  
For quhen thai of thair host sall heir,  
And knaw suthly on quhat maneir  
Thair awaward, that wes so stout,  
And syne ȝon othir Ioly rout—

176

That I trow of the best men war

When the main  
army of the  
English come to  
hear of the  
repulse of their  
vanguard,

180

157. *he]* E om.

158. *than]* EH om. *born thame]*  
thaim borne EH.

159. *ran]* so H; pressyt E. *dantee]*  
daynte.

160. *murreff]* Murray H. *till]* to.

161, 162. H omits. *valour]* gret  
valour E. *till]* to.

163. *till]* to EH.

164. *all sammyn]* hand all H.  
*war]* ar.

168. Rabutyt apon sic maner E;  
Rebuted vpon that maner H.

169. See note to l. 154.

170. [Syne EH] And C. *thame*  
*till]* them till H; his will E.

171. Rubric in H—How that the  
King comforted his men, That twyse  
their faes rebuted had then. *he—to]*  
we aucht to love and E; we ought to  
loife, and H.

174. *ane]* A.

176. *reboytit—beyn]* has bene  
rabutyt EH.

179. *awaward]* waward E; Van-  
gard H.

That thai mycht get emang thame thar—  
War reboytit so suddantly,

I trow, and knawis it all cleirly,

184

they will be  
much dis-  
couraged.

That mony añe hert soll vaverand be  
That semyt ere of gret bounte.

And fra the hert be discumfite,

The body is nocht vorth a myt.

188

Thar-for I trow that gud ending

Sall follow till our begynnyng.

I do not ask you  
to follow my  
will.

The quhethir I say nocht this ȝow till,

For that ȝe suld follow my will

192

To ficht, for in ȝow soll all be ;

For gif ȝe think spedfull that we

Fecht, we soll ficht ; and gif ȝe will

We leiff, ȝour liking to fulfill,

196

I soll consent on alkyn wiþ

Till do richt as ȝhe will deuiþ ;

Tharfor sais on ȝour will planly.”

Than with añe voce all can thai cry—

200

“Gud king, forouten mair delay,

To-morn, als soyn as ȝe se day,

Ordane ȝow haill for the battale,

For dout of ded we soll nocht fale ;

204

Na nañe payn soll refusit be

Till we haue maid our cuntry fre.”

They all give  
their voices for  
battle on the  
morrow.

182. *get*] find H. *emang*] amang.

183. *reboytit*] rabutyt. *suddantly*] sodanly.

184. *all*] miswritten *sall* in E.

185. *ane*] A. *raverand*] wawer-  
and E; wauering H.

190. *follow*] folow E; *miswritten*  
*fallow* C.

191. *The*] And.

192. *follow*] folow E; *fallow* C;  
*fulfill* H.

193. *for*] bot. *sall all*] all sall.

194. *ȝe think*] ȝow thinkis.

195. *ficht*] E om.

196. *leiff*] leve.

198. *Till*] To EH.

199. *on*] so H; off E.

200. *Than*] Then H; And E. *ane  
voce*] a woce E; a voyce H. *all*] so  
H; than E.

201. *Gud*] And the (*wrongly*) E.

205. *name*] na.

206. *Till*] Quhill.

**Q** when the king herd thaim so manly  
**Q** Spek to the ficht and hardely,  
 \*[Saying, that nouther life nor dead  
 \*To sik discomfortould them lead  
 \*That they sould eschew the feghting,  
 \*In heart he had great reioycing ;]  
 In hert gret gladschip can he ta,  
 And said, “ lordyngis, sen ȝe will sa,  
 Schapis tharfor in the mornynge  
 Swa that we, be the sonne-rysing,  
 Haf herd mes, and be buskit weil,  
 Ilk man [in-]till his awñe yscheill,  
 Without the palȝownys arayit,  
 In battale with baneris displayit.  
 And luk ȝhe na vay brek aray ;  
 And, as ȝe luf me, I ȝow pray,  
 That ilk man for his awñe honour  
 Purvay hym a gud baneour.  
 And quhen it cummys to the ficht,  
 Ilk man set his hert and mycht  
 To stynt our fais mekill pryd.  
 On horȝ thai sall arayit Ryd,  
 And cum on ȝow in weil gret hy ;  
 Meit thame with speris hardely,  
 And wreik on thame the mekill Ill  
 That thai and tharis has done vs till,

When the king  
 hears their bold  
 speech,  
 [Fol. 91 b. C.]

212\* he rejoices  
 greatly, and  
 says :—

“ To-morrow, by  
 sunrise, let mass  
 be over and let  
 every man be  
 armed, each in  
 his own company.

216

Provide good  
 banner-bearers.

220

224 When the  
 English horse  
 attack you,  
 meet them boldly  
 with your spears,  
 and avenge all  
 your wrongs.

228

207. *herd thaim*] heard them H; had hard E. *manly*] manlily.

208. *Thai spak to fechting, and sa* hardely E; *Speake to the thing, and sa hastely* H.

209\*—212\*. *From H; not in EC.*

209. *So in E. And to him great gladship can ta H.*

211. *Schapis*] Schaip we ws EH.

213. *be]* E om.

214. *intill]* so E; till C; in H. *yscheill]* eschell E; battell H.

215. *palȝownys]* Pauillions H.

*arayit]* weil arayit C; EH *om.* weil.

216. *battale]* bataillis. *baneris]* so E; the baneris C; his Baner H.

217. *vay]* wiss E; wise H.

220. *baneour]* gouernour H.

222. *his hert]* hart, will E; will, heart H.

223. *pryd]* of pryd C; EH *om.* of.

224. *sall]* will.

225. *ȝow]* vs H. *weill]* full EH.

227. *wreik—thame]* think than on E; thinke then you on H.

We ought to  
be bold.

We have three  
advantages.

1. We have the  
right on our side.

2. They have  
brought so  
much wealth  
with them.  
that their spoils  
will enrich us all.

3. We fight for  
our wives and  
[Fol. 92. C.]

[Fol. 41 b. E.]  
children, and  
for freedom.

I warn you that,

And ar in will *ȝeit* for till do,  
Gif thai haf mycht till cum thar-to.  
And, certis, me think weill that we,

For-out abasyng, aucht till be

Worthy and of gret wassalage ;

For we haue thre gret avantage.

The first is, that we haf the richt ;

And for the richt ilk man suld ficht.

The tothir is, thai ar cummyn heir,

For lypnyng in thair gret power,

To seik vs in our awñe land,

And [has] brought her, richt till our hand,

Richeſt in-to so gret plentee,

That the pouerest of ȝow sall be

Bath rych and mychty thar-with-all,

Gif that we wyn, as weill may fall.

The thrid is, [that] we for our lyvis

And for our childer and our vifis,

And for the fredome of our land,

[Ar strenȝeit] in battale for to stand,

And thai for thair mycht anerly,

And for thai leit of ws lichtly,

And for thai wald distroy vs all,

Mais thaȝe to ficht ; bot ȝet ma fall

That thai sall rew thar barganyng.

And, certis, I warne ȝow of a thing,

To happyn thaȝe (as god forbeid !)

229. *till*] to ; and in ll. 230, 232.

231. *we*] *ȝe*.

233. *wassalage*] vassalage H ; was-

selagis E.

234. *avantage*] auantage H ; a-

wantagis E.

236. *ilk—suld*] ay god will EH.

237. *thai—heir*] that they com-

men are here H ; that thai cummyn

ar E.

238. *lypnyng*] lipning H ; lyppyn-

nyng E. *in*] off.

240. [has E] hes H ; haue C.

241. *plentee*] plentie H ; quantite

E.

245. [that EH] for C ; see l. 235.

246. *our vifis*] for our wywis,

247. *the*] our EH. *of*] and for E ;

and H.

248. [Ar strenȝeit E] Are strenyed

H ; Stoutly C. *in*] so H ; in-to E.

250. *leit*] lat E ; set H. *lichtly*]

heychty.

255. *To*] Gif H ; That E.

Till fynd fantis in-till our deid,  
 Swa that thai wyn vs oppynly,  
 Thai sall haf of vs no mercy.  
 And sen we knew thar fellownē will,  
 Me think it suld accorde till skill  
 To set stoutnes agañe felony,  
 And mak swagat añe Iuperdy.  
 Quharfor I ȝow requeir and pray,  
 That, with all mycht that euir ȝe may,  
 ȝhe pref ȝow at the begynnyng,  
 But cowardis or abaysyng,  
 To meit thame that first sall assemmyll  
 So stoutly that the henmast trymmyll.  
 And menys on ȝour gret manheid,  
 ȝour vorschip and ȝour douchty deid,  
 And of the Ioy that ȝhe abyd,  
 Gif that vs fallis, as weill may tyd,  
 [Hap] to vencus the gret battale.  
 In-till ȝour handis, for-outen faill,  
 ȝe ber honour, pris, and richeis,  
 Fredome, welth, and gret blithnes,  
 Gif ȝe conteyn ȝow manfully ;  
 And the [contrar] all halely  
 Sall [fall], gif ȝhe let cowardis  
 And vikkidnes ȝour hertis suppriis.

256 if they find us cowards and defeat us, they will shew us no mercy.

260 We must set our boldness against their cruelty.

264 Be sure then to meet them boldly *at first*.

268

Think of the fame and joy, if we happen to conquer.

272

You will win honour, riches, freedom, and blitheness.

276

280

256. That deyt on roid for mankyn heid E; For to preuaile into this steed H.

257. *Swa*] E om.

258. *haf—vs*] off vs haf EH.

259. *And EH*] Ande C.

260. *till*] to.

262. *swagat*] sa gat. *ane*] A.

264. *all*] all ȝour. *euir*] E om.

265, 266. H *transposes*.

265. *ȝhe*] That ȝe.

267. *that—sall*] that sall first H; at thar fyrist E.

269. *menys on*] menys of E; thinke vpon H.

271. *of*] off E; on H. *ȝhe*] we EH.

272. *fallis*] fall EH.

273. [Hap EH] Happin C. *the*] this.

274. *In-till*] In. *ȝour*] our EH. *forouten*] without E; withoutten H.

276. *gret*] all H; E om.

277. *manfully*] manely.

278. *the contrar*] so E; in the contrare H; cuntre C.

279. [fall] so E; faill C; faile H.

280. *ȝour hertis*] your heart H; ȝow E.

You might have  
continued in  
thraldom;

[Fol. 92 b. C.]  
but because you  
yearned for  
freedom, you are  
here with me.

Remember my  
brother Nigel's  
fate.

Though our foes  
have might, yet  
they are in the  
wrong.

Let no man se'ze  
the spoil till the  
field is wholly  
ours.

þe mycht haf lifit in-to thrildome ;  
Bot, for ȝe ȝarnit till haf fredome,

þe ar assemblit heir with me ;  
Tharfor is neidfull that ȝhe be  
Worthy and wicht, but abaysyng.

I warne ȝow weill ȝeit of a thing,  
That mair myscheif may fall vs nañe

Than in thair handis to be tane ;  
For thai suld slay vs, I wat weill,  
Richt as thai did my brothir Neill.

Bot quhen I meyn of ȝhour stoutnes,  
And on the mony gret proweſ

That ȝhe haue done so worthely,  
I trast, and trowis sekirly,  
Till haue playne victor in this ficht.

For thouch our fais haue mekill mycht,  
Thai haf the vrang and succudry ;

And covatis [of] senȝhory  
Amoviſ thame for-outen mor.

Na vs thar dreid thame bot befor ;  
For strynth of this place, as ȝhe se,  
Sall let vs enveronyt to be.

And I pray ȝhow als specialy,  
Both mor and leſ, all comonly,

That nane of ȝow for gredynes  
Haf E till tak of thair Richeſ,  
Na prisoners ȝeit for till ta,

Quhill ȝhe se thame cumrayit swa,

284

288

292

296

300

304

308

286. *I*] And I EH. *ȝeit*] EH *om.*  
292. *on*] off.  
294. *trowis*] trowes it H.  
297. *succudry*] *so* E; *succowdry* H.

298. [*of E*] and C. *senȝhory*] *senȝowry*. And couets wrangous Senȝeyry H.

299, 300. H omits. *thar*] *so* EPI;  
*misprinted char J.*

302. *to*] for to C; but E *om.* for.  
304. *all*] EH *om.* *comonly*] *com-*

*monaly* E; commonly H.  
306. *E*] eye H; ey E. *till*] to EH.

307. *ȝeit*] E *om.*; H puts yet after  
Nor (*for Na*). *till*] to EH.

308. *cumrayit*] contraryit E; ar-rayed H.

That the feld planly ouris be.

And than, at ȝour liking, may ȝe  
Tak all the Richeſt that thar is.  
Gif ȝhe will wirk apon this wiſ,  
ȝhe ſall haf victor sekirly.

I wat nocht quhat mar ſay ſall I ;  
ȝhe wat weill all quhat honour is,  
Conteyn ȝow tharfor on ſic wiſ,  
That ȝour honour ay ſavit be.  
And I hecht heir, in my lawte,  
Gif ony deis in this battaill,  
His air, but ward, releif, or taill,  
On the firſt day his land ſall weild,  
All be he neuir ſo ȝhoung of eild.  
Now [makis] ȝow reddy till the ficht,  
God help vs, that is mast of mycht !

I red armyt all nycht ȝhe be,  
Purvait in battale, ſa that we  
To meit our fais [ay] be bouñe.”  
Than anſuerd thai all with a ſowñe,  
“ As ȝhe deuiſ, ſa ſall be doñe ! ”  
Than till thar Innys went thai soyñe,  
And ordanit thaſe for the fighting ;  
Syne assemblit in the evynnyng,  
And ſwa gat all the nycht baid thai  
Till on the morn that it wes day.

**Q** when the clyffurd, as I ſayd air,  
And all his rowt reboytit war,

Then you may  
all take what you  
like best.

312

You know what  
honour is; then  
316 preserve it.

If any die in this  
battle, his heirs  
320 ſhall have  
immediate  
possession  
without fines.

[Fol. 93. C.]

324

Remain armed  
all night.”

328

They all aſſent.

They retire, and  
make all  
preparations.

332

When the  
Clifford, as I  
336 ſaid, and all

309. *That*] And that H. *feld]* so E ; field H ; feldis C. *planly ouris]* ours plainly H ; anerly ȝowris E.

315. *ȝhe—all*] Bot all wate ȝe E ; But yee wate all H.

316. *ȝow*] you H ; E om. *tharfor]* than E ; that H. *wirk]* awiſs E ; a wise H.

318. *I hecht]* Ik hycht. *my]* so H ; E om.

320. His land freely but Taxe or Tailyie H.

321. *his land]* his aires H ; E om.

323. [makis] makys E ; mak C ; make H. *till the]* for to E ; for the H.

325. *ȝhe]* we H ; that we E.

327. *ay be* E] all be H ; be reddy C.

329. *sa]* all EH.

336. *reboytit]* rebutyt EH.

his company  
were repulsed,

and told their  
fellows how king  
Robert slew their  
best knight at a  
stroke,

and how the  
king's host and  
Sir Edward's  
host pursued  
them,

and Thomas  
Randolph took  
open field against  
them,

[Fol. 42. E.]

and his men's  
spears stuck out  
all round like a  
hedgehog's  
spines,

the English  
were much  
disheartened.

And thar gret vaward alsua  
Wes distrenȝeit the bak till ta,  
And th̄ai haf tald thair reboytng,  
Thai of the waward, how the king  
Slew at a strak sa apertly  
The best knycht of thair cheuelry ;  
And how all haill the kyngis battaill  
Schupe thame richt stoutly till assaill,  
And Schir Eduard the bruf̄ alsua,  
Quhen thai all haill the bak can ta ;  
And how thai lessit off thair men,  
And cliffurd had tald alsua then

How thomas randall tuk the playñe  
With few folk, and how he has slayñe  
Schir vilȝame dancort the worthy ;

And how the Erll faucht manfully,  
That, as añe hyrcheouñe, all his rout  
Gert set out speris all about ;  
And how at thai war put agañe,

And part of thair gud men wes slañe,  
The ynglis̄ men sic abaysing  
Tuk, and sic dreid of that tithing,

That in v hundreth placis and ma  
Men mycht thame sammyn se rown and ga,  
Sayand, “our lordis, for thar mycht,  
Will all-gat ficht agane the richt ;

Bot quha sa varrayis vrangwisly,

338. *Wes]* War E ; Were H. *till]* to EH.

339. *haf]* had EH. *reboytng]* rebutting EH.

342. A knycht that wycht wes and hardy EH.

347. *lessit]* left or lest E ; left had H.

350. *few]* a few EH. *and]* H om. *he has]* he hes H ; wes E.

351. *vilȝame dancort]* wilȝame damecourt E ; William Haward H.

352. *manfully]* manly.

353. *hyrcheoune]* hyrchoune.

355. *at]* that EH.

356. *part]* ane part H. *wes]* EH om.

357. *men]* E om.

359. *hundreth]* c E.

360. *thame—and]* se samyn rout and E. H has—Together wald they rowning ga.

361. *thar]* thar gret C ; but EH om. gret.

363. *varrayis]* warrayis.

340

344

348

352

356

360

- Thai faynd god all too gretumly,  
And thai may happen to mysfall ;  
And sa may tyd that her we shall.”
- And quhen thir lordis had persaving  
Of the discomford, and the rownyng  
That thai held sammyn twa and twa,  
Throu-out the hoost soyñe [gert] thai ga  
Herrodis for till mak añe crye,  
That nane discomford suld it be ;  
For in punȝeis is oft hapnyñe  
Quhill for to vyne, and quhill to tyñe ;  
And that, in-to the gret Battale,  
That apon na maner may fale ;  
Bot, gif the Scottis flee avay,  
Sall all amendit be, perfay.  
Tharfor thai monyst thame to be  
Of gret vorschip and of Bounte,  
And stithly in the Battale stand,  
And tak a-mendis at thair hand.
- Thai may weill [monyss] as thai will,  
And thai may als hecht till fulfill  
With stalwart strakis thair byddingis all ;  
Bot nocht-for-thi, I trow thai sall  
In-till thair hertis dredande be.  
The king, with his consell preve,  
Has tañe to rede that he vald nocht

364 [Fol. 93 b. C.]

When their lords  
perceived this,

368

they sent heralds  
to proclaim that  
there was no  
cause for fear ;

372

it would be  
different in the  
great battle.

376

Thus they  
encouraged them.

380

Encourage their  
men as they  
may, I ween  
they will still be  
afraid in their  
hearts !

388

364. *faynd*] fend E ; offend H.  
365. *thai*] thaim.  
367. *thir*] thair.  
368. *the*] that H ; E om. (*in both places*).  
370. *soyne*] sone E ; then H. [*gert*  
E] can CH.  
371. *Herrodis*] Heraldis. *for till*  
*to. Herrodis—till*] To gar Heraulds  
soone H. *ane*] a.  
372. *nane*] to nane C ; but EH  
om. to. *it*] E om.  
373. *punȝeis*] punȝe E ; ieopardies  
H. *hapnyne*] happyne E ; happen-
- nyne H.  
377. *avay*] thair way EH.  
379. *monyst*] monest E ; monisht  
H.  
380. *of (2)*] great H.  
381. *stithly*] stoutly EH.  
382. *hand*] so E ; awne hand C ;  
owne hand H.  
383. [*monyss* E] monish H ; mon-  
ast C.  
384. *als hecht*] hecht als EH.  
*till*] to.  
385. *strakis*] hart EH. *byddingis*]  
bidding EH.

The English rest  
all night down in  
the Carse of  
Stirling.

Because the  
Carse was full of  
pools, they  
bridged these  
with boards and  
pieces of thatch.

The people from  
the castle  
brought them  
doors and  
windows,

[Fol. 94. C.]  
and thus all the  
pools were  
bridged over.

Fecht [or] the morñe, bot he var socht.

Thair thai herbryit thañe that nycht  
Douñe in the kerȝ, and gert all dicht,  
And mak reddy ther apparale

Agañe the morñe for the Battale.

For in the kerȝ pollis ther war,  
Howsis and thak thai brak, and bar  
To mak bryggis quhar thai mycht paȝ.  
And sum sais ȝeit, the folk that wes  
In the castell, quhen nycht can fall,  
For at thai knew thair myscheiff all,  
Thai went furth neir all at thai war,

And durys and vyndowis with thaim bar,  
Swa that thai had befor [the] day  
Briggit the pollis, swa that thai  
War passit our euir-ilkane,  
\*And the [hard] feld on horȝ has tañe,  
\*All reddy for till gif battale,  
Arayit in-to thair apparale.

392

396

400

404

### The battale of Bannokburne.

At daybreak, the  
Scotch hear  
mass, take a  
sup, and array  
themselves.

**T**he scottis men, quhen it wes day,  
Thair meȝ deuotly herd thai say,  
Syne tuk a sop, and maid thame ȝar.  
And quhen [thai] all assemblit war,  
And in thair battalis all purvait,

408

390. [or E] on C; while H. *bot*] that E.  
but H; that E.

that.

403. [the EH] that C.

391. *Thair*] Tharfor EH.404. *pollis*] pulis E; Pooles H.392. *kerss*] kers E; Kersse H.

405. Were passed ouer them euerilk-anne H; War passyt our ilkane all hale E.

393. *mak*] make H; maid E. *ther*] all ther C; but EH omit all.

406\*, 407\*. *Not in E; H has—*  
And the hard field on horse hes tane,  
All readie for to glie battell. [hard H] heril C; but see l. 447.

395. *For*] And for. *kerss*] kers E;  
Kersse H. *pollis*] pulis E; Puilles H. *ther*] EH om.

406. *in-to* in-till.

396. H as C. and—and] thai  
brak, and thak E.

408. *herd*] gert. *herd—say*] heard  
haue thay H.

400. at] that EH. *thair*] the E;  
their H.

410. *thai all* E] that thai H; all C.

401. *furth*] foorth H; full E. at]

- Vith thair braid baneris all displayit, 412  
 Thai maid knychtis, as it efferis  
 To men that oysis thai mysteris.  
 The kyng maid valter stewart knycht,  
 And Iames of douglas, that ves vicht,  
 And othir als of gret Bounte  
 He maid, ilkane in thair degré.  
 Quhen this wes doñe, that I þou say,  
 Thai went all furth in gud aray,  
 And tuk the playne full apertly,  
 Mony wicht man, gud and hardy,  
 That wer fulfillit of gret bounte.  
 In-till thair rowtis men mycht se  
 The ynglis men, in othir party,  
 That richt as angelis schane brichtly,  
 War nocth arayit on sic maner ;  
 For all thair Battalis sammyn wer  
 In a [schilrum] ; bot quhethir It wes  
 Throu the gret stratnes of the plas,  
 That thai war rad till byd fichting,  
 Or that it wes for abaysing, 424  
 I wat nocth ; bot in a [schilrum]  
 It Semyt thai war, all and soñe,  
 Outane the vaward anerly,  
 That with añe richt gret cumpany  
 Be thame-selvin arayit war,  
 And till the battale maid thamé þar.  
 That folk our-tuk añe mekill feld 428
- Knights are made.  
 The king knights  
 Walter Stewart  
 and James of  
 Douglas.
- 432  
 436  
 They covered a  
 large space,

414. *oysis*] wsys E ; vses H.421. *full*] field H.422. *wicht—gud*] wight man good H ; gud and wicht E.424. *thair*] thai.426. *richt*] E om.429. [schilrum] schilthrum E (*but see* l. 433) ; shilrum H ; childrome C. *wes*] was.431. *rad till*] int to E ; in, to H.

433. [schilrum] E shilrum H ;

childrome C.

435. *vaward*] awaward E ; Vangard H.436. *with ane richt*] with a right H ; rycht with a E.

438. Quha had bene by, mycht haue sene thor E ; Wha had bene by, might haue seene there H.

439. *our-tuk*] ourtak E ; ouertake H. *ane*] a.

where might be  
seen shining  
shields and  
bright banners.

When the king  
of England sees  
[Fol. 94 b. C.]  
the Scots take  
the field on foot,  
he exclaims,

"What! will you  
Scots fight?"

[Fol. 42 b. E.]  
Sir Ingraham  
Umphraville  
replies that it is  
truly marvellous,

but he can tell  
how to defeat  
them easily.

"If we retire  
behind our tents,

440. [a schynand E] a shining H ;  
schenand C.

442. man] so H ; a man E.

443. baner bricht] brycht baner.

444. [schiltrum E] shiltrum H ;  
childrome C. E transposes ll. 443  
and 444.

446. Saw] so H ; Swa E. sa]  
saw E.

447. To tak] so H ; Takand E.  
hard] plaine H. planly] opynly EH.

450. schir than] E om.

451. vmpphrevell] the wmfrawill E ;  
the Vmfraule H.

On breid, quhar mony [a schynand] scheld,  
And mony a burnyst bricht Armour,  
And mony man of gret valour,  
And mony a baner, bricht & scheyñe,  
Micht in that gret [schiltrum] be seyñe.

And quhen the kyng of yngland  
Saw scottis men sa tak on hand  
To tak the hard feild so planly,  
And apon fut, he had ferly,

And said, "quhat? will ȝon scottis ficht?"  
“ȝaa, sekirly, schir,” than said a knyght,  
Schir Ingerame vmpphrevell hat he,  
And said, “forsuth, schir, now I se

All the mast ferlifull sycht  
That euir I saw, quhen for to ficht  
The scottis men has tane on hand  
Agane the gret mycht of yngland,

In plane hard feild to gif battale.

Bot and ȝhe will [trow] my consale,  
ȝhe sall discomfit thame lichtly.

ȝhe sall withdraw [hyne] suddanly,  
With battalis, baneris, and pennownys,  
Quhill that we paſſ our palȝeownys ;  
And ȝe sall se als soyñe at thai,  
Magre thair lordis, sall brek aray,  
And scale thame, our harneſſ to ta.

452. schir now] now schyr.

453. All] It is E ; Bot dread H.  
ferlifull] marveilous H.

454. quhen for] so E ; wheene for  
H ; for quhen C.

456. gret] haill H ; E om.

458. [tron EH] throu C.

460. ȝhe—withdraw] Withdrawys  
ȝow E ; Ye sall withdraw H. [hyne  
EH] C om.

461. baneris and] Baners and H ;  
and with E.

463. als—at] alsone that.

440

444

448

452

456

460

464

And quhen we se thaīe scalit swa, Prik we than on thaīe hardly, And we sall haf thaīe weill lichtly. For than sall nane be knyt to ficht, That may withstand our mekill mycht."	they will break their ranks to seize the spoil."	
		468
"I will nocth," said the king, "perfay, Do sa; for ther sall no man say That I suld eschewe the battale, Na vithdraw me for sic rangale." Quhen this wes said that er said I,	The king says he will not do so,	472
The scottis men full deuotly Knelyt [all] douñe, till god to pray, And a schort prayer thair maid thai Till god, till help thaīe in that ficht. And quhen the yngliſ king had sicht Of thame kneland, he said in hy— "ȝon folk knelis till ask mercy." Schir yngeraīe said, "ȝe say suth now; Thai ask mercy, bot nocth at ȝow. For thair trespaſ to god thai cry. I tell ȝow a thing sekirly, That ȝon men will wyn all or de, For dout of ded thar sall naīe fle."	nor retire before such a rabble.	
"Now be it swa," than said the kyng, "We sall it se but delaying." He gert trwmp vp to the assemble; On athir syd than men mycht se	476 The Scots kneel down to pray.	
470. <i>our</i> ] so H; ȝour E. 473. <i>suld</i> ]ould H; sall E. 475. <i>Rubric in H</i> —The meeting of the great battailye, Where Scots de- fend, and English failyie. 476. <i>full deuotly</i> ] comounaly E; right reuerently H; all full deuotly C. 477. <i>Knelyt all EH</i> ] Thai knelit C. <i>till</i> ] to EH. 479. <i>Till</i> ] To EH; twice. 482. <i>knelis till</i> ] knees to H; knel to E.	480 The English king says— "They kneel to ask for mercy."  Sir Ingraham says—"Yes, but not of you. [Fol. 95. C.]	480
483. <i>yngerame</i> ] ingrahame E; In- grame H. 484. <i>nocht</i> ] not H; nane E. 487. <i>wyn all</i> ] all wyn. 488. <i>thar</i> ] thaim E; they H. <i>nane</i> ] nocht E; not H. 490. <i>We—se</i> ] And than, but langar EH. 491. <i>He</i> ] Thaim E; They H. <i>trwmp</i> ] come H. <i>vp</i> ] EH om. <i>to</i> ] till. 492. <i>than—mycht</i> ] men mycht than.	488 Yon men will win or die." "We shall soon see," said the king.	488
	492	

470. *our*] so H; ȝour E.  
 473. *suld*]ould H; sall E.  
 475. *Rubric in H*—The meeting of  
the great battailye, Where Scots de-  
fend, and English failyie.  
 476. *full deuotly*] comounaly E;  
right reuerently H; all full deuotly  
C.  
 477. *Knelyt all EH*] Thai knelit  
C. *till*] to EH.  
 479. *Till*] To EH; twice.  
 482. *knelis till*] knees to H;  
knel to E.
483. *yngerame*] ingrahame E; In-  
grame H.  
 484. *nocht*] not H; nane E.  
 487. *wyn all*] all wyn.  
 488. *thar*] thaim E; they H. *nane*]  
nocht E; not H.  
 490. *We—se*] And than, but langar  
EH.  
 491. *He*] Thaim E; They H. *trwmp*]  
come H. *vp*] EH om. *to*] till.  
 492. *than—mycht*] men mycht  
than.

Full mony wicht men and worthy,  
All reddy till do cheuelry.

Thus are both  
sides arrayed.

The English  
vanguard attacks  
Sir Edward  
Bruce's company.

The encounter is  
fierce, and many  
are slain.

The wounded  
horses rush and  
reel.

Spears and axes  
are plied.

**T**Hus war thai boune on athir syde ;  
And ynglis<sup>h</sup> men, with mekill prid,  
That var in-till thar awaward,  
Till the battall that schir eduard  
Gouernyt and led, held straucht thair vay.  
The hor<sup>s</sup> with spuris hardnyt thai,  
And prikit apon thame sturdely ;  
And thai met thame richt hardely,  
Swa [that], at the assemble thair,  
Sic a frusching of speris wair  
That fer avay men mycht it her.

At thar metyng, for-outen wer,  
Wer stedis stekit mony a<sup>n</sup>e,  
Mony gud man bor<sup>n</sup>e doune and sla<sup>n</sup>e,  
And mony ane hardyment douchtely  
Wes thair eschewit full hardely.

Thai dang on othir with vapnys ser ;  
Sum of the hor<sup>s</sup>, that stekit wer,  
Ruschit and relit richt [roydly].  
Bot the remanant, nocht-for-thi,  
That mycht cum to the assembling,  
For that lat maid ryght no stynting,  
But assemblit full hardely.

And thai met tha<sup>m</sup>e full sturdely  
With speris that war scharp to scher,  
And axis that weill grundyn wer,

496

500

504

508

512

516

520

493. *Full mony*] Mony A. *men*] *man*] Knight H. *doune*] E om.  
*man* EH.

494. *All*] EH *om.* *till*] to EH. *do*] do great H.

497. *awaward*] so CE ; Vanguard H.

498. *Till*] To EH.

503. [that EH] C om. *the*] thair EH.

506. *thar*] that EH.

508. *Mony*] And mony EH. *gud*

509. *ane hardyment*] hardy men and E ; a hardy met H (where hardy men and hardy met are both corruptions of hardiment).

510. *full*] for.

513. [roydly] rudely E ; rudely H ; sturdely C ; but see xi. 545.

516. *lat*] let. *ryght*] EH *om.*

Quhar-with wes roucht full mony rout.

The ficht wes thair so fell and stout,

That mony worthy men and wicht,

Throu forþ, wes fellit in that ficht,

That had no mycht to ryþ agañe.

The scottis men fast can thañe payñe

Thair fais mekill mycht to ruþ.

I trow thai sall no Payne refuþ,

Na perell, quhill thar fais be

Set in-till herd proplexite.

Many brave men  
are slain.

524

[Fol. 95 b. C.]

528 The Scots resist  
manfully.

**A**nd quhen the erl of murref sa  
Thair avaward [saw] stoutly ta  
The vay to schir Eduard [all] straucht,  
That met thame with full mekill maucht,  
He held his way with his baner  
Till the gret rout, quhar samdyn wer  
The nyne battales that wes so braid,  
That so feill baneris with thame had,  
And of men sa gret quantite,  
That it war wonder for to se.

532 The Earl of  
Murray goes to  
help Sir Edward  
Bruce.

536

The gud erll thiddir tuk the way  
With his battale in gud aray,  
And assemblit so hardely,  
Quhill men mycht her, that had beyn by,  
A gret frusche of the speres that brast.  
For thair fais assalȝeit fast,

540  
The good earl  
comes to the  
rescue, and there  
is a great  
breaking of  
spears.

544

521. *full mony*] mony a EH.  
522. *ficht*] fight H; fechting E.  
*so]* sa EH.

523. *worthy men*] a worthi man  
EH.

525. *no]* na EH.

527. *ruþ*] frusch E; frush H.

530. *in-till*] in weill E; well H.

531. *Rubric in H*—The Erle of  
Mvrray with his battailyie, Came on  
stoutly but ony failyie. *sa]* saw sa  
C; but EH om. saw.

532. *avaward*] waward E; Van-  
gard H. [saw H] saw sa E; so C.  
*ta]* so H; ga E.

533. [all E] CH om.

536. *Till*] To.

537. *wes so]* war sa.

538. *so feill*] sa fele. *had]* haid.

544. *Quhill*] That EH.

545. *frusche*] frusche or fruschis  
C; frusch E; frush H.

546. *assalȝeit*] assailyed H; as-  
semblyt E.

The earl's  
company is  
furiously  
attacked, but  
resists manfully.

[Fol. 43. E.]

Doughty deeds  
are performed.

The Earl of  
Murray and  
his men gain  
ground, though  
their foes are  
ten for one.

[Fol. 96. C.]

The English  
attack is renewed.

- That on stedis, with mekill prid,  
Com prikand as thai wald [our] ryd 548  
The Erll and all his Cumpany.  
Bot thai met thame so sturdely,  
That mony of thame till erd thai bar.  
And mony a steid wes stekit thar, 552  
And mony gud man fellit vndir feit,  
That had no power to riß ȝeit.  
Ther men mycht se añe hard battale,  
And sum defend and sum assale, 556  
And mony a riall rymmyll ryde  
Be roucht thair [apon] athir syde,  
Quhill throu the byrneis brist the blud,  
That till the erd douñe stremand ȝud. 560  
The Erll of murreff and his men  
So stoutly thame contenit then,  
That thai wan plas ay mair & mair  
On thair fais, the quhethir thai war 564  
Ay ten for añe, or ma, perfay ;  
Swa that it semyt weill that thai  
War tynt emang so gret menȝe,  
As thai war plungit in the se. 568  
And quhen the ynglis men has seyñē  
The Erll and all his men be-deyñē  
Fecht sa stoutly, but effraying,  
Richt as thai had [name] abaysing, 572  
Thai pressit thame with all thar mycht.  
And thai, with speris and suerdis brycht,  
[And] axis that rycht scharply schar,

548. [our E] ouer H ; on C.

552. *And*] For.

553. *mony*] feill H.

554. *power*] hap. ȝeit] wp ȝete.

555. *men mycht*] mycht men. ane]

A.

557. *riall—ryde*] reale romble rid E ; rumble great and red H.

558. [apon E] on CH

560. *the*] E om. ȝud] ȝhude. That on the eird in streames yood H.

564. *the*] E om.

565. *ma*] may.

567. *emang*] amang. *gret*] fell H.

571. *Fecht*] Feght H ; Faucht E.

572. [name EH] no C.

573. *Thai*] Thaim. *thame*] thai.

575. [And EH] With C.

In-myd the visage met thaīe thar.	576
Thar men mycht se ane stalwart stour,	
And mony men of gret valour	
With speris, macyf, and with knyvis,	
And othir vapnys vissill thair lyvis,	580
Swa that mony fell doune all ded;	
The gyrs wox with the blude all red.	
The Erll, that wicht wes and worthy,	
And his men faucht so manfully,	584
That, quha sa had seyne thaim that day,	
I trow forsuth, that thai suld say,	
That thai suld do thair devour wele,	
Swa that thair fayis suld it feill.	588

Spears, maces,  
and knives are  
fast plied;

the grass is red  
with blood.  
The Earl of  
Murray and his  
men do their  
duty well.

576. *In-myd*] Ymyddis.

577. *men mycht*] mycht men. *ane*]

582. *gyrss wox*] greyss woux.

584. *manfully*] manlyly.

586. *thai*] he H.

A. 579. *with*] E *om.*

580. *vissill*] wysyllt E; wissell H. did full H.

587. *suld—devour*] their deuonre

*thair*] H *om.*

## [BOOK XIII.]

When Walter  
Stewart and  
Douglas see the  
Earl of Murray

attack the enemy  
so boldly,

they go to  
his aid.

The enemy  
receive their  
attack firmly.

[Fol. 96 b. C.]

The Scotch  
behave most  
gallantly.

**Q** when that thir twa first batellis wer  
Assemblit, as I said ȝow er,  
The steward, valter that than wes,  
And the gud lord als of dougleſ,  
In a battale quhen that thai saw  
The Erll, forouten dreid or aw,  
Assemmyll with his cumpany  
On all the folk so sturdely,  
For till help him thai held thar vay  
With thar battale in gud aray,  
And assemmyllit so hardly  
Besyd the erll a litill by,  
Thair fais feld thair cummyng weill ;  
For with wapnys stalwart of steill  
Thai dang on thame with all thar mycht.  
Thair fais resauit thame weill, I hycht,  
With swerdis, speris, and vith macyſ.  
The battale thair so fellowñe was,  
And sua richt gret spilling of blud,  
That on the erd the flusſ it stud.  
The Scottis men so weill thame bar,

1. *Rubric in H*—How Walter Stewart, & Dowglas, Came with their battell that worthy was. *that*] E om. *batellis*] bataillis E ; battells H.
2. *er*] so E ; miswritten her C ; *se l. 84.*
8. *the*] that E ; tha H.
10. E has—And thair bataill, in
- gud aray, but J omits it ; it appears, however, in P ; H follows C.
13. *Thair*] That thair EH.
15. *on thame*] apon.
16. *thame*] E om. I] Ik.
17. *macyſſ*] mase E ; Mas H.
20. *flusſ it*] flouſſis E ; streames H. *stud*] yoode H.

And sua gret slauchtir maid thai thar, And fra so feill the livis revit, That all the feild wes bludy levit.	24	
That tym thir thre Battalis wer All syde be syde fechtand weill neir. Thar mycht man her richt mouy dynt		The three companies are fighting side by side.
And vapnys apon armour stynt, And se tummyll knychtis and stedis, With mony rich and ryoll wedis Defoulit roydly vnder feit.	28	
Sum held on loft, sum tynt the suet.	32	
A long quhill thus fechtand thai wer, That men no noyis na cry mycht her ; Men herd nocth ellis bot granys & dyntis,		The battle lasts long.
That slew fire, as men dois on flyntis ;	36	
Sa faucht thai ilkañe egrily That thai maid nouthir noyis no cry, Bot dang on othir at thar mycht,		They fight so eagerly that they raise no cries.
With wapnys that war burnyst brycht.	40	
The Arrowis als so thik thai flaw, That thai mycht [say] weill, at thaim saw,		The arrows fly fast, making a hideous shower.
That thai añe hydwif schour can ma ;		
For quhar thai fell, I wndirta,	44	
Thai left eftir thañe taknyng		
That sall neid, as I trow, lechyng		
The ynglis archeris schot so fast,		Had the English archers continued shooting,
That, mycht thar schot haf had last,	48	

24. *wes bludy*] bludy wes.25. *thir*] thar.27. *richt*] EH om. *mony*] mony

strooke the fire as men H.

37. *Sa*] placed before egrily EH.  
*faucht thai*] Thai faucht EH.

a H.

41. *als so*] alsua.28. *armour*] armuris.30. *With*] And. *ryoll*] reale E;42. *thai*] men H. [say EH] se C.  
*at*] that EH.

Royall H.

43. *ane*] A.31. *roydly*] foully EH.44. *I*] lk.34. *no*] na EH. *na—her*] nor cry45. *taknyng*] takinning H.

might heare H; mycht her thar E.

48. *haf had*] haff ony. That gif  
their shot might haue had last H.35. *ellis*] E om.36. *dois*] slayis. *That—dois*] They

- the Scotch would  
have suffered  
much.  
But King Robert It had beyne hard to scottis men.
- [Bot] king robert, that weill can ken  
That the archeris war perelouf,  
And thar schot hard and richt grevouf, 52  
Ordanit forrouth the assemble  
His marschall with a gret menȝe,  
Fiff hundred armyt weill in steill,  
That on licht horȝ war [horsyt] weill, 56  
For to prik emang the archeris,  
And sua assailȝe thaȝe with speris  
That thai no laser [haf] to schute.  
This marschall that I of mwt, 60  
That schir robert of keth wes cald,  
As I befor haȝ to ȝow tald,  
Quhen that he saw the battalis swa  
Assemmyll and to-giddir ga, 64  
And saw the archeris schut stoutly,  
With all thaȝe of his cumpany  
In hy apon thaȝe can he ryde,  
And our-tuk thaȝe at a syde,  
And ruschit emang thaim so roydly, 68  
Strikand thaȝe sua dispitfully,  
And in sic fusiouñe berand douȝe  
And slayand thaȝe without ransouȝe,  
That thai thame scalit euirilkaȝe ;  
And fra that tyme furth ther wes naȝe  
That assemlit sic schot till ma.  
Quhen scottis archeris saw at swa 72  
76

50. [Bot EH] The C. hereof H. *mwt*] mute EH.  
 51. *the*] thair EH. 61. *keth*] keyth E ; Keith H.  
 52. *hard—richt*] rycht hard and 62. *I*] Ik. *hass*] her has E ; haue  
E ; hard and H. H. *to*] E om.  
 53. *forrouth*] before H. 63. *that*] E om.  
 55. *weill in*] in-to EH. 70. *Strikand*] Stekand E ; Stryk-  
 56. [horsyt E] horsed H ; armyt C. ing H. *dispitfully*] dispitously EH.  
 57. *emang*] amang EH. 71. *berand*] dushing them H.  
 58. *with*] with thair. 72. *without*] for-owtyn.  
 59. [haf] haiff E ; had CH. 75. *sic*] thicke H ; E om. *till*] to.  
 60. *This*] His H. *I*] Ik. *of*] 76. *at*] that thai E ; it was H.

Thai war rebutit, thai wox hardy, With all thar mycht schot egirly Emang the horf-men that thar raid, And woundis vyde to thame thai maid, And slew of thame a wele gret dele ; Thai bar thame hardely and weil. For fra thair fais archeris were Scalit, as I haue said ȝhow ere, That ma than thai war be gret thing, Swa that thai dred nocht thar schuting, Thai wox so hardy that thame thought Thai suld set all thair fais at noucht.	But the Scottish archers shoot still, and annoy the English horsemen.	
		80
	Now that the English archers are dispersed, the Scotch wax bold and despise their enemies.	84
		88
<b>T</b> HE marschall and his Cumpany Wes ȝeit, as to ȝow ere said I, Amang the archeris, quhar thai maid With speris rowme quhar at thai raid, And slew all that thai mycht ourta. And thai weil lichtly mycht do swa, For thai had nocht a strak to stynt, Na for to hald agañe a dynt ; And agane armyt men to ficht May nakit men haff litill mycht. Thai scalit thame on sic maner, That sum to thar gret battelis wer Withdrawin thaim in full gret hy, And sum war fled all vtrely. Bot the folk that behynd thame was, That for thair awñe folk had no space ȝeit than to cum to the assemblyng,	The marshal rides thus amongst the English archers,	92
	without being attacked at all. [Fol. 97b. C.]	96
	He disperses them so that some retire, and some flee.	100
	But the English- men in the rear, before kept back by their own men, now advance.	104

77. *Thai*] E om. *wox*] woux.85. *than*] na.87. *wox so*] woux sa.90. *to*] till.92. *at*] that E; euer H.100. *battelis*] bataill E; battell H.104. *space*] place H.105. *than*] E om. *to (2)*] erased in

E.

78. *With*] And with EH. *schot*] thai schot full C; but EH omit thai and full.79. *Emang*] Amang EH.81. *wele*] full.84. *haue said*] said till E; said to H. *ere*] here C; ar E; aire H; see 1. 90; also 1. 2 above.

As for the runaway archers,  
they will do no further harm.

In agane smertly can thai dyng.  
The archeris that thai met fleand,  
That than war maid so recryand,  
That thair hertis war tynt cleirly,  
I trow thai sall nocth seath gretly  
The scottis men with schot that day.

108

And when King Robert sees his three hosts fighting so well,

And the gud king robert, that ay  
Was fillit of full gret bounte,  
Saw how that his battellis thre  
So hardely assemblit thar,

112

That so weill in the ficht thaſe bar,  
And sa fast on thair fais can dyng  
That him thought nane had abaysing,  
And how the archeris war scalit then ;  
He was all blith, and till his men  
He said, “lordingis, now luk that þe  
Worthy and of gud covyne be  
At this assemble, and hardy ;  
And assemmyll so sturdely

116

That no thing may befor þow stand.  
Our men so freshly ar fechtand,  
That thai thair fais has cumrait swa  
That, be thai [presit], I vndirta,  
A litill fastar, þe sall se  
That thai discumfit soyн sall be.

124

Our men are fighting freshly.

[\*Now ga we on them sa hardely,  
\*And ding on them sa doughtely,  
\*That they may feele, at our comming,  
\*That we them hate in meeble thing :  
\*For great cause they haue vs made,  
\*That occupied our land[i]s brade,

128

Attack them, and let them feel how much we hate them.

For we have cause enough.

131\*

136\*

109. *cleirly*] clenly.

*cedes* so in E.

110. *seath*] skaith H; schout E.

127. *cumrait*] cumbred H; gratnyt

116. *That*] And EH.

E.

122. *covyne*] cowyn E: comfort

128. [presit] pressyt E; preassed

H.

H: previt C. *I*] lk.

126. *freshly*] fiercely H. *ar*] pre-

131\*—144\*. From H; not in EC.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| *And put all to subiectioun :                        |   |
| *Your good[i]s made all theirs commoun :             |   |
| *Our kyn and friend[i]s, for their awne,             |   |
| *Despitteously hanged and drawne :                   | 140*  |
| *And wald destroy vs gif they might.                 |   |
| *Bot, I trow, God, through his foresight,            |   |
| *This day hes granted vs his grace                   |   |
| *To wrek vs on them in this place."]                 | 144*  |
| Quhen this wes said, thai held <i>thar</i> way,      |   |
| And on a syde assemblit thai                         |   |
| So stoutly, that at <i>thar</i> cummyng              |   |
| Thair fais wer ruschit a gret thing.                 |   |
| Ther men mycht se men freshly ficht,                 |   |
| And men that worthy war and wycht                    |   |
| Do mony worthy wassalage ;                           | 136   |
| Thai faucht as thai war in a rage.                   |   |
| For quhen the scottis ynkirly                        |   |
| Saw thair fais sa sturdely                           |   |
| Stand in-to battale thaīe agaīe,                     |   |
| With all <i>thar</i> mycht and all <i>thar</i> mayīe |   |
| Thai layd on, as men out of wit ;                    |   |
| For quhar thai with full strak mycht hit,            |   |
| Thair mycht no armyng synt <i>thar</i> strak ;       |   |
| Thai to-fruschet thame thai mycht our-tak,           |   |
| And with axis sic dusches gaff                       |   |
| That thai helmys and hedis claff.                    |   |
| And thair fais richt hardely                         |   |
| Met thame, and dang on douchtely .                   |   |
| With wapnys that war stith of steill.                |   |
| Thar wes the battell strikyn weill ;                 |   |
|  | But God has this<br>day granted u<br>revenge."      |
|  | [Fol. 98. C.]                                       |
|  | 144 His men take<br>freshi courage ;                |
|  | and fight as if in<br>a rage.                       |
|  | They lay on<br>blows like<br>madmen,                |
|  | 148 cleaving helms<br>and heads with<br>their axes. |
|  | There was the<br>battle well<br>stricken.           |

138\*. *goodis*] goods H; goods they

A. 132. *a syde*] ane side H; ane feld

E. 135. *men mycht*] *mycht men.*

139. *ynkirly*] archery EH (*surely*  
against all 147, 198)

*a mistake; see ll. 147, 208).*

144. For] And EH.

145. *armyng*] *armur* EH.

146. *to-fruscht*] to-fruchyt E  
frushed H. *thame*] that E; all H.

150. *on*] on thaim. *douchtely*] doggedly (!) H.

152. *strikyn*] strekyt. *strikyn*  
*weill*] right cruell H.

There is such a din of blows,	So gret dynnyng ther wes of dyntis As wapnys apon armor styntis, And of speris so gret bristing, With sic thrawing and sic thrusting,	156
such breaking of spears,	Sic gyrnyng, granynge, and so gret A noyis, as thai can othir bet, And cryit ensenȝeis on euerilk syd, Gifand and takand woundis wyd,	160
such groans, cries, and shouts,	That it wes hydwiss for till her All four the battelis, wicht that wer, Fechtand in-till a front haly.	
that it is hideous to hear.	Almychty god ! full douchtely Schir edward the bryȝt and his men Amang thair fais contenynt thaȝe then, Fechtand in-to sa gud cowyne	164
Ah! how gallantly Sir Edward Bruce and his men bear themselves!	So hardy, worthy, and so fyne, That thar awaward ruschet was, And, magre thairis, left the plas, And to thar gret rowt to warrand	168
[Fol. 44. E.]	Thai went, that than had apon hand	172
At last the English vanguard gives way, and retreat to the main army.	[Fol. 98b. C.] So gret not, that thai war effrait, For scottis men thame hard assait, That than war in aȝe [schiltrum] all. Quha hapnit in that ficht to fall, I trow agane he suld nocth rif.	176
Many feats of arms are done.	I ther men mycht se on mony wif Hardyment eschewit douchtely,	

153. *dynnyng*] dinging H; dyn E.156. *With*] And EH. *thrawing*] thrang EH.159. *And eryit*] Crying H; AndE. *euerilk*] ilka E; ilk H.161. *till*] to EH.162. *four the*] thair iiij E; the  
foure H. *wicht*] with EH.163. *in-till*] in EH. *haly*] halyly.164. *Almychty*] A mychty E; O  
mighty H. *full*] how EH.165. *bryss*] bruce.167. *in-to*] in E; but into H.169. *awaward*] waward E; Van-  
gard H.171. *to*] till.172. *than*] then H; tane E.173. *not*] annoy E; noyse H.174. *men*] that E; men that H.175. *than*] they H. *ane*] A. [schil-  
trum E] shiltrum H; childrome C.176. *in*] in-to. *ficht*] preasse H.178. *men mycht*] mycht men.179. *Hardyment*] Hardimentis EH.

And mony that wicht war and hardy  
Doune under feit lyand all dede,  
Quhar all the feild of blud wes red.

Armoris and quyntis that thai bare  
With blud wes swa defowlit thar,  
That thai mycht nocht discrivit be.

A ! mychty god ! quha than mycht se  
The steward Walter and his rout  
And the gud dowglas that wes stout  
Fechtand in-to the stalward stour,  
He suld say that till all honour

Thai war worthy, that in that ficht  
Sa fast presit thair fais mycht,  
That thai thame ruschit quhar thai ȝeid.  
Thair mycht men se mony a steid  
Fleand on stray, that [lord] had nañe.

A ! lord ! quha than gud tent had tañe  
To the gud erll off murreff,  
And his, that swa gret rowtis gaf,  
And faucht so fast in that battale,  
Tholand sic payñe and sic travale,

That thai and thairis maid sic debat,  
That quhar thai com, thai maid thaim gat !

Than mycht men heir ensenȝeis cry,

And scottis men cry hardely,  
“On thame ! On thame ! On thame ! thai faill !”  
With that so hard thai can assaill,  
And slew all that thai mycht our-ta,  
And the scottis archeris alsua

180 Many bold men  
lie dead under-  
foot.

184 Armorial devices  
are so defiled  
with blood that  
they cannot be  
made out.

188 Stewart and  
Douglas are  
worthy of all  
honour.

192

Steeds are seen  
fleeing away,  
without riders.

196

The Earl of  
Murray and his  
men make their  
way everywhere.

200

204 The Scotch cry—  
“On them ! they  
fail !”

208

181. *Doune—lyand*] Sone liand  
wendre fete.

183. *Armoris*] Armys. *quyntis*]  
quhytys E ; coates H.

184. *wes*] war.

185. *discririt*] descroyit E ; de-  
scribed H.

188. *wes*] wes sa.

189. *the*] that EH.

193. *thai*] E om.

194. *mycht men*] men mycht.

195. [lord] so EH ; lordis C.

197. *To*] Till.

198. *gaf*] geff.

200. *payne*] paynys. *sic* (2)] E  
om.

206. *can*] gan.

The Scotch  
archers shoot  
fast at the  
English, and  
much annoy  
them.

[Fol. 99. C.]

At last the  
English give  
way.

The Scotch  
redouble their  
efforts to break  
the English  
ranks.

- Schot emang thame so sturdely,  
Ingrewand thame so gretumly,  
That quhat for thame that with thañe faucht,  
And swa gret rowtis to thame raucht, 212  
And presit thame full egirly,  
And quhat for arrowes that felly  
Mony gret woundis can thame ma,  
And slew fast of thair horȝ alsua, 216  
That thai vayndist a litell we ;  
Thai dred so gretly thañe till de  
That thair covyne was war than eir.  
For thai that with thañe fechtand weir  
Set hardyment, [and] strynth, and will,  
With hart and corage als thar-till,  
And all thair mayne and all thar mycht,  
[To] put thame foully to the flycht. 224

**How the ȝhemen men and the pouer men maid of  
schetis the maner of baneris, in supple of king  
robert the bruce & his folkis.**

- I**N this tyne that I tell of her,  
That the battall on this maner  
Wes strikin, quhar on athir party  
Thai war fechtand richt manfully, 228

Now, whilst the  
battle was thus  
proceeding,

209. *emang*] amang EH. *sturdely*] deliuerly.

210. *Ingrewand*] Engrewand E ; Engreeuing H.

213. *Catchword in C*—And quhat for arrowes that felly.

215. *ma*] so EH ; may C.

217. *vayndist*] wandyst E ; re-cooled H.

219. *was*] woxt H. *war—eir*] wer and wer.

220. *with — fechtand*] fechtand with thaim EH.

221. [and EH] C om.

222. *With*] And EH.

224. [To EH] And C. *foully*] fully EH. *the*] E om.

225. *Rubric from C* ; H has—How Scottish Swaynes of sheets made Them Baners, and in battell rade.

226. *That the*] At that E ; That thir H.

227. *quhar*] where H ; E om. *party*] side H ; see next note.

228. *Two lines in H*—Feghting they were full ernestly, They might haue seene who had bene by. *richt manfully*] enforcely E.

3hemens, swanys, and poveraill, That in the parc to ȝheyne vittale War left; quhen thai wist, but lesing, That thair lordis with fell fichtyng	232	some Scottish camp-followers, left in the Park,
On thair fais assemblit war, Ane of them-selwyne that wes thar Capitane of thame all thai maid; And schetis that war sum-deill braid		choose among themselves a captain,
Thai festnyt in steid of baneris Apon lang treis and on speris, And said that thai wald se the ficht, And help thar lordis at thar mycht.	236	and fasten sheets on boughs instead of banners.
[Quhen her-till] all [assentit] war, [And in] a rowt [assemblit] ar, xv thousand thu war and ma.		They then assemble together, 15,000 in number.
And than in gret hy thai can ga With thair baneris all in a rout, As thai had men beyn stith and stout. Thai com with all that assemble	240	
Richt quhill thai mycht the battale se. Than all at anys thai gaf añe cry— “Apon thame! on thame hardely!”		They advance to get a good view of the battle,
And thar-with-all cumand ar thai. Bot thai war ȝeit weill fer avay,	244	and raise a loud cry.
And ynglis̄ men, that ruschit war Throu forþ of ficht, as I said air,	248	
		And when the English see them thus advancing,

229. *ȝhemens*] ȝomen and E; Yeomen and H; miswritten ȝhemans C. *poveraill*] pitaill E; Pedaill H.

230. *to ȝheyne*] to keepe H; ȝemyt E.

234. *wes*] was H; war E.

237. *festnyt* E] miswritten fesnyt C; made H.

238. *Apon*] And fastned on H. *on*] EH om.

241. [Quhen her-till E] When hereto H; Quhar till C. [assentit] assentyt E; assented H; assemblit C.

242. [And in] In EH; In-till C;

but And is necessary. [assemblit E] assembled H; and assentit C.

243. *and*] or.

244. *thai can*] gan thai E; can they H.

245. *baneris*] so EH; miswritten baner C; see l. 237.

249. *gaf añe*] gave a.

250. *Apon—on*] Sla sla apon EH. *hardely*] hastily.

251. *ar*] war EH.

252. *ȝeit—fer*] wele fer ȝete.

254. *air*] ar.

- [Fol. 90 b. C.] Quhen thai saw cum with sic a cry  
 Toward thame sic aña cumpany, 256  
 That thai thought weill als mony war  
 As at war fechtand with thame thar,  
 And thai befor had thame nocth seyñē,  
 Than, wit þe weill, withouten weyñē, 260  
 Thai war abasit so gretumly,  
 That the best and the mast hardy  
 That wes in-till the oost that day  
 Wald, with thar mensk, haue beyn avay. 264  
 King Robert  
 shouts his war-  
 cry;  
 whom they had  
 not before seen,  
 they fall into a  
 panic.
- The king robert be thair relyng  
 Saw thai war neir discomfytng,  
 And his [ensenȝe] can hely cry.  
 [Fol. 44 b. E.] Than with thame of his cumpany  
 His fais presit so fast, that thai  
 War than in-till [sa] gret effray,  
 That thai left place ay mar & mar.  
 For all the scottis men that war thar, 272  
 Quhen thai saw thañe eschew the ficht,  
 Dang on thame swa with all thar mycht,  
 That thai scalit in tropellis ser,  
 And till discumfitur war ner ; 276  
 And sum of thañe fled all planly.  
 Some few English  
 stand firm.  
 and the English  
 retreat more and  
 more.  
 The Scotch press  
 on all the faster.
- Bot thai that wicht war and hardy,  
 That schame letit till ta the flicht,  
 At gret myschef mantemyt the ficht,  
 And stithly in the stour can stand. 280  
 And quhen the king of Ingland  
 Saw his men fle in syndry place,
- When the king  
 of England sees  
 his men flee,
255. *cum*] command. 255. *cum*] command. 255. *cum*] command.  
 256. *Toward*] Towart. 256. *Toward*] Towart. 256. *Toward*] Towart.  
 257. *thai*] thaim. 257. *thai*] thaim. 257. *thai*] thaim.  
 258. *at war*] that wes. 258. *at war*] that wes. 258. *at war*] that wes.  
 259. *thame nocth*] nocth thaim 259. *thame nocth*] nocth thaim 259. *thame nocth*] nocth thaim  
 EH. EH. EH.  
 263. *wes*] war. 263. *wes*] war. 263. *wes*] war.  
 H. H. H.  
 266. *neir*] ner at. 266. *neir*] ner at. 266. *neir*] ner at.  
 267. [ensenȝe E] Ensenyie H ; 267. [ensenȝe E] Ensenyie H ; 267. [ensenȝe E] Ensenyie H ;
- menȝe C. can hely] he can fast H. 269. *presit*] he pressyt EH. 269. *presit*] he pressyt EH.  
 270. *than*] E om. [sa EH] full C. 270. *than*] E om. [sa EH] full C.  
 272. *war thar*] thar war. 274. *swa*] E om. 275. *scalit*] scalyt thaim. *tropel-*  
*lis*] troplys E ; trowples H. 274. *swa*] E om. 275. *scalit*] scalyt thaim. *tropel-*  
*lis*] troplys E ; trowples H.

And [saw] his fais rout, that was Worthyn so wicht and so hardy, That all his folk [war] halely Swa stonayit, that thai had no mycht	284	
[To] stynt thair fais in the ficht, He was abasit so gretumly, That he and all his cumpany, v hundred armyt weill at ryght,	288	and unable to stem the advance of his foes,
In-till a frusche all tuk the flycht, And till the castell held ther way. And ȝeit, as I herd sum men say, That of wallanch schir Amer	292	he and 500 men turn to flight
Quhen he the feld saw vencust ner, By the renȝe led avay the king, Agane his will, fra the fichting. And quhen schir gelis de argente	296	towards Stirling castle.
Saw the king thus and his menȝe Schape thame to fle so spedely, He com Richt to the kyng in hy, And said, " schir, sen that it is swa	300	Some say that Sir Aymer de [Fol. 100. C.] Valence seized the king's rein,
That ȝe thusgat ȝour gat will ga, Haffis gud day ! for agañe will I ; ȝheit fled I neuir sekirly, And I cheif̄ heir to byde and de	304	and led him away against his will.
Than till lif heir and schamfully fle." His brydill than but mair abaid He turnyt, and agane he raid, And on schir eduard the brysis rout	308	But Sir Giles de Argentine bids his king farewell, disdaining to flee.
284. [saw EH] C om.	302. com] sped H.	
286. [war E] were H ; so C.	303. that] E om.	
288. [To EH] And C.	305. Haffis] Hawys E ; Haue H.	
290. all] E om.	307. heir] her E ; rather H.	
291. v] so E ; Fifteene H. hun- dreth] hunder. weill] all.	308. till—schamfully] for to lyve shamly and E ; for to liue and shamefully H.	
293. till] to EH.	309. than] E om.	
294. as I] haiff Ik.	311, 312 follow 313, 314 in H.	
295. wallanch] walence.	311. And] Right H. schir] E om.	
297. renȝe] reynȝe.	brysis] bryuss E ; Bruce H.	
299. gelis] gylis E ; Geiles H.		
de] the.		

284. [saw EH] C om.  
 286. [war E] were H ; so C.  
 288. [To EH] And C.  
 290. all] E om.  
 291. v] so E ; Fifteene H. hun-  
 dreth] hunder. weill] all.  
 293. till] to EH.  
 294. as I] haiff Ik.  
 295. wallanch] walence.  
 297. renȝe] reynȝe.  
 299. gelis] gylis E ; Geiles H.  
 de] the.
302. com] sped H.  
 303. that] E om.  
 305. Haffis] Hawys E ; Haue H.  
 307. heir] her E ; rather H.  
 308. till—schamfully] for to lyve  
 shamly and E ; for to liue and  
 shamefully H.  
 309. than] E om.  
 311, 312 follow 313, 314 in H.  
 311. And] Right H. schir] E om.  
 brysis] bryuss E ; Bruce H.

attacks Sir  
Edward Bruce's  
host.

So many set on  
him at once,

that he is soon  
overthrown and  
slain.

He was the third  
best knight of his  
day.

He fought thrice  
against the  
Saracens.

After the king's  
flight, all flee too.

Many flee to the  
river Forth, and  
[Fol. 100 b. C.]  
are drowned.

Bannockburn is  
so full of corpses,

[That] wes so sturdy and so stout,  
As dreid of na[kyn] thing had he,  
He prikit, cryand "argente!"

And thai with speris swa him met,  
And swa feill speris on hym set,  
That he and horſ war chargit swa  
That bath doune to the erd can ga ;  
And in that place than slayne wes he.  
Of his ded wes [rycht] gret pite ;

He was the thrid best knyght, perfay,  
That men wist liffand in his day ;  
He did mony a fair Iourne.

On sarisenis thre derenzeis did he ;  
And [in-till] ilk derenze of thai  
He vencust sarisenis twa ;  
His gret worschip tuk thar ending.

And fra schir amer with the king  
Wes fled, wes nane that durst abyde,  
Bot fled, scalit on ilka syde.

And thair fais thame presit fast,  
Thai war, to say suth, all agast,  
And fled swa richt effrayitly

That of thame a full gret party  
Fled to the wattir of forth ; and thar  
The mast part of thame drownit [war].

And bannokburn, betuix the braif,  
Of horſ and men so chargit waſ,

312

316

320

324

328

332

336

312. [That EH] He C.

313. [kyn E] kin H ; C om.

314. argente] the argente.

315. speris] misprinted spuris J.

with—swa] right sturdely H.

318. doune] E om. to] till. can]

gan.

319. than] thar E ; there H.

320. Of] And of H. [rycht E]

CH om.

321. best knyght] so EH ; knyght  
best C.

324. derenzeis] derenzeys E ; de-  
renyies H ; miswritten derenjenis C.  
did] faucht E ; made H.

325. [in-till E] into H ; of C.

326. vencust] wencussy E ; van-

quisht H.

322. all] swa.

323. swa] sa fast.

326. [war E] were H ; ar C.

328. Of-men] Off men, off hors  
E ; of men and horse H. chargit]  
stekyt.

- That apon drownit horſ and men  
Men mycht paſ dry atour it then.  
[And] laddis, swanys, and rangall,  
Quhen thai saw vencust the battall,  
Ran emang thame and swa can sla  
Thai folk, that no defens mycht ma,  
That it war pite for to se.
- I herd neuir quhar, in na cuntre,  
Folk at swa gret myschef war stad ;  
On a syde thai thair fais had,  
That slew thame dounie without mercy,  
And thai had on the tothir party  
Bannokburñe, that sa cummyrsum was  
Of slyk, and depnes for till pas,  
That thair mycht nañe atour it ryde.  
Thame worthit, magre thairis, abyde ;  
Swa that sum slayne, sum drownit war ;  
Micht nane eschap that eui' com thar.  
The quhethir mony gat avay,  
[That ellis-whar fled], as I herd say.  
The kyng, with thaſe he with him had,  
In a rout till the castell raid,  
And wald haue beyn tharin, for thai  
Wist noct quhat gat to get avay.  
Bot philip the mowbray said him till  
“The castell, schir, is at þhour will ;  
Bot, cum þe in it, þe soll se  
That þe soll soyne assegit be.  
And thar soll nañe of all yngland
- that men can  
pass over it  
dryshod.
- 340 The camp-  
followers assist  
in the slaughter.
- 344
- The English are  
in great distress.
- 348 On one side are  
their foes,
- and on the other  
side is Bannock-  
burn.
- 352
- Some are slain,  
some drowned;  
none escape,
- 356
- except those who  
fled in some other  
direction.
- 360
- Sir Philip Mow-  
bray advises the  
king of England  
not to attempt to  
stop in Stirling.

[Fol. 45. E.]

340. *atour*] owt our E; out ouer H.

341. [And EH] C om.

343. *emang*] amang. *can*] gan.344. *Thai*] Tha H; As E.345. *it*] E om.346. *I*] Ik.348. *a*] ane EH.349. *without*] for-owtyn.351. *cummyrsum*] cumlyrsum.352. *Of*] For EH, till] to.353. *atour*] out-out E; out ouer H.354. *worthit*] worthys. But there behooued them to abyde H.356. *euir*] so E; euer H; looks like ouir C.358. [That—fled] That elsewhere fled H; That ellis war fled E; And fled full fast C. *herd*] soll.367. *all*] E om.

"Better," says  
Sir Philip, "to  
rally your men,  
and ride round  
by the Park."

[Fol. 101. C.]

So the king and  
his men ride by  
the Round Table  
towards Linlith-  
gow

Douglas, with  
only 60 men,  
chases the  
English.

To mak ȝow rescourȝ tak on hand.

368

And but rescours may no castele

Be haldin lang : ȝhe wat this wele ;

Tharfor confort ȝow, and relye

Your men about ȝow richt straitlye,

And haldis about the park the way.

Knyt ȝow als sadly as ȝhe may,

For I trow that nane sall haf mycht

That chassis, with so feill to ficht."

And as he consalit, thai haue doñe ;

Beneth the castell went thai soyñe,

Richt by the rownde tabill thair way,

And syne the park [enveronyt] thai,

And toward lithkew held in hy.

Bot, I trow, thai sall hastily

Be convoyit with folk, that thai,

I trow, mycht suffer weill avay !

For schir Iames, lord of douglas,

Com till his kyng and askit the chaȝ,

And he gaf him leif but abaid.

Bot all to few of horȝ he hade ;

He had nocht in his rowt sixty,

The quhethir he sped him hastily

The way eftir the kyng to ta.

Now let him on his wayis ga,

And eftir this we sall weill tell

Quhat till hym in his chaȝ byfell.

371. *Tharfor*] And tharfor C; but EH om. And. *confort ȝow*] so EH; ȝow confort C.

372. *straitlye*] starkly.373. *the (2)*] ȝour EH.

374. *Knyt—sadly*] Rycht als sadly E; Als sadly knit H.

377. *as—consalit*] his consaill.

378. *Beneſt*] And be-newth E; And beneth H.

379. *thair way*] away.

380. *syne the*] the new H. [enveronyt] enweround E; enuironde

H; enveremyt C.

381. *lithkew*] lythkow E; Linlithgow H.383. *convoyit*] conuoyed H; conweyit E. *folk*] sic folk.386. *till his*] to the EH.387. *leif*] lieue H; it E.394. *till—his*] him in-till the chace. *Rubric from C*; H has—How the Erle of Harfurd in Bothwel was Tane ouer the walles, fled fra the chase.

How gud douglass chassit the king of Inglande  
eftir the battallis of bannokburne.

<b>Q</b> when the gret battell on this viſ		In this great battle, 30,000 English were slain or drowned.
Wes discumfit, as I deuif,	396	
Quhar xxx thousand thar wes ded,		
Or drownit in-to that ilk sted ;		
And sum war in-to handis tañe,	400	
And othir sum thair gat wes gañe,		
The erl of herfurd fra the melle		The earl of Hereford made his way to Bothwell, which then belonged to the English.
Departit, with a gret menȝhe,	404	
And straucht to bothwell tuk the vay,		
Ithat than at ynglis mennys fay		
Wes, and haldin as place of wer.		
Schir Walter gilbertstoune wes ther		Sir Walter Gilbertstoun commanded there.
Capitane, and [it] had in ward.	408	
The Erl of herfurde thiddirward		
Held, and wes tañe in our the wall,		Hereford and fifty men are taken in over the wall.
And fyfty of his men with-all,		
And sett in houȝ syndrely	412	
Swa that thai had thar no mastry.		
The layff went toward yngland ;		
Bot of that rout, I tak on hand,		
The thre parteis war tañe or slayne,		
The laiff with gret payñe hayñe ar gañe.	416	
Schir moris alsua de berclay		Sir Maurice de Barclay got away, [Fol. 101 b. C.] with some Welshmen,
Fra the gret battell held his vay		
With a gret rout of walis men ;		
Quhar-euir thai ȝeid, men mycht tham ken :	420	
For thai weill neir all nakid war,		

396. *I*] Ik.397. *thar wes*] wele war EH.398. *in-to*] in.399. *in-to*] in-till.400. *wes*] war E ; are H.404. *at*] in the E ; was in H.405. *and*] H om. *as*] as a H.J ; but E omits a.406. *gilbertstoune*] gilbertson EH. H. *de*] the EH.407. [*it EH*] C om.411. *houss* or *housis*] read housis as the expansion of the contraction in C ; howssis E ; houses H ; cf. l. 737.412. *mastry*] so CH ; mercy (!) E.415. *tane—slayne*] slane or tane.417. *moriss*] mawrice E ; Morisc

- who were nearly naked.
- Many of them are taken.
- Numbers flee to Stirling,
- so that the crags are covered with them.
- King Robert kept his men close to him; and so King Edward got away.
- After the battle, the Scotch began the plunder.
429. *strevilling*] strewilline E ; Striuling H. [*sic EH*] als C.
430. *wes*] was H ; war E.
434. *till*] to EH.
435. [*sa EH*] C om.
438. *ay*] so H ; in E.
439. *that—agane*] so EH ; agane that riss C.
442. *in-to*] in-till.
- Or lynyng clothis had, but mair.  
Thai held thair wayis in full gret hy ;  
Bot mony of thair cumpany, 424  
Or thai till yngland com, war tañe,  
And mony als of thame war slañe.  
Thai fled als othir wais ser,  
Bot to the castell that wes ner  
Of strevilling fled [sic] a menȝhe,  
That it wes wonder for to se ;  
For the craggis all helit war  
About the castell, heir and thar, 428  
Of thame that, for strinth of that sted,  
Thiddirward till warrande fled.  
And for thai war [sa] feill that thair  
Flede vnder the castell war, 432  
The king robert, that wes vitty,  
Held ay his gude men neir him by,  
For dreid that riȝt agane suld thai.  
This wes the cauf, forsuth to say, 436  
Quhar-throu the king of yngland  
Eschapit hañe in-to his land.
- Q** when at the feld so cleyn wes maid  
Of ynglifȝ men, that nane abad, 444  
The scottis men soyne tuk [in] hand  
Of thairis all that euir thai fand,  
\*As siluir, gold, clathis, and armyng, 447\*  
\*With [vessel] and all other thing  
\*That euir thai mycht lay on thar hand ;  
\*So gret a richeſt thair thai fand, 450\*
443. *at*] that EH.  
445. [*in EH*] on C.  
446. Sa great riches there they fand H (*which is repeated, with a inserted, four lines lower*).  
447\*—450\*. Not in E ; but found in H. *As siluir*] Siluer and H.  
*With vessel*] And vessel H ; With bestiall (!) C.

That mony man wes mychty maid  
Of the richeſ that thai thar had.

Quhen this wes doñe that ere said I,  
The king send a gret cumpany  
Wp to the crag, thaſe till assale  
That war fled fra the gret battale ;  
And thai thame ȝald, for-out debat,  
And in hand has thame tane, fut-hat,  
Syne to the kyng thai went thar way.

Thai dispendit haly that day  
In spoulȝeing and richeſ taking,  
Fra end wes maid of the fechting.  
And quhen thai nakit spulȝeit war  
That war slayñe in the battale thar,  
It wes forsuth a gret ferly  
Till se sammyn so feill dede ly.

Sevin hundreth paris of spuris rede  
War tane of knychtis that war dede.  
The erll of glowcister ded was thar,  
That men callit schir gilbert of clar ;  
And schir gelis de argente alsua,  
And payne typtot, and othir ma,  
That thair namys noct tell can I.  
And apon scottis mennis party

[Thar wes] slayne worthy knychtis twa ;  
Wilȝame Wepownt wes ane of tha,  
And schir Walter the roſ añe othir,  
That schir eduard the kyngis brothir  
Lufit, and held in sic dante

447. *wes mychty*] mychty wes E ;  
were rich H.

449. *ere said*] her say EH.

453. *for-out*] for-owtyn.

454. *thame tane*] tane thaim.

457. In riches, and in spraith  
taking H.

463. *Serin*] Twa EH ; Two A.  
*paris*] payr EH.

465. *ded was*] so EH ; was ded C.

447 Many were made  
rich ever after.

452 The English who  
had fled to the  
craggs give  
themselves up.

456 [Fol. 102. C.]

460 When the dead  
were all spoiled,  
the bodies formed  
a sad sight.

464 700 pairs of spurs  
were taken.

468 [Fol. 45 b. E.]  
Sir Gilbert of  
Clare, Sir Giles  
de Argentine,  
and Sir Payn  
Tybetot, were  
slain.

472 The Scotch lost 2  
knights, Sir  
William Vipont  
and Sir Walter  
Ross.

466. *clar*] Clare H.

467. *schir*] EH om. *gelis*] gylis.

468. *typtot*] typont EH.

471. [Thar wes E] Thair was H ;  
War C.

472. *Wepownt*] the wepoyn E ;  
Wepon H.

473. *the*] of EH.

475. *held*] had.

Sir Edward  
Bruce greatly  
mourned for  
Ross,

because he was  
fonder of Ross's  
sister than of his  
own wife Isabel.

Isabel's brother,  
David, Earl of  
Athol, out of  
revenge, on the  
eve of the battle,

seized some of  
the king's  
provisions at  
Cambuskenneth;  
[Fol. 102 b. C.]

for which he was  
banished.

That as him-self hym lufit he.  
And quhen he wist that he wes dede,  
He wes so wa and will of rede,  
That he said, makand full euill cher,  
That him [war] levar that Iournye wer  
Wndone, than he swa ded had beñe.  
Outaken him, men has nocht seyn  
Quhar he for ony man maid menyng ;  
For the caus wes of this lufing  
That he his sistir paramouris  
Lufit, and held all at [rebouris]  
His [awyne] wif, dame Esobell.  
And tharfor swa gret distans fell  
Betwix him and the erll davy  
Of adell, brother to this lady,  
That he, apon sanct Iohnnis nycht,  
Quhen [bath] the kyngis war bouñe to ficht,  
In cambuskynneth the kyngis vittale  
He tuk, and sadly gert assale  
Schir Wilȝame of herth, and him slew,  
And with hym ma men than enew.  
Quharfor syne in-till Ingland  
He was banyst, and all his land  
Was sesit, and forfalt to the kyng,  
That did tharof syne his likyng.

**Q** when the feld, as I said air,  
Wes dispulȝeit and left all bair,

479. *full*] E om. *euill*] iwill.  
 480. *[war* E] wald C. *war levar*] had rather H.  
     484. *For*] And EH. *this*] hys EH.  
     486. *[rebouris* E] rabouss C. *all* — *rebouris*] at great retoures H.  
     487. *[awyne* E] awne C. *Esobell*] Ysabell E; Issobell H.  
     490. *adell*] athole EH.  
     491. *he*] the Erle H.  
     492. *[bath* E] both H; C om.
493. *cambuskynneth*] so H; camys-kynnell E.  
     494. *He*] H om. *sadly*] hardly H.  
     495. *herth*] Airth H; keth E.  
     496. *ma men*] men ma.  
     497. *Quharfor*] Tharfor EH.  
     499. *and*] as EH. *forfalt*] forfaut E; forfeite H.  
     501. *Qwhen*] And when H. *said*] tauld ȝow E; tauld H.

The kyng and all his Cumpany  
 Ioyfull and blyth war and mery  
 Of the grace that thame fallyn was,  
 Towards thar Innys thair wayis tais  
 Till rest thame ; for thai wery war.  
 Bot for the erll gilbert of clar,  
 That slayne wes in the battale-place,  
 The kyng somdeill anoyit was,  
 For till hym neir syb wes he.  
 Than till a kirk he gert hym be  
 Brocht, and walkit all that nyght.  
 And on the morn, quhen day wes licht,  
 The kyng raif, as his wille wes.  
 Than till ane ynglis<sup>h</sup> knyght, throu caſ,  
 Hapnyt, that he ſeid waverand,  
 Swa that na man laid on hym hand,  
 And in a buſk hyd his armynge,  
 And waytit, quhill he saw the kyng  
 In the mornynge cum furth airly ;  
 Till him than is he went in hy.  
 Schir mermadak betwng he hecht,  
 He rakit till the kyng all richt,  
 And halsit hym apon his kne.  
 "Welcome, schir mermadak," said he,  
 "Till quhat man art thou prisoner ?"  
 "To nane," he said ; "bot till ȝow her  
 I ȝeld me, at ȝour will to be."  
 "And I resaiff the, schir," saide he ;  
 Than gert he trete hym curtasly.

The king and his  
 men, joyful and  
 merry, return to  
 rest themselves.

504 508 The king mourned  
 for Sir Gilbert  
 de Clare, his  
 kinsman, and had  
 him buried with  
 honour.

512

516 By chance an  
 English knight,  
 who had escaped  
 unhurt,

520

seeing the king,  
 yielded himself  
 to him.

524

His name was  
 Sir Marmaduke  
 Betoun.

528

The king received  
 him courteously,

504. *Ioyfull-war*] Glade, and ioyfull was H; Blyth and Ioyfull glaid E.

507. *Till*] To EH. *thai*] E om.

508. *clar*] clare H.

511. *neir*] ner wele.

515. *wille*] wille or willis CE  
 (printed willis J; wills P); vse H.

516. *till*] to H; E om.

519. *And*] E om. *hyd*] he hid H. E has with, but J prints he hid.

521. *mornynge*] morne.

523. *betwng*] the twengue E; the Twemane H.

525. *halsit*] hailsed H; halyst E.

527. *Till*] To EH.

528. *till*] to EH.

and sent him  
home to England.

He duelt lang in his cumpany, 532

And syne in yngland him send he,  
Arayit weill, but ransouñe fre,

And gaf hym gret giftis thar-to ;  
A worthy man that wald swa do

536

[Fol. 103. C.] Micht mak him gretly for to pris.  
Quhen mermadak apon this viſ

Wes ȝolden, as I to ȝow say,

Sir Philip .  
Mowbray delivers  
up Stirling castle  
to Bruce.

Than com schir philip the mowbray,

540

And to the king ȝald the castele ;

His cwnnand has he haldyñe wele,

And with him tretit swa the king,

That he become of his duellyng,

544

And held him lelely his fay

Quhill the last end of his [lyf-]day.

We now tell how  
Douglas chased  
the English.

**N**ow will we of the lord dowglas  
Tell, how he followit the chas.

548

He had quheyne in his cumpany,

Bot he sped him in full gret hy,

Going by the  
Torwood, he  
meets Sir  
Lawrence  
Abernethy,

And as he by the torwode fur,

[Sa met he, rydand on] the mwr

552

Schir lowrens of abyrnethy,

That with four scor in cumpany

Com for till help the yngliſ men,

For he wes yngliſ man ȝeit then.

556

Bot quhen that he herd how it wes,

who comes over

He left the yngliſ mennys peſ,

533. *in*] so H ; till E.

536. *wald swa*] sua wald E ; sa  
could H.

539. *I*] Ik.

544. *become*] belewytt E ; belefyt H.

546. [*lyf EH*] C om.

547. *Rubric in H*—How James  
Dowglas conuoyed the King Of Eng-  
land hame but Soiourning. *lord*]  
lord of.

548. *he*] that he.

549. *quheyne*] to quhone E :  
wheene H.

551. *by*] through E ; through II.

*fur*] foore H.

552. [*sa—on* E] He met rydand  
in C ; He saw come ryding ouer H.

553. *lowrens*] laurence EH.

554. *four scor*] xxiiij E ; sextie H.

557. *that*] EH om. *how*] how that  
EH.

- And till the lord douglas richt thar  
For till be leill and trew he swar ;  
And than thai bath followit the chas.  
And or the kyng of yngland waſ  
Passit lythkew, thai com so neir,  
With all the folk that with thaſe wer,  
That weill emang thame schut thai mycht.  
Bot thai thought thaſe our few to ficht  
With the gret rowt that thai had thar,  
For v hundred men armyt thai war.  
To-giddir sarraly raid thai,  
And held thame apon brydill ay.  
Thai war gouernit full wittely,  
For it semyt ay thai war redy  
For till defend thame at thar mycht,  
Gif thai assalȝeit war in ficht.  
And the lord douglas and his men  
Thought thai wald nocht purpoſ then  
For to ficht with thame all planly,  
He convoyit thame so narrowly,  
That of the henmast ay tuk he.  
Micht nane behynd his fallowis be  
Nocht a stane cast, [bot] he in hy  
Wes ded, or tane delyuerly,  
That [nane] rescours wald till hym ma,  
All-though he lufit hym neuir swa.  
On this wiſ thame convoyoit he,

559. *till*] to EH.560. *till*] to EH.563. *lythkew*] lythkow E; Lin-  
lithgow H.565. *emang*] amang EH. *schut*]  
shoot H; swyth E.566. *our*] to E; too H.567, 568. *Transposed in H.* *men*]  
EH *om.*573. *til*] to EH.575. *lord*] lord of.

to Douglas's side.

560

Ere king Edwar  
passes Linlith-  
gow, Douglas  
comes up with  
him.

564

[Fol. 46. E.]

568 The English band  
is one of 500 men.

572

576 [Fol. 103 b. C.]  
Douglas dare  
not attack them,580 but follows them  
continually,  
killing or captur-  
ing all stragglers.

584

576. How that he wald nocht  
shaip him then E; Thought it was  
not good purpose then H.579. *henmast*] hindmest H.581. *Nocht—stane*] A pennystane  
EH. [bot H] na E; than C.

583. [nane E] na C.

584. *lufit*] lywyd E; corr. to luwyd  
J.585. *wiss thane*] maner EH. *he*]  
them he H.

At Winchburgh  
the English bait  
their horses, and  
so does Douglas.

Quhill at the kyng and his menȝhe

Till Wynchburgh all cummyne ar.

Than lichtit thai, all that war thar,

588

Till bayt thar horȝ that war wery;

Than douglas and his cumpany

Baytit alsua besyde thaȝne neir.

Thai war so feill, withouten weir,

592

And in armys so clenly dicht,

And swa arayit ay to ficht,

And he so quheyne and but gadering,

That he wald nocth [in] playne fichting

596

Assaill [thaim,] bot ay [raid] thaȝne by,

Waytand his poynt ay ythandly.

A litill quhile thai baitit thar,

And syne lap on and furth thai fair;

600

And he wes alwais by thame neir.

He leit thame nocth haf sic laseir

As anys wattir for to ma;

[And] gif that ony stad war swa,

604

That behynd war left ony space,

Sesit all soyne in hand he waȝ.

Thai convoit thaȝne apon this wiȝ,

Quhill that the king and his rout is

608

Cummyn to the castell of dunbar,

Quhar he and sum of his men war

Resauit richt weill; for ȝeit than

The Erll patrik wes ynglis man,

612

That gert with met and drink alsua

till they come  
to Dunbar,

where Earl  
Patrick receives  
the English,

586. *at]* that EH.

rade H ; ryde C.

587. *Wynchburgh]* wenchburg E ;  
Wincheburgh H.

598. *poynt]* time H.

588. *thai]* E om. war thar] there  
were H ; thai war E.

601. *he]* E om.

589. *Till]* To EH.

603. *ma]* so EH ; may C.

590. *Than]* And EH.

604. [And EH] C om. that] E

594. *ay]* for EH.

om. swa] sa EH ; sway C.

595. *quheyne]* quhoyne E ; wheene  
H. *gadering]* so H ; supleyng E.

605. behynd war] he behind. That

596. [in EH] to C.

—left] And behind left was H.

597. [thaim EH] C om. [raid E]

606. all soyne] alsone.

607. apon—wiss] on sic awiss E.

610. men] menȝe.

Refresche thame weill, and syne gert ta  
 A bate, and send the kyng by se  
 Till balmeburch in his awne cuntre.  
 Thair horſ thar left thai all on stray,  
 Bot sesit wele soyne, I trow, war thai !  
 The laiff, that levit war without,  
 Adressit thame in-till aña rout,  
 And till berwik helde straucht the vay  
 In rout ; bot, and we suth sall say,  
 Thai levit of thair rout party,  
 Or thai come thair ; bot nocht-for-thi  
 Thai come till Berwik weill ; and thar  
 In-till the toune resauit war ;  
 Ellis at myscheiff had thai beyña.  
 [And quhen] the lord douglas has seyña  
 That he had lesit thar his Payne,  
 Toward the king he went agaña.

and sends King  
Edward in a  
boat to Bam-  
borough.  
[Fol. 104. C.]

616  
620  
The rest of the  
English push on  
to Berwick,  
which they enter.

624  
628 Douglas gives up  
the chase.

**T**HE kyng eschapit on this wiſ ;  
 Lo ! quhat falding in fortouña is,  
 That quhile apon a man will smyle,  
 And prik him syne ane othir quhile !  
 In na tyme stabilly can sche stande.  
 This mychty kyng of yngland  
 Scho had set on her quheill on hicht,  
 Quhen, with so ferlifull a mycht

632 Lo ! what are the  
changes of  
fortune !

636 Fortune had set  
the king of  
England on such  
a height,

616. *balmeburch*] bawmburgh E ;  
 Bamburgh H.

618. *sesit—trow*] leesed als soone  
 in hand H. *wele—trow*] I trow weill  
 soone.

619. *levit war*] lewyt thar.

620. *ane*] a.

621. *the*] thair EH.

622. *sall*] E om. *In—we*] In a  
 rout, and I the H.

623. They leaved of their men  
 partly H ; Stad thai war full narowly  
 E.

625. *till*] to . . . weill] soone H.

626. *In-till*] In-to EH.

627. *at*] at gret EH.

628. *So in EH* (*except lord off for*  
*lord in E*) ; The gud lord douglas  
 quhen he has seyne C.

629. *thar*] all.

631. *The*] written with red capital  
 Y (*for TH*) ; This E.

632. *falding*] *so* H ; fading E.  
*is*] lyes H.

633. *quhile*] whyles H ; will E.  
*will*] quhill.

634. *him*] on hym. *ane othir*] a  
 nothyr.

635. *stabilly*] stable EH.

and soon afterwards he was fain to escape with 17 men in a boat.

As a wheel turns, when one side is high, the other is low.

[Fol. 104 b. C.]  
So fared it with these two kings.

When Edward was down, then Bruce rose.

- Of men of armys and archeris,  
And of fute men and hobleris, 640  
He com rydand out of his land,  
As I befor has borne on hand.  
And on a nyght syne and a day  
Scho set hym in so hard assay, 644  
That he with sevintene in a bat  
Wes fayne for to hald hame his gat !  
Bot of this ilk quhelis turnyng  
Kyng robert suld mak no murnyng ; 648  
For his syde, throu the quhele on hicht,  
Wencust thar fais, wes mekill of mycht.  
  
 \*For twa contraris, þe may wit wele, 651\*  
 \*Set agane othir on a quhele ;  
 \*Quhen añe is hye, the tothir is law,  
 \*And gif it fall that fortoune throw  
 \*The quheill about, it that on hicht  
 \*Was ere, [on force] it most douñe lycht ; 656\*  
 And it, that wondir lawch wer ere, 651  
 Mon lowp on loft in the contrere.  
So fure it of thir kyngis two ;  
Quhen that king robert stad wes so,  
That in his gret myscheiff wes he,  
The tothir wes in his maieste. 656  
And quhen the kyng eduardis mycht  
Wes lawit, kyng robert lap on hicht  
And now sic fortoune fell hym till,

640. *hobleris*] hobeleris; Hobillers H.  
 642. *has*] so CE; have HJ.  
 643. *on*] in EH.  
 644. *Sidenote in E*—The quhele of fortoun.  
 645. *sevintene*] few men EH.  
 646. *to*] till.  
 649. *his*] on his. *throu*] of H; E om.  
 650. Raiss, quhen the tothyr doun gan lycht EH.  
 651\*—656\*. E om. *Found in H.*
- 652\*. *on*] in H.  
 653\*. *the tothir*] another H.  
 656\*. [on force H] C om. *most*] mon H.  
 651. *wondir*] wndre E. *wondir-wer*] laigh was vnder H.  
 652. *lowp*] lepe E; leape H. *loft*] hight H.  
 654. *that*] the.  
 655. *his*] E om.  
 658. *Wes—lap*] Woxt lesse, than Roberts raise H. *lap*] wes E; raise H.

That he wes hye and at his will.	660	
At strevilling wes he ȝeit lyand ;		Bruce remains at Stirling.
And the gret lordis that he fand		
Ded in the felde, he gert berye		
In haly placis honorabillly.	664	
And the laiff syne that ded war thar		
In-to gret pittes erdit war.		[Fol. 46 b. E.]
The castell and the towrys syñe		
Richt to the grund doun gert he myñe,	668	He destroys the castle.
And syne to bothwell send has he		
Schir Eduard with a gret menȝe.		
For thar wes fra thine send him worde		
That the riche Erll of herfurde,	672	
And othir mychty als, wes thar.		
Soyne tretit he with schir valtar,		
That erle, [and] castell, and the laiff,		
In-to schir eduardis hand he gaf.	676	
And to the king the erll send he,		
That gert him richt weill ȝemyt be,		
Quhill at the last thai tretit swa,		
That he till yngland hañe suld ga	680	
Without paying of ransouñe, fre,		Hereford is exchanged
And that for hym suld changit be		
Bischop robert, that blynd wes maid,		
With the queyne that thai takin had		
In presouñe, as befor said I,	684	
And [hyr] douchtir dañe mariory.		for the blind bishop Robert, the Scottish queen, and her daughter Margery.
The Erll wes changit for thir thre ;		
And quhen thai cummyn hañe war fre,	688	

661. *strevilling*] strewillyne E ;  
Striuling H.

664. *placis*] place.

668. *to*] till ; and in l. 677.

669. *has*] EH om.

671. *thar—send*] thar wes than  
send E ; they therein send to H.

674. *Soyne*] Swa E ; So H. *val-*  
*tar*] water E ; walter H.J.

675. [and EH] C om.

676. *In-to*] In E.

678. *ȝemyt*] kepted H.

681. *Without*] so H ; Withouten  
C ; For-owtyn E.

684. *With*] And EH. *takin*]  
takyn E ; taken H ; miswritten tak-  
ing C.

686. [hyr E] her H ; his C.

688. *hañe war*] war hame all EH.

Bruce marries his daughter to Walter Stewart.

The kyngis douchter, that wes fair,  
And wes als his apperand air,  
With Walter steward cañ he wed ;  
And thai weill soyñe gat of thar bed

692

[Fol. 105. C.]  
She bears a son, called Robert after his grandfather, who succeeded his uncle David II., who reigned 42 years.

Añe knaiff child, throu our Lordis grace,  
That eftir his gude eld-fadir was  
Callit robert, and syne wes king,  
And had the land in gouernyng

696

Eftir his worthy Eȳme, davy,  
That regnyt twa ȝer and fourty ;  
And in tȳme of the compylyng

Of this buk, this robert wes kyng,

700

And of his kynrik passit was  
v ȝeir ; and wes the ȝer of grace

Añe thousand thre hundredth and sevinty  
And v, and of his elde sixty.

704

**A.D. 1375.**

And that wes eftir that the gud king,  
Robert, wes brocht till his ending,  
Sex and fourty vyntir, but mar.

That is, 46 years after the death of the Bruce (A.D. 1329).

God grant that thai, that cummyne ar  
Of his offspring, maynteyme the land,  
And hald the folk weill to warrand,  
And maynteme richt and ek laute,  
As weill as in his tȳme did he !

708

712

King Robert's power increases daily.

**K**yng robert now wes weill at hycht,  
For ilk day than grew mair his mycht.  
His men war rich, and his cuntre

689. *kyngis*] king hys E ; Kings H.

700. *this* (2)] this last H.

690. *his*] E om.

703. E has—I thowsand iiic se-

691. *can*] gan. *Sidenote in E* (*scarce legible*)—water steward mariss king Robert dowchtir.

vynty.

693. *Ane*] A EH. *knaiff*] knew E : man H.

707. *Sex*] so H ; v E.

694. *eld-fadir*] auld father H.

711. *ek*] E om.

697. *Eyme*] sonne H. *davy*] dawy.

712. *Rubric in H*—How King Robert rade in England, And brunt vp all Northvmerland.

698. *twa*] nyne H.

714. *mair*] E om.

715. *war*] woux E ; woxt H.

Aboundanit weill of corñe and fee,	716	
And of alkynd othir richeſſ;		
Myrth, ſolaſſ, and ek blithnes		Mirth and
Wes in the land all comonly,		blitheness
For ilk man blith wes and Ioly.	720	abound.
The king, eftir the gret Iournee,		
Throu consell of his folk preve,		The king pro-
In ſeir townys gert cry on hicht,		claims that all
That quha ſa clamyt to haf richt	724	who claim to hold
To halde in ſcotland land or fe,		land or property
That in that tuelf moneth ſuld he		
Cum and clayme it, and tharfor do		must claim it
To the king that pertenynt thar-to.	728	and do homage
And gif thai come nocht in that ȝer,		within a twelve-
Than ſuld thai wit, withouten weir,		month.
That herd thar-eftir nañe ſuld be.		
The king, that wes of gret bounte		
And besynes, quhen this wes doñe,		[Fol. 105 b. C.]
Añe hoost gert ſummond eftir ſone,	732	
And went ſyne ſoyne in-till Ingland,		
And our-raid all northumbirland,	736	
And brynt houſſ and tuk the pray,		After this, Bruce
And ſyne went haſſe agane thar vay.		makes a raid into
I let it ſhortly paſſ [for-]by;		Northumberland.
For thair wes doñe na cheuelry		
Prowit, that [is] till ſpekk of heir.	740	
		No deed of arms
		is done at this
		time.

716. *Aboundanit*] Haboundyt E; Abounded H. *and*] ande C.

717. *alkynd*] alkyn. *richess*] ryches E; *spelt* richass C.

718. *Myrth*] And myrth H. *solass*] and ſolace E; ſolace H. *ek*] all H; E om. C transpoſes ſolass and blithnes; but ſee l. 720, where blith refers to the laſt ſb.

719. *Wes*] War. *all comonly*] commonaly. *land all*] hail land H.

722. *consell—folk*] rede off his consaill E; rede and counſell of his

H.

723. *ſeir*] ſundrie H.

724. *to*] till.

726. *that tuelf*] thai xij.

731. *herd*] hard EH.

735. *ſyne ſoyne*] thann E; *pr.* thaim J; then H.

737. *houſſ*] written for housis C; howſſis E; townes H. *the*] thair EH.

739. [for E] fer C; far H.

741. *Prowit*] Prooued H. [is EH] wes C. *till*] to EH.

The king makes  
several raids into  
England.

The king went oft on this maneir  
In yngland, for till riche his men,  
That in richeſ aboundanit then.

744

743. *till*] to EH.744. *aboundanit*] haboundyt E ; abounded H.

## [BOOK XIV.]

**H**ow the erll of carrik passit in Irland to vyn it, and  
with him erll thomas randal & schir philip the  
mowbray, schir Iohne stewart, schir Iohne sowlis,  
& ramsay of ouchtirhouss.

**T**HE erll of carrik, schir Eduard,  
That stowtar wes than ane libbard,  
And had no will till be in peſ, 4  
Thoucht that scotland to litill weſ  
Till his brothir and him alsua ;  
Tharfor till purpoſ can he ta  
That he of [Ireland] wald be kyng.  
Tharfor he send and had treting  
With the erischry of Ireland,  
That in thar lawte tuk on hand  
Of Ireland for to mak hym king,  
With-thi that he with hard fechting  
Micht ourcum the ynglis men,  
That in the land war wonnand then ;  
And thai suld help with all thair mycht.  
And he, that herd thaſe mak sic hicht,

Sir Edward, earl  
of Carrick, who  
was stouter than  
a leopard,

4 thought Scotland  
too small for  
himself and his  
brother.

8 He therefore  
treats with the  
Irishmen,  
who offer to elect  
him king,

12 if he will drive  
out the English.

16

*Rubric in H*—How sir Edward  
tooke on hand For to make weere into  
Ireland.

2. *ane*] a EH. *libbard*] Leopard

H.

3. *no*] na. *till*] to EH. *be in*]  
live at H.

6. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.

7. [Ireland E] Ireland H; yngland

C.

9. *the*] E om. *erischry*] Irshry H;  
hyrsery E.

10. *lawte*] leawte.

11. *Ireland for*] all Ireland E; all  
Ireland H.

14. *the*] that H. *wonnand*] win-  
ning H.

Sir Edward gathers an army, and embarks at Ayr, in the month of May, 1315.	In-till his hert had gret liking ; And with the consent of the king, Gaderit hym men of gret bounte, And at air syne schippit he,	20
He takes with him Earl Thomas [Fol. 47. E.] Randolph, Sir Philip Mowbray,	In-till the next moneth of maij ; Till Irland held he straucht his way. He had thair in his Cumpany The Erll thomas that wes worthy,	24
[Fol. 106. C.]	And gud schir philip the mowbray, That sekir wes in herd assay ; Schir Iohne the sowlis, a gude knycht ; And schir Iohne Steward, that wes wicht ;	28
Sir John de Soulis, Sir John Steward, Ramsay of Ouchtirhouse,	The ramsay als of ouchtirhouſ, That wes richt wicht and cheuelrouſ ; And schir fergus de ardrossañe, And othir knychtis mony añe.	32
and Sir Fergus of Ardrossan.	In vaveryng [fyrth] arivit thai Saufly, but bargane or assay, And send thair schippis home ilkañe. A gret thing haue thai vndertañe,	36
They arrive safely,	That with [sa] quheyne as thai war thar, That wes sex thousand men but mar, Schupe for to warray all Irland,	40
and send their ships home.	Quhar thai sall se mony thousand Cum armyt on thaſe for to ficht. Bot though thai quheyne var, thai var vicht,	

17. *In-till*] Into H. *had*] he had H.

20. And syne at Air shipped he H.

21. *In-till*] Into H. *next*] neyst E; neist H. *maiſ*] mai E; May H.

23. *He*] And H. *thair*] there H; than E.

25. *gud*] E om.

26. *wes*] wes ay C; but EH omit ay.

27. *the sowlis*] the soullis E; Sowles H. *a*] aue. *a—knycht*] that was wicht H.

28. *that—wicht*] a good Knight H.

30. *richt wicht*] wycht E; right wise H.

31. *de*] off E; of H.

33. *vaveryng*] wokingis E; Wolyngs H. [fyrth E] Firth H; furth C.

35. *send*] sent H.

37. [sa EH] C om. *quheyne*] quhoynē E; wheene H. *thar*] H om.

38. *wes*] was H; war E. *seuen*] seuen H.

39. *for*] E om.

42. *quheyne*] quhone E; wheene H. *var*] war E; were H (twice).

And, for-outen dreid or effray,  
 In twa battelis thai tuk the way  
 Toward cragfergus, it to se.  
 Bot the lordis of that cuntry,  
 Mavndwell, byset, and logañe,  
 Thar men assemblit euirilkane ;  
 De sawagis wes alsua thair.  
 And, quhen thai all assemblit war,  
 Thai war weill neir tuenty thousand.  
 Quhen thai wist that in-till thar land  
 Sic a menȝhe arivit war,  
 With all the folk that thai had thar,  
 Thai went toward thame in gret hy.  
 And fra schir eduard wist suthly  
 That neir till him cumand war thai,  
 His men he gert richt weill aray.  
 The vaward had the erll thomas,  
 And in the rerward schir eduard was.  
 Thar fais approchit to the fichting,  
 And thai met thame but abaysing.  
 Thar mycht men se a gret melle ;  
 For erll thomas and his menȝhe  
 Dang on thair fais sa douchtely,  
 That in schort tym men mycht se ly  
 Ane hundredth that all bludy war.

43. *for-outen*] for-owt E ; without H.

44. *thai*] E om.

45. *to*] for to C ; but EH omit for.

47. *Mavndwell*] Mandweill E ; Maundewile H. *byset*] besat E ; Bis-set H.

48. *assemblit*] they sembled H.

49. *De sawagiss*] The sawagis E ; The Sauages H. *wes*] war. *wes-thair*] als was with them there H.

50. *all*] E om.

52. *Quhen*] When that H. *in-till*] in H.

53. *gret*] H om.

BRUCE.

44 They come to Carricktergus.

Mandevill and others oppose them,

48

52 to the number of 20,000.

The Irish advance to the attack.

56 Edward Bruce prepares for defence.

60

A battle ensues.

64 Earl Thomas and his men [Fol. 106 b. C.] soon slay 100.

56. *fra*] when H. *suthly*] surely H. 57. *till*] to EH. *neir-him*] to him neere H.

58. *richt*] thaim. *he-weill*] right well he gart H.

59. *vaward*] awaward E ; Vangard H.

60. *in*] E om. *And-rerward*] In the Reereward H.

61. *Here H has the rubric*—The first battell that Sir Edward, Wan in Ireland, with feghting hard.

63. *gret*] full great H.

64. *For*] The H.

67. *hundreth*] hunder.

The wounded horses rear and kick.	For hobynis, that war stekit thar, Rerit and flang, and gret rowñe maid, And kest thame that apon thame raid. And schir Eduardis Cumpany	68
The Scotch pre- vail.	Assemblit syne so hardely, That thai thar fais ruschit all.	72
Those who fall have small power to rise.	Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall, It was perell of his Risyng. The scottis men in that fechting Swa apertly and weille thame bar, That thair fais swa ruschit war, That thai haly the flicht has tañe.	76
The flower of Ulster perished there.	In that battale wes tane or sláne All hale the flour of wllister. The Erll of murreff gret priſ had ther ; For his [richt] worthy cheuelry Confortit all his Cumpany.	80
It was a good beginning.	That wes a full fair begynnnyng ; For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng, In playne ficht thai discomfit thar Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war.	84
Their foes were 4 for 1. They retreat to Carrikfergus,	Syne to cragferguſ ar thai gañe, And in the toune has Innyss tañe. The castell wele wes stuffit then Of-new with wittale and vith men ;	88
which is besieged.	Thar-till thai set aña sege in hy. Mony ysche full apertly	92

69. *Rerit*] Relyt E ; Reilled H.71. *And—Eduardis*] Sir Edward  
and his H.72. *syne*] then H. *so*] sa.73. *ruschit*] there rushed H.75. *perell*] great perill H.78. *thair—ruschit*] all their faes  
rushed H.79. *That*] And H.80. *In*] That in.81. *flour*] flur. *wllister*] wlsyster  
E ; Wollistar H.82. *priss*] price E ; prise H.

83. [richt] right H ; CE om.

84. *Confortit*] Comforted H ; Com-  
fort E.85. *That*] This.87. *ficht*] fegh (sic) H ; bataill E.88. *Thar fais*] Tha folke H. *ay*  
*fowr*] iiii ay.91. *wele*] new H.92. *Of-new*] Right well H.94. *Mony ysche*] And mony ishe  
H ; Mony eschewe E.

Wes maid, quhill thar the sege lay, Quhill trewis at the last tuk thai.	96 A truce is made.
Quhen that the folk of wllister Till his pes haly cummyn wer, For schir eduard wald tak on hand Till ryde forthirmar in the land,	100
Thair come till hym and maid fewte Sum of the kyngis of that Cuntre Weill ten or tuelf, as I herd say ; Bot thai held hym schort quhile thar fay.	104
For twa of thame, ane makfulchiane, And ane othir, hat makmartane, With-set añe place in-till his way, Quhar him behuifit neyd avay,	108
With twa thousand of men with speris, And als mony of thair archeris ; And all the cattale of the land War drawin thidder to warrand.	112
Men callis that place endwillane ; In all Irland strater is nañe. For schir eduard that keptit [thai] ; [Thai] thought he suld nocht thar avay ;	116
Bot he his viage soyne has tañe, And straucht toward the plas is gañe.	

95. *sege*] sege it C; but E omits it.  
*thar—sege*] the Siege there H.

97. *wllister*] hulsyster E; Wollistar H.

99. *For*] Then H; E om.

100. *Till*] To. *forthirmar*] farther-mare H; furth forthyr E.

101, 102. *Transposed in EH. Sum*] And H; E om. H has the rubric—The withletting of the passe of Endnellane.

103. *I*] Ik.

104. *thar fay*] persay H (*wrong-ly*).

105. *makfulchiane*] makgullane E; Makgouliche H.

106. *makmartane*] makartane E;

Macarthane H.

107. *With-set—place*] With-set a pase E; Umbeset him H.

108. *behuifit*] behowyf. *neyd avay*] ned away E; of need to ga H.

112. *drawin thidder*] driuen hidder H.

113. *endwillane*] Innermallane E; Endnellane H.

115. [thai E] thay H; ay C. H has—For-thy Sir Edward there kept thay.

116. [Thai E] He C; And H.

117. *soyne*] sone E; straight H.

118. *straucht*] euen H. *plass*] place H; pass E.

The earl of Murray forces his way through.	The Erll of murreff, schir thomas, That put hym ay first till assayis, Lichtit on fut with his menȝhe, And apertly the plaȝ tuk he. The erische kyngis I spak of ar, With al the folk that with thame war, Met him richt sturdely ; bot he Assalȝeit swa with his menȝhe, That, magre thairis, thai wan the plaȝ ; Slayne of thair fayis fele thar waȝ.	120
[Fol. 47 b. E.]	Throu-out the wod thame chasit thai, And sesit in sic fusioñe thar pray, That all the folk of thar host war Refreschit weill añe owk or mair.	124
The Scotch chase the Irish host,	At kilsaggart schir eduard lay ; And thar weill soyne he haȝ herd say, That at dundawk wes añe assemble Maid of the lordis of that cuntry ; In host thai war assemblit thar.	128
and come to Kilsagart. Edward Bruce hears that his foes are gathering at Dundalk.	In host thai war assemblit thar. Thar wes first schir richard of clare, That in all Irland luf-tenand [Was off] the king of yngland.	132
Sir Richard Clare,	The erll of desmownt als wes thar, And the erll alsua of kyldare ; The bremayne with the wardouñe ;	136
the Earls of Desmond and Kildare,	119. <i>murreff</i> ] Murray H. 120. <i>ay first</i> ] fyrist ay E. H has — That first put him to all assayes. 121. <i>Lichtit</i> ] He lighted H. 122. <i>plaȝ</i> ] place H ; pass E. 123. <i>The</i> ] Thir. <i>erische</i> ] ersch E ; Irish H. 124. That in the place enbushed were H. <i>thame</i> ] him. 125. <i>richt sturdely</i> ] full stoutly H. 127. <i>thai</i> ] he H. <i>pluss</i> ] pass. 128. <i>fele thar</i> ] full mony H. 130. <i>fusioñe</i> ] fusione E ; abundance H. <i>thar</i> ] the EH. 132. <i>owk</i> ] wouk E; Oulk II; weeke A.	140
	133. <i>kilsaggart</i> ] kilsagart E ; Kylsagart H. 134. <i>thar</i> ] there H ; E om. 135. <i>dundawk</i> ] dundalk E ; Don-dalk H. <i>ane</i> ] au H ; E om. 138. <i>schir</i> ] H om. 139. <i>Irland</i> ] Irland wes C ; but EH omit wes. <i>luf-tenand</i> ] luftenend C. 140. [ <i>Was off</i> E] Was to H ; Maid be C. 141. <i>desmownt</i> ] desmond. <i>als</i> ] E om. 143. <i>bremayne</i> ] breman E ; Bryane eke H. <i>with the</i> ] and the H ; and E. <i>wardoune</i> ] wodoune E ; Wardane H.	

119. *murreff*] Murray H.  
 120. *ay first*] fyrist ay E. H has  
 — That first put him to all assayes.  
 121. *Lichtit*] He lighted H.  
 122. *plaȝ*] place H ; pass E.  
 123. *The*] Thir. *erische*] ersch E ;  
 Irish H.  
 124. That in the place enbushed  
 were H. *thame*] him.  
 125. *richt sturdely*] full stoutly H.  
 127. *thai*] he H. *pluss*] pass.  
 128. *fele thar*] full mony H.  
 130. *fusioñe*] fusione E ; abundance H. *thar*] the EH.  
 132. *owk*] wouk E; Oulk II; weeke A.
133. *kilsaggart*] kilsagart E ; Kylsagart H.  
 134. *thar*] there H ; E om.  
 135. *dundawk*] dundalk E ; Don-dalk H. *ane*] au H ; E om.  
 138. *schir*] H om.  
 139. *Irland*] Irland wes C ; but EH omit wes. *luf-tenand*] luftenend C.  
 140. [ *Was off* E] Was to H ; Maid be C.  
 141. *desmownt*] desmond. *als*] E om.  
 143. *bremayne*] breman E ; Bryane eke H. *with the*] and the H ; and E. *wardoune*] wodoune E ; Wardane H.

- Thir war lordis of gret renouñe. 144  
 The butler alsua thair wes,  
 And schir moris [le fyss] thomas ;  
 Thir with thair men ar cummyn [thar],  
 A richt gret hoost forsuth thai war. 148  
 And quhen schir eduard wist suthly  
 That thar wes sic añe cheuelry,  
 His host in hy he gert aray,  
 And thiddirwardis he tuk the way ;  
 And neir the touñe he tuk herbery. 152 Edward Bruce  
 comes to Dundalk.  
 Bot for he wist all wtirly  
 That in the touñe wes mony men,  
 His battalis he arrayit then, 156  
 And stude arrayit in battale  
 To kep thame, gif thai vald assale.  
 And quhen that schir richard of clare,  
 And othir lordis that war thare, 160 Sir Richard Clare  
 hears of his  
 approach.  
 Wist at the scottis men so neir  
 With thar battellis than cummyne weir,  
 Thai tuk to consell at that nycht,  
 For it was layt, thai wald noct ficht ; 164 They agree not to  
 fight that night.  
 Bot on the morne in the mornyng,  
 Weill soyn eftir the sone-rysing,  
 Thai suld ysche furth, all that war thair ;  
 Therfor that nycht thai did no mair, 168  
 Bot herbreyt thame on athir party.  
 That nycht the scottis Cumpany  
 War wachit richt weill, all at richt ;

144. *Thir*] That EH.

145. *wess*] was.

146. [le fyss E] le fitz H; besy or  
vesy C.

147. *Thir*] Thai E; That H.  
[*thar* E] there H; ar C.

149. *quhen*] E om. *suthly*] surely H.

150. *sic*] swilk. *ane*] a H; E om.

152. *he*] E om.

153. *he tuk*] tuk his E; tooke his H.

154. *all wtirly*] all witterly E;

right perfitelie H.

155. *wes*] war E; were H.

159. *Rubric in II*—The battell of  
Dondalk in Ireland, That Sir Edward  
tooke with his hand.

160. *war thare*] thar war.

161. *at*] that.

162. *than*] EH om.

163. *at that*] that that

167. *war thair*] thar war E; there  
were H.

Next morning, the Scotch await the attack.	And on the morn, quhen day ves licht, In twa battellis thai thame arayit ; Thai stude with baneris all displayit, For the battell all reddy bouñe. And thai that war within the touñe, Quhen soñe wes rysyn schynand clere, Send furth of thame that with him were Fifty, till se the contenyng Of scottis men and thar cummyng.	172
Sir Richard Clare sends 50 scouts,	And thai raid furth and saw thaim soyñe, Syne come agane, forouten hoyñe. And quhen thai sammyn lichtit war, Thai tald thair lordis that wes thar, That scottis men semyt to be Worthye, and of full gret bounte ; “ Bot thai ar noct, withouten wer, Half-deill añe dyner till vs here ! ” The lordis [had] of this tithyng [Gret Ioy, and gret] reconfortyng ; And gert men throu the cite cry, That all suld arñe thame hastily.	180
who return and say that the Scotch are hardly half a dinner for them.	184	
[Fol. 108. C.]	Quhen thai war armyt and purvayit, And for to ficht all haill arayit, Than went thai furth in gude aray ; Soyn with thair fayis assemblit thai, [That] kepit thame richt hardely. The stour begouth thair cruelly ; For athir [part] set all thair mycht Till rusche thair fayis in the ficht ;	192
The English and Irish advance.	196	
A great battle ensues.	198. <i>him</i> ] them H; in E. 179. <i>till</i> ] to. 182. <i>forouten hoyne</i> ] with-outyn hone EH. 184. <i>wes</i> ] wer. 185. <i>semyt</i> ] so E; miswritten semy C. 186. <i>full</i> ] right H; E om. 188. <i>ane</i> ] a EH. 189. <i>[had EH]</i> herd C.	200

190. [Gret—gret E] Great ioy,  
and great H; And had gret Ioy, and C.  
194. *to*] the EH.  
195. *Than—thai*] Thai went thaim,  
196. *Soyn*] Sone E; Syne H.  
197. [That EH] And C.  
198. *begouth*] so CE; began H.  
199. [part E] party H; parteis  
C.  
200. *Till*] To EH.

And with all mycht on other dang. The stalward stour lestit weill lang, That men mycht [nocht] persaue, no se, Quha mast at thar abovin mycht be.	204	
For fra soyn eftir the sofie-rysyng, Quhill eftir mydmorñe, the fichting Lestit, in-till sic añe dout ; [Bot] than schir eduard, that wes stout,	208	The battle is doubtful from sunrise to noon.
With all thañe of his Cumpany, Schot [apon] thame so sturdely, That thai mycht thole no mar the ficht. All in a frusche thai tuk the flicht ;	212	At last the Scotch prevail.
And thai followit full egirly. In-to the toune all comonly They enterit [bath] Intermelle.	216	Both hosts enter the town.
Thair mycht men fellowñe slauchtir se ; For the richt nōbil Erll thomas, That with his rout followit the chas, Maid sic a slauchtir in the touñe,	220	Thomas Murray slays many in the town.
And swa fellowñe occisiouñe, That the rewis all bludy war Of slayne men that war liand thar. The lordis war gottin all avay	224 [Fol. 48. E.]	The streets are all bloody.
And quhen the toune, as I ȝow say, Wes throu gret forþ of fechting tañe, And all thair fayis fled or slañe, Thai herbryit thame all in the touñe,	228	The Scotch find plenty to eat and drink.
Quhar of vittale was sic fusiouñe, And swa gret aboundans of vyñe, That the gud erll had gret dowtyne		

201. *mycht*] paine H.

203. [nocht E] not H; Com. no] na E; nor H.

204. *at—mycht*] that thar abowe suld E; there at abone sould H.207. *sic añe*] sik a H; swilk a E.

208. [Bot E] But H; That C.

210. [apon E] vpon H; on C.

214. *In-to*] In. *all comonly*] com-

monaly.

215. [bath E] baith H; bot C.

216. *mycht men*] men mycht EH.219. *sic*] swilk.228. *fusioune*] fusoun.229. *aboundanss*] haboundance.

vyne] wyne EH.

230. *gret*] E om.

- [Fol. 108 b. C.] That of thair men suld dronken be,  
And mak in drunkyneſ ſum melle. 232  
 The wine is portioned out.
- The Scotch are at ease.  
That nycht ryght weill at eiſ war thai,  
And richt blith of the gret honour  
That thame befell for thair valour. 236

**E**ftir this ficht thai ſoiornyt thair  
In-to dundawk, thre dais & mar ; 240  
 Syne tuk thai southwardis thar way.  
 The Erll thomas wes forrouth ay,  
And as thai raid throu the cuntre,  
Thai mycht apon the hillis se  
Sa mony men, it wes ferly. 244  
 And quhen the erll wald ſurdely  
Drefſ him to thame with his baner,  
Thai wald fle, all that euir thai wer,  
Swa that in ficht nocht aane abaid. 248  
 And thai southwardis thair wais raid,  
[Quhill] till a gret forest coīne thai ;  
Kilroſ it hat, as I herd say ; 252  
 And thai tuk all thair herbry thair.  
 In all this tyme richard of clare,  
That wes the kyngis luf-tenand,  
Of all the Barnage of Irland 256  
 A gret hoost he assemblit had ;

233. *ryne*] wyne EH. *lufre*] leveſ E; Lewerie H.

239. *Rubric* in H.—The third bat-tell in Ireland, That good Sir Edward tooke on hand.

240. *dundawk*] dundalk E; Don-dalk H. &] or H; but E.

241. *thar*] on thar C; but EH omit on.

242. Erle Thomas rade before them ay H.

248. *fle*] E om. *euir*] E om.

249. *ficht*] fight H; sycht E.

250. *southwardis*] southwart E; foorth on H.

251. [Quhill E] While H; Quhar C.

252. *Kilross*] Kylrose E; Kylros H.

I] Ik.

256. *all—Barnage*] so H; the barnagis E.

- Thai war v battellis, gret and braid,  
That soucht schir Eduard and his men ;  
Weill neir him war thai cummyn then. 260  
to attack Sir  
Edward,
- He gat soyne vittyng that thai weir  
Cumand on him, and war so neir.  
His men adressit he thame agañe,  
And gert thame stoutly tak the plañe ; 264  
And syne the erll thar come to se,  
And schir philip the mowbra send he,  
And schir Iohñe steward went alsua ;  
Furth till discouir, thair way [thai] ta. 268  
Thai saw the host cum soyne at hand ;  
Thai war, to geß, fifty thousand.  
Haym to schir Eduard raid thai then,  
And said weill, thai war mony men.  
He said agañe, “the ma thai be,  
The mair honour allout haue we,  
Gif that we beir ws manfully. [Fol. 109. C.]  
We are set heir In Iuperdy,  
Till vyn honour, or for till de ;  
We ar fra hayme to fer to fle ;  
Tharfor let ilk man worthy be.  
3oñe ar gadering of the Cuntre, 280  
And thai sall fle, I trow, lichtly  
And men assail [thaim] manfully.”  
All said thai than, “thai weill suld do.”

261. *vittyng*] witting H; wittring E.  
262. In haill battell comming neere H.  
263. *adressit he*] addressed he H;  
he dressyt E.  
264. *tak*] ta.  
265. *thar*] thaim E. *thar come*] came them H.  
266. *send*] so CE; sent H.  
268. *till*] to EH. *thair*] ther E;  
the H. *thai ta*] they ta H; to ta C;  
ta thai E.  
269. *cum soyne*] sene cum E; neere
- come H.  
271. *to*] till.  
275. *manfully*] manlyly.  
277. *Till*] To. *ryn*] wyn EH.  
*till*] to.  
278. *fra—fer*] to fer fra hame E;  
too far fra hame H.  
280. *ar*] so E; ar but C; are but H; which clogs the line. *gadering*] gadryngis E; gaddered H. *the*] this EH.  
282. [*thaim* E] them H; C om.  
*manfully*] manlyly.  
283. *thai than*] than that.

The 10,000 Scotch attack their enemies.	With that approchand neir thame to The Battellis come, reddy to ficht. And thai met thame with mekill mycht, That war ten thousand worthy men.	284
	The scottis all on fut war then, And thai on stedis trappit weill, Sum helyt [all] in Irne and steill. Bot scottis men, at thair metyng,	288
	With speris perssit thar armyng, And stekit horf, and men doune bar. Ane fellowne fechting wes [than] thair ; I can nocht tell thair strakis all,	292
	Na quha in ficht gert othir fall ; Bot in schort tyne, I vndirta, Thai of Irland war cummyrrit swa That thai durst nae abyde no mar,	296
The Scotch, though on foot, prevail against the Irish on horseback.	Bot fled scalit, all that thai war, And levit in the battell-stede Weill mony of thar gud men ded. Of wapnys, armyng, and ded men	300
	The feld wes haly strewit then.	304
The field was strewed with dead men and armour.	That gret hoost roydly russhit wes ; Bot schir eduard leit no man chaf ; Bot with prisoners that thai had taen Thai till the wod agane ar gaen,	308
	Quhar that thair harnef levit wer.	
The Scotch make good cheer.	That nycht thai maid thame mery cher, And lovit god fast of his grace. This gud knyght, that so worthy was,	312
[Fol. 109 b. C.]	Till Iudas, machabeus that hicht,	

288. *scottis*] scottis men.290. [*all EH*] thame C.294. *Ane*] A. *fechting*] slaughterH. [*than E*] then H ; thar C.297. *I.*] Ik.298. *cummyrrit*] cumbred H ; con-  
traryit E.299. *nane*] than E ; them H.300. *that-war*] here and there H.303. *and*] and of E.305. *roydly*] rudly E ; rudely H.310. *thame mery*] so H ; thair men  
gud E.312. *This*] The EH.313. *that hicht*] mycht E ; might  
H.

Micht liknyt weill be in that ficht.  
 Na multitud he forsuk of men,  
 Quhill he hade ane aganis teñ.

Edward Brnee is  
 likened to Judas  
 Maccabeus.

316

**T**hus, as I said, richard of clare  
 And his gret hoost rebutit war.  
 Bot he about him, nocht-for-thi,  
 Wes gaderand men ay ythandly,  
 For he thought ȝeit to cowir his cast.  
 It angerit him richt ferly fast,  
 That twiȝ in-to battell was he  
 Discumfit with aȝe few menȝhe.

Sir Richard of  
 Clare

320 [Fol. 48 b. E.]

thinks to fight  
 again.

And scottis men, that in the forest  
 War ryddin, for till tak thair rest,  
 All thai twa nychtis thair thai lay,  
 And maid thame myrth, solace, and play.

324

The Scotch rest  
 for 2 nights;

Toward odymsy syne thai rayde,  
 Aȝe erische kyng, that ayth had mayd  
 Till schir Eduarde of fewte ;

328

then ride to meet  
 O'Dymsy,  
 an Irish king who  
 had vowed fealty  
 to Bruce.

For forrowth that him prayit he  
 To se his land, and na vittale,  
 [Na nocht] that mycht him help, suld fale.  
 Schir Eduard trowit in his hicht,  
 And with his rout raid thiddir richt.  
 A gret revar he gert hym paȝ ;  
 And in a richt fair place, that was

332

336

314. Belyknyt weill that in-to fycht  
 EH; (*miswritten* in-to that fycht  
 EH).

315. *Na—he*] Forsuk na multitud  
 EH.

317. *Rubric in H*—How an Irish  
 king, false and foward, Leete out a  
 Loch vpon Sir Edward.

320. *ythandly*] ythenly E; ithandly  
 H.

321. *cowir*] recouer H.

323. *in-to*] in-till.

324. *ane*] A.

325. *in*] to EH.

326. *till tak*] to mak.

329. *odymesy*] ydymesy E; Endrossy  
 H.

330. *erische*] irsche E; Irish H.

331. *Till*] To EH. *of*] of his  
 H.

332. *forrowth that*] before that time  
 H.

334. [*Na nocht* E] Nor not H;  
 Com. *him*] thaim. *that—him*] that  
 they might helpe H. *fale*] nocht fale  
 C; but EH om. nocht here.

337. *revar*] rywer E; Riuer H.

- O'Dymsy makes  
the Scotch cross a  
river,  
and encamp in a  
low place.  
  
He removes all  
the cattle in the  
neighbourhood.  
  
He then lets out  
a loch,  
in order to flood  
their camp.  
  
[Fol. 110. C.]  
The Scotch are  
soon all afloat.
- O'Dymsy gave  
them nothing to  
eat, but they had  
plenty of water to  
drink.
- Lawch by a brym, he gert thame ta  
Thair herbry, and said, he vald ga  
To ger men vittale to thame bring.  
He held his vay but mair duelling ;  
For till betraif<sup>3</sup> thame wes his thought.  
In sic añe place he has thame brought,  
Quhar of Iourneis weill twa & mair  
All the cattell withdrawin war ;  
Swa that thai in that land mycht get  
No thing that worth war for to et.  
With hungryr he thought thame to Feblis,  
Syne bring on thame thair enymys.  
This fals tratour his men had maid,  
A litell owth quhar [he] herbryit hade  
Sehir eduard and the scottis men,  
The ysche of a louch to den ;  
And leit it out in-to the nycht.  
The vattir than with sic a mycht  
On schir Edwardis men come douñe,  
That thai in perell war till drouñe ;  
For, or thar wist, on flot war thai.  
With mekill payñe thai gat avay,  
And held thar livis, [as] god gaf graf<sup>3</sup> ;  
Bot of thair harnes tynt thier was.  
He maid thame na gude fest, perfay,  
And nocht-for-thi yneuch had thai.  
For though thame falit of the met,  
I warne ȝow weill, thai war weill wet.  
In gret distreß thair war thai stad,

339. *Larch*] Laigh H. *brym*] bourne E ; Burne H.

343. *till*] to EH.

344. *ane*] A.

345. *Quhar—twa*] Quhar of twa Iournais wele E ; Wherefra twa iourneys well H.

351. *tratour his*] traytouris E ; Traitours H.

352. *owth*] South H ; E om. [he EH] thai C.

354. *ysche*] ischow E ; Ishe H.

*den*] so E ; dem H.

356. *rattir*] watre. *sic*] swilk.

358. *till*] to EH.

360. *away*] away.

361. *livis*] lyff. [as EH] and C.

365. *thame falit*] they wanted H.

- For gret defalt of mete thai had ; 368  
 For thai betuix thai riveris tway  
 War set, and mycht paſ naſe of thai.  
 The bane, that is añe Arñe of se,  
 That with horſ may nocht passit be,  
 Wes betuix thame and wllister.  
 Thai had beyn in grett perell ther,  
 Ne war añe scummar of the se,  
 Thomas of dwn hattyn weſ he,  
 Herd that the host so stratly than  
 Wes stad, and [salyt] up the ban,  
 Quhill he com weill neir quhar thai lay.  
 Thai knew him weill, and blith war thai. 380  
 Than, with four schippes that he had tane,  
 He set thame our the ban ilkane.  
 And quhen thai come in biggit land,  
 Wittale and mete yneuch thai fand ;  
 And in a wode thame herbryit thai.  
 Nane of the land wist quhar thai lay ;  
 Thai esyt thañe, and maid gud cher.  
 In-till that tyme, besyde thañe ner,  
 With a gret host, richarde of clar,  
 And othir gret of Irlande, war  
 Herbryit in-till a forest syde.  
 And ilke day thai gert men ryde 384  
 To bring wittalis, on ser maneris,  
 Till thame fra the toune of Coigneris,  
 That weill ten gret myle wes thaim fra.  
 Ilk day, as thai wald cum and ga, 388  
 392

A river is between them and Ulster.  
 372

376 One Thomas of Down sails towards them,

and, with 4 ships,  
 carries them over  
 the river.

384

None of the Irish  
 know where the  
 Scotch are.

388

The Irish host  
 send out foragers  
 to a town called  
 Conyers.

396

368. *defalt*] defaut.  
 369. *For*] And EH. *thai* (2)]

great H; E om. 378. [*salyt* E] sailed H; sovit or  
 sobit C.

382. *thame*] E om.

389. *richarde*] schyr rychard.

391. *in-till*] into H; in E.

393. *wittalis*] vittaill E; vittailes

H.

394. *Till*] To EH. *Coigneris*]  
 Cogners H.

376. *dwn*] downe E; Dun H.

- [Fol. 110 b. C.] Thai come the scottis host so ner,  
 That bot twa myle betuix thaim wer.  
 And quhen erll thomas had persaving  
 Of thair come and thair gaderyng, 400  
 He gat him a gud Cumpany,  
 Thre hundred on hors wicht and hardy.  
 Thar wes schir philip the mowbray,  
 And schir Iohne stewart als, perfay, 404  
 With schir alane stewart alsua,  
 Schir gilbert boyde and other ma.  
 Thai raid till meit the vittelleris,  
 That with ther wittale fra coigneris  
 Com, haldand to the host the way.  
 So suddanly on thame schot thai,  
 That thai war sa abaysit all,  
 That thai leit all thair vapnys fall, 412  
 And mercy pitwysly can cry.  
 And thai tuk thame in thair mercy,  
 And has thame up so [clenly] tane,  
 That of thame all eschapit nañe. 416  
 The Erll of thañe [gat wittering]  
 That of thair host, in the evynnyng,  
 Wald cum out, at the woddis syde,  
 And aganis thair wittale ryde.  
 He thought than on a Iuperdy ;  
 And gert his menȝhe halely  
 Dicht thame in the prisoners aray ;

397. *the*] the E ; printed to the J.  
 399. *Rubric* in H — How Sir

Thomas of Randell, Wan fra the  
 Irishmen their vittell. *erll*] the erle.  
*had*] EH *om.*

400. *of*] Had off EH. *come*] so  
 H ; cummyng E. *gaderyng*] ganging  
 EH.

402. *hundreth*] hunder E.

405. *With*] And EH.

406. *gilbert*] robert EH.

407. *till*] to EH.

408. *coigneris*] Cogners H ; see I.  
 394.

413. *pitwysly*] petously. *can*] gan.

415. [clenly E] cleanly H ; cleirly  
 C.

417. *of*] through H. [gat witter-  
 ing EH] he had vittyng C.

419. Some wald come out of the  
 Wood side H.

421. *a*] ane.

422. *menȝhe*] men all H.

423. *the*] H *om.*

- Thair pennownys als with thame tuk thai. 424  
 And quhill the nycht wes neir, thai baid,  
 And syne toward the host thai raid.  
 Sum of thair mekill host has seyne  
 Thair come, and wende weill thai had beyñe 428  
 Thair vittelouris ; tharfor thai raid  
 Agane thame scalit, for thai hade  
 Na dreid that thai thair fayis wer ;  
 And thame hungerit alsua weill sair.  
 Tharfor thai come abandonly ; 432  
 And, quhen thai neir war, in gret hy  
 The Erll, and all that with him war,  
 Ruschit on thame with wapnys bar,  
 And thair ensenȝeis hye can cry ;  
 And thai, that saw so sudantly  
 Thair fayis dyng on thañe, wes rad,  
 That thai no hert till help thame had ; 436  
 Bot [to] thar host the vay can ta ;  
 And thai chasit, and feill can sla,  
 That all the feldis strowit war ;  
 Ma than añe thowsand ded wes thar. 444 and lose 1000 men.  
 Richt to thar hoost thai can thame chass,  
 And syne agane thair wayis tais.

**O**N this wiss wes the wittal tañe,  
 And of the erysche men mony slañe. 448  
 The Erll syne, with his Cumpany,  
 Prisoners and wittalis halely  
 Haſ brocht till Schir Eduard als swith ;

424. *pennownys*] Prisoners (*sic*) H. E ; they H.  
 428. *weill*] E om. 442. *feill*] sua fele E ; so feill H.  
 430. *scalit*] safely H. *can*] gan.  
 432. And als they hungryd very 443. *strowit*] ouerstrowed H.  
 saire H. 444. *Ma*] so EH ; May C. *wes*] war.  
 437. *hye can*] hey gan.  
 438. *And*] Than. *so*] sua.  
 439. *wes*] were H ; wad sa (*sic*) E.  
 441. [to EH] C om. *host*] ost E ; 445. *to*] till. *can*] gan.  
 Wood H. *the*] than EH. *can*] gan. 446. *tais*] gaes H.  
 448. *erysche*] Irche E ; Irish H.  
 451. *Hass*] Thai E ; They H. *als*  
*swith*] alswith.

The Irish are  
 deceived, and  
 advance without  
 suspicion.

The Irish are  
 frightened,  
 [Fol. 111. C.]  
 and flee;

440

and lose 1000 men.

The Earl of  
 Murray presents  
 his prisoners to  
 Edward Bruce.

The Irish deter-  
mine to go to  
Conyers,

and do so.

The Irish send  
out scouts,  
but they are  
taken.

Murray gets  
information from  
a prisoner,

who says,

454. *Richt—than*] For rycht all E ; For they euen H.

455. *all wachit*] ay walkyt E ; all watched ay H.

457. *wass*] war E ; were H.

458. *all*] als EH.

459. *to*] their H. *at*] that EH.

460. *coigneris*] Cogneres H.

462. *in*] than in.

463. *on*] be E ; by H.

464. *wittale of*] of wictal E ; vit-  
taile H.

465. *merely gud*] rycht mery E ;  
merie and good II.

And he wes of thair cummyng blith.  
That nycht thai maid thame merye cher ;  
Richt all than at thair eis thai wer.  
Thai war all wachit sekyrly,

And thair fais, on the tothir party, 456  
Quhen thai herd how thar men waſ ſlañe,  
And how thar wittal all wes tane,  
Thai tuk to consell at thai wald  
Thair wayis toward coigneris hald,  
And herbry in the cite ta.

And in gret hye thai haue doñe swa ;  
And raid on nycht to the cite.

Thai fand thair wittale of gret plente, 464  
And maid thame merely gud cher ;  
For all trast in the toune thai wer.

Apon the morn thai [send] to spy,  
Quhar scottis men had tane herbery.

Bot thai war met with all, and tane,  
And brocht richt till the hoost agane.

The Erll of Murreff richt mekly  
Sperit at aſe of [thar] Cumpany,  
Quhar thar host wes, and quhat thai thought  
Till do ; and said him, “giff he moucht  
Fynd that till hym the suth said he,  
He suld gang hame but ransouñe fre.” 476  
“Forsuth,” he said, “I sall þow say.

466. *trast*] traist EH.

467. [send E] sent H ; set C. Cf.  
1. 266.

469. *met*] E om. *all and*] and all H ; all als E.

470. *agane*] ilkane EH.

471. *Murreff*] Murray H.

472. *Sperit*] He sperit C ; but EH omit He. [thar E] their H ; his C.

473. *wes*] lay H.

474. *Till*] To EH. *him giff*] gif that H.

477. *Forsuth—said*] He said for-  
suth EH.

Thai thynk, the morn, quhen it is day,  
To seik ȝow with all thair menȝhe,  
Giff thai may get wit quhar ȝhe be.

480

Thai haf gert throu the cuntry cry,  
[On] Payne of liff full felonly,  
That all the men of [this] Cuntry  
This nyght in-to the Cite be.

484

And trewly thai soll be so feill,  
That ȝe soll no wiȝ with thame deill."  
"De pardew," said he, "weill may be!"

To schir Eduard with that ȝeid he,  
And tald hym wtrely this taill.

Than [haf thai tane] for conseil haill,  
That thai [wald] ryde to the cite  
That ilk nyght, swa that thai mycht be  
Betuix the toune, with all thar rout,  
And thame that war the toune without.  
As thai deuisit, swa haue thai doȝe;

Befor the toune thai come alsoyne,  
And but half deill a myle of way  
Fra the cite thar rest tuk thai.

And quhen the day wes dawin licht,  
Fifty on hobynis, that war wicht,  
Com till a litill hill, that wes  
Bot fra the toune a litill spaȝ,  
And saw schir Eduardis herbery;  
And of the sicht had gret ferly,  
That sa quheyn durst on ony wiȝ

488

The Scotch  
resolve to encamp  
near the town.  
[Fol. 111 b. C.]

492

478. *the]* to.

482. [On H] Off E; Vndir C.

483. [this EH] his C.

484. *This]* To E; The H. *nyght]*  
morne (*wrongly*) H.487. *Rubric in H*—How Thomas  
Randell chased hame, The Scurreours  
that fra Cogners came.489. *wtrely]* vtterly H.490. [haf E] haue H; as C. [thai  
tane EH] thai com C.

491. [wald E] will CH.

492. *ilk]* same H. *mycht]* may H.494. *the toune]* so H; to cum E.495. *swa]* so H; E om. *haue thai]*  
thai haf.497. *half deill]* halfindall.498. *cite]* toun H. *thar]* a EH.499. *dawin]* dawyn E; dawning H.505. *quheyn]* quhone E; wheene H.505. *durst]* H om. *on]* vpon H; E om.

Wndertak sa hyc Emprif <sup>3</sup> ,		
As for till Cum sa hardly		
Apon all the [gret] cheuelry	508	
Of yrland, for till byde battale.		
And swa it wes, forouten fale ;		
For agane thame war gaderit thair		
With the wardane, Richard of clar,	512	
The butler, with [the] Erllis twa,		
[Of] Desmwnd and [kildar] war tha,		
Brwman, wardwn, and syr waryn,		
And schir pascalle, [a] florentyn,	516	
That wes añe knyght of lumbardy,		
And wes full of gret cheuelry.		
The mawndwilis [war] thar alsua,		
Besatis, loganys, and othir ma ;	520	
Sawagis als ; and ȝeit wes añe,		
Hat schir nycholl of kyllvanane.		
And with thir lordis so feill wes then,		
There were 5 Irish for 1 Scot.	524	
[Fol. 112. C.]		
That, for añe of the scottis men,		
I trow that thai war fiff or ma.		
Quhen thair discurrowris seyñe haſſ swa		
The scottis host, thai went in hy,		
And tald thair lordis all opynly,	528	
How thai till thame war cumannid ner ;		

506. *Wndertak*] Durst vndertake H.  
 507. *till*] to EH.  
 508. [gret] great H; CE om.; it seems required. Cf. l. 518.  
 509. *till*] to EH.  
 510. *forouten*] with-owtyn.  
 513. *butler*] Butlers H. *with*] and EH. [the H] CE om.  
 514. [Of H] Off E; C om. *Desmwnd*] Desmound E; Delmound H; Dosmwnd C. [kildar EH] gildar C. *war tha*] alswa H.  
 515. *Brwman*] Brynname E; Brumname H. *wardwn*] wedoune EH. *syr*] so CH; fyze E. See l. 143.  
 516. *pascalle*] paschall E; Plastayne H. [a H] of CE.

517. *ane*] A.  
 518. *gret*] E om.  
 519. *The*] And H. *mawndwilis*] mawndweilis E; Maundewell H. *[war* E] was CH.  
 520. *Besatis*] Bissatris H. *loganys*] Loganes H. See l. 47  
 521. *Sawagis*] The Sauages H.  
 522. *Hat*] That heght H. *nycholl*] Michell H. *kyllvanane*] kylkenane E; Kylcalane H.  
 523. *ma* EH] may C.  
 526. *discurrowris*] Discurreours H.  
*hass*] hes H; had E.  
 528. *all*] EH om.  
 529. *till*] to EH. *cummand*] coming H; cummyn E.

To seik thame fer wes na myster.		No need to seek the Scotch.
And quhen the Erll thomas had seyñe		
That thai men at the hill had beyñe,	532	
He tuk with him a gude menȝhe,		
On horȝ añe hundred thai mycht be,		Murray and 100 horsemen lie in ambush.
And till the hill thai tuk the way.		
In a slak thame enbuschit thai ;	536	
And, in schort tyme, fra the Cite		
Thai saw cum rydand a menȝhe,		
For till discowir, to the hill.		
Than war thai blith, and held thaȝe still	540	They keep quiet and at last sur- prise some of the Irish,
Quhill thai war cummyn to thame ner ;		
Than in a frusche, all that thar wer,		
Thai schot apon thaȝe hardely.		
And thai, that saw so suddandy	544	
Thai folk cum on, abaysit war ;		
And nocht-for-thi, sum of thame thar		who partly flee, and partly resist ;
Abaid stoutly, to mak debat ;		
And othir sum ar fled thar gat.	548	
And in-to weill schort tyme [war] thai,		
That maid [arest], cumrayit swa,		but even those who resist take to flight at last.
That thai fled halely thair gat ;		
And thai thame chassit richt to the ȝate,	552	
And a gret part of thame haf slane,		
And syne went till thar host agane.	554	

534. *hundreth*] hunder.538. *rydand*] *so* E ; rydande C.539. *discowir*] discouer H ; discur  
E.541. *cummyn* E] commen H ; mis-  
written cummyne C.542. *frusche*] rush H. *thar*] thai  
E ; they H.545. *Thai*] Tha H ; That E547. *mak*] make H ; ma E.

549. [war E] were H ; ar C.

550. [arest EH] thar rest C. cum-  
rayit] miswritten cumrayd C ; con-  
traryit E ; disrayed H.552. *richt*] H om.

## [BOOK XV.]

When those  
within the town  
see their men  
slain,

Qwhen thai within haſ seyn swa slañe  
Thair men, and chassit ham agane,  
Thai war all wa, and in gret hy  
Till Armys hely can thai cry.

4

they make a sally.

Thai yschit out, all weill arayit,  
In battale with baneris displayit,  
Bowne on thar best wiſ, till assale  
Thair fais in-to fell battale.

8

Sir Philip de  
Mowbray advises  
Edward Bruce.

And quhen schir philip the mowbray  
Saw thame ysche in sa gud aray,

12

Till schir eduard the bryſ went he,  
And said, “schir, it is gude that we

[Fol. 112 b. C.] Schape for sum slicht, that may availl  
Till help ws in this gret battail.

16

Our men ar quheyn, bot thai haf will  
Till do mair than thai may fullfill.

Sir Philip's plan.

Tharfor I rede, our caryage,

20

Forouten ony man or page,

By thame-selwyne arayit be;

1. *Rubric in H*—The feird battell E; In haill battell with Baner displayed H.  
in Ireland, That Sir Edward wan with  
strang hand.

3. *na EH*] way C.

4. *Till*] To H. *can*] gan.

5. *Thai*] Than. *at*] that.

8. In-to the bataill baner displayit

10. *fell*] so CH; fele E.

12. *in EH*] in-to C.

16. *in—gret*] so CH; in-to this E.

17. *quheyn*] quhoyne E; good H.

18. *Till*] To EH.

- And thai sall seyme fer ma than we.  
 Set we befor thame our baneris ;  
 3on folk that cummys out of Coigneris,  
 Quhen thai our baneris thair may se,  
 Sall trow trastly that thair ar we,  
 And thidder in gret hy [sall] ryde.  
 Cum we than on thame at a syde,  
 And we sall be at avantage ;  
 For, fra thai in our Caryage  
 Be enterit, thai sall cummyrrit be ;  
 [And] than with all our mycht may we  
 Lay on, and do all that we may."  
 And as he ordanit, done haf thai.  
 And thai that com out of Coigneris  
 Adressit thame to the Baneris ;  
 And smat with spures the horſ in hy,  
 Ruschand emang thame sodanly.  
 The Barell-feris that war thar  
 Cumrayd thame fast that rydand war.  
 And than the Erll, with his battale,  
 Com on, and sadly can assale.  
 And Schir Eduard, a litill by,  
 Assemblit swa richt hardely,  
 That mony fey fell vnder feit ;  
 The felde wox soyñe of blud all weit.  
 With so gret felony thar thai faucht,  
 And sic rowtis till othir raucht  
 With stok, with stane, and with retrete,

" Let us set up  
our banners before  
the baggage,

28 whilst we lay  
wait for them."

32

His plan is  
adopted.

36 The assailants at-  
tack Sir Edward's  
baggage.

40

The Scotch issue  
from their am-  
bush.

44

A fierce battle  
ensues.

48

24. *Coigneris*] so CE; Cogners H. And rushed H. *emang*] amang H;  
 26. *trow*] trew.  
 27. [sall EH] will C. *ryde*] thai  
rid.  
 31. *cummyrrit*] combryt E; cum-  
bred H.  
 32. [And EH] C om.  
 34. *And*] All.  
 37. *smat—horſs*] strooke the horse  
with spurres H.  
 38. *Ruschand*] And ruschyt E;
24. *feris*] ferraris E; ferrars H.  
 40. *Cumrayd*] Cumbryt E; Cum-  
bred H.  
 42. *can*] gan.  
 44. *swa—hardely*] with his com-  
pany H.  
 45. *fey*] a fey EH.  
 49, 50. H omit. *can*] gan.

	As athir part can othir bet, [That] it wes hydwif for to se How thai mantemyt that gret melle So knychtlik apon athir syde, Giffand and takand woundis vyde,	52
It was past prime, before either side got any advan- tage.	That pryme wes passit, or men mycht se Quha mast [at] thair abovin mycht be. Bot soyne eftir that pryme wes past, The scottis men dang on so fast, And schot on thame at abandoune,	56
[Fol. 113. C.]	As ilk man war A campioune,	60
At last the Scotch prevail.	That all thar fayis tuk the flicht ; Wes nane of thame that wes so wicht, That euir durst abyde his fere ; Bot ilkane fled thair wayis sere.	64
[Fol. 50. E.]	Till the toun fled the mast party. The Erll thomas sa ynkirly, And his rout, chassit with swerdis bar, That all emang thame mellit war,	68
Earl Thomas chases the flying army into the town.	[And] all to-gidder come in the touñe. Than wes the slaughter so fellowñe, That all the rewys ran of blude.	68
Many are killed in the streets.	Thame that thai gat, to dede all zude, Swa that [than thar] weill neir wes ded Als feill as in the battell-sted. The fizwaryne wes taken thar ;	72
Fitzwarine is taken.	51. [That EH] Than C. 52. How] E om. 53. So—apon] Sa keenly they faught on H. 54. woundis ryde] rowtis roid E ; routes red H. 55. [at E] that C. Quha—thair] What part soonest H. abovin] abone H ; abow E. 56. campioune E] Campeoune C ; Scorpions (!) H. 57. euir] ewyr. 58. ilkane] ilk man EH. 59. Till] To EH.	66. The] And. ynkirly] egrely E ; egerly H. 67. emang] amang. 68. [And H] Bot C ; That E. 69. rewys] ruys E ; rewes H. 70. all] he H. zude] zhud E ; yoode H. 71. [than thar E] thair wer C. wes] wer. H has—So that there were als feill dead. 72. Als feill] Well neere H. 73. fizwaryne] syve warine or fyve warine E ; Swaryne H.

Bot so rad wes Richard of clar,  
That he held to the sowth cuntre.

76 Sir Richard of  
Clare escapes.

All that moneth I trow that he  
Sall haf no gret will for to ficht.

80 Sir John Stewart  
is severely  
wounded.

Schir Iohne steward, añe nobill knyeht,  
Wes voundit throu the body thair  
With a sper that richt scharply schair.

84

To the mont-peleris went he syne,  
And lay thair lang in-to helyne,  
And at the last helit wes he.

Edward Bruce  
encamps within  
the town.

Schir Eduard than, with his menȝe,  
Tuk in the toune thair herbery.

88

That nycht thai blith war and Ioly  
For the victory that thai had thar.

92 He finds in it a  
great quantity of  
provisions,

And on the morn, forouten mar,  
Schir Eduard gert men gang and se  
All the vitalis of that Cite.

96 which he sends to  
Carrickfergus,

And thai fand sic fusioune thar-in  
Of corn [and] flour [and] wax and vyne,  
That thai had of It gret ferly;

A truce is made,  
to last till Easter  
Tuesday.

And schir Eduard gert halely  
[To] cragferguss [it] cartit be.  
Syne thidder went his men and he,  
And helde the sege full stalwardly  
Quhill palmesonday wes passit by.  
[Than] quhill the tysday in pask-owk,  
On athir half thai trowis tuk ;

[Fol. 113 b. C.]

76. *so*] swa. *rad*] feared H. *wes*] wes schir C; but EH omit schir.

92. *vitalis*] wictaill E; vittaile H.

93. *fusioune*] foysoun.

77. *held*] so CH; fled E.

94. [and EH] C om. (twice).

79. *gret*] gud.

97. [To H] In-to C; In-till E. [it

80. *ane*] A.

H] CE om.

*cartit*] caryit E; car-

82. *richt*] E om.

ied H.

83. *To the*] Bot to E; But to H.  
*mont-peleris*] monpeller E; Mount  
Peller H.

101. [Than E] Then H; And C.  
*tysday*] twysday E; Tuesday H.  
*pask-owk*] payss wouk E; Pasche  
Oulk H.

84. *in-to*] in-till. *helyne*] Leech-  
ing H.

102. *half*] side H. *tronis*] trewys  
E; trewes H.

89. *victory*] victour.

- So that thai mycht that haly tyd  
In pennance and in prayer byd. 104
- But on Easter  
Eve 15 ships  
arrive from  
Dublin,
- Bot apon paske evin all richt  
To the castell, in-till the nycht,  
Fra devilling come schippis xv,  
Chargin with armyt men bedeyne ; 108
- with 4000 recruits  
to guard the  
castle,
- and Sir Thomas  
Mandeville at  
their head.
- Four thousand, trow I weill, thai war :  
In the castell thai enterit thair.  
The mawndwell, ald schir thomas,  
Capitane of that menȝhe he was. 112
- In the castell all preualy  
Thai enterit, for that thai gert spy  
That mony of schir eduardis men  
War sealit in the cuntry then. 116
- Mandeville hopes  
to surprise Sir  
Edward.
- Tharfor thai thought in the mornynge  
Till ysche, but langer delaying,  
And till suppriȝ thaȝe suddanely ;  
For thai thought thai suld trastly [ly], 120
- For the trevis that taken war.  
Bot I trow falsat euirmar  
Sall haue vnfair and euill ending.  
Schir Eduard wist of this na thing,  
For of tresoun had he na thought. 124
- But such treachr-  
ery always fails.
- Schir Eduard wist of this na thing,  
For of tresoun had he na thought.  
Bot for the trevis he lefȝt nouȝt  
Wachis till set to the Castele ;

105. *paske erin*] the pasche ewyn E; Pasch-Euer H. *all*] EH om.
106. *in-till*] in-to EH.
107. *devilling*] dewillyne E; De-villing H. *come*] come thair; *but* EH om. thair. *xv*] fifteene H.
108. *armyt*] armour and H. *bedeyne*] bedene E; bedeene H.
109. *Four*] Three H.
110. *thair*] ar.
111. *mawndwell*] Maundwell H; mawndweill E. *ald*] ald or als C; auld E; alsaw and H.
112. *he*] EH om.
113. *In-all*] In the Castell full

- H; In-till the castell E.
114. *that-gert*] thai had gret (sic) E; they gart H.
119. *till*] to EH.
120. *thai*] that thai C; *but* EH om. that. [ly H] CE om.; *but it is necessary*.
122. *falsat*] falset EH.
123. *haue*] E om. *vnfair*] mischiefe H.
126. *trevis*] trewes H; *trew* E. *left*] lewyte E; letted H.
127. *Wachis-set*] To set wachis EH.

- Ilk nyght he gert men wach it wele. 128 That night Neil Fleming, with 60 men, kept watch;
- And neyll flemyngh wachit that nyght With sixty men worthy and wicht. 132
- And als soyne as the day wox cleir, Thai that within the castell weir
- Had armyt thame, and made thame bouñe, And syne the bryg avaled douñe,
- And yschit in-till gret plente. And quhen neyll flemyngh can thaim se, 136 and next morning sees an army in motion,
- He send añe till the kyng in hy, Syne said to thame that war hym by,
- “ Now sall men se, I vndirtak, Quha dar de for his lordis sak ! 140 and prepares to check their advance.
- Now beir ȝow weil, for sekirly With all thir menȝe fecht will I.
- In-till bargaȝe thaȝe hald sall we, [Fol. 114. C.] 144
- Quhill that our mastir armyt be.”
- And with that vorde assemblit thai ; Thai war [to] few all out, perfay,
- With sic a gret rout for to ficht. Bot nocht-for-thi, with al thar mycht,
- Thai dang on thame so hardely, 148 He and his men fight with great courage,
- That [all] thair fayis had gret ferly, That thai war all of sic manheid
- That thai no dreid had of thar dede. 152 but are all slain.
- Bot thar fell fayis sa can assaill, That thar mycht no worschip avail,

128. *men—it*] wake it full H.  
*wach*] walk E; wake H.

129. *neyll*] nele.

131. *wox*] wes E; was H.

134. *syne*] so CH; sone E. *the—avaled*] thar brig awalit E; the draw-brig they let H.

136. *neyll*] nele. *can thaim*] thaim can C; gan thaim E; can them H.

137. *till*] to EH.

138. *Syne*] so CH; And E.

139. *I*] Ik.

140. *de*] dey E; H om.

142. *thir*] this E; yone H.

145. *vorde*] word.

146. [to E] too H; till C. *to—out*] all out too few H.

150. [all EH] C om.

151. *sic*] swilk.

152. *That*] As.

153. *fell*] feill H; E om. *can*] gane.

154. *thar—worschip*] na worschip thar mycht.

That thai ne war slayn euirilkane  
So cleyn, that thar eschapit name.

156

**How the kyng of Irland callit eduard com apon the  
scottis men.**

However, his mes-  
senger reached  
king Edward,

And the man that went till the kyng  
For till warn hym of thair ysching,  
Warnit him in-till full gret hy.

160

Schir Eduard, that wes comonly  
Callit the kyng of Irland,

who called his  
men to arms.

Quhen that he herd sic hy on hand,  
In full gret hast he gat his ger.

164

Tuelf wicht men in his chalmer wer  
That Armyt thaſe in full gret hy.

Syne with his baneris hardly  
[The] myddis of the toune he tais,

[Fol. 50 b. E.]

With that neir cummand war his fais,  
That had delt all thar men in thre.

168

The mawndwell, with a gret menſe,  
Richt throu the touñe his vay held douñe ;  
The layff on athir syde the touñe  
Held to meit thame that fleand war ;  
Thai thought that all that thai fand thar  
Suld de but ransoune euirilkañe.

172

Bot othir wayis the gle is gañe ;  
For schir eduard, with his Baner,  
And his men that I tald of ere,

176

Sir Edward and  
his men attack  
him fiercely.

155. *That*] Than E ; Bot H. *ne]* EH *om.* *slayn]* slane wp E ; slaine vp H.

*hy]* haste H ; thing E.  
164. *wicht men]* with him H.  
*chalmer]* chawmer E ; Chamber H.

157. *Rubric from C.* *till]* to EH.

166. *baneris]* baner EH.

158. *till]* to EH.

167. [The EH] In C.

159. *in-till]* in EH.

168. *With that]* Weill.

160. *that wes]* wes E ; was then H.  
*comonly]* commonaly.

171. *his vay]* the way EH.

161. *of]* of all H.

172. *layff]* lave EH.

162. *Quhen that]* And quhen E ;  
And when H. *herd]* hard E ; had H.

173. *dey]* dey E ; die H.

178. *men]* twelff E ; twelue H.

*that—tald]* I tauld ȝow.

On all that rout so hardly

Assemblit, that it wes ferly.

180

For gib harpar befor him ȝeid,

That wes the douchtyest of deid

That than wes liffand of his stat,

And with aȝe ax maid him [sic] gat,

That he the first fellit to the grounde;

And eftir, in a litill stounde,

The mawndwell by his armynge

He knew, and rought him sic a swyng

That he till erd ȝeid hastely.

Schir Eduard, that wes neir hym by,

Reversit hym, and with a knyff

Richt in that place him reft the liff.

With that of Ardrossaȝe fergus,

That wes aȝe knycht rycht curageouȝ,

Assemblit with sexty and ma.

Thai pressit than thair fayis swa,

That thai, that saw thair lord slayne,

Tynt hert, and wald haue beyn agaȝe.

And ay, as scottis men mycht be

Armyt, thai come to the melle;

And dang apon thai fayis swa,

That thai all hale the bak can ta,

And thai thame chassit to the ȝat;

Ther wes hard ficht and gret debat.

Thar slew schir Eduard with his hand

A knycht, that of all Irland

184

Gib Harper slays  
a foe with an axe;

[Fol. 114 b. C.]

188

and soon after  
knocks Mandeville  
down,

192

whom Sir Edward  
dispatches with a  
knife.

196

Sir Fergus of  
Ardrossan displays  
his valour.

200

More Scotchmen  
come up,

and at last the  
enemy gives way.

204

181. *harpar*] Harper H.

*the*] he reft his H.

182. *of*] in.

193. *ferguss*] Sir Fergus H.

183. *liffand*] leuand. *than—stat*] might be found of his estate H.

194. *ane*] A. *ane—rycht*] a wight Knight and H.

184. [sic E] sik H; C om.

195. *sexty*] sextie men H.

185. *the* (2)] E om.

196. *beyn*] bene E; bene H.

186. *eftir*] syne H; off thre (wrongly) E. *in*] into H.

202. *hale*] E om. *all hale*] haillie H.

187. *by*] be.

203. *thai thame*] tha men H.

189. *ȝeid*] past H.

204. *hard*] great H. *gret*] hard H.

192. *him reft*] reft him. *him—*

Sir Edward slays Mandeville, as I said;	Wes callit best, and of mast bounte, [To] surna��ne mawndwell [hecht] he, His propir nayme I can nocth say. Bot his folk till so hard assay War set, that thai of the dwngeou��ne Durst oppyn no ��at, na bryg let dou��ne.	208
and pursues his foes so hard, that none escape.	And schir Eduard, I tak on hand, Soucht thame, that fled thar to varrand, So felly, that of all, perfay, That yschit apon hym that day, Eschapit of thaim neuir ane, That thai ne war outhir ta��ne or sla��ne. For to the ficht maknakill then Come with twa hundredth of gude sper-men,	212
One Macnakill captures 4 or 5 ships.	And slow all that thai mycht to vyn. This ilk maknakill, with a gyn, Wan of thair schippes four or fiff, And halely reft the men thair liff.	216
[Fol. 115. C.]	Quhen end wes maid of this fechting, ��eit than wes liffand neill flemynge. Schir Edward went him for to se [About him slayne lay his men��e, All in A lump, on athyr hand ; And he, redy to dey, throwand. Schir Eduuard had of him pite,]	220
After the battle, Sir Edward visits the dying Neil Fleming,	224	
	228	

208. [*To EH*] Of C. *mawndwell*] *Maundweill* E; *Maundewile* H. [*hecht*] *height* H (*better spelt hecht*); had E; *callit ves C.*

209. *propir*] *proper* H; *awne* E.

210. *till*] *to* EH.

211. *that*] *as*.

212. *no*] *na*.

213—215. *One line in H*—Sir Edward sa then sought perfay.

213. *I*] *Ik.*

214. *varrand*] *warand.*

216. *apon*] *forth* on H.

217. *Eschapit*] That ther eschapit C (but That ther is not wanted). E has—Thar eschapyt neuir ane (*omit-*

*ting of thaim*). H *has*—That there escaped neuer ane (*also omitting of thaim*).

218. *thai ne*] *thaim (wrongly)* E. *That—ne*] Bot they H.

219. *maknakill*] *Manakill* H.

220. *of gude*] *of* H; E *om.*

221. *slow*] *thai slew EH. that* EH *om.* *vyn*] *wyn.*

224. *halely*] *haly.*

225. *this*] *that* H.

226. *liffand*] *life in H.*

228—231. *From EH; C omits.*

230. *redy—dey*] *to die readie H.*

231. *had—him*] *of him had great H.*

- And him full gretly menyt he, 232  
 And regratit his gret manhede,  
 And his worship with douchty dede.  
 Sic mayn he maid, thai had ferly ;  
 For he wes nocht custumabilly 236 whom he mourns  
 Wount for till meyne ony thing,  
 Na wald nocht heir men mak menyng.  
 He stude thar by quhill he wes ded,  
 And syne had him till haly sted, 240  
 And him with worship gert he be  
 Erdit, with gret solempnite.
- and buries hon-  
ourably.

**How king robert bruce passit throu the tarbatis,  
 and wan the Iles.**

- O**n this wiſ yschit the mawndwele ; 244 So shall all treason  
 Bot sekirly falsat and gyle fail.  
 Sall euir haue añe euill ending,  
 As weill wes seyn by this ysching.  
 In tyme of trewis yschit thai,  
 And in sic tyme as on paske day, 248 Because they  
 Quhen god raif for to sauf mankyñe  
 Fra vem of ald adammis syñe.  
 Tharfor sic gret myschans thame fell,  
 That ilkane, as ſe herd me tell, 252 they met with  
 War slane vp, or than takyn [thar].  
 And thai that in the castell war

234. *with*] and. *And—with*] His worship and his H.

235. *mayn*] mane H. *thai had*] men had gret.

237. *till*] to EH. *meyne*] meyne men E; mene H.

239. *quhill*] while H; till E.

240. *till haly*] to hallowed H.

241. *him—he*] syne with worship gart him H.

*Rubric* from C. H has—How King Robert wan the Iles to hand, And gart his shippes saile on dry land.

243. *the mawndwele*] maundwill E; Mandewile H.

244. *falsat*] falset. H has—Bot wit ye well that fraud and guile.

245. *euir*] all wayis E; alwayes H.

246. *wes*] was H; is E. *by*] be.

249. *god*] Christ H. *for*] H om.

250. *Fra EH*] Fra the C. *vem*] wem E; weme H.

251. *sic*] sa EH.

253. *than*] els H; E om. [thar E] there H; war C (*but see next line*).

The men in the  
castle yield them-  
selves to Sir  
Edward.

War set in-till sic fray that hour,  
For thai couth se quhar na succour  
Suld cum to releif thaſe, that thai  
[Shortly] swa trctit, and on a day  
The castell till him ȝalde thai fre  
Till sauf thaſe thair liffis; & he  
Held thame full weill [all] his cunnand.  
The castell tuk he in his hand,

256

And wittalit it weill, and has set  
A gud wardane, it for to get;  
And a quhile thair than restit he.

260

Of him no mair now spek will we,  
Bot till king robert will we gang,

264

That we haf [left] vnspokyn of lang.

268

Quhen he convoyit had to the se

[Fol. 51. E.]

[Fol. 115 b. C.]

His brothir Eduard and his menȝhe,

\*With his schippes he maid him ȝar,

\*In-till the Ilis for till fare.

272\*

We now go back  
to king Robert.

\*Walter steward with hym tuk he,

\*His mawch, and with him gret menȝhe;

And othir men of gret nobillay.

He takes Walter  
Stewart with him.

Till the tarbard thai held thar way

272

In galayis, ordanit for thair fair:

He goes to 'the  
Tarbard.'

Bot thame worthit draw thar schippes thar.

255. *in-till—hour*] in sik a fray  
that hour H; *in-till* sa gret E (*the  
rest of the line being blank*).

264. *get*] so CH; kept (*wrongly*) E.

256. *For*] That H. *quhar na*] na  
where H.

265. *thair than*] tharin. *a—than*]  
there a whyle H.

257. *releif thame*] relieve them H;  
releyff E. *that*] so H; and E. *thai*]  
day H.

266. *till*] to EH.

258. [*Shortly*] C om. Tretyt, & till  
a schort day E; That shortly then  
treittet they H.

267. *[left EH]* C om.

259. *thai*] E om. To yeeld the  
Castell to him free H.

268. *convoyit had*] had convoyit

260. *thair liffis*] lyff and lym. To  
saue their liues, and certes he H.

E; had conouoyed H.

261. [*all H*] CE om.

269. *and*] with H.

263. *it*] E om. *has*] in it H.

270. *271\*—274\*. Not in E; but found  
in CH.*

274\*. *mawch*] Maich H.

271. *nobillay*] noblay EH.

272. *Till*] To EH. *the tarbard*]  
the Tarbarts H; tarbart E. *held*]  
tooke H.

274. *draw—schippes*] their ships  
draw H.

And a myle wes betuix the seis, And that wes lownyt all with treis. The kyng his schippis thar gert draw, And for the vynd can stoutly blaw Apon thar bak, as thai vald ga, He gert men rapis and mastis ta, And set thame in the schippis hye, And salys to the toppis te, And gert men gang thar-by drawand. The vynd thame helpit, that wes blawand, Swa that, in-till a litill spaſ, Thar flot all weill our-drawyn waſ. And quhen thai that in the Ilis war Herd tell how the [gud] kyng had thar Gert schippis with the salys ga Out-our betuix the tarbartis twa, Thai war abasit all vtrely. For thai wist throu ald prophesy That he that suld ger schippis swa Betuix the seis [with] salis ga Sald vyn the Ilis swa till hand, That name with strynth suld him withstand. Tharfor thai coñe all to the kyng ; Wes name that withstude his biddyng, Outaken Iohñe of lorñe alone. Bot weill soyne eftir he wes tañe,	his ships overland for a mile. 276
	As the wind was strong, he has some sails set, 280
	284 which assist the progress of the ships.
	When the men of the Isles hear of this, they are amazed. 288
	292 There was an old prophecy, that whoever should make ships sail there should conquer all the Isles. 296
	300

276. *And*] *Bot. wes*] is H. *lownyt*] *lompnyt* E; *loned* H.

278. *vynd*] *wynd. can*] *couth.*

279. *vald*] *wald* E; *can* H.

280. *rapis—ta*] *Masts, and rapes*  
*ma* H.

282. *And*] *so EH; And the C.*  
*te*] *tey* E; *tie* H.

284. *vynd*] *wynd.*

285. *in-till*] *into H; in E.*

286. *weill*] *there H; E om.*

288. *[gud E]* *good H; C om. the*  
*—had*] *that the good King H.*

289. *Gert*] *Gert his E; Gart his H.*  
*the*] *EH om.*

290. *the*] *E om. tarbartis*] *miser-*  
*written tarbatis C; Tabarts H; tar-*  
*bart E.*

291. *all*] *sa.*

294. *the*] *so CH; thai E. [with*  
*EH]* *but C (an obvious error).*

295. *byn*] *wyne.*

298. *that*] *E om. Wes—withstude*]  
*Durst name gainestand H.*

300. *he wes*] *wes he.*

All submit, and  
John of Lorn is  
taken,

And presentit wes to the kyng.  
And thai that war of his leding,  
That to the king had brokyn fay,  
War all ded, and distroyit avay.

304

and put in prison,  
first at Dumbar-  
ton, afterwards at  
Lochleven.

The king this Iohñ of lorn haſt tañe,  
And send soyne him till dumbertañe,  
A quhile in presone thair till be,  
And to louchlevin syne send wes he,

308

[Fol. 116. C.]

Quhar he wes lang tyne in festnyng ;  
Thair-in, I trow, he maid endyng.

The king takes  
his pleasure,

The king, quhen all the Iles war  
Brocht till his liking, leſt and mar,  
Still all that sesoune thar duelt he  
At hunting, and gammyne, and gle.

312

### The battale betuix the lord dowglass and the lord nevell of yngland.

**Q** when the king, on this maner,  
Dantit the Iles, as I tell her,

316

Sir James of  
Douglas is in the  
forest.

The gud schir Iames of Dowglas  
In-till the forest dulland waſt,  
Defendant worthely the land.

At Berwick, at  
that time, was  
one Eunond de  
Calion, a Gaseon.

That tyme in berwik wes wonnand  
Ewmond de calioñ, a gascounie,  
That wes a knyght of gret renouñe ;

320

301. *presentit*] presented H; pre-  
sent E. *wes]* rycht E; right H.

303. *to]* till.

304. *ded—distroyit*] destroyed and  
dead H.

305. EH *put* The king *after* lorn.

306. *send]* so CE; sent H. *soyne*

*till* hym furth to EH.

307. *thair]* for H. *till]* to EH.

308. *And]* Syne H; Syn E. *syne]*  
EH *om.* *send]* sent H.

309. *lang tyme]* quhill.

310. EH *put* Thair-in *after* he  
maid.

313. *Still]* EH *om.* *duellt]* duellyt.

314. *and—and*] gamyn, and at E;  
and at game, and H. *Rubric from C.*  
H *has*—Lord Dowglas with battell  
plaine, Reskewed the Pray, and  
brought againe.

315. *Qwhen]* Quhill. *on]* apon E;  
vpon H.

316. *Dantit]* Dawntyty E; Had  
daunted H.

319. *worthely]* doughtely H.

320. *wonnand]* dulland.

321. *Ewmond]* Edmound EH. *de*  
*calion]* de cailow E; of Calhow H.

322. H *has*—He was a Knight of  
great Renoun.

And in-till gascone, his cuntre, Lord of gret senȝeroy wes he.	324
He had than berwik in keping, And maid aȝe preue gaddering,	
And gat him a gret Cumpany Of wicht men armyt Iolely,	328
And the nethir end of tevydaill He prayit doune till him all haill,	
And of the merȝ aȝe gret party ; Syne toward berwik went in hy.	332
Schir adam of gordoune, that than Wes becummyne a scottis man,	
Saw thame swa drif avay thar fe, And wend thai had beyn quheyn, for he	336
*Saw bot the fleand scaill, perfay,	337*
*And thame that sesyt in the pray.	
*Than till schir Iames of douglas	
*In-to gret hye the way he tais,	340*
*And tald how ynglis men thair pray	
*Had tane, and syne went thar way	
*Toward berwik with all thar fee,	
*And said, thai quheyn war ; and gif he	344* and says the Wald speid him, he suld weill lichtly
Wyn thame, and reskew [all] the ky.	337 in number.
*Schir Iames rycht soyne gaf his assent	338
	345*

324. *Lord*] A lord C; but EH omit CH.  
 A. *senȝeroy*] senȝowry E; Senyeory H.  
 325. *He*] And H. *than*] then H.; E om.  
 326. *And*] He H. *ane*] A.  
 329. *And*] All H. *tevydaill*] tewi-dale E; Teuidail H.  
 330. *doune till*] into (sic) H.  
 334. *a*] EH om.  
 335. *swa drif*] dryf sua E; driue sa H.  
 336. *quheyn*] quhone. *had—for*] wheene were for that H.  
 337\*—344\*. *Not in E; found in*
- 337\*. *fleand scaill*] fleeing skaill H,  
 338\*. *sesyt*] seized H. in CH] perhaps it should be on.  
 339\*. *Than*] Then H. *till*] to H.  
 340\*. *In-to*] In full H.  
 342\*. *went—way*] were went away H.  
 344\*. *quheyn*] wheene H.  
 338. [all EH] C om.  
 345\*—356\*. *Not in E; found in* CH; except 347\*, 348\*, which H omits.  
 345\*. *rycht*] H om.

	*Till follow thaïne, and furth is went	
[Fol. 116 b. C.]	*Bot with the men that he had thair,	348*
	*And met hym by the gat but mair.	
Douglas pursues the English in haste.	*Thai followit thame in full gret hy, *And com weill neir thame hastily ; *For, or thai mycht thame fully se, *Thai come weill neir vith thair menȝe.	352*
	*And than bath the forreouris and the scaill	
	*In-till a childrome knyt all haill,	
	*And wes a richt fair Cumpany.	
The English drive the cows on in front, and protect the rear.	*Befor thame gert thai driff the ky With knavis and swanys, that na mycht Had for till stand in feild to ficht.	356*
	The laiff behynd thame maid a scaill.	339
	The dowglass saw thair purpoȝ haill,	340
	And saw thame of sa gud cowyñe,	
	And at thai war sa mony syñe,	344
Douglas finds the English host is double his own,	That ay for añe of his war twa. “Lordingis,” he said, “sen it is swa That we haff chassit on sic maner, That we now cummyn ar so ner That we may noct eschewe the ficht Bot gif we fowly tak the flicht,	348
346*. <i>Till</i> ] To H.	339. <i>knaris</i> ] knawis.	
347*, 348*. <i>In C only.</i>	340. <i>till</i> ] to. <i>to</i> ] &.	
350*. <i>com</i> ] came H.	341. <i>laiff—thame</i> ] lave behynd thaim E; H has—And all togidder in a staill. <i>maid</i> ] thai maid C; but EH omit thai. <i>scaill</i> ] may be read either scaill or staill; Jamieson prints stale; Hart has staill. <i>But see l. 353*</i> , <i>where H has scaill.</i>	
351*. <i>thame</i> ] H om.	342. <i>purpoȝ</i> ] lump all EH.	
352*. <i>come</i> ] came H.	343. <i>coryne</i> ] conuyne H.	
353*. <i>And</i> ] Bot H. <i>the forreouris</i> ] forray H. (N.B. The line would scan better by omitting <i>And</i> .)	344. <i>at</i> ] saw E; that H.	
354*. <i>In-till—knyt</i> ] Were knit into a sop H.	345. <i>ay</i> ] thai E; they H.	
355*—340. H transposes the lines, and has—	347. <i>on</i> ] of.	
But Knaues and Swaines that had na might,	348. <i>now—ar</i> ] are now commen H.	
For to stand into field to fight, Before them gart they driue the	350. <i>tak</i> ] ta.	
Ky, They were a right faire company.		

- Lat ilk man on his luf than meyne,  
And how he mony tyme has beyne  
In grat thrang, and come weill avay.  
Think we till do richt swa this day ;  
And tak we of this furde heir-by  
Our avantage, for in gret hy  
Thai sall cum on vs for to ficht.  
Set we than will, [and] strynth, and mycht  
For till meyt thame richt hardely.”
- And with that word, full hastely,  
He [hes] displayit his Baner ;  
For his fayis war cumand neir,  
That, quhen thai saw he wes so quhoyne,  
Thai thought vyth thañe soyne till haf done,  
And assemblit full hardely.  
Thair mycht men se ficht fellely,  
And richt añe cruell melle mak,  
And mony strakis giff and tak.
- The douglass thair weill hard wes stad,  
Bot the gret hardyment that he had  
Confortit his men apon sic wif,  
That no man thought on cowardis ;  
Bot faucht so fast with all thar mayne,  
That thai feill of thair fayis has slayne.  
And thouch thai wer be full fer ma  
Than thai, zeit vre demanyt thaim swa,
- but encourages  
his men,
- 352
- 356 and determines to  
give battle.
- 360
- His foes see his  
men are but few,  
and attack him  
vigorously.
- 364
- 368
- 372 [Fol. 117. C.]  
[Fol. 51 b. E.]  
The Scottish host  
is hardly instead.
- 376

351. *ilk man*] ilkane. *on*] of H.  
*luf*] life H. *luf than*] lemmann.  
*meyne*] mene E; meene H.

352. *he—has*] we mony time haue  
H.

353. *come weill*] weill cummyn.

354. *till*] to EH. *this day*] so H;  
to day E.

355. *furde*] Foord H.

358. [and EH] C om.

359. *till*] to EH.

361. [hes H] CE om.

363. *That*] And H. *he wes*] they  
were H. *quhoyne*] wheene H.

364. *Thai—till*] Thought thai suld  
with thaim sone E. *vyth—done*] all  
was their awne bedeene H.

366. Thar men mycht se men fecht  
felly E. *se*] see them H.

367. *richt añe*] A rycht EH.

369. *weill*] right H.

371. *Confortit*] Comforted H; Com-  
fort E. *his men*] them H. *apon—  
wiss*] on sic awyss EH.

375. *wer—fer*] be weill fer way E;  
were full mony H.

376. *vre*] euyr. *vre—thaim*] them  
they demained H.

Yet Sir Eumond is slain,	That Ewmonde Caleoñe wes ded Richt in that Ilk fechting-sted. And all the lave, fra he wes doñe, War planly thair discumfit soñe ;	380
The Scotch recover their cattle.	And thai that chassit sum haß slayne, And turnyt the prayis haill agañe. The hardest fechting forsuth this wes That euir the gud lord of dowglaß	384
	Wes in, as of sa few menȝe. For, had nocht beyne his gret bounte That slew thair chiftañe in the ficht, His men till ded had all beyne dicht.	388
	He had in-till Custum all-way, Quhen euir he com till hard assay, To press hym, the chiftañe to sla ; And hap him fell, that he did swa ;	392
He often won by killing the enemies' captain.	That gert him victor hauie feill siß. Quhen schir Ewmonde apon this wiß Wes ded, this gud lord of douglaf	396
	Till the forest his way he taif. His fayis gretly can hym dreid ; The word weill fer sprang of this deid, Swa that in yngland neir thar-by	400
	Men spak of It weill comonly.	

377. *Ewmonde*] Edmound E; Edmund H. *Caleone*] cailow E; Callok H.

378. *fechting*] fechtyn. Through Dowglas right in that ilke stead H.

379. *he*] this H.

380. *planly*] all haill H. *thair*] EH om.

382. *haill*] so H; all E.

383. *fechting*] feghting H; fycȝt E. *forsuth*] H om.

384. *of*] H om.

385. *as*] and H.

386. *had nocht*] nocht had.

387. *the*] that.

388. *till—all*] had all to dede.

392. *hap—fell*] her fell hap. H is corrupt.

393. *victor hauie*] haff wictour.

394. *Ewmonde*] Edmound E; Edmund H.

395. *this*] the. *of*] H om.

396. *Till*] To EH. *way he*] wayis.

397. *can*] gan.

398. *weill—sprang*] sprang weile fer E; sprang far H. *this*] his EH. *deid*] manhead H.

400. *weill comonly*] right commonly H; commonaly E.

Here H inserts a rubric—How Iames of Dowglas slew Newel, That vowed to meeke him in battell.

Schir robert de Nevell in that tyde  
 Wonnyt at berwyk neir besyde  
 The marchis, quhar the lord dowglas  
 In the forest reparande was,  
 And had at him full gret Invyn,  
 For he him saw so manfully  
 Mak his boundis ay mar & mar.

He herd the folk that with him war  
 Spek of the lorde dowglas<sup>is</sup> mycht,  
 And how forsy he wes in fycht,  
 And how hym oft fell [far] fortouñe.  
 He wrethit hym thar-at all soyne,  
 And said, "quhat weyn þe, is thar nañe  
 That euir is worth bot hym alañe ?  
 ȝe set hym as he war but peir :  
 Bot I avow, befor ȝow heir,

Gif euir he cum in-till this land,  
 He sall fynd me neir at his hand.  
 And giff I euir his Baneir  
 May se displayit apon wer,

I sall assembill on hym but dout,  
 All though ȝe hald him neuir sa stout."  
 Of this avow soyne bodword was  
 Brocht till schir Iames of douglas,  
 That said, "giff he will hald his hicht,  
 I sall do swa, he sall haf sicht  
 Of me, and of my Cumpany  
 ȝeit, or oucht lang, weill neir hym by."

His retennew than gaderit he,

Sir Robert de  
 Neville dwelt  
 then at Berwick,

404

and is envious of  
 Douglas's faune.

408

412 [Fol. 117 b. C.]

He says that, if  
 he can get the  
 chance,  
 he will fight with  
 Douglas.

416

420

News of this  
 boast comes to  
 Douglas,

who says he will  
 soon shew him-  
 self.

428

401. *de]* EH *om.* *Nevell]* Neville E ; Newell H. *in]* at H ; E *om.*

403. *marchis]* march.

406. *him saw]* saw him. *manfully]*  
*manlyly.*

407. E *puts ay* before his.

409. *dowglassis]* douglas.

410. *forsy he]* he forsy E ; he  
 forcie H.

411. *far]* miswritten sar C ; fayr EH. *hym-fell]* he fell oft.

412. *hym]* E *om.* *all]* full H.

414. *hym]* he EH.

416. *I]* Ik.

418. *me]* E *om.*

419. *I]* Ik.

424. *till]* to EH.

427. *of]* E *om.*

He goes to Berwick, and displays his banner there.

That war gud men of gret bounte,  
And to the marchis in gud aray  
Apon añe nycht he tuk the way ;

432

Swa that, in the mornyng airly,  
He wes, with all his Cumpany,  
Befor berwyk ; and thair he maid  
Men to display his baner braid.

436

And of his menȝhe sum send he  
For till burñe townys twa or thre,  
And bad thame soyn agane thame speid ;  
Swa that on hand, gif thar com neyd,

440

Thai mycht be for the ficht redy.

Sir Robert Neville, seeing Douglas's banner,

The nevell, that wist werraly  
That dowglaſ cummyn wes so neir,  
And saw all braid stand his baneir,  
Than with the folk that with hym war—

444

And he had a gret menȝhe thar,  
For all the gud of that cuntry

448

In-till that tyme with hym had he,  
Swa that he with hym thar had then  
Weill may than wes the scottis men—

leads his men up a hill.

He held his way vp till añe hill,  
And said, “ lordyngis, it war my will  
Till mak end of the gret deray

452

[Fol. 118. C.]

That dowglass makis vs Ilk day.  
Bot me think it speidfull that we

He waits for Douglas to approach.

Abyde, quhill his men scalit be  
Throu the cuntry, to tak the pray.

456

431. *to*] till. *marchis*] march EH.

450. *may*] so CE; ma H. *wes*] war.

432. *ane*] A.

451. *ane*] A.

433. *in*] in-to.

453. *Till*] To EH.

437. *send*] sent.

454. *makis*] mayis E; does to H.

438. *till*] to EH. *burne*] bryny.

455. *quhill*-scalit] till that his

440. *on*] at H.

Menye H.

442. *nevell*] Newill E; Newell H.

457. *Throu—the*] Skailed all, to

*werraly*] wittily.

446. *And*] written Ande C.

449. *with—thatar*] thar with him.

take our H. the (2)] thair.

Than fersly schute on hym we may,  
And we sall haue thame at our will."

Thus all thai gaiff consent thar-till,  
And on the hill abaid huvande.

The men fast gadderit of the land,  
And drew till hym in full gret hy.

The douglas than, that wes worthy,  
Thought it wes foly mair till byde.

Toward the hill than can he ryde ;  
And quhan the Nevell saw at thai

Vald nocth paþ furth to the forray,

[Bot] pressit till thame with thar mycht,  
He vist veill than that thai vald ficht.

And till his men; he can he say,

" Lordingis, now hald we furth our vay ;

Heir is the flour of this cuntre,

And ma than thai alsua ar we.

Assemmyll we [than] hardly ;

For douglas with ȝon ȝemanry

Sall haf no mycht till vs, perfay."

Than in a frusche assemblit thai.

Thair mycht men heir the speris brast,

And men dyng apon othir fast,

And blude brist out at woundis vyde.

Thai faucht fast apon athir syde ;

For athir party can thame payñe

Till put thair fais on-bak agañe.

464 Douglas cannot  
wait,

but rides towardz  
the hill.

468

Neville sees that  
a fight is near.

472 [FOL. 52. E.]

He encourages  
his men.

476

The fight.

480

484

458. *schute*] schout E ; set H. *hym*] thaim E ; them H.

460. *Thus*] Than. *consent*] assent EH.

461. *huvande*] howand E ; houand H.

466. *can*] gan.

467. *Nevell*] Newill E ; Newell H. *at*] that EH.

468. *Vald*] Wald.

469. [Bot EH] He (wrongly) C. *till*] to EH.

470. *vist*] wyst.

471. *can*] gan.

473. *this*] the.

474. *ma*] so CH ; may E.

475. *Assemmyll*] Assembill. [than] thame so C ; then EH.

476. *ȝemanry*] ȝhwmanry E ; Ye- manry H.

479. *Thair*] Than E ; That H.

480. *men—apon*] ilkane ding ôn E ; ilkane dang on H.

481. *woundis*] woundis.

483. *can*] gan.

484. *Till*] To EH.

Neville and  
Douglas fight  
hand to hand.

The Lordis of nevell and douglaf,  
Quhen that the fichting fellest was,  
Met to-giddir richt in the pres<sup>t</sup>.  
Betuix thame than gret bargañe wes ;  
Thai faucht felly with all thair maucht,  
Gret rowtis athir till othir raucht.

488

Douglas was the  
stronger,

Bot douglaf sterkar wes, I hicht,  
And mair vsit alsua to ficht,  
And he set hert, and will alsua,  
For till delyuer hym of his fa ;

492

[Fol. 118b. C.] and slays Neville. Throu forf<sup>t</sup> the nevell haf he slayne.

496

Than his ensenȝe he can hye cry,  
And on the laiff so hardely  
He ruschit, with all his menȝe,  
That in-[till] schort tym men mycht se  
Thair fayis tak on thame the flicht ;  
And thai thame chassit with all thar mycht.

500

The English are  
soon put to flight.

Schir ralf the Nevell, in the chaf<sup>t</sup>,  
And the Baroun of hiltoun waf  
Takin, and othir of mekill mycht,  
That wes slain thair in-to the ficht,  
That worthy in thar tyme had beyn.  
And quhen the feld wes clengit cleyn,  
Swa that thair fayis euir ilkane  
War slain, [or] chassit avay, or tane,  
Than gert he forray all the land,

504

And sessit all that euir he fand,

508

Then Douglas  
ravages the  
country,

512

486. *that*] at.  
487, 488. H omits.  
490. *till*] to H ; E om.  
491. *sterkar*] starkar. I] lk.  
494. *till*] to EH.  
496. *Throu*] Off E ; Of H. the]  
then. nevell] Newill E ; Newell H.  
497. *he—hye*] hey gan E ; can he  
H.  
498. *laiff*] lave EH.

499. *all*] E om.  
500. *in-till* E] in CH.  
501. *on thame*] thaim to.  
503. *ralf*] Rawff E ; Ralph H. the]  
E om. Nevell] Newill E ; Newell H.  
*the chass*] that place H.  
506. *the*] that EH.  
510. [or EH] C om.  
512. *he*] thai.



will give them to the black Douglas. [Fol. 119. C.]	Beteche thaīe to the blak dowglaſ ;	538
	*For, with thair taill, he wes mair fell	539*
	*Than wes ony deuill in hell.	540*
	Throu his gret vorschip and bounte	539
	Swa with his fayis dred wes he,	540
	That thame grevit till heir his naīe.	
He may now dwell in peace.	He may at eiſ now duell at haīe	
	A quhile, for, I trow, he sall nocht	
	With fayis all a quhile be socht.	544
	Now let him in the forest be ;	
	Of him no mair now spek will we.	
We return to Sir Edward at Car- rickfergus.	Bot of schir Eduarde the worthy,	
	That with all his gude cheuelry	548
	Wes at cragfergus ȝeit liand,	
	Till spek mair will we tak on hand.	

538. *Beteche*] Betake H.spek now no mar E ; speake na maire  
H.539\*, 540\*. *In C only.*548. *gude*] EH *om.*541. *growyt*] growyt E ; groowed  
H. *till*] to EH.549. *at*] in.544. *all—quhile*] mony dayes H.550. *Till*] To EH. *will we*] we546. *of*] And of H. *no—spek*] will EH.

## [BOOK XVI.]

Quhen schir eduard, as I tald air,  
 Had discumfit richard of clair,  
 And of Irland all the Barnage  
 Thrif<sup>t</sup>, throu his worthy vassalage,  
 And syne with all his men of mayñe  
 Till cragfergus wes cummyn agayñ,  
 The gud erll of murreff, thomas,  
 Tuk leiff in scotland for till paſt ;  
 And he hym levit with a [gruching],  
 And [syne] him chargit to the king  
 Till pray him specialy that he  
 Suld cum In Irland him to se.

When Sir Edward  
 had defeated  
 Richard of Clare,

4

and returned to  
 Carrickfergus,

For, war thai bath in-to [that] land,  
 Thai suld fynd nane suld thaim vithstand.  
 The Erll furth than his way has tañe,  
 And till his schippes is he gañe,  
 And salit out weill our the se ;  
 In scotland soyñe arivit he.  
 Syne to the king he vent in hy ;  
 And he resauit hym gladsumly,

8 Sir Thomas  
 Murray returned  
 towards Scotland,

12

where he soon  
 arrives.

16

[Fol. 52 b. E.]

He tells the king  
 about his  
 brother's deeds,

20

1. *Rubric in H*—Here past in Ireland the Noble King To his brother with great gaddering. *I*] Ik. *tald*] said EH.
7. *murreff*] Murray Sir H.
8. *till*] to EH.
9. *with a*] without H. [gruching E] grudging H; grunching C.
10. [syne EH] C om.
11. *Till*] To EH.

12. *Suld—In*] Wald come in H; Cum in-till E.
13. [that EH] the C.
14. *vithstand*] withstand.
16. *schippes*] schipping.
17. *out weill*] weill out E; well out H.
18. *In*] In-till.
19. *to*] till. *vent*] went.
20. *he*] E om.

And sperit of his brotheris fair,  
And of Iourneis that he had thair ;  
And he him tald all but lesyng.  
Quhen the king had left spering,

24

and says that Sir  
Edward wishes  
him to go to  
Ireland.

His charge to the [gud] king tald he.  
And he said, ‘he wald blithly se  
His brothir and als all the effeire  
Of that cuntry and of that were.’

28

A gret menȝe than gaderit he.

[Fol. 119 b. C.]

King Robert  
makes Walter  
Stewart and  
James Douglas  
wardens in his  
absence,

And twa lordis of gret bounte,  
The tañe the steward walter waſ,  
The tothir Iames of dowglas,  
Vardanis in [his] absens maid he,  
For till manteym weill the cuntry.

32

Syne to the se he tuk his vay.

36

[And] at lowchryan in galloway  
He schippit, with all his menȝe ;  
Till cragfergus soyne cummyn is he.  
Schir Eduard of his com wes blith,  
And went down for to meit him swith,  
And velcummyt hym with gladsum cher ;  
Sa did he all that with him wer,  
And specialy the Erll thomaſ  
Of murreff, that his nevo was.  
Syne to the castell went thai thar ;  
He maid thame mekill fest and far.

40

44

21. *brotheris*] brodyr.  
 22. *he*] thai EH.  
 24. *had left*] left had EH. *spering*] the spering E ; his speaking H.  
 25. [gud E] CH om.  
 27. *als all*] also H ; se E. *effeire*] affer.  
 28. *of that*] what it H. *that were*] thar wer.  
 31. *The tane*] The ane H. *the—walter*] Walter Stewart H.  
 32. *tothir*] other H.  
 33. *Vardanis*] Wardanys. [his EH] C om.
34. *till*] to EH. *manteym*] main-taine H.  
 35. *his*] the.  
 36. [And EH] C om. *lowchryan*] lochriane E ; Lochreane H.  
 38. *Till*] To EH.  
 40. *for*] E om.  
 41. *velcummyt*] welcumyt.  
 42. *he*] so CH ; thai (*wrongly*) E.  
 45. *thar*] there H ; thar or yar E ; yar J.  
 46. *He*] And EH. *fest—far*] feast and fare H.

Thai sudIornyt thair dayis thre  
In gret myrth and in rialte. 48 They feast for 3 days.

**How king robert the Bruce passit in Irland with his brothir Eduard.**

**K**yng robert, apon [thiskyn] wiſ,  
In-till Irland arivit is ; When king Robert had been 3 days in Ireland,

And quhen in cragfergus had he  
With his men sudIornyt dais thre, 52

Thai tuk to consell that thai vald  
With all thar folk thar vayis hald

Throu all Irland, fra end to othir.  
Schir Eduard than, the kingis brothir, 56 they all set out to explore the country.

Befor in the awaward raid.  
The kyng him-self the reirward maid,

That had, in-till his Cumpany, King Robert commands the rearguard.

The Erll thomas, that ves vorthy. 60

Thair wayis furthwarde haf thai tañe,  
And soyne ar passit Inderwillane.

This wes in the moneth of may,  
Quhen byrdis syngis on the spray, 64 Description of May.

Melland thair notys with syndry sowñe  
For softnes of that sweit sesouñe ;

And lewis on the branchis spredis,  
And blomys bricht besyd thame bredis, 68

47. *sudIornyt*] soiournyt E; soiournde H; and so in 52. *thair*] therein H.

48. *In gret*] And that in. *gret-in*] mirth, solace, and H. *in rialte*] royaltie H; Iolite E.

49. *apon*] now upon H. [thiskyn E] this CH.

53. *wald*] wald.

54. *vayis*] wayis.

55. *to*] till.

57. *awaward*] awaward E; Vanguard H.

58. *reirward*] Reeregard H.

61. *furthwarde*] fordward H; southwart E.

62. *Inderwillane*] euerilkane H; E om.

63. *Rubric in* H—Here faught King Robert in Ireland, With 5 thousand and against 40 thousand.

64. *on the*] in ilk E; on ilk H.

65. *syndry*] seymly EH.

66. *that*] the EH.

67. *lewis*] levys E; Leaues H. on] of EH.

68. *besyd*] about H.

Fields and  
flowers.

And feldis florist ar with flowris,  
Weill savourit, of seir colowris,  
And all thing worthis blith and gay,  
Quhen that this gud king tuk his vay  
To ryd furthward, as I said are.

72

[Fol. 120. C.]

Richard of Clare  
assembles 40,000  
men;

The vardane than, richard of clare,  
Wist the kyng wes arivit swa,

76

And wist that he schupe for till ta  
His way toward the south cuntry.

Of all [Ireland] assemblit he  
Till him a full gret cheuelry  
Of squyaris, burges, and ȝemanry,  
Quhill he had neir fourty thousand.

80

Bot he vald nocht ȝeit tak on hand  
With all his fayis in feld to ficht,  
But vmbethought him of a slicht ;

84

That he, with all that gret menȝhe,  
Vald in a vode enbuschit be,  
All preuely besyde the way,

88

Quhar at thair fayis suld paſ avay,  
And let the vaward paſ fer by,

And syne assemmyll hardely  
On the Reirward, with all thar men.

92

Thai did as thai deuisit then ;  
In a wode thai enbuschit wer.

The scottis hoost raid by thaȝe nere ;

yet is afraid of  
open battle.

He lays an  
ambush in a  
wood,

intending to  
attack their  
rearguard.

69. *florist ar*] strowed are H; ar  
strowyt E.

70. *savourit*] sawerand E; sauour-  
ing H.

73. *furthward*] southwart E;  
Southward H.

76. *that*] H om. *for till*] him for  
to H; him to E.

78. *Of*] And of. [Ireland EH]  
England C.

79. *Till—gret*] Bath burges and  
E; Baith Burgesses and H.

80. *Of—burgess*] And hobilleris  
and EH.

84. *But*] Bot he. a] ane.

86. *Vald*] Wald. a] E om. *vode*]  
wod.

87. *All*] And.

88. *at*] that. *pass*] E om. H  
*has*—Where their faes behoooued  
to ga.

89. *vaward*] awaward E; Vangard  
H.

90. *assemmyll*] assembill.

91. *Reirward*] Reeregard H.

93. a] ane.

94. *hoost*] ost E; men H.

For thai na schawing of thame maid.

Schir Eduard weill fer forrouth raid  
With thame that war of his menȝe,  
To the reirward na tent tuk he.

And schir richard of clare in hy,

Quhen schir Edward wes passit by,  
Send wicht ȝhomēn that veill couth schut,  
To bikir the reirward apon fut.

Than twa of thame that send furth war  
At the wode-syde thame bykkirrit thar,  
And schot emang the scottis men.

The king, that had thar with him then  
V thousand wicht and ek hardy,

Saw thai twa sa abaundonly

Schut emang thaim, and cum so neir ;  
He vist richt weill, withouten weir,  
That thai weill neir swm power had.

Tharfor a bydding has he mad,  
That no man [suld] be so hardy

Till prik till thame ; but sarraly

Ryde reddy ay in-till Battale,

Till defend gif men vald assale.

“ For we sall soyne, I vndirta,”

He said, “ haf for till do vith ma.”

Bot schir colyñe cammell, that ner

Wes by, quhar thai twa ȝhomēn wer

Schutand emang thame hardely,

Prikit on thame in full gret hy,

96 Sir Edward rides  
past the place of  
ambush.

100

104 Two archers  
shoot at the  
Scottish host.

108

112 King Robert  
perceives that  
some stratagem  
is intended,  
and keeps his  
men back.

116

[Fol. 120 b. C.]

120 [Fol. 53. E.]

But Sir Colin  
Campbell presses  
forward,

95. *For*] Bot EH.

113. [suld] sould H ; sall E ; C  
om.

96. *fer forrouth*] foorth before

H.

98. *Tv*] so EH ; And to C.

114. *Till*] To EH. *till*] at EH.

101. *wicht*] lyc̄ht E ; light H.

115. *in-till*] in-to EH.

ȝhomēn] ȝomen. *reill*] weill.

116. *Till*] To EH. *wald*] wald.

105, 109. *emang*] amang.

117. *I*] Ik.

107. *V*] Weill v E ; Well neere

118. *till*] to EH.

five H. *ek*] EH om.

119. *cammell*] Cambell E ; Camp-

111. *weill*] rycht. *swm power*]

bell H.

some power H ; suppowall E.

120. ȝhomēn] ȝhumēn E ; Yemen

H.

- and slays one of  
the archers.  
The other kills  
Sir Colin's horse.  
King Robert  
knocks Sir Colin  
down for  
disobedience,  
and says that  
such disobedience  
is full of danger.  
He advises his  
men to be wary.  
Then 30 of the  
enemy's archers  
appear,  
and shoot some of  
the king's men.
- And soyne the tañe he haſt our-tane,  
And with his sper him soyne haſt slayñe. 124  
The tothir turnyt and schot agayñe,  
And at a schot his hors has slayñe.  
Vith that the king come hastely,  
And in his gret malancoly, 128  
With añe transiouñe in[till] his nave,  
To schir colyne sic dusche he gave,  
That he dynnyt on his arsouñe.  
The king bad smertly tyt hym douñe,  
Bot othir lordis that war [him] by  
Avisit the king in sum party.  
He said, "the breking of bydding  
Micht cauſt be of discomfiting. 132  
Weyn ȝhe ȝon rebaldis durst assale  
Vs so neir in-till [our] Battale,  
Bot gif thai had suppowale neir?  
I wat richt weill, forouten weir,  
That we sall haue till do in hy ;  
Tharfor luk ilk man be reddy."  
With that weill neir xxx and ma  
Of bowmen com, and bykkyrit swa 140  
That thai hurt of the kyngis men.  
The king haſt gert his archeris then  
Schute for till put thaim than agayñe.

123. *tane*] ane H.  
124. *his*] the E; a H.  
128. *in—gret*] in-till his E; into  
his H.  
129. *ane*] A. *intill* E] into H;  
in C. *nave*] new E; neefe H.  
130. *he*] did H. *gave*] gewe E;  
giue H.  
131. *dynnyt*] fell downe H.  
132. *The—bad*] Then bad he EH.  
133. [him EH] C om.  
134. *Avisit*] Ameyssyt E; Hes  
meased H. *in sum*] in-to.  
135. *He*] And he E; Bot he H.  
*the*] EH om.
136. *be of*] be of thar C; all our  
E; H *has*—Might be cause of dis-  
confiting.  
138. *in-till our*] so E; C omits  
our; in our awne H.  
139. *suppowale*] suppowaill E; sup-  
plee right H.  
140. *forouten*] with-owtyn EH.  
141. *till*] to EH.  
143. *and*] or.  
146. *gert*] sent H.  
147. *Schute*] To shoot H. *till*] to  
EH. *thaim than*] thai men E; them  
H.

With that thai enterit in ane playñe,	148	
And saw arayit agane thame stand In four battellis fourty thousand.		Soon the Scotch see 40,000 men against them.
The king said, " now, lordingis, lat se Quha worthy in this ficht sall be !	152	
On thame forouten mair abaid ! "		
So stoutly than on thame thai raid, And assemblit so hardely,		The Scotch make the attack.
That of thair fayis a gret party	156	
War laid at erd at thar meting ;		
Thar wes of speris sic bristing, As athir apon othir raid,		There is great breaking of spears.
That it a veill gret frusche haȝ maid.	160	
Horȝ com thair fruschand, hed for hed, Swa that feill on the grund fell ded.		
Mony a wicht and worthy man,		[Fol. 121, C.]
[As] athir apon othir ran,	164	Many are slain or severely wounded.
War duschit ded douñe to the ground ;		
The rede blude out of mony a wound		
Ruschit in sa gret fusiouñe than,		
That of the blude the stremes ran.	168	
And thai, that vrath war and angry,		
Dang on othir so hardely		
With wapnys that var bricht & bar,		
That mony a vicht man ded ves thar.	172	
For thai, that hardy war and wicht,		
And frontly with thar fayis can ficht,		
Pressit thame formast for till be.		
Thair mycht men cruell bargane se, .	176	

148. *ane*] A.153. *forouten*] withouten H.157. *War*] Were H; Was E.160. *veill*] wele E; full H.161. *fruschand*] so CE; rushing H.162. *fell*] lay H.164. [As EH] Haiss (*wrongly*) C.166. *rede—of*] blood ran out at H.167. In sik effusion, that euen than  
H.168. *That of the*] Of very H.

169, 170. H omits.

169. *vrath*] wraith.172. *vicht*] gud E; good H. *ded**ves*] deyit E; died H.174. *frontly*] frontly or frontly C;

frontlynys E; printed stoutlynys J;

stoutly H. *can*] gan.175. *till*] to EH.176. *bargane*] battell H.

The battle is very severe.	And hard battall, I vndirstand. In-till [all] the weir of [Irländ] So hard ane fechting wes nocht seyñē.	
Sir Edward won 19 battles in 3 years,	The quhethir of gret victoris nynteyñē Schir Eduard had, withouten wer, In-till leſ than in-to thre ȝeir ;	180
sometimes defeating 20,000 men.	And in syndry battelis off thai He vencust tuenty thousand & ma, With trappit horſ richt to the feit. Bot, in [all] tymis, he wes ȝeit	184
He had always more than 1 against 5, but king Robert had here only 1 against 8.	Ay añe for v, quhen lest wes he. Bot the kyng in-to this melle Had allwayis aucht of his famen For añe, bot he swa bar him then	188
King Robert was always in the thick of the fight.	That his gud deid and his bounte Confortit swa all his menȝhe, That the mast coward hardy wes. For, quhar he saw the thykkest preſ,	192
Sir Thomas Murray was always close to him.	So hardly on thame he raid, That ay about hym rowme he maid, [That he slew all he might ourtak, And rudely rushed them abak.]	196
	And Erll thomas, the worthy, Wes in all tymis neir hym by, And faucht as he war in a rage ; Swa that, throu thar gret vassalage,	197*
	Thar men sic hardyment can tak,	198*
		197
		200

177. *battall*] bargaine H. *I*] Ik. *vndirstand*] tak on hand EH.  
 178. *In-till*] In EH. [*all EH*] C  
*om. of*] of all C; but all should precede the weir, as in EH. [*Irländ EH*] Ingland C.  
 179. *hard*] great H. *ane*] A.  
 180. *victoris*] wictours.  
 181. *had*] has.  
 182. *In-till*] And in-to E; And that in H. *in-to*] in EH.  
 184. *He vencust*] He vanquisht H; Wencussytt E. *tuenty*] xxx E;
186. *in all tymis*] in all tymys E; in to tymis C; in all that time H.  
 196. *ay*] thar. H has—And sa great roome about him made.  
 197\*, 198\*. In H only; CE omit. In H, ourtak is spelt ouertake, and abak is spelt aback.  
 198. *tymis*] tyme.  
 200. *throu*] for.  
 201. *sic*] sic gret. *can*] gan E; did H.

That thai no perell wald forsak.	
Bot thame abaundonyt so stoutly,	
And dang on thame so hardely,	20
That all thair fayis afayit war.	
And thai, that saw weill, by thair fair,	
That thai eschewit sum deill the ficht,	
Thai dang on thame with all thar mycht,	208
*And pressit thame dyngand so fast,	
*That thai the bak gaf at the last.	209*
*And thai, that saw thaim tak the ficht,	
*Pressit thame than with all thar mycht,	212*
And in thair fleying feill can sla.	209
The kingis men haſt chaſit swa,	
That thai war scalit euirilkane.	
Richard of clare the vay has tañe	
To devillyng, in full gret hy,	
With othir lordis that fled him by,	
And varnyst bath castell and townys	
That war in thair possessownnis.	216
Thai war so felly fleyit thar,	
That, [as] I trow, Richard of clar	
Sall haf no will to faynd his mycht	
In battell na in forſ of ficht,	
Quhill king robert and his menȝhe	
Is duelland in-to that Cuntre !	
Thai stuffit strynthis on this viȝ;	
And the king, that wes sa till pris,	224
Saw in the feild richt mony slayn.	

203. *abaundonyt*] abandound.208. *Thai—thame*] Than dang thai on.209\*—212\*. *In CH ; E omits.*209\*. *thame dyngand*] dinging on them H.212\*. *Here H repeats l. 208.*209. *can*] gan.211. *war—euirilkane*] discomfist them ilkane H.212. *vay*] way.213. *derillyng*] dewillyne E ; Deuilling H. *in*] in-to.215. *varnyst*] warnysyt E ; garnisht H. *castell*] so H ; castellis E.217. *felly*] fellowly H.218. *[as H]* CE om. *Richard*] schir Richard.220. *forſs of*] field to H. *of*] to.222. *in-to*] in.223. *riss*] wiss.224. *sa*] E om. *till*] to EH.

Robert sees a  
prisoner weeping,  
and asks him  
why he weeps.

And ane of thame that thar ves tane,  
That wes arayit Iolely,  
He saw gret wondir tendirly.

228

"Sir, it is no  
wonder,  
for the flower of  
all North Ireland  
lies dead here!"

He askit him, 'quhy he maid sic cher?'

He said him, "schir, forouten wer,  
It is no vonder thouch I grete,  
I se heir feill fellit to fete,

232

The flour of [all north] Irland,  
That hardyest wes of hert and hand,  
And mast doutit in hard assay."

"Thou hast more  
cause for mirth,  
having yourself  
escaped death."

The king said, "thou has<sup>t</sup> vrang, perfay ;  
Thou has<sup>t</sup> mair cauf<sup>t</sup> myrthis till ma,  
For thou the ded eschapit swa."

236

When Sir Edward  
hears of his  
brother's success  
in his absence,  
he is very wroth.

**R**ychard of clare on this maner,  
And all his folk, discumfit wer  
With [few] folk, as I [to] ȝow tald.

240

And quhen Eduard the bruce so bald  
Wist at the king had fouchten swa  
With sa feill folk, and he thar-fra,  
Micht no man se aȝe vrathar man.

244

But the gude king said till hym than,  
That It wes in his awn folly,  
For he raid sa vnvittandy,  
So fer befor, and no avaward  
Maid to thame of the reirward.  
For he said, 'quha on were vald ryde,

248

226. *wes*] wes.228. *gret*] greyt E : him weepe H.229. *wondir tendirly*] right dulefully H.230. *forouten*] with-owtyn.231. *vonder*] wondre.232. *heir—fete*] fele her lossyt the  
suet E ; sa mony slaine at my feete H.233. [all north EH] the north of  
all C.234. *wes*] war. *hert and*] thair.236. *has*] dois. *vrang*] wrang.241. [few EH] feill (*wrongly*) C.  
[to E] haue to H ; C om.242. *so*] sa H ; the E.245. *no*] na. *vrathar*] wraither  
H ; waer E.248. *vnrittandy*] wnwittely E ;  
vnwittely H.249. *avaward*] waward. *and—*  
*avaward*] making na ward H.250. To them that were in the  
Reeregard H.251. *vald*] wald.

In the vaward, he suld na tyde  
 Press fra his rerward fer of sicht ;  
 For gret perell so fall thar mycht.  
 Of this ficht will we spek no mair.  
 The king and all that with him war  
 Raid furthwarde in-to bettir aray,  
 And neir to-giddir than ere did thai.  
 Throu all the land planly thai raid ;  
 Thai fand nane that thame varnyng maid.  
 Thai raid evin forrouth drouchyndra,  
 And forrouth devilling syne alsua ;  
 Bot to gif battale nane thai fand.  
 Syne thai went forthwarde in the land,  
 And sowth till lwnyk held thair way,  
 That is the southmast touñe, perfay,  
 That in Irland may fundyn be.  
 Thair lay thai dayis twa or thre,  
 And buskit syne agane to fare.  
 And quhen that thai all reddy war,  
 The king haſ herd añe woman cry  
 And askit quhat that wes in hy.  
 "It is añe landar, *sehir*," said añe,  
 "That hir childyne richt now haſ tañe,  
 And mon lewe now behynd vs her,  
 Tharfor scho makis ȝon euill cher."

252 Robert reproves him for his carelessness.

256 Thereafter, the Scottish host held better together.

260

They pass Drogueda and Dublin.

264 They proceed to the very southern-most town of Ireland.

268

After a halt, as they prepare to go on, the king hears a woman's cry, and learns that a poor laundress is seized with labour.

276

252. *the raward*] a waward E ; the Vangard H.

253. *Presss*] Pass EH. *rerward*] Reregarde H. *of*] fra H ; from A.

254. *so*] swa.

256. *The*] Bot the EH; But the A. *with him*] thar.

257. *furthwarde*] furthwart E ; fordward H. *in-to*] in E ; in a H.

258. *neir*] neere H ; nerar E.

260. *varnyng*] obstakill E ; obstable H.

261. *evin*] ewyn. *forrouth*] before H. *drouchyndra*] drochindra E ; Drochynda H.

262. *forrouth*] before H. *devilling*] dewillyne E ; Deuilling H ; Devilling A.

263. *Bot*] And.

264. *forthwarde*] southwart EH.

265. *sowth*] rycht E ; right H. *lwnyk*] Lynrike H ; Lymrik A ; Kynrike E.

271. *herd*] hard. *ane*] A.

272. *And*] He EH.

273. *ane* (1)] a H ; the E. *landar*] layndar E ; Lauender H.

274. *childyne*] child-ill E ; child-euill H.

275. *lewe*] leve E ; leauue H.

The king said, "Certis, it war pite  
That scho in that poynt left suld be  
For certis, I trow, thar is no man  
That he ne will rew vp-on woman."

280

He makes his  
men halt,  
and prepares a  
tent for her.

His host all than arrestit he,  
And gert aīe tent soyne stentit be,  
And gert her gang in hastily ;  
And othir women till be hir by,  
Quhill scho delyuer wes, he bad ;  
And syne furth on his wayis raid :  
And how scho furth suld caryit be,  
Or euir he fure, than ordanit he.

284

This wes a full gret curtasy,  
That sic a kyng and swa mychty  
Gert his men duell on this maner  
Bot for a full pouir laynder.

288

Northwarde agane thai tuk the vay ;  
Throu all Irland thus passit thai  
Throu conage richt to dewilling,  
And throu al myth and Irell syne,  
And mwnser and [throu] lainenser,  
And syne haly throu vllister  
To cragfergus forout battell ;  
For thar wes nane durst thame assale.

292

They pass  
through all  
Meath,  
Munster,  
Leinster, and  
Ulster unop-  
posed.

296

298

280. *vp-on woman*] a woman than E; of women than H.

than perfay.

281. *host*] ost. than] thar.

295. *conage*] all connach E; all Connoch H. richt] Hom. dewilling] dewillyne E; Deviline H.

282. *ane*] A.

296. *myth*] methy E; Mich H; Meath A. *Irell*] Iereby E; Irrelle H; Tyrrell A.

284. *till*] to E; H om.

297, 298. *Transposed in E.*

285. *delyuer wes*] wes deliuer E;

297. *And*] Through H. *mwnser*] monester E; Monaster H; Munster A. [throu] through A; CEH om. *lainenser*] lenester E; Lawester H; Linster A.

delivered was H.

298. *vllister*] wlsister E; all Vlsister H; all Ulster A.

288. *fure than*] furth fur E; fure H.

299. *forout*] for-owtyn E; without H.

290. *sic*] swilk.

292. *full*] EH om. *laynder*] lauender EH.

293. *Northwaræ agane*] Norvarde agane C; Agayne northwart E; Againe Northward H. the] thair EH.

294. *thus*] then H. *thus—thai*]

The kingis than of the cryschrye Com to schir Eduarde halely, And thair manrent till him can ma, Bot gif that it war aȝe or twa. Till cragfergus thai come agane ; In all that vay wes no bargane, Bot gif that ony pwnȝie wer That is nocht for till spek of her.	304	All the Irish kings submit to Sir Edward.
The erische kyngis than euirilkaȝe Hayme till thar awne repar ar gaȝe, And vndirtuk in all-kyn thyng For till obeyf till the biddynge Of schir Eduard, that thar king call thai.	308	There was but little fighting.
He wes weill set now in gud way To conquest the land all halely ; For he had apon his party The eryschry and vllister,	312	The Irish kings return home.
And he wes swa furth of his wer That he wes passit throu all Irland Fra end till end throu strynth of hand. Couth he haf gouernit hym throu skill, And fallowit nocht to fast his will, Bot with mesour haf led his deid, It wes weill lik, withouten dreid, That he mycht haff conquerit weill The land of Irland euirilk deill.	316	Sir Edward is now in a good position,
	320	having passed over all Ireland.
	324	[Fol. 54. E.] If he had used some tact, he might have conquered all Ireland.

301. *than*] EH *om.* *the*] E *om.* *eryschrye*] Irchery E; Irishry H. *in*] so EH; and in C; *but* and *is not wanted*.

315. *conquest*] conquer E; conquesse H. *all*] EH *om.*

317. *eryschrye*] Irschery E; Irishry H. *vllister*] wlsystyr E; all Vlsister H; all ulster A.

318. *of*] on EH.

319. *all*] E *om.*

320. *end* (2)] wthyr E.

322. *fallowit*] folowynt E; followed H.

325. *conquerit*] conqueissed H.

326. *euirilk*] ilka.

306. *ray*] way. *no*] nane.

307. *that*] it H. *pwnȝe*] poynȝe

E; Skirmish H.

308. *till*] to EH.

309. *erische*] Irsche E; Irish H.

*than*] H *om.*

312. *obeyss till*] obey to EH.

313. *call*] callit E; called H.

314. *weill—now*] now weill set.

Bot his outrageous succudry

His own pride  
prevented that.

328  
And will, that mar wes [than] hardy,  
Of purpos letit hyin, perfay,  
As I heir-eftir sall ȝow say.

**How the gud dowglass slew the erll richmonde of  
yngland.**

**N**ow leiff we heir the nobill king  
All at his eis and his liking,

[Fol. 123. C.]

Meantime lord  
Douglas is left to  
defend the  
Scottish border.

332  
And spek we of the lord douglas,  
That left to kep the marchis waſt.  
He gert get vrichtis that ves sle,  
And in the hawch of lyntoun-le  
He gert thame mak a fair maner.  
And quhen the housis biggit wer,  
He gert purvay hym richt weill thar.  
For he thought for till mak Infair,  
And till mak gud cher till his men.

An English earl,  
named Sir  
Thomas,  
living at  
Richmond,  
is envious of  
Douglas.

340  
In rychmond wes thar wonnand then  
Ane Erll, men callit schir thomas ;  
He had Invy at the dowglas,  
And said, " gif that he his Baner  
Micht se displayit apon wer,  
That soyn assemble on it suld he."  
He herd how dowglaſſ thought to be  
At lyntoun-le añe fest till ma ;  
And he had wittyng weill alsua,

327. *succudry*] sucquedry E; succudry H.

328. *mar wes*] wes mar. [than EH] and C.

330. *I*] Ik.

*Rubric in H*—How Dowglas slew Richmond, syne at meat In battell their harbreours serued in seat.

333. *lord*] lord of.

335. *get*] so CH; set E. *ves sle*] war sleye.

336. *hawch*] halche E; hawgh H. *lyntoun-le*] lyntaile E; Lyntalle H.

338. *housis*] houss (= housis) C;  
hownssis E; houses H.

340. *for—mak*] to mak ane EH.

341. *till (1)*] to EH. *till (2)*] to H.

342. *thar*] E om.

343. *men callit*] that men callit E; that called was H.

349. *lyntoun-le*] lyntainley E; Lyn-talle H. *ane*] and E; a H. *till*] to EH.

350. *had*] gat H. *wittyng*] witting H; wittering E.

That the king and a gret menȝe War passit than of the cuntre, And the Erll of murref, thomas. Tharfor he thought the cuntre was Febill of men, for till withstand Men that thame soucht vith stalvard hand ;	352	He learns that king Robert and Sir Thomas Murray had gone away.
And of the marchis than had he The gouernale and the pouste. He gaderit folk about hym then, Quhill he wes neir ten thousand men, And wode-axis gert vith hym tak ; For he thought he his men wald mak Till hew douñe Iedward forest cleyñe, That na tre suld tharin be seyne.	356	
Thai held thaim furthward on thar vay ; Bot the gud lord of dowglas ay Had spyis out on ilka syde, And had gud witting that thai vald rydc, And cum apon hym suddanly. Than gaderit he richt hastily Thame that he mycht of his menȝe ;	364	He gathers 10,000 men, and proceeds to Jedwood forest, to hew down the trees there.
I trow that than with hym had he Fifty, that worthy war and vicht, At all poynt armyt weill and dicht And of archeris a gret menȝe Assemblit als with hym had he.	368	Sir James of Douglas hears of this, and assembles 50 men and some archers.
A place than wes thar in the way, Quhar he wist weill thai vald avay,	372	
		[Fol. 123 b. C.]
		He lays an ambush in a pass

355. *till*] to EH.356. *thame soucht*] them sought H; suld E (*the verb being omitted*). *with*] with EH.361. *gert*] gert he C; but EH omit he. *with hym*] them A.362. *he* (2)] E om.363. *Till*] To EH. *doune*] E om. *Iedward*] Iedwort E; Iedburgh H. *cleyne*] sa clene.365. *vay*] way.366. *of*] EH om. *ay*] that ay EH.368. *And*] EH om. *had*] Gat H.*witting*] wittering. *vald*] wald EH.371. *mycht*] mowcht.372. *had he*] wald be.373. *vicht*] wicht.377. *than*] thar.378. *wist*] thocht. *thai—avay*] thai suld away E; that passe wald they H.

that grew narrow like a shield,	That had wode apon athir syde ; The Entre wes weill large and vyde ; And as añe schelde it narrowit ay Quhill that, in-till añe place, the vay Wes nocth a penny-stañe cast of breid. The lord of douglas thiddir ȝeid, Quhen he wist thai war neir cumand, And in a clewch on the ta hand All his archeris enbuschit he, And [bad] thame hald thame all preue Quhill that thai herd him raiȝ the cry , And than suld thai schute hardely Emang thar fayis, and hald thame thar Quhill that he throu thame passit war ; And synce with him furth hald suld thai Than byrkis on athir syde the way, That ȝoung and thik wes growand ner, He knyt to-giddir on sic maner, That men mycht nocth weill throu thaim ryde. Quhen this wes done, he can abyde Apon the tothir half the way ; And Richmond in-till gude aray Com rydand in the first battale. The lorde dowglas haȝ seyn veill all, And gert his men all hald thame still, Quhill richt at hand thai com thame till, And Enterit in the narrow way. Then the Scoteh all rush upon him at once,	380 384 388 392 396 400 404
and tells his archers to wait for his order.		
He twists together the birch-trees on each side of the path.		
When Richmond approaches, Douglas waits till he enters the pass.		
Then the Scoteh all rush upon him at once,	Than with añe schout on thame schot thai,	

380. *vyde*] wid.381. *ane*] A.382. *ane*] A.384. *ȝeid*] he ȝeid C; but EH omit  
he.386. *in*] E om. *clewch*] Cleugh  
H; louch E.387. *All*] Has.

388. [bad E] bid C.

389. *herd*] hard.390. *thai*] E om.391. *Emang*] Amang. *hald-*  
*thar*] sow thaim sar E; saile them  
saire H.395. *wes*] war.398. *he*] E om. *can*] gan.399. *half*] side of H.400. *in-till*] in EH.401. *battale*] escheill E; Eshell H.402. *veill all*] him weil EH.404. *richt at*] at thair EH.406. *ane*] A.

- Cryand on hicht, “douglas, douglas!”  
Than richmonde, that [rycht] worthy waſ,  
Quhen he [has] herd sa riſ the cry,  
And dowglas baner saw planly,  
He dressit him thiddir-ward in hy.  
And thai com on sa hardely, 412  
That thai throu thame maid thame gud way ;  
All at thai [met] till erd bar thai.  
The richmond borne dounē than was ;  
On hym areſtit the Dowglas,  
And him reuersit ; syne with a knyff  
Richt in that place hym reft the liff.  
Añe hat apon his helm he bare,  
And that tuk douglas with him thar 420  
In taknyng, for it furrit waſ.  
And syne in hy his way he tais,  
Quhill in the wode thai enterit war ;  
The archeris weill has borne thame thar ; 424  
For weill and hardely schot thai.  
The ynglis rout in gret effray  
War set, for douglas suddandy,  
Vith all thame of his Cumpany, 428  
Or euir thai wist, war in thar rout,  
And thrillit thame weill neir throu-out ;  
And had almast all doñe his deid,  
Or thai till help thame couth tak hede. 432  
And quhen thai saw thar lord ves slayne,

407. *Cryand*] And cryt E; And dang H.  
cried H.  
408. [rycht] right H; than E; C om.  
409. [has E] had H; C om. herd]  
hard. riſs] rise H; raiss E.  
410. *saw*] he saw C; but EH omit  
he.  
411. *him*] E om.  
413. *gud*] the. H has—That  
through them haue they made their  
way.  
414. [met EH] mycht C. bar]
416. *On—the*] And soone areſted  
him H.  
417. *syne*] and E; H om.  
418. *hym reft*] reft him.  
420. *douglas—him*] with him  
dowglas.  
422. *his—he*] thair wayis E; his  
wayes H.  
429. *war*] wes.  
430. *thrillit*] thyrlt E; thirled H.  
432. *Or*] Ere H. till] to EH.  
433. *ves*] was H; E om.
- crying “Douglas!  
Douglas!”
- 408
- Douglas kills  
Richmond with a  
dagger,
- [Fol. 124. C.]
- 416
- [Fol. 54 b. E.]
- 420
- and takes away  
his furred hat.
- 424
- The English are  
dismayed.
- 428
- Seeing their lord  
slain,
- 432

they retreat a little,

Thai tuk hym vp, and vent agayne  
Till draw thame fra the schot avay ;  
Than in añe playne assemblit thai.

436

and take up quarters for the night.

And, for thar lord that thar wes ded,  
Thai schupe thame in that Ilke sted  
For till tak herbery all that nycht.

436

Douglas hears that a clerk named Ellis, with 300 men, have taken up their quarters near him.

And than the douglas, that wes wicht,

440

Gat wittering that añe clerk, elyß,  
With weill thre hundred enymyß,  
All straucht till lyntoun-le war gañe,  
And herbery for thair host had tañe,  
Than thiddir is he went in hy,  
With all thame of his cumpany,  
And fand clerk Eliß at the met,  
And all his rout about him set.

444

And thai com [on] hym stoutly thair,  
And with suerdis that scharply schar  
Thai seruit thame full egyrly.

448

Thai war slayn doun so halely,  
That thar weill neir eschapit nañe.  
Thai seruit thame in sa gret wayne  
With scherand swerdis and with knyvis,  
That weill neir all lesyt thar livis.  
Thai had añe fellowune entremasß,  
For that su[r]charge to chargeand waß !  
Thai that eschapit thair throu carß

452

They had a cruel entremet at their dinner!

453. *om.*      452. Slayn war thai full grewously  
E.                  E.

434. *rent*] turnyt E ; turned H.  
435. *Till*] To EH.  
436. *ane*] A.  
438. *Ilke*] Ilk EH.  
439. *till*] to EH.  
441. *wittering*] wit H. *that*] E om.  
*elyss*] aue elyss C (*but* EH *omit 2nd ane*) ; Elyss E ; Eleis H.

EH.      452. Slayn war thai full grewously  
E.                  E.

443. *till*] to EH. *lyntoun-le*] lyn-tailo E ; Lyntalle H.  
447. *Ellis*] Ellys E ; Eleis H.  
448. *all*] E om. *rout*] round.  
449. *[on EH]* C om. *hym*] thaim

453. *thar*] E om.  
454. *in*] on. *sa*] full H.  
456. *lesyt*] left E ; leesed H. *thar*] the.  
457. *anr*] A. *entremass*] estremess E ; Intermais H.  
458. For that subcharge too charg-ing was H ; That sowrchargis to charg-and wes E.

Richt till thar thair wayis tais,	460	[Fol. 124 b. C.]
And tald how that thar men war slayne		
So cleyne, that neir eschapit nane.		
And quhen thai of the host has herd		When the rest of the English hear of this,
How that the dowglaſ with thame ferd,	464	
That had thar herbreouris all slayne,		
And ruschit als thame-self agañe,		
And slew thar lord in-myd thar rowt,		
Ther wes nane of thame all sa stownt,	468	
That mair will had than till assale		
The dowglaſ ; tharfor till consale		
[Thai] ȝeid, and till purpoſ haſ tañe		they propose to return home with all speed.
Till wend hamward, and haym [ar] gañe ;	472	
And sped thame swa apon thair way,		
That in yngland soyne cummyn ar thai.		
The forest left thai standand still ;		They left Jed- wood forest untouched.
Till hew it than thai had no will ;	476	
And specialy, quhill the dowglaſ		
So neir hand by thair nyghtbour waſ.		
And he, that saw thame turn agane,		Douglas now perceives that the man whom he killed was Richmond himself.
Persauit weill thair lord ves slañe,	480	
And by the hat that he had tane		
He wist it alsua weill ; for añe,		
That takyn wes, said him suthly,		One of the prisoners recognizes Richmond's furred hat.
That the richmond commonly	484	
Wes wount that furrit hat to were.		
Than dowglaſ blithar wes than ere ;		

460. *thar*] the. *Richt—thar*] To *Thai ȝeid*] That time H.  
 their great H. *thair*] the EH.
462. *neir*] ner E ; there H.
463. *the*] thar. *has*] had EH.
465. *herbreouris*] herbryouris E ; herbyours H. *all*] E om.
466. *als*] all EH.
469. *had than*] than had E ; had them H.
470. *The—tharfor*] Therefore they haue tane H. *till*] to EH.
471. [Thai E] He C (*wrongly*).
472. *haym*] hamwart. [ar E] are H; is C.
474. *in*] to H.
476. *Till*] To EH.
477. *And*] E om.
480. *ves*] wes.
482. *it*] E om. ; right H. *alsua weill*] well also H.
483. *suthly*] surely H.
484. *the richmond*] Rychmound E ; Richemond ay H.

For he weill wist that the richmond,  
His fellowoun fa, wes brought to ground.

488

Thus did Sir  
James of Douglas  
defeat 10,000 foes  
with only 50 men.

**S**chir Iames of dowglaſ on this viſ,  
Throu his vorschip and gret emprif,  
Defendit worthely the land.

This poynt of weir, I tak on hand,

492

Wes vndirtane so apertly,

And eschevit richt hardely ;

For he stonayit, withouten weir,

496

The folk that weill ten thousand weir

With fifty armyt men, but ma.

I can tell you of  
two other fightis  
fought by 50 men.

I can als tell ȝow othir twa

Poyntis, that weill eschevit weir

500

With fifty men ; and, but all weir,

Thai war done swa richt hardely,

501\*

That thai war prisit soueranly

[Fol. 125. C.]

Atour all othir poyntis of wer

That in thar tym eschevit wer.

504\*

This one was the  
first.

This wes the first, that sa stoutly

501

Wes brought till end weill with fifty.

The second was  
in Galloway,  
when Sir Edward  
defeated Aymer  
St John and  
1500 men.

In galloway the tothir fell ;

504

Qulhen, as ȝe forrouth herd me tell,

Schir Eduard the bryſ with fifty

Veneust of saint Iohñe schir amery

And xv hundreth men be tale.

487. *the]* EH *om.*490. *vorschip]* worschip. *gret]* his  
EH.493. *so]* full E ; right H.494. *eschevit]* eschewyt E ; en-  
cheeuued H ; and *so in l. 499.*495. *stonayit]* na stonayit (!) E ;  
astoneyed H. *withouten]* for-owtyn.  
*weir]* wer E ; weere H.496. *The]* That.500. *all]* E *om.*501\*—504\*. Not in E. Found in  
CHJ.501\*. *done—richt]* all done sa H.502\*. *prisit]* praised H.504\*. *escherit]* encheeuued H.501, 502. H has—This was the first :  
that with fiftie Was brought to end,  
and sa stoutly.502. *till]* to EH.503. *In]* In-to E. *tothir]* other H.504. *forrouth—me]* heard me be-  
fore H.505. *Schir]* How Sir H. *bryss]*  
bruys E ; Bruce H.506. *Veneust]* Wencussyt E ; Van-  
quisht H. *amery]* amy (*miswritten*  
*for amery*) C ; Amery E ; Aymery H.507. *xv]* fifteene H ; fyftie E.

The thrid fell in-to Eske dale,	508	The third was in Eskdale, against Sir John de Soulis.
Quhen that schir Iohñe de sowlis waſ		
[The] gouernour of all that plaſ		
That to schir androu the herdclay	512	
With fifty men withset the vay,		
That had thar in his Cumpany		
Thre hundreth horsit Iolely.		[Fol. 55. E.]
This schir Iohñe, in-to plane melle,		
Throu hardyment and souerane bounte	516	But Sir John, having 300 men, had the best of it.
Vencust thame sturdely ilkañe,		
And schir androu in hand haſ tañe.		
I will nocht reherſ all the maner ;		
For quha sa likis, thai may heir	520	Young women still sing about it in ballads.
ȝoung women, quhen thai will play,		
Syng it emang thame ilke day.		
Thir war the worthy poyntis thre,		
That, I trow, euirmar sall be	524	
Prisit, quhill men may on thaim meyn.		
It is weill worth, forouten weyn,		
That thar namys for euirmar,		
That in thar tyme so worthy war	528	It is very fit that the names of such heroes should obtain lasting praise.
That men till heir ȝeit haſ dantee		
Of thair worschip and gret bounte ,		
Be lestand ay furth in lovyng ;		
Quhare he, that is of hevyn the king,	532	

508. *in-to*] in-till E. *Eske dale*] Esdaill E; Eskdale H.

509. *de*] the E; of H. *sowlis*] soulis E; Sowlies H.

510. [The EH] C om.

511. *the*] EH om. *herdclay*] hard-clay E; Hardeclay H; Herkelay A.

512. *withset*] beset H.

515. *in-to*] in-till.

516. Throu sowerane hardiment  
that felle E; Through Soueraigne  
hardement, and bountie H.

517. *Vencust*] Wencussyt E · Van-  
quisht H.

519. *all*] now H; E om.

521. *women*] miswritten woman C;  
wemen E; women H.

522. *emang*] amang. *ilke*] ilk E;  
euerilk H.

525. *Prisit*] Praised H. *meyn*]  
mene EH.

529. *dantee*] daynte E; daintie H.

530. *Of*] For E; That H. *gret*]  
thair EH.

531. *lestand—in*] alway lesting  
into H. *lovyng*] lowing; (*and in l.*  
534).

532. *hevyn the*] hewynnys E; Al-  
mighty H.

Bring thame hye vp till hevynnis blif,  
Quhar alway lestand loving if!

Meanwhile some  
Englishmen,  
dwelling beside  
the Humber,

sail in ships  
towards Scotland.  
[Fol. 125 b. C.]

They knew that  
king Robert was  
absent.

They sail up the  
Firth of Forth,

and land at  
Inverkeithing,  
near Dunfermline.

The earl of Fife  
opposes them.

**I**n-till this tyme that the Rychmond  
Wes on this maner brought to ground, 536  
Men of the cost of yngland,  
That duelt on hummyr or neirhand,  
Gaderit thame a gret menȝhe,  
And went with schippes to the sc, 540  
And toward scotland went in hy,  
And in the firth com hastely.  
Thai wend till haf all thar liking ;  
For thai vist richt weill at the king 544  
Wes than fer out of the cuntre,  
And with him mony of gret bounte.  
Tharfor in-to the firth com thai,  
And endlang furth held thai thar vay 548  
Quhill thai, besyde Enuerkethynē,  
On vest half, toward dunfermlynē,  
Tuk land, and fast begouth to reif.  
The Erll of fiff and the schirreff 552  
Saw till thar cost schippes approchand,  
Thai gaderit till defend thair land,  
And ay forgane the schippis ay,  
As thai salit, thai held thar way, 556  
And thought till let thaȝe land to tak.  
And quhen the schipmen saw thame mak

533. *hye vp*] he wp.

535. *Rubric in H*—How the Bishop  
of Dvnkeldin syne, Scomfist the ship-  
men beside Dumfermling. *In-till*] In EH.

538. *hummyr*] humbre E ; Homber  
H.

540. *with*] in EH.

543. *haf*] haf had CH ; but E  
omits had.

544. *vist*] wyst. *richt*] EH om.  
*at*] that EH.

546. *And*] E om.

548. *furth—vay*] It wp held thai  
E ; it held vp their way H.

549. *Enuerkethynē*] Enuerkething  
E ; Innerkething H.

550. *vest*] west. *dunfermlynē*]  
dunferlyng E ; Dumfermling H.

551. *reif*] ryve.

552. *schirreff*] schyrrye.

554. *till*] to EH ; and in l. 557.

555. *ay forgane*] aforgayn E ; they  
forgane H.

556. *held*] tooke H.

Sic contenanſ in sic aray,		
Thai said emang thaim all that thai	560	
Vald nocht let for thame land to ta.		
Than to the land thai sped thame swa,		
That thai com thair in full gret hy,		
And arivit full hardely.	564	
The Scottis men saw thair cummyng,		
And had of thame sic abasyng,		
That thai all sammyn raid thaſe fra,		
And the land letleſ leit thame ta.	568	The Scottish host is seized with a panic, though there are 500 men of them.
Thai durst nocht fecht vith thame, for thi		
Thai vithdrew thame all halely ;		
The quhethir thai var v hundreth ner.		
Quhen thai avay thus ridand wer,	572	
And na defens begouth to schop,		
Of dunkelden the gude bischop,		
That men callit willzaſe syncler,		
Com with a rout in gud manere,	576	But William Sinclair, bishop of Dunkeld,
I trow on horſ thai war sixty.		
Hymſelf wes armyt Iolely,		comes up with 60 knights, well armed.
And raid apon a stalward steid ;		
A chemeyr, for till heill his veid,	580	
Aboue his armyng had he then ;		
And als weill armyt ves his men.		
The Eſſl with the ſchirreff met he		[Fol. 126. C.]
Awayward with [thar] gret menſe.	584	

559. *Sic*] Swilk. *in*] and H.560. *emang*] amang. *all*] H. om.567. *sammyn raid*] haill did ryde H.568. *And*] And to C; but EH omit to; see l. 588. *letless*] but stop H.571. *var*] war. *hundreth*] hunder.572. *avay*] away.573. *schop*] schape E; shape H; misspelt scop C.574. *dunkelden*] dunkeldyn EH. *bischop*] byschap E; Bishop H.575. *syncler*] the sanctecler E.

That William was called of Sincler H.

580. *chemeyr*] chemer E; Chimmer H.581. *Aboue*] Apon E; Abone H. *armyng*] armour EH.582. *als—ves*] armyt weill als war E; armed also were H.583. *with*] and EH.584. *Awayward*] Awaward C; Awaywart E; Ryding away H. [thar E] their H; a C.

**He reproves the  
earl of Fife for  
his cowardice,**

He askit thaīne weill soyn, ‘ quhat hy  
Maid thame till turne so hastely ? ’  
Thai said, thair fais with stalvard hand  
Had in sic fusiouñe takyñe land,

588

**telling him he  
is a fine guardian  
of the country,**

That thai thought thame allout to fele,  
And thame to few with thame to dele.  
Quhen the bischop herd it wes sa,  
He said, “ the king aucht weill to ma

592

**and ought to have  
his gilt spurs  
cut off.**

Of ȝow, that takis sa weill on hand  
In his absens till wer the land !  
Certis, gif he gert serwe ȝow weill,  
The gilt spuris, richt by the heill,

596

**Then the bishop  
leads his men to  
the attack in  
good order.**

He suld in hy ger hew ȝow fra ;  
Richt vald with cowardis men did swa.  
Quha lufis his lord and his Cuntre,  
Turñe smertly now agane with me ! ”

600

With that he kest of his Chemer,  
And hynt in hand a stalward sper,  
And raid toward his fayis in hy.

604

All turnyt with hym halely ;  
For he had thame repreuit swa,  
That of thame all nane vent him fra.  
He raid befor thame sturdely,

608

And thai hym followit sarryaly,

Quhill that thai com neir approchand

To thar fais that had tane land.

**[Fol. 55 b. E.]**

And sum war knyt in gud aray,  
And sum war set to the forray.  
The gud bischop, quhen he thaīne saw,

612

**The bishop  
exhorts his men.**

He said, “ lordingis, but dreid or aw  
Prek we apon thame hardely ;

585. *He]* And.

598. *vald]* wald EH ; should A.

586. *till]* to EH ; and in l. 594.

599. *and]* or.

587. *stalvard]* stalwart.

605. *repreuit]* reprowyt.

588. *fusioune]* foysoun. *land]* the  
land.

606. *vent]* went H ; fled E.

594. *the]* his EH.

608. *hym—sarryaly]* followed full  
manfully H.

595. *serwe]* serff E ; serue H.

612. *set]* went EH.

And we sall haf thāmē veill lightly.	616
Se thai vs cum but abaysing,	
Sa that we mak heir na stynting,	
Thai sall weill soyne discumfit be.	
Now dois weill, for men sall se	620
Quha lufis the kyngis mensk to-day!"	
Than all to-giddir, in gud aray,	
Thai prekit apon thame sturdely.	
The bischop, that wes richt hardy,	624 [Fol. 126 b. C.]
And mekill and stark, raid forrouth ay.	
Than in a frusche assemblit thai,	
And thai that, at the first metyng	
Of speris, feld so sair sowing,	628
Vayndist and vald haf beyn avay;	
Toward thar schippis in hy held thai,	
And thai com chassand felonly,	
And slew thame sa dispitfully,	632
That all the feldis strowit war	
Of Inglis men that slayn wes thar;	
And thai that $\beta$ beit held vnslayn	
Pressit thame to the se agane.	636
And scottis men, that chassit swa,	
Slew all that thai mycht our-ta.	
Bot thai that fled [ $\beta$ beit], nocht-for-thi,	
Swa till thar schippis can thame hy,	
And in sum bargis sa feill can ga,	640
For thair fais thame chasit swa,	

616. *veill*] wele. *lichtly*] hastily  
H.  
617. *Se thai*] Gif they see H.  
620. *sall*] soyn sall C; but EH  
omit soyn. See I. 619.  
625. *forrouth*] fordward H.  
628. *Of—feld*] Feld off the speris  
E; Felt of their speares H.  
629. *Vayndist*] Wandyst E; Van-  
quisht H; Vanquisht A. *vald*] wald.  
630. *thar*] the.  
631. *com chassand*] thaim chassyt  
E them chased H.
632. *sa*] sua E; full H. *dispit-*  
*fully*] despitously EH.  
634. *wes*] war.  
635. *So CH.* *that*  $\beta$ eyt that.  
636. *thame*] E om.  
638. *that*] that euir.  
639. [ $\beta$ eyt E] yet H; C om.  
640. *can*] gan.  
641. *bargis*] barge E; baittes H.  
*can*] gan.  
642. And thair fayis hastyt thaim  
sua.

That thai ourtummyllit, and the men

That war thar-in all drownit then.

644

**One Englishman**  
did a great feat;

Thar did ane ynglis<sup>h</sup> man, perfay,

A weill gret strynth, as I herd say.

For quhen he chassit wes to the bat,

A scottis man, that hym handlyt hat,

648

He hynt [than] by the armys twa ;

[And], war him weill or war him wa,

He evin apon his bak hym flang,

And with hym till the bat can gang,

652

And kest him in, all magre his.

This wes ane weill gret strynth, Iwi<sup>ß</sup>.

The ynglis<sup>h</sup> men, that wan avay,

Till thair schippes in hy vent thai,

656

And salit hayme, angry and wa

That thai had beyn reboytit swa.

**How gude king robert the bruce com hame agane  
fra Ireland.**

Nesly 500 men  
were killed,  
besides those who  
were drowned.

**Q** when that the schipmen on this viß

Wes discunfit, as I deuif<sup>h</sup>,

660

The Bischop, that so weill hym bare

That he all hertit that wes thar,

Wes zeit in-to the fechting-sted,

Quhar that v hundredth neir wes ded,

664

Forouten thaïne that drownynt war.

[Fol. 127. C.] And, quhen the feld wes spulȝeit bare,

643. *ourtummyllit*] ourtumblyt.

656. *Till*] To E ; Toward H. *rent*]

644. *thar-in*] thar. *all*] war E ;

went EH.

were H.

658. *reboytit*] rebutyt E ; rebuted H.

645. *perfay*] that day H.

*Rubric in H*—The hame-come of

646. *I herd*] Ik hard.

King Robert Out of Ireland fra 'Sir

647. *to the*] till his.

Edward.

649. *[than E] vp H* ; hym C.

660. *Wes*] War.

650. *[And EH] For C.*

662. *wes thar*] thar war. And had

651. *flang*] so E ; flang or slang C ;

comforted all that were there H.

slang H.

663. *the*] E om.

652. *till*] to E ; in H. *can*] gan.

664. *that v*] neere twa H. *hun-*

654. *ane*] A.

*dreth*] hundir. *neir*] well H. *wes*]

655. *wan*] went H. *away*] away.

war.

Thai went all hayme to thar repare.  
 To the bischop is fallen faire,  
 That throu his priſ and his bounte  
 Haſ eschevit sa gret Iournee ;  
 The kyng tharfor, ay fra that day,  
 Hym lufit, honorit, and prisit ay,  
 And held hym in-to sic daynte,  
 That 'his awne Bischop' him callit he.  
 Thus thai defendit the Cuntre  
 Apon bath halfis the scottis Se,  
 Quhill that the king wes out of land,  
 That than, as I haue borñe on hand,  
 Throu all Irland his courſ had maid,  
 And agane to Cragfergus raid.  
 And quhen his brothir, as he var king,  
 Had all erischry at his bidding,  
 And halely vlcister alsua,  
 He buskit hame his way to ta.  
 Of his men that war mast hardy  
 And prisit of all cheuelry  
 With his brothir gret part left he,  
 And syne he went on to the se.  
 Quhen thair levis on athir party  
 Wes tane, he vent to schip in hy.  
 The Erll thomas with him he had ;  
 Thai rasit salyſ but abaid,  
 And in the land of gallowa,. .  
 Forouten perell, arivit thai.

668 The bishop did a greatfeat.

672 Therefore the king always called him 'his own bishop.'

676

680

When Sir Edward has all Ireland at his command,

684 king Robert returns to Scotland,

688 leaving some men behind him.

692 Sir Thomas Murray goes with him.

694 They arrive safely in Galloway.

668. *is]* it H.670. *Hass—gret]* Wes eschewyt swilk a E; Encheeued sik a great H.672. *honorit—prisit]* and prisyt and honoryt E; and praised and honoured H.673. *into sic]* in suylk.676. *the]* of the H.677. *land]* the land H.678. *I]* Ik.681. *var]* war.682. *erischry—his]* the Irschery at

E; the Irishry at H.

683. *halely]* haly. *vlcister]* wlsis-tre E; Vlsister H; Ulster A.684. *ta]* ga H.686. *of all]* mast of E; als of H.688. *he—to]* is went him to E; is went vnto H.690. *vent]* went. *to]* to the.693. *the]* E om.694. *Forouten]* For-owt E; Without H.

## [BOOK XVII.]

The vynnyng of the toun of berwik be the scottis  
men throu the menys of sym of spaldyn.

The Scottish  
lords gladly  
welcome king  
Robert on his  
return.

The lordis of the land wes fayne  
Quhen thai wist he wes cummyn agane,  
And till him went in full gret hy ;  
And he resauit thame richt gladly,  
And maid a fest and gladsum cher.  
And thai so wondirly blith wer  
Of his come, that na toung mycht say ;  
Gret fest and fair till him maid thai.  
Quhar-euir he raid, all the Cuntry  
Gaderit in daynte hym to se.  
Gret gladschip than wes in the land ;  
All than wes wonnyne till his hand.

4

8

12

[Fol. 127 b. C.]

Fra redis swyr till orkynnay

[Fol. 56. E.]  
He possesses all  
Scotland except  
Berwick.

Wes nocht of scotland fra his fay,

Outaken berwik it allañe.

That tyme thar-in wonnyt añe,

That capitane wes of the touñe.

The captain of  
Berwick is hated  
by the Scotch.

All scottis men in suspicioñe

He held, and tretit thame richt Ill.

He had ay at thame hevy will,

And had thame fast at vndir ay.

16

20

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>wes</i> ] war EH.                                       | 8. <i>and—him</i> ] to him for-thy H.   |
| 4. <i>richt gladly</i> ] hamlyly E ;                          | 11. <i>gladschip</i> ] gladnesse H.   |
| tenderly H.   | 13. <i>redis swyr</i> ] the red swyre H. <i>till orkynnay</i> ] to<br>orknay E ; vnto Orknay H. |
| 5. <i>a</i> ] thaim EH.                                       | 20. <i>at</i> ] to EH. <i>hevy</i> ] right ill H.   |
| 6. And then sa wonder blyth they<br>were H.                   | 21. <i>fast</i> ] all H.  |
| 7. <i>toung</i> ] man. <i>come—toung</i> ] comming, as man H. |   |

Quhill that it fell, apon a day,  
 That a burges<sup>s</sup>, sym of spaldyng,  
 Thought it wes richt aīe angry thing  
 Ay swagat till reboytit be ;  
 Tharfor in-till his hert thought he,  
 That he vald sley mak cowyñe  
 With the marschall, quhais cosyñe  
 He had weddit on-till his viff ;  
 And as he thought, he did beliff.  
 Letteris till him he send in hy  
 With a trast man all preualy,  
 And set hym tym to cum at nycht  
 With ledderis and gud men & vicht  
 Till the kow-ȝet all preuely,  
 And bad him hald his trast treuly ;  
 And he suld meit thame at the vall ;  
 For his vach thar that nycht suld fall.  
 Quhen the marschall the letteris saw,  
 He vmbethought him than a throw ;  
 For he vist, by him-selvin he  
 Micht noct<sup>t</sup> of mycht na power be  
 For till eschewe so gret a thing ;  
 And gif he tuk till his helping,  
 Ane or othir suld wrethit be.  
 Tharfor richt till the king ȝeid he,  
 And schawit him betuix thai twa  
 The lettir, and the charge alsua.

Sim of Spalding,

24

28 who had married  
the marshal's  
cousin,

32

tells him to come  
at night to the  
Cowport,  
stealthily

36

The marshal  
reads the letter,

40

44

and consults king  
Robert.

48

24. *it*] that It EH. *ane*] EH om.  
*angry*] heauie H.  
 25. *Ay swagat*] Swagate ay E ; On  
 sik sort H. *till*] to EH. *reboytit*]  
 rebutut E ; rebuted H.  
 27. *wald*] wald. *cowyne*] covyne  
 E ; conuyne H.  
 29. *on-till*] till E ; to H.  
 33. *at*] A E ; ane H.  
 34. *gud—vicht*] with gud men  
 wicht.  
 38. *vach*] walk E ; watch H. *his*  
 —*nycht*] on that night his watch H.

39. *letteris*] lettre E ; letters H.  
 41. *he*] that he C ; but E omits  
 that. *vist*] wist. *him-selvin*] him-  
 selfe that H.  
 42. *na*] no E ; nor H.  
 43. *eschewe*] escheyff E ; encheue  
 H.  
 45. One, another sould wraithed  
 be H ; E has—Ane othyr lettir suld  
 writtyn be (!)  
 46. *till*] to EH.  
 47. *him*] It him.



Till dwns park with his menȝe	76
He com at evyn, all preuely.	
And syne, with a gude Cumpany,	
Soyne eftir come the Erll thomas,	
That wes met with the lord dowglas;	80
A richt fair Cumpany thai war,	
Quhen thai war met to-giddir thar.	
And quhen the marschall the cowyne	
Till bath the lordis lyne be lyne	84
Had tald, thai went on furth thar vay;	
Fer fra the toune thar horȝ left thai.	
Till mak it schort, swa thai vroucht than	
That, but seying of ony man,	88
Outane sym of spaldyne allaȝe,	
That gert the deid be vndirtane,	
Thai set thair ledderis to the wall;	
And, but persaving, com vp all;	92
And held thame <i>in</i> ane nwke preue,	
Quhill at the nycht suld passit be.	
And ordanit, that the mast party	
Of [thair] men suld gang sarryaly	96
With thar lordis, and hald a staill,	
And the remanand suld all haill	
Scaill throu the toun, and tak and sla	
The men that thai mycht our-ta.	100
Bot soyn thar ordinans brak thai;	
For, als soyn as it dawit day,	
The twa part of thair men and ma,	

Murray and  
Douglas follow  
him.

The marshal tells  
them of the plot.

They all come  
unseen to the  
town-wall,

climb over it,

and hide within  
the town.

[Fol. 128 b. C.]

At daybreak,

76. *dwns*] duns E; Dunce H.  
 77. *all*] full H; E *om.*  
 83. *cowyne*] covyn E; conuyne H.  
 84. *Til*] To EH; *and in* l. 87.  
 85. *on furth*] furth on EH. *vay*] way.  
 87. *thai vroucht*] wroucht thai EH.  
 90. *the*] that.  
 92. *vp*] wp E; in H.
93. *ane nwke*] A nuk.  
 94. *at*] 'that EH.  
 96. [thair EH] thai C. *sarryaly*] sikkerly H.  
 97. *staill*] so H; stale E.  
 100. *The*] All the CH; but E omits All.  
 101. *thar*] this E; his H.  
 102. *dawit*] dawen was H.  
 103. *part*] partis.

they rush from  
their hiding-  
place,

and slay many.

The Englishmen  
rally.

[Fol. 56b. E.]

The Scotch put  
the English to  
flight.

Some escape.

Those that are  
in the castle,

All scalit, throu the toun to-ga.  
So gredy war thai till the gude,  
That thai ran richt als thai var woude,  
And sesit housis and slew men ;  
And thai, that saw thair fais then  
Cum apon thame so suddanly,  
Throu-out the toun thai rasit the cry,  
And schot to-gidder heir and thair.

And ay, as thai assemblit war,  
Thai vald abyde and mak debat.  
Had thai beyn warnyt, weill I wat,  
Thai suld haf said thair dedis der ;  
For thai war gud men, and thai wer  
Fer ma than thai war at thame soucht ;  
Bot thai war scalit sa at thai moucht  
On na maner assemblit be.

Thar wes gret melleis twa or thre ;  
Bot scottis men so weill thaīne bar,  
That thair fais ay russhit war,  
And cumrayit at the last war swa,  
That thai haly the bak can ta.

Sum gat the castell, bot nocht all,  
And sum ar slyddin our the wall,  
And sum war in-to handis tañe,  
And sum war in the bargane slañe.

On this viȝ thame contenit thai,  
Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day ;  
Than thai that in the castell war,  
And othir that fled to thame thar,

104. *to-ga*] gan ga E; can ga H;  
see l. 575.

105. *till*] to. *war-till*] for to get  
H.

106. *var*] war.

107. *sesit*] sieged H.

113. *vald*] wald.

115. *dedis*] liues H.

117. *ma*] so E; may C. *at*] that.

118. *sa*] E om.

120. *wes*] war.

123. *cumrayit*] contraryt E; dis-  
rayed H.

124. *can*] gan. *haly—bak*] all  
hail the flight H.

127. *in-to*] in-till.

128. *in the*] in-till.

130. *noyne*] none.

- That war a richt gret Cumpany,  
Quhan thai the baner saw sympilly  
Swa standand, stuffit with sa quhoyn,  
Thar ȝettis haf thai opnyt soyn,  
And yschit on thame hardely.  
Than Erll thomas, that wes worthy,  
And als the gude lord of douglas,  
With the few folk that vith thame waȝ,  
Met thame stoutly with vapnys seir.  
Thar men mycht se, that had beyn neir,  
Men abaundouȝe thaȝe hardely.  
The ynglisȝ men faucht cruelly,  
And with all mychtis can thame payne  
Till rusche the scottis men agane.  
I trow thai had swa doȝe, perfay,  
For thai war fewar fer than thai,  
Gif it ne had beyn aȝe new maid knycht,  
That till his name schir vilȝhaȝe hicht  
Of keth, and of the gawlistouȝe  
He hecht, throu differens of sur-nouȝe,  
That bair hym sa [rycht] weill that day,  
And put him till sa hard assay,  
And sic dyntis about him dang,  
That, quhar he saw the thikast thrang,  
He prikit with sa mekill mycht,  
And sua enforsaly can ficht,  
That he maid till his menȝhe vay ;
- being numerous,
- 136 sally out.
- Murray and  
Douglas meet  
[Fol. 129. C.]  
them.
- 140
- 144 There is hard  
fighting.
- 148
- Sir William of  
Keith and  
Gaulistoun  
performs  
wonders.
- 152
- 156
134. *baner*] baneris E; Baners H.  
*saw*] sa H. *sympilly*] simpilly H.;  
simply E.
135. *Swa standard*] Standard and  
E; Saw stand, and H. *sa*] so H.; a
- E. *quhoyn*] wheene H.
136. *opnyt*] apnyt.
139. *als*] follows lord in EH.
143. *thame*] E om.
145. *can*] gan.
146. *Till*] To EH.
149. *Gif—had*] Had it not H.  
*ane*] A.
150. *vilȝhame*] wilȝam E; William H.
151. *keth*] keyth E; Keith H.  
*the*] E om. *gawlistouȝe*] gallistoun E; Gallistoun H.
152. *sur-nouȝe*] miswritten sur-renoune C; sourname E; Surnoun H.
153. *sa*] H om. [rycht E] right H; C om.
157. *prikit*] pressit E; preassed H.
158. *enforsaly*] enforslye E; en-forcely H.

At last the  
English give way,  
and escape to the  
castle.

- [And] thai that neir war by hym ay 160  
 Dang on thair fais sa hardely,  
 That thai haf tane the bak haly,  
 And till the castell held thair vay,  
 And at gret myscheiff enterit thai.  
 For thai war pressit thair so fast,  
 That thai feill lesit of the last ;  
 Bot thai that enterit, nocht-for-thi,  
 Sparit thair ȝettis hastily, 164  
 And in hy to the wallis ran,  
 For thai war nocht all sekir than.

Thus was the  
town taken.

Much spoil is  
found in it.

The king  
advances to  
Berwick.

[Fol. 129 b. C.]

- T**HE touñe wes takyn on this viȝ, 172  
 With gret vorschipe and hye emprifȝ ;  
 And all the gud that thai thar fand  
 Was sesit smertly in-till hand.  
 Wittaill thai fand in gret fusiouñe,  
 And all that fell till stuff of touñe ; 176  
 Thai kepit that fra distroying,  
 And syne haȝ vord send to the king.  
 And he wes of that tithing blith,  
 And sped him thiddirward full swith. 180  
 And as he throu the Cuntry raid,  
 Men gaderit till him, quhill he had  
 A mekill rout of worthy men.  
 And the folk that war wonand then  
 In-till the merȝ and tevidaill,  
 And in the forest alȝ all haill,

160. [And EH] That C. thai]  
E om. by] to H.

162. the] thair. haly] in hy EH.

163. thair vay] the way.

166. feill lesit] left mony H.

168. Sparit] Closed H.

171. Rubric in H—Here sent they word to the King, That came to the Castell yeelding. viss] wiss.

172. With] Throu E; Through H. empriss] emprise H; priss E.

173. thai] E om.

174. smertly intill] haily in their H.

175. fusioune] foysoun.

176. till] to. fell—of] serued to stuffe a H.

177. Thai—that] That kepty thai EH.

178. vord] word.

180. full] E om.

And the Est end of lowdiane,		
Befor [that] the king com, ar gañe	188	Many other Scotchmen advance against the town.
To berwik with a stalward hand,		
That nane that wes that tyme wonand		
On ȝond half tweid durst weill apeir.		
And thai that in the castell weir,	192	
Quhen thai thair fais in sic plente		
Saw forrouth thame assemblit be,		The English are discouraged,
And had na hope of reskewyng,		
Thai war abasit in gret thing.	196	
Bot thai the castell, nocht-for-thi,		but hold the castle for five days more,
Held thai fiff dayis sturdely,		
Syne ȝald it on the sext day,		when they yield.
And till thair Cuntry syne vent thai.	200	
Thus wes the castell and the toune		
Till scottis men possessioune		
Brought; and soyn eftir the king		
Com ridand with his gadering	204	The king enters Berwick.
Till berwik, and in the casteill		
He herbryit is, bath fair and weill,		
And all his gret lordis hym by.		
The remanand all comonly	208	
Till herbry in the toune ar gañe.		
The king haþ than till Consell tañe,		
That he vald nocht brek douñe the vall,		He determines not to destroy the walls,
Bot castell, and the toune with-all,	212	
Stuff weill with men and vittaill		[Fol. 57. E.]
And alkynd othir apparail		

187. *And*] And in C; but EH omit in. *lowdiane*] lothiane.

188. [that EH] C om. *ar*] and ar C; but EH omit and.

189. *a*] sa.

191. *half*] side H.

194. *forrouth*] before H.

198. *thai*] so CE; H om. *sturdely*] right sturdely H.

199. *ȝald*] ȝauld.

200. *vent*] went.

201. *Rubric in H*—Here Walter Stewart took of the King Baith Town and Castell in keeping.

205. *Till*] To EH.

206. *herbryit is*] wes herbrid EH.

207. *gret*] E om.

208. *all comonly*] commonaly.

209. *in*] till.

210. *till*] to EH.

211. *vald*] wald.

214. *alkynd*] alkyn.

but to garrison the castle.	That mycht availl, or <i>ȝeit</i> mysteir Till hald castell or touñe of wer.	216
Walter, steward of Scotland,	And valter, steward of scotland, That than ves <i>ȝoung</i> and avenand,	
the king's son- in-law,	And sone-in-law wes to the king, Had sa gret will and sic <i>ȝarnyng</i> Neirhand the marchis for till be,	220
undertakes to guard Berwick.	At berwik to <i>ȝemsall</i> tuk he ; And resauit of the kyng the touñe, Bath the castell and [the] dwngeouñe.	224
Bruce sends men on a foray into [Fol. 130. C.] England.	The king gert men of gret nobillay Ryde in-till ynglande, for till pray, That brought out gret plente of fee ; And sum cuntrieis trewit he	228
He garrisons the town, and victuals it for a year.	[For] vittale, [that in] gret foysouñe He gert bring smertly to the touñe, Swa that bath toune and castell war Weill stuffit for <i>añe</i> <i>ȝeir</i> and mair.	232
Besides archers, townsmen, and crossbow-men,	The gude steward of scotland then Send for his frendis and his men, Quhill he had with him, but archeris, But burges and but oblesteris,	236
Walter has 500 men with him ;  also John Crab,	Fiff hundred men wicht and worthy, That armys bar of Ancistry.  Iohñe crab, a flemyne, als had he	

215. *ȝeit*] yet H; ellis E.216. *Till*] To EH.217. *valter*] waltir.218. *ves*] wes. *avenand*] vail-  
yeand H.219. *sone—law*] sonne in law H;  
syne in laucht (!) E.220. *At*] That EH. *to ȝemsall*] to  
ȝemsell E; in keeping then H.221. *Bath*] Bath of C (*but of is*  
*not wanted*); And EH. [*the E*] CH  
om.222. *nobillay*] Nobillay H; noblay  
E.223. *till*] to EH. *pray*] take  
Prey H.227. *That*] And H.228. *trewit*] tholyt. And with  
some Countries trewes tooke he H.229. [For EH] And C. [that in  
EH] in-to C.230. *toune—castell*] castell and  
toun.231. *ane*] so CH; A E. *and*] or  
H.232. And but burdowys and aw-  
blasteris E; And but Burgesses and  
Aulisters H.233. *armys bar*] bar armys EH.234. *flemyne*] flemyngh EH. C bad-  
ly puts als before a.

That wes of gret subtilite, Till ordane till mak aparale For till defend and till assale Castell of wer or than Cite, That nane slear mycht fundin be. He gert engynis and trammys ma, And purvait gret fyre alsua ; Spryngaldis and schotis on seir maneris,	240	a Flemish engineer.
That till defend castell afferis, He purvait in-till full gret wañe, Bot gynis for crakkis had he nane. For in scotland ȝeit than, but wene, The oyf of thame had nocht beyn sene. And quhen the toune apon this viȝ Wes stuffit, as I heir deuif,	244	John Crab makes various engines of war;
That nobill king his vay haȝt tañe, And ryddin toward lowdiañe ; And valter steward, that ves stout, He left in berwik with his rout, And ordanit fast for Apparaill, Till defend gif men vald assaill.	248	but he had no cannon, *
	252	as the use of them was then unknown in Scotland.
	256	Walter Steward remains in Berwick.
	260	

**Q** when till the king of Ingland  
Wes tald how that, with stalward hand,  
Berwik wes tane, and stuffit syne

When the king of England hears that he has lost Berwick,

240. *gret subtilite*] sa gret sutelte EH.

250. *gynnis*] gynnys E; gunnes H.  
*nane* EH] nayne C.

241. *till* (2)] and E; and to H.

251. *wayne* EH] weyne C.

245. *trammys*] trammys or crammys C; cranys or tranys E; Traines H.  
(The word is uncertain.)

252. *oyss*] wss E; vse H. *sene* E] seene H; seyne C.

246. *gret*] so CE; great H. *Per-*  
*haps it should be* grek (Greek);  
*which might have been written* grec,  
*and read as gret.*

253. *And*] E om. *viss*] wiss.

247. *Spryngaldis*] Fire-galdes H.  
*schotis*] schot E; shot H.

254. *I*] Ik.

248. *till*] to EH.

255. *vay*] way.

249. *wane* EH] badly spelt vayne C.

256. *lowdiane*] lowthiane.

257. *valter*] waltir.

258. *in*] at.

260. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] wald.

261. *Rubric in* H—The King of England his power Gaddered to siege Barvike but weere. *till*] to EH.

	With men and vittale and armyne,	264
	He wes anoyit gretumly,	
	And gert assembill hastily	
	His consale, and haſtane to rede	
[Fol. 130 b. C.]	That he his host wald thiddir leid ;	268
he determines to besiege it,	And, with all mycht that he mycht get,	
and to intrench his army outside it,	To the toune añe assuge set,	
	And [ger] dik thame so stalwardly,	
	That, quhill thame likit thair to ly,	272
	Thai suld fer out the trastar be.	
	And gif the men of the Cuntry	
	With stryng of men vald thame assale	
	At thair dykis in-to Battale,	276
that the Scotch might not dare attack him.	Thai suld avantage haue gretly ;	
This decided on, he collects his host.	And thought all suth, for gret foly	
Earl Thomas of Lancaster goes with him,	War till assaill in-to fechting	
and other earls	At his dikis so stark a thing.	280
	Quhen his conseil on this maneir	
	Wes tañe, he gert bath fer and neir	
	His host haly assemblit be ;	
	A gret folk than with him had he.	284
	Of la[n]cister the Erll thomas,	
	That syne wes sanctit, as men sais,	
	In-till his Cumpany wes thar,	
	And all the Erllis als that war	288
	In yngland worthy for to ficht,	

264. *vittale—armyne*] wictaill of armyn E; armour and vittaile fyne H.

265. *anoyit*] anoyit richt C; but EH omit richt.

266. *assembill*] be summound H. *hastely*] all haledy.

268. *wald*] so CH; will E.

270. *So* E; C has he set for set (n̄rightly); H has—Vnto the toun a Siege set.

271. [ger] such must be the reading; gert CE; gart H (all n̄right).

273. *trastar*] traister E; surer H.  
275. *men*] folke H.  
278. *And—suth*] Thocht all scotis E; Although forsooth H. *for*] it H.

281. *his*] this.  
283. *host*] ost E; men H.  
284. A] Ane. *folk*] Oast H.  
285. *lancaster*] longcastell EH miswritten lacister C.  
286. *sanctit*] sanct EH.  
287. *In-till*] In.  
288. *als that*] that als.

- And baronis als of mekill mycht  
With him to that assege had he ;  
And gert the schippes by the se  
Bring schot and othir apparale,  
With gret varnysing of vittale.  
To berwik with all this menȝe,  
With his vittalis arayit, come he ;  
And till gret lordis, ilkane syndri,  
Ordanit aȝe felde for thar herbry.  
Than men mycht se soyne palȝeonis  
Be stentit on syndry fassownys,  
So feill, that thai a toune maid thair  
Mair than bath toune and castell war.  
On othir half syne, on the se,  
The schippis com in sic plente,  
Vith vittale, armyng, and vith men,  
That all the havyn wes stoppit then.  
And quhen thai that war in the toune  
Saw thair fais in sic foysouȝe  
By land and se cum sturdely,  
Thai, as wicht men and richt worthy,  
Schupe thaȝe for till defend thar stede,  
That thai in auentur of dede  
Suld put thame, or than rusche agaȝe  
Thar fais ; for thair capitane  
Tretit thame sa lusumly,  
And thar-with-all the mast party  
Of thame that armyt with hym wer  
War of his blude, and sib men ner ;

and barons.

292 Several ships sail thither at the same time.

296

300 So many tents are pitched round Berwick, that they form a town.

304 The ships arrive.

308

312 The Scotch prepare for [Fol. 131. C.] defence.

316 They are fond of their captain.

[Fol. 57 b. E.]

292. *the]* his.294. *With]* And EH. *varnysing]* warnysone E ; Garnisoun als H.295. *this]* his.296. *With E]* With all C; And with H. *vittalis*] bataillis. H has— And with his battells arriuied came he.298. *ane]* A.299. *Than]* That E. *se soyne]*sone se E ; see their H. *palȝeonis]* pailȝownys E ; Pauilliouns H.300. *on]* of.301. *So—toune]* That thai A toune all sone.311. *for till]* soone to H ; to E.315. *lusumly]* lufly E ; louingly

H.

318. *and]* or H. *men]* him.

None are afraid.

They watch  
for 6 days,  
unassailed.

- Or ellis thai war his allye.  
 Of sic confort men mycht thaim se, 320  
 And of sa richt fair contenyng,  
 As nane of thame had abasing.  
 On dayis arayit weill war thai,  
 And on the nycht weill wachit ay. 324  
 Weill sex dais thai swa abaid,  
 That thai na full gret bargane maid.

**How valter steward ves assalȝeit in berwik be the  
kyng of Ingland.**

The English  
intrench them-  
selves.On the Eve of the  
Nativity of the  
Virgin, Sept. 7,  
1319, the Englishdisplay their  
banners,

- In-till this tym that I tell here,  
 That thai withouten bargane wer, 328  
 The Inglis-men sa closit had  
 Thar host with dikis at thai maid,  
 That thai war strynthit gretumly.  
 Syne with all handis besaly  
 Thai schupe thame with thar apparale  
 Thame of the toune for till assale.  
 And on our ladeis evin mary,  
 That bare the byrth that all can by, 336  
 That men callis hir natiuite,  
 Soyn in the mornyng men mycht se  
 The ynglis host Arme thame in hy  
 And display baneris sturdely,  
 And assemmyll till thar baneris 340  
 With Instrumentis on seir maneris,

319. *thai*] E om. *his allye*] his elye E; of his ally H.

320. *confort*] comfort EH.

323. *arayit*] armyt E; armed H.

324. *wachit*] walkyt E; watched H.

325. *thai swa*] sua thai.

326. *thai maid*] haid E; had H.

327. *Rubric from C. H has—*

How Englishmen dyked them about,  
 And syne went to the Siege but dout.

330. *at*] that EH.

335. *on*] of. *ladeis evin*] ladys ewyn E; Ladies Euen H.

336. *can*] gan.

340. *display*] displayit.

341. *till*] to EH; and in ll. 352,  
 360.

342. *on*] of.

- As scaffatis, ledderis, and coueryngis,  
Pykis, howis, and ek staff-slyngis ;  
Till ilk lord and his battale  
Wes ordanit quhar he suld assale.  
And thai within, quhen that thai saw  
[That] menȝe raynge thame swa on raw,  
Till thar wardis thai went in hy,  
That war stuffit richt stalwardly  
With stanys, schot, and othir thing,  
That nedit till thair defending ;  
And in-to sic maner abaid  
Thair fais that till assayil thame maid.  
Quhen thai without war all redy,  
Thai trumpit till aȝe sawt in hy ;  
And ilk man with his apparale,  
Quhar he suld be, vent till assale.  
Till Ilk kyrneill that wes thair  
Archeris till schute assignit war.  
And quhen on this viȝ thai war bouȝe,  
Thai went in hy toward the touȝe,  
And fillit dykis richt hastily.  
Syne to the wallis hardely  
Thai went with ledderis that thai had ;  
Bot thai so gret defens haȝ maid,  
That war abovin apon the wall,  
That [oft] ledderis and men with-all  
Thai gert fall flatlynges to the grounde.  
Than men mycht se in litill stound

343. *scaffatis*] scaffaldis E ; Scaf-folds H. *coueryngis*] couering E ; Couerings H.

344. *ek staff-slyngis*] with staf-slyng.

348. [That E] Thai C ; Tha H. *menȝe*] men H.

351. *schot*] & schot.

354. *till—thame*] to them sailyie H.

and advance with  
all their  
apparatus of  
siege.

344 The Scotch  
assemble at their  
posts.

352  
[Fol. 131 b. C.]

356 Trumpets sound  
to the assault.

360 Archers are sent  
forward.

364 The assailants  
try to plant their  
ladders,

368 which are thrown  
down.

356. *till—sawt*] till A salt E ; to  
the assault H.

358. *vent*] went EH.

363. *richt*] E om.

364. *wallis*] wall rycht.

366. *defens hass*] defend that.

368. [oft E] baith H ; miswritten  
of C.

370. *in*] in a.

	Men assalȝeand richt [hardely], Dressand vp ledderis douchtely, And sum on ledderis pressand war. Bot thai that on the wall ves tha Till all perellis can abandoune Thame, till thair fais war doungyn douñe.	372
The besieged are in great danger,	At gret myschef defendit thai Thair toune; for, gif we suth sall say, The vallis of the toune than wer Sa law, that a man with a sper	376
the walls being very low.	Micht strik aȝe othir [vp in] the face. And the schot als so thik thar was That it wes wonder for till se.	380
Walter Steward rides round continually.	Walter steward, with a menȝe, Raid ay about, for to se quhar That for till help mast myster war; And quhar men pressit mast, he maid	384
	Succoure till his that myster had. The mekill folk that wes without Had enveronyt the touñe about Swa that na part of it wes fre.	388
The town is attacked at all points.	[Thar] mycht men assailȝeouris se Abandoune thame richt hardely; And the defendouris douchtely Vith all thar mychtis can thame payȝe	392
[Fol. 132. C.]	Till put thair fais forȝ agaȝe. On this viȝ thame contenit thai	396

371. *richt*] E om. [*hardely* EH]  
hardy C.

381. [*rp* in H] *wp* in E; in-to C;  
see I. 731.

372. *Dressand*] Preassing H.

383. *mes*] war.

373.—376. H has two differing  
lines here—And them abone defend-  
ing well, Tumbling them downe to  
their vnseill.

384. *till*] to EH.

374. *ves*] war.

388. *till his*] to them H.

375. *can*] gan.

389. *mekill*] mony H.

376. *doungyn*] dongyn.

392. [Thar E] Their H; That C.

377. *At — myschef*] With great  
annoy H.

*assailȝeouris*] the assailiaris.

395. *can*] gan.

396. *forss*] force H; with force E.

397. *viss*] wiss.

Quhill noyne wes passit of the day ;

Than thai that in the schippes war

Ordanit a schip with full gret far

Till cum with all hir Apparale

Richt to the vall, for till assale.

[Till myd-mast wp thair bat thai drew,]

With Armyt men tharin enew ;

A brig thai had, for till lat fall

Richt fra the bat apon the vall.

Vith bargis by hir can thai row,

And pressit thame full fast to tow

Hir by the brighouſ to the wall ;

On that entent thai set thame all.

Thai brought hir quhill scho com veill neir ;

Than mycht men se on seir maner

Sum men defend, and sum assale

Full besaly with gret trawale.

Thai of the toune so weill thaīe bare,

That the schipmen sa handillit war

That thai the schip on na maner

Micht ger cum till the vall so neir

That thair fall-brig mycht reik thar-till.

So lang abaid thai fechtand still

Quhill that scho ebbit on the ground ;

Than mycht men, in a litill stound,

Se thame be fer of war cowyne

The besiegers  
prepare a ship,

400

in which they  
lift up a boat,  
full of men,  
half-mast high.

404

408 The ship  
approaches the  
wall,

412

416

but cannot get so  
near as to let fall  
their drawbridge  
from the boat to  
the wall.

420

[Fol. 58. E.]

398. *noyne*] none E ; Noone H.

400. *with*] with EH.

401. *Till*] To EH.

403. And in that schip thai maid  
gret glew C ; Till myd mast wp thair  
bat thai drew E ; To the mid Mast  
their bate they drew H.

407. *can*] gan. *hir—row*] they  
can her tow H.

408. *thame—tow*] her right fast to  
row H. *full*] rycht EH.

409. *Hir by*] Beside H.

411. *veill*] well.

412. *seir*] sic.

414. *gret trawale*] hard battaile H.

415. *So in* CH ; With in sa stoutly  
thai thaim bar E.

416. *handillit*] handlyt E ; handled  
H.

418. *cum—vall*] to cum the wall  
E ; come to the wall H.

419. *reik*] reeke H ; neych E.

420. *So in* CH ; For oucht thai  
mycht, gud or ill E.

423. *cowyne*] conuyne H.

The tide ebbs,  
and the ship is  
left aground.

Than thai war eir, that war hir In.

424

And quhen the se wes ebbit sa,  
That men all dry till hir mycht ga,

Out of the toune yschit in hy

Till hir a weill gret Cumpany,

And fyre till hir has kendlyt soyne.

The ship is burnt.

In-till schort tyme swa haf thai doñe,

That thai in fyre has gert hir [bryn],

And sum war slain that var hir In;

And sum fled and avay ar gane.

The Scotch  
capture a clever  
engineer,

Ane engynour thair haf thai tañe,

That sleast wes of that mister

That men vist, outhir fer or ner;

432

In-to the toun syne enterit thai.

It fell thame happely, perfay,

That thai gat in so hastely;

For thair come a gret Cumpany

436

In full gret hy vp by the Se,

Quhen thai the schip saw byrnand be.

Bot or thai com, the tothir var past,

The ȝhet thai barrit and closit fast.

440

The folk assalȝeit fast that day,

And thai within defendit ay

On sic a viȝ, that thai that var

With gret enforȝ assalȝeand thar

448

Micht do thar will on na maner.

And quhen that evynsang-tym ves neir,

At evening,  
the besiegers  
grow weary.

The folk without, that war wery,

And sum woundit full Cruelly,

452

424. *eir*] er E; euer H.

436. *vist*] wyst. *outhir*] ony.

426. *till—mycht*] mycht till hyr.

438. *perfay*] that day H.

429. *till*] in H.

442. *byrnand*] brynnand E; burn-

430. *In-till*] In-to EH.

ing H. *be*] hie H.

431. *thai—has*] into fire they H.

444. *ȝhet—closit*] ȝat and barryt It

[*bryn* E] byrne C; birne H; see ll.

rycht.

457, 467.

445. *The*] That.

432. *sum war*] mony H.

447. *a viȝ*] a wise H; awiss E.

435. *sleast wes*] wes sleast EH.

448. *gret enforȝ*] sik a force H.

Saw thame within defend thaim swa,  
And saw it wes nocth eyth till ta  
The touñe, with sic defens wes maid  
[By thaim] that it in stering had.

456

The host saw that thar schip wes brynt,  
And of thame that thar-in war tynt,  
And thar folk woundit and very ;  
[Thai] gert blaw the retret in hy.

460 and retreat.

Fra the schipmen reboytit war,  
Thai let the tothir assale no mar.

For throu the schip thai wend ilkañe  
That thai the toune weill suld haf tañe.

464

Men sais that ma schippis than swa  
Pressit that tyme the toune till ta ;  
Bot for that thar ves brynt bot añe,  
And the gynour tharin wes tañe,  
Now heir tharfor mencione maid I  
Bot of a schip all anerly.

The English see  
their ship is  
burnt,

468

Some say more  
ships than one  
approached the  
town.

**Q** when thai had blawen the ratre,  
Thai folk, that tholit had panys gret,  
Vithdrew thame haly fra the wall ;  
The assalt haf thai levit all.  
And thai within, that very war,  
And mony of thame voundit sar,  
War blith and glad quhen at thai saw

472

The besieged  
are glad to see  
their foes retreat,

454. *till*] to.  
455. *with*] quhill E ; while H.  
456. [By thaim] By them H ; And  
thai CE. H has—By them that with-  
in the steering had ; E has—And thai  
that in-till faring had (*which makes*  
*little sense*).  
457. *wes*] was H ; war E. H has—  
And of their men in hy were tynt.

467. *res*] wes.

459. *very*] wery.  
460. [Thai E] They H ; The C.  
461. *reboytit*] rebottit E ; rebuted  
H.

468. *gynour*] engynour E ; In-  
gynour H.

469. *Now*] EH om. *tharfor*] befor.

471. *thai—blawen*] that thai blaw-  
yn had.

472. *Thai*] Thair E ; Tha H. *had*]  
H om.

474. *levit all*] left all E ; left with-  
all H.

475. *very*] wery.

476. *voundit*] woundyt war.

477. *at*] that. *at thai*] they them  
H.

466. *till*] to EH.

	Thair fais swagat thame vithdraw.	
[Fol. 133. C.]	And, fra thai wist suthly that thai Held to thair palȝeonyss thair vay,	480
and refresh themselves.	Thai set gud wachis to thar wall ; Syne to thar Innys went thai all, And esyt thame that very war.	
Men are weary on both sides,	And othir, that war woundit sar, Had lechis gude forsuth, I hicht, That helpit thaȝe as thai best mycht	484
and there is a 5 days' truce.	On athir syde very war thai ; That nycht thai did no mair, persay. Fiff dayis thar-eftir thai war still, That nane till othir did mekill Ill.	488
King Robert, hearing of king Edward's approach,	Now leiff we thir folk heir liand All still, as I haf borȝe on hand, And turn the courȝ of our carpyng Till Schir robert the douchty king, That assemblit bath fer and neir Ane host, that, quhen he vist but weir	492
determines not to attack him in his trenches;	That the king swa of Ingland Had assegit with stalward hand Berwik, quhar valter steward waȝ, Till purpos with his men he tais, That he vald nocth sa soyne assale The kyng of Ingland with battale, And at his dykis specialy, For it mycht weill turn to foly.	496
	Tharfor he ordanit lordis twa,	500
		504

478. *Thair—swagat*] Thair fayis on that wiss E ; Sa in haill battell H.

480. *vay*] way EH.

481. *Thai*] E om.

482. *to*] till.

483. *very*] wery.

484. *othir*] als them H. *war woundit*] had woundis.

485. *I*] Ik.

486. *as—best*] with all their H.

489. *thar-eftir*] eftyr E ; efter H.

490. *mekill*] great H.

491. *Rubric* in H.—Here sent King Robert in England, Dowglas and Mvrray with stalward hand.

492. *All*] And. *I*] Ik.

494. *Till*] To EH ; and in l. 500.

496. *that quhen*] and when H ; quhen that E. *vist*] wist EH.

501. *vald*] wald.

The Erll of murreff wes ane of tha,			
The tothir wes the lord dowglaſ,		but sends Murray and Douglas to ravage England,	
With xv thousand men to paſ	508		
In yngland, for till burn [and] sla,			
And swa gret ryot thar till ma,			
That thai that lay segande the touñe,			
Quhen thai herd the distractiouñe,	512	in the hope that the English may take alarm,	
That thai suld in-till Ingland ma,			
Suld be sa dredand and sa wa			
For thair childir and [for thair] wiffis,			
That thai suld dreid suld leif̄ thar liffis,	516		
And thar gudis alsua, that thai			
Suld dreid [than] suld be had avay,			
That thai suld leif̄ the sege in hy.		and raise the siege.	
And wend to reskew hastily	520		
Thair gude, thair frendis, and thair land.			[Fol. 133 b. C.]
Tharfor, as I haf borne on hand,			
[Thir] lordis send he furth in hy ;			
And thai thair way tuk hastily,	524	They advance into England,	
And in Ingland gert byrn and sla,			
And vroucht tharin so mekill wa			[Fol. 58 b. E.]
As thai forrayit the Cuntry,			
That it wes pite for to se	528	and lay waste the country,	
Till thame that vald It ony gude,			
For thai distroyit all as thai ȝude.			doing great damage.
So lang thai raid distroyande swa,			
As thai trauersit to and fra,	532		

506. *murreff*] Murray H.507. *lord*] lord of.509. *till*] to EH. *burn*] bryny.  
[and EH] to C; see l. 525.510. *till*] to EH.511. *segande*] segeand E; sieging  
H.512. *herd*] heare H.

515. [for thair EH] eke C.

516. *suld leiss*] to lese E; to losse  
H.

518. [than E] that C; they H.

519. *That*] And H; E om. *the*  
thair.520. *hastely*] thaim hastily C; but  
EH omit thaim.522. *I*] Ik.

523. [Thir EH] The C.

524. *way tuk*] wayes held H.525. *byrn*] bryny E; burne H.526. *vroucht*] vroucht.527. *forrayit*] fure through H.529. *vald*] wald EH.532. *As*] That H. *to*] oft to H.

They advance to Ripon;	That thai ar cummyne till repouñe, [And] distroyit haly the touñe.	
then to Borough- bridge and Mitton.	At burrow-brig syne thar herbry Thai tuk, and at mytoun thar-by ;	536
The Yorkshire men assemble in great numbers and of all trades,	And quhen the men of that Cuntry Saw thar land sa distroyit be, Thai gaderit, in-till full gret hy, Archeris, burges, with ȝhementry, Prestis, clerkis, monkis, and freris, Husbandis, and men of all mysteris, Quhill at thai sammyn assemmyllit var	540
till at last they number 20,000 men.	Weill tuenty thousand men and mair.	544
The Archbishop of York com- mands them.	Richt gud armyng eneuch thai had, The archbisshop of ȝork thai maid Thair Capitañe ; and to Consale Haȝ tane, that thai in playn battale	548
They attack the Scotch,	Wald assale the scottis men, That fer fewar than thai war then. Than he displayit his baneir, And othir bischoppes that thar ver	552
on the way to Mitton.	Gert display Baneris alsua. All in a rout furth can thai ga Toward mytouñe the reddy vay ;	556
The Scotch are divided into two hosts.	And quhen that scottis men herd say That thai war till thame cumand neir, Thai buskit thame on thar best maneir, And delit thame in-till battellis twa.	
533. <i>That</i> ] Sa that H. <i>till</i> ] to EH. <i>repouñe</i> ] repoun EH.	While they togidder H.	
534. [ <i>And EH</i> ] That thai C. <i>the</i> ] <i>that EH.</i>	545. <i>armyng</i> ] armys E ; armour	
535. <i>burrow-brig</i> ] borowbrig E ; Borrow-brig H. <i>herbry</i> ] so E ; her- bery C ; harbery H ; see ll. 209, 298.	H. <i>eneuch</i> ] Inew E ; aneugh H.	
536. <i>mytoun</i> ] Midtoun H.	552. <i>thar ver</i> ] were there H.	
539. <i>in-till</i> ] in-to EH.	553. <i>Baneris</i> ] thar baneris E ; their	
540. <i>with</i> ] and EH.	Baner H.	
541. <i>monkis and</i> ] Abbotts H.	554. <i>can</i> ] gan.	
542. <i>mysteris</i> ] maneris.	555. <i>mytouñe</i> ] Midtoun H. <i>vay</i> ] way EH.	
543. <i>at</i> ] that. <i>Quhill—sammyn</i> ]	556. <i>that</i> ] the EH.	
	557. <i>That</i> ] E om. <i>till</i> ] to.	
	559. <i>in-till</i> ] into H ; in E.	

Dowglaſ the vaward he can ma ;	560	
The reirward maid the erll thomas,		
For chiftane of the host he was.		
And, sua ordanit in gude aray,		
Toward thair fais thai held thair vay.	564	
Quhen athir had of othir sicht,		[Fol. 134. C.]
Thai pressit on bath halfis to ficht.		
The Inglis men com on sadly		The battle is joined.
With gud contenanſ and hardy,	568	The English advance steadily,
Richt in a frount with a Baner,		
Quhill thai thair fayis com so neir		
Thit thai thar visage veill mycht se ;		
Thre sper-lynth, I trow [weill] mycht be	572	but, when only at a distance of three spear-lengths, are seized with a panic, and flee.
Betuix thame, quhen sic abasing		
Tuk thame, but mar, in-to a swyng,		
Thai gaf the bak all, and to-ga.		
Quhen scottis men haſ seyn thame swa	576	
Affrayitly fle all thar [way],		
In gret hy apon thame schot thai,		
And slew and tuk a gret party.		
The laiff fled full effrayitly	580	
As thai best mycht, to seik varrand.		
Thai war chassit so neir at hand,		Nearly 1000 Englishmen
That weill ane thousand deit thar ;		perish ;
And of [thaim] ſeit thre hundred war	584	of whom 300 were priests.
Prestis, that deit in-to that chaſ.		

560. *vaward—can*] awaward gan E; the Vangard can H.  
 561. *the]* EH *om.*  
 565. *athir]* that they H.  
 566. *halfis to]* half to the E; the halves to H.  
 567. *on]* rycht EH.  
 569. *frount]* so CH; frusch E. *with]* with EH. *a]* thair EH.  
 570. *thai]* that H; E *om.*  
 571. *veill]* well H; E *om.*  
 572. *lynth]* length. *I trow]* trow I H. [weill E] it H; well A; C *om.*  
 574. *but—into]* that but mar in E.
- but—*swyng]* that but assoneying H.  
 575. *gaf]* tooke H. *all and]* and all H.  
 576. *hass]* had.  
 577. [way EH] avay C.  
 578. *schot]* set H.  
 581. *mycht]* mought E; mought H. *varrand]* warand.  
 582. *war]* E *om.*  
 583. *weill ane]* well a H; ner A E.  
 584. *And]* E *om.* [thaim E] thai C; tha H.  
 585. *into]* in EH. *chass]* place H.

This skirmish  
was therefore  
called the  
'Chapter of  
Mitton.'

Tharfor that bargañe callit waþ  
'The chaptour of mytouñe'; for thare  
Slayn sa mony prestis ware.

588

**Q** when thir folk thus discumfit was,  
And scottis men had left the chafþ,  
Thai went thame furthwarde in the land  
Slayand, distroyand, and byrnand.

592

The besiegers of  
Berwick are again  
on the move.

And thai [that] at the sege lay,  
Or it wes passit the fift day,  
Had maid thame syndry apparale  
To gang efsonis till assale.

596

They make a  
'sow,' full of  
arme lmen,

Of gret gestis añe sow thai maid,  
That stalward heling owth it had,  
With armyt men enew thar-in,  
And Instrumentis als for to myne.

600

and many  
scaffolds higher  
than the wall.

Syndry scaffatis thai maid vith-all  
That war weill hyar than the wall,  
And ordanit als that by the se  
The tounе suld weill assalȝeit be.

604

[Fol. 134 b. C.]

John Crab  
prepares a  
'crane,'  
running on  
wheels;

And thai within, that saw thame swa  
So gret apparale schap till ma,  
Throu [crabbis] consale, that ves sle,  
Añe cren thai haf gert dreþ vp hey

608

Rynand on quhelis, that thai mycht bring

586. *Tharfor*] That for.

598. *owth it*] outwith H; abowyn  
It E.

587. *chaptour*] chaptur E; Chapter

599. *ener*] Inew E; anew H.

H. *mytoune*] Midtoun H.

600. *als*] EH om.

589. *Rubric* in H—The other as-  
sault of Barvike, That was right sharpe  
to Scots kinrike. *thir*] that thir H;  
this E. *thus*] H om.

601. *scaffatis*] scaffaldis E; Scaf-  
folds H.

591. *furthwarde*] forthward E;  
fordward H.

602. *weill*] far H.

592. *distroyand — byrnand*] de-  
stroying and burnand H; swa and  
destroyand E.

604. *weill assalȝeit*] right well  
sailyied H.

593. [that EH] C om. *sege*] sege  
E; Siege H.

605. *And*] E om.

594. *Or*] Ere H.

606. *schap till*] to them H.

597. *ane*] A.

607. [crabbis] miswritten craggis

C; crabys E; Crabbes H.

608. *Ane cren*] A crane EH. *hey*]

so E; hie H; hyc C.

It quhar neid war of mast helping.

And pik and ter als haf thai tane,

And lynt [and] hardiſ with brynstāñe,

And dry treis that weill wald [brin],

And mellit syne athir othir in ;

And gret flaggatis tharof thai maid,

Gyrdit with Irñe-bandis braid ;

Of thai flaggatis mycht mesurit be

Till a gret Tunnys quantite.

Thai flaggatis byrnand in a baill

With thair Cren thought thai till avail.

And gif the sow come to the wall,

Till lat thame byrnand on hir fall,

And with añe stark cheyne hald thame thar

Quhill all war brint [vp] that [thar war].

Engynys alsua for till Cast

Thai ordanit and maid redy fast,

And set ilk man syne till his ward.

And schir valter, the gude steward,

With armyt men suld ryde about,

And se quhar at thar var mast dout,

And succur thar with his menȝhe.

And quhen thai in-to sic degré

Had maid thame for thair assaling,

On the rude-evyn, in the dawing,

they also prepare  
pitch, tar, lint,  
hards, with  
brimstone, and  
dry sticks,

616 bound together  
with iron bands.

They mean to set  
this bale on fire,

620 and lower it with  
the 'crane' upon  
the 'sow.'

624 They prepare also  
other engines.

628 [Fol. 59. E.]  
Sir Walter  
Steward is to go  
the circuit of the  
walls constantly.

632 On the Eve of the  
Exaltation of the

610. *neid—mast*] that nede war of EH.

611. *ter*] Tar H.

612. [and EH] C om. with] and EH.

613. [brin E] byrne C; birne H.

614. *syne*] EH om.

615. *flaggatis*] fagaldis E; Faggots H.

617. *Of—flaggatis*] The fagaldis  
weill E; The Faggots well H.

618. *Tunnys*] Tunnys, altered to  
Twnnys C; Tunnes H; townys E.

619. *flaggatis byrnand*] fagaldis  
brynnand E; Fagots burning H.

620. *Cren*] eran EH. *thai*] E om.  
*till*] sould H.

622. *Till*] To EH. *thame*] It EH.  
*bynand*] brynnand.

623. *ane—cheyne*] a starke Chenye  
H; stark chenyeis E. *thame*] It EH.

624. [vp H] wp E; C om. [thar  
war E] there were H; ves thar C.  
625. *till*] to EH.

630. *at*] that EH. *var*] war E;  
was H.

632. *into*] in.

633. *thair*] E om. *assaling*] as-  
sailyeing H; defending E.

634. *rude-evyn*] Rood Euen H.

Rood, Sept.  
13, 1319,

the English  
attack Berwick  
again.

The besieged  
make a good  
defence.

[Fol. 135. C.]

There is severe  
fighting.

The besiegers  
send forward  
their 'sow.'

The Inglis host blew till assale.

Than mycht men with ser apparale

636

Se that gret host Cum sturdely;

The toune enveremyt thai in hy,

And assalit with sa gud will—

For all thair mycht thai set thar-till—

640

That thai thame pressit fast of the touñe.

Bot thai, that can thame abandouñe

Till ded, or than till woundis sare,

So weill has thame defendit thare,

644

That ledderis to the ground thai flang,

And vith stanys so fast thai dang

Thair fais, that feill thai left lyand,

Sum ded, sum hurt, and sum swavnand.

648

Bot thai that held on fut in hy

Drew thame avay deliuery,

And skunnyrrit tharfor na-kyn thing,

Bot went stoutly till assalyng.

652

And thai abovin defendit ay,

And set thame till so harde assay,

[Quhill] that feill of thame voundit war,

[And] thai so gret defens maid thar,

That thai styntit thair fais mycht.

Apon sic mauer can thai ficht

Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day ;

Than thai without, in gret aray,

660

Pressit thair sow toward the wall ;

638. *enveremyt*] enweround E ;  
enuironed H.

649. *fut*] foot H ; feyt E.

650. *away*] away EH.

639. *sa gud*] sua gret E ; full great  
H.

651. *skunnyrrit*] scounryt E ; so-  
iournde (!) H. *thar—kyn*] there for  
na kin H ; noct for that E.

653. *abovin*] aboun.

654. *till*] to EH.

655. [Quhill E] While H ; How

C. *voundit*] woundyt.

656. [And EH] That C.

657. *can*] gan.

658. *noyne*] none.

659. *swavnand*] swonand E ; swoon-  
ning H.

660. *in*] on EH.

And thai within weill soyne gert call  
 The Engynour that takyñe was,  
 And gret mananþ till him mais,  
 And swoir that he suld de, bot he  
 Provit on the sow sic sutelte,  
 That he [to-fruschy] hir ilke deill.  
 And he, that has persauit weill  
 That the dede wes [weill] neir hym till,  
 Bot gif he mycht fulfill thar will,  
 Thought that he all his mycht vald do ;  
 Bendit in gret hy than wes scho,  
 And till the sow wes evin set.  
 In hye he gert draw the eleket,  
 And smertly swappit out the stañe,  
 That evyn out-our the sow is gane,  
 And behynd hir a litill we  
 It fell, and than thai cryit hey  
 That war in hir—"furth to the wall,  
 For dreid[les] it is ouris all."      680

The Engynour than deliuerly  
 Gert bend the gyne in full gret hy,  
 And the stane smertly swappit out.  
 It flaw [out], quhedirand, with a rout,  
 And fell richt evin befor the sow.  
 Thair hertis than begouth till grow ;  
 Bot ȝeit than, with thair mychitis all,

The besieged,  
 by threats,

664 compel the  
 captured engineer  
 to attack it.

668

672 *She* (i.e. a great  
 engine of war) is  
 planted opposite  
 the 'sow.'

676 The first shot  
 misses.

680

The engineer  
 shoots again;

684 and the stone  
 flies out,  
 with a loud rush,  
 very near the  
 mark.

662. *weill*] right H ; E om.  
 665. *swoir*] swour.  
 666. *Provit*] Prowyt E ; Preeued H.  
 667. [to-fruschy] E] sould frush  
 H ; till frusche C. *hir*] E om.  
 669. [weill E] CH om.  
 671. *all*] at. *vald*] wald.  
 673. *And*] That. *till*] to H. *evin*]  
 soyn evin C ; then euen H ; ewyn E.  
 675. *the*] A EH.  
 676. *our*] ouer H. Ewyn our the  
 sow the stane is gane E.  
 677. *hir*] her H ; It E. *wey*.

678. *hey*] so E ; hye C ; hie H.  
 680. *dreiddles*] dreid C ; dredles E ;  
 dredlesse H.  
 681. *Engynour*] Ingynour H ;  
 gynour E.  
 682. *in-hy*] full hastely H.  
 683. That kest the stane right  
 smertly out H.  
 684. [out E] ouer H ; C om.  
 quhedirand] quhethirand E ; whid-  
 dering H. *with*] in H.  
 686. *till*] to EH.

The besiegers still advance.	Thai pressit the sow toward the wall, And haſt hir set thar[to] Iuntly.	688
The third missile rises high in the [Fol. 135 b. C.] air,	The gynour than gert bend in hy The gyne, and swappit out the stañe, That evin toward the lift is gane,	692
falls with great force, and	And with gret wecht syne duschit douñe Richt by the wall, in a randoune, [And] hyt the sow in sic maner,	
crushes the chief beam in the 'sow.'	That it, that wes the mast summer And starkast for till stynt a strak, In-swendir with that dusche he brak.	696
The men within it run out in alarm, and the besiegers shout out—'The sow has farrowed!'	The men ran out in full gret hy, And on the wallis thai can cry, 'That thair sow ferryit wes thair !' Iohñe crab, that had his geir all þar, In his fagattis haſt set the fyre,	700
John Crab burns up the 'sow.'	And our the wall syne can thame wyre, And brynt the sow till brandis bair. With all this, fast assalȝeand war The folk without with fellowune ficht,	704
The fighting continues.	And thai within with mekill mycht Defendit manfully thar stede In-till gret auentur of dede.	708
The ships sail near,	The schipmen with gret apparale Com with thair schippes till assale,	712
their topcastles filled with armed men,	With top-castellis warnist weil, And wicht men armyt in-till steill.	

689. *tharto*] thair to E ; thereto H ; thar in C. *Iuntly*] gentilly E ; cunningly H ; perhaps we should read Iustly (= exactly).

691. *swappit*] wappyt E ; swakked H. *the*] a H.

695. [And EH] That C.

696. *summer*] sower EH.

697. *till*] to EH.

698. *he*] It.

699. *out*] foorth H.

700. *can*] gan.

701. *ferryit wes*] was feryt.

703. *his*] the H. *fagattis*] fagaldis

E ; Faggots H. *the*] a H.

704. *thame*] it H. *wyre*] wyr.

705. *till*] in H. *brandis*] brun-

dis.

709. *manfully*] manlily.

710. *In-till*] Into EH.

713. *castellis*] castell. *warnist*]

garnisht H.

714. *And*] Off. *in-till*] into EH.

- Thair batis vp apon thair mastis  
Drawyn weill hye and festnyt fast is,      716  
And pressit with that gret atour  
Toward the wall, bot the gynour  
Hit in añe espyne with a stañe,  
And the men that war thar-in gañe,      720  
Sum dede, [sum] dosnyt, [come doun] vyndland.  
Fra thine-furth durst nane tak [on] hand  
With schippes pref<sup>3</sup> thame to the vall.  
But the laiff war assalȝeand all      724  
On ilka syde sa egyrly,  
That certis it wes gret ferly,  
That thai folk sic defens haȝ maid,  
For the gret myscheif that they had.      728  
For thair wallis so law than weir,  
That a man richt weill with a sper  
Micht strik añe othir vp in the face,  
As eir befor tald till ȝow was.      732  
And feill of thaȝe war woundit sare,  
And the layf so fast travaland war,  
That nane had tume rest for till ta,  
Thair aduersouris assailȝeit swa.      736  
Thai war within sa stratly stad,  
That thar wardane, [that] with [him] had  
Ane hundredth men in Cumpany

715. *apon*] in middes H. *mastis*] mast EH.

716. *fast is*] fast EH.

717. *that—atour*] so CE; their great auenture H.

719. *in*] H om. *ane espyne*] ane hespyne C; the aspyne E; an Aspine H.

720. *And*] That H. *gane*] ilkane H.

721. Sum ded sum dosnyt, come doun wynland E; Sum dede dosnyt sum dede vyndland C; Came downe dushing on the land H.

722. *[on EH] vpon C.*

and with boats  
hauled high up  
against the masts,

One boat is hit,  
and the men  
thrown out.

724

The defence is  
difficult.

728

[Fol. 59 b. E.]  
The walls were  
very low.

732

[Fol. 136. C.]

736

The besieged are  
very hard pressed.

723. *preyss*] to preyss E; to preasse H. *vall*] wall EH.

725. *ilk*] ilk E; euerilke H.

727. *thai*] that.

728. *For*] With.

732. *eir*] her E; here H. *tald*] said. *till ȝow*] to ȝow EH; you it A.

734. *travaland*] trauelling H; trawaillyt E.

735. *tume*] tyme E; laiser H. *for*] H om. *till ta*] to ma.

738. [that E] CH om. [him EH] thame C.

739. *hundreth*] hundir.

	Armyt, that wicht war and hardy,	740
	And raid about for till se quhar	
	That his folk hardest pressit war,	
	Till releif thame that had mister,	
	Com syndry tymes in placis ser	744
	Quhar sum of the defensouris war	
	All dede, and othir woundit sare ;	
Their reserve, of 100 men,	Swa that he of his Cumpany	
	Behuſt to leiff thair party,	748
are all employed at the walls, except 1.	Swa that, be he añe courſ had maid	
	About, [of all the] men he had	
	Thair wes levit with him bot añe,	
	That he ne had thame left ilkane	752
	To releve quhar he saw mister.	
The men who were assailing Mary-gate burnt the drawbridge,	And the folk that assalȝeand wer	
	At mary ȝet, [to-hewyn] had	
	The barraſ, and a fyre had maid	756
	At the draw-brig, and brynt it douñe ;	
	And war thringand in gret foysouñe	
and attempt to burn the gate itself.	Richt [to] the ȝet, añe fyre till ma.	
	And thai within gert smerly ga	760
	Ane to the wardane, for till say	
	How thai war set in hard assay.	
Sir Walter, hearing of this danger, assembles a force,	And quhen schir valter steward herd	
	How men sa strately with thame ferd,	764
	He gert cum of the castell then	
	All that war thar of armyt men,	

741. *till*] to EH.

743-6. H omits.

743. *Till releif*] To releve.745. *defensouris*] defendanturis.748. *to leiff*] for to leve. *thair*] a gret H.749. *ane*] A EH.750. [*of—the* E] of all his H; to all to C.752. *thame—ilkane*] left thair euerilkane. For he had them left euerilkane H.755. [*to-hewyn* E] they hewen H ; be-hevin C.756. *barrass*] Barres H.759. [*to EH*] in C. *ane*] A EH. *till*] to EH.760. *And*] Than.761. *till*] to EH.764. *with*] E om. *men—thame*] that his men sa straitly H.765. *of*] fra H.766. *war thar*] thar war.

For thar that day assalȝeit name, And with that rout in hy is gañe Till mary ȝet, and till the wall Is went, and saw the myscheif all ; And vmbethought hym suddandly, Bot gif gret help war set in hy Thar-to, thai suld burne vp the ȝet [With] the fire [that he fand] thar-at. Tharfor apon gret hardyment He suddanly set his entent ; And gert all wyde set vp the ȝet, And the fyre that he fand thar-at With strinth of men he put avay. He set hym in full hard assay ; For thai that war assalȝeand thar Pressit on hym with vapnys bair, And he defendit with all his mycht. Thar mycht men se a fellowñe sicht ; With staffing, stoking, and striking Thar maid thai sturdy defending. For with gret strynth of men the ȝet Thai defendit, and stude thar-at, Magre thair fais, quhill the nyght Gert thame on bath halfis leif the ficht.	768	and repairs to the point assailed.
	772	
	776 [Fol. 136 b. C.]	He suddenly throws open the gate, and sallies out.
	780	
	784	A hard battle ensues.
	788	
	792	At last the English retire.
<b>T</b> hai of the host, quhen nyght can fall, Fra the assalt with-drew thame all, Voundit, and wery, and forbeft.	792	At night, the English retire.

767. *thar*] E om.769. *Till*] to EH (*twice*).770. *Is went*] so CH; He send E.  
*myscheif*] perill H.773. *burne*] bryñ.774. [With H] And C. [that—  
fand] so H; miswritten haffand C.  
E has—That fra the wall thai suld  
nocht let.780. *in*] to.782. *vapnys*] wapnys.783. *all*] E om.785. *With*] Off. *staffing*] stabbing  
E; sticking H. *stoking*] so CE;  
stopping H.790. *halfis*] half. *leif*] leve.791. *can*] gan.

They are much surprised at the defence made by the Scotch.

With mate cher the assalt thai left,  
And till thar Innys went in hy,  
And set<sup>s</sup> thar wachis hastily.  
The laif thame esit as thai mycht best ;  
For thai had gret myster of rest.

796

That nyght thai spak al comonly  
Of thame within, and had ferly  
That thai sa stout defens haſ maid  
Agane the gret assalt thai had.

800

And thai within, on othir party,  
Quhen thai thair fais so halely  
Saw thame withdraw, thai var all blith,  
And vachis haſ ordanit swith,

804

And syne ar till thar Innys gane.  
Ther wes bot few of thame ves slañe,  
Bot feill war woundit wikidly ;

808

The laiff our mesur war wery.

It wes Añe hard assalt, perfay,  
And certanly, I hard neuir say

812

Quhar quheyn men mair defens had maid,  
That swa richt hard assalȝeing had.

And of a thing that thair befell

I haf ferly, that I of tell.

816

That is, that in-till all that day,

Quhen all thair mast assalȝeit thai,

And the schot thikkest [wes] with-all,

A great wonder took place.

Women with child and childir small

820

In Arme-fullis gaderit vp, and bair

Till thame that on the wallis war

[Fol. 137. C.]  
Women and children gathered up arrows, and carried them to the men on

794. *mate*] mad. *mate—assalt*]

wachis swith.

faintnesse there the Sault H.

808. *ves*] then H ; E om.

799. *al comonly*] commonaly.

809. *woundit*] woundyt. *wikidly*]

801. *haſſ*] had EH.

wttrely E ; cruelly H.

804. *halely*] hastily.

813. *men*] E om.

805. *thame withdraw*] withdraw

814. *hard*] sharpe H.

thaim.

816. *I*] Ik. *of*] sall.

806. *And*] And thair C ; And their

H ; but the line is better without

H ; E has—And has ordanyt thair

818. *thair mast*] the maist H.

819. [wes EH] thar C.

Arrowes, and nocth añe slayne ves thar,  
 Na ȝeit voundit ; and that wes mar  
 To myrakill of god almychty ;  
 And to nocth ellis It set can I.  
 On athir syde that nycht thai war  
 All still, and on the morne, but mar,  
 Thar come tithandis out of Ingland  
 Till thame of the host, that bare on hand  
 How that by borrow-brig and mytouñe  
 Thair men war slayne and dwngin douñe ;  
 And at scottis men throw-out the land  
 Raid ȝeit, byrnand and distroyand.  
 And quhen the king haȝ herd this taill,  
 His consell he assemblit hail,  
 Till se quhethir farar war him till  
 Till ly about the toune all still,  
 And assaill quhill it wonnyne war,  
 Or than In yngland for till fare,  
 And reskew his land and men.  
 His consell fast discordit then ;  
 For southren men vald that he maid  
 Arrest thar, quhill he wonnyn had  
 The toune and the castell alsua.  
 Bot northir men wald no-thing swa,  
 That dred thar frendis for till tyne,  
 And mast part of thar gudis syne  
 Throu scottis mennys cruelte ;

823. *and—thar]* so CH; and stanys name slane war E.  
 824. *voundit]* woundyt.  
 825. *To]* To a H; The E.  
 830. *Till]* To EH. To the Oast, that was mislykand H.  
 831. *by]* at H. *and]* at E; by H.  
*mytoune]* Midtoun H.  
 832. *dwngin]* dongyn.  
 833. *at]* that the H; at the E.  
*throw-out]* throu EH.  
 834. *bynand]* brynnand. *dis-*

the walls, and not one was wounded ; which was a miracle.

[Fol. 60. E.]

828

News of the defeat at Mitton is brought to the English.

836 King Edward takes counsel,

whether to stay or retreat.

840

The men of the South of England advise him to stay.

The men of the North are alarmed for their friends, and advise retreat.

848

*troyand]* slayand H.

835. *hass]* had.

837. *Till]* To EH. *farar]* fayr E; better H.

838. *Till ly]* To ly E; Abide H.

840. *till]* to EH; *and in l.* 847.

841. *men]* his men.

843. *southren]* sotheroun E; the South H.

846. *northir]* northyn E; North H.

The Earl of  
Lancaster advises  
the king to return;

and, finding that  
the king inclines  
to the Southern-  
ers' advice,

[Fol. 137 b. C.]

goes home, with  
all his men,  
without leave.

For this, Sir  
Andrew Herdclay  
took him to  
Pomfret,

and there  
beheaded him.

It was said that  
this Earl Thomas  
was canonised,  
and performed  
miracles.

Thai wald he leit the sege be,  
And raid for till reskew the land.

Of loncastell, I tak on hand,  
The Erll thomas wes añe of thai,

That Consalit the king hame to ga.  
And, for that mair enclynit he

Till the folk of the [south] Cuntre  
Than till the [northir] mennys will,  
He tuk it to sa mekill Ill,

That he gert turf his geir in hy,  
And with his battall halely,

That of the host neir thrid part waſ,

Till Ingland hame his way he tais.

But leiff, he hame has tane his gat;  
Tharfor fell eftir sic debat

Betuix him and the king, that ay

Lestit, quhill androu herdelay,

That throu the king wes on him set,  
Tuk hym syne in-to pomfret,

And on the hill besyde the touñe  
Strake of his hede but ransouñe;

Tharfor syne drawin and hangit ves he,  
And with him weill a fair menȝe.

Men said syne eftir, this thomas,  
That on this viȝ maid martir was,  
Wes sanctit and myraclis did,

Bot envy syne gert thaȝe be hid.  
Bot quhethir he haly wes or naȝe,

851. *the]* his.

and into H.

852. *loncastell]* longcastell EH.

869. *the]* ane.

856. [south E] north CH.

871. *drawin—hangit]* hyngyt and  
drawyn E; hanged and drawn H.

857. [northir] northyn E; south-  
ren C; Southeroun H; cf. l. 846.

872. *weill—fair]* a weill gret E; a  
great H.

861. *thrid]* the thrid C; but EH  
omit the.

874. *riss]* wiss E; wise H; wayes

866. *Lestit]* Lastyt. *herdclay]*  
hardclay E; Hardeclay H; Herkely  
A.

A.  
875. *sanctit]* saynct E; syne a  
Sanct H. *myraclis]* gud myraclis  
C; myrakillis E; miracles H.

868. *syne in-to]* rycht in E; syne

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| At pomfret thusgat wes he slane.<br>And syne the king of yngland,<br>Quhen that he saw hym tak on hand<br>Till paſ his way sa oppinly,<br>Hym thought it wes perell to ly<br>Thar with the laiff of his menȝe ;<br>And his harnaf tursit has he,<br>And [in]till Ingland hame can far.<br>The scottis men, that distroyand war<br>In yngland, herd soyne tell tithyng<br>Of this gret sege the departing.<br>Tharfor thai tuk westward the way,<br>And by carlele hame went [ar] thai,<br>With prayis and with presoneris,<br>And othir gudis on seir maneris.<br>The king, Iwiſ, wes woundir fayne<br>That thai war cummyn haill and feir,<br>And at thai sped on sic maner,<br>That [thai] thair fais discumfit had,<br>And, but tynsale of men, had maid | 880                                     |
|   | 884 King Edward retreats.               |
|   | The Scotch host under Murray avoid him, |
|   | 888                                     |
|   | going home by Carlisle.                 |
|   | 892                                     |
|   | 896 King Robert is much pleased.        |
|   | 900                                     |

878, *thusqat*] thus.

881. *Till*] To EH.

883, 884, *Transposed in H.*

883. *Thar*] And H. *laif*] lave  
EH.

884. Hys harnays tharfor tursit he  
 EH.  
 885. *And*] Hom. [*in-till E*] till  
 G: To H: *can*] can be H: can be

887, 888. *For these 2 lines H has*  
8, *viz.* Throughout England full  
cruelly, Burning and wasting right  
rigorously, When that they haue  
heard tythings tell Of this great Siege  
that was sa fell : That they all skailed  
the land. Note. But he had been

againe: So that their folks relieved  
were, And set now free from all  
danger.

887. *herd soyne*] sone hard.

888. the] E om

889. *Tharfor-tuk*] Then did they take H.

890. *by*] till. *hame went*] returned  
H. [ar E] are H: C om.

89]. *prayis*] prise H.

893, till to,

894, 895. H omits. *laiff*] lave.  
*ravis*] wavis. *Is gane*] agayne

897. *war cummyn*] returned H.

898, at] that EH.

899. [thai EH] Com.

900. *had*] has.

	Reskowrf to thame that in berwik War assegit richt till thar dik, [That into full great danger wes,	903*
	Through strength of them that sieged hes.]	904*
[Fol. 138. C.]	And quulen the kyng had sperit tithand	903
He enquires how they fared in England;	How thai had faryne in-till Ingland, [And of their iourney what progresse,	905*
	That they haue had, and what successe,]	906*
	And thai haf tald hym all thar fair,	905
	How Inglis men discumfit war, Richt blith in-till his hert wes he,	
and is glad at their success.	And maid thame fest with gammyn and gle.	908

Thus was Berwick  
rescued.

King Robert goes  
to Berwick,

and praises Sir  
Walter

for his stout  
defence at the  
gate.

[Fol. 60 b. E.]

At the ȝet, quhar that men brynt had

**B**Erwik wes on this maner  
Reskewit, and thai that thar-in wer.  
He wes worthy aȝe prince till be  
Throu manheid and Subtilite, 912  
That [couth] throu vit sa hye a thyng,  
But tynsale, bryng till gude ending.  
Till berwik syne the way he tais ;  
And quhen he herd thar how it waȝ  
Defendit swa richt apertly,  
He lovit thame that var thar gretly.  
Valter stewardis gret bounte  
Atour the laif commendit he, 920  
For the richt gret defens he maid  
At the ȝet, quhar that men brynt had  
The brig, as ȝhe herd me deuif.

901. *Reskowrss*] Rescours E; Re-  
course H.

902. *till—dik*] faire and thicke (!)  
H.

903\*, 904\*. *In H only.*

904. *faryne*] farne EH. *intill*]  
into H; In E.

905\*, 906\*. *In H only.*

905. *haf*] had. *thar*] hale the.

911, 912. *So in CH; E transposes  
the lines.*

913. [*couth EH*] thought C. *thron*]  
with EH.

914. *But*] But gret. *gude*] E om.

915. *way—tais*] King gaes H.

917. *swa richt*] rycht swa. *swa—  
apertly*] sa doone manfully (*sic*) H.

918. *var*] war.

919. *stewardis*] stewart his.

920. *Atour*] Out our.

922. *that*] EH om.

- And certis he wes weill till pris, 924  
 That sa stoutly with playne fechting  
 At oppynȝ set maid defending.  
 Micht he haf lifit quhill he had beyne  
 Of perfit elde, withouten weyne,  
 His renoune suld haf strekit fer.  
 Bot dede, that vachis ay to mar  
 With all [hyr] mycht waik and worthy,  
 Had at his worschip gret Invy ; 932  
 That in the flour of his ȝoutheid  
 Scho endit all his douchty deid,  
 As I sall tell ȝow forthirmar.  
 Quhen the king had a quhill beyne thar,  
 He send for masonis fer and neir,  
 That sleast wes of that misteir,  
 And gert weill ten fut hye the vall  
 About berwik his toune our all.  
 And syne soyne toward lowdyane  
 With his menȝe his gat has gane ;  
 And syne he gert ordane in hy  
 Bath armyt men and ȝhemanyry,  
 In-till Irland in hy till fair,  
 Till help his brothir that wes thair.

Had Sir Walter  
lived long,

928

he would have  
been famous.

932

But death ended  
all his doughty  
deeds.

936 The king sends  
for masons,

940 and makes the  
town-wall higher.

944 He then prepares  
to go to Ireland,

[Fol. 138 b. C ]  
to help his  
brother.

924. *weill*] meekle H. *till*] to EH.

928. *elde*] eild EH. *weyne*] wene EH.

930. *vachis*] walkis E ; watches H.  
*mar*] mer. *ay—mar*] euer ner H.

931, 932. H omits. [hyr E] his C ;  
 see l. 934. *waik—worthy*] and forthi  
 E.

932. *gret*] sic.

933. *That in*] Into H.

934. *Scho*] Sa. *Scho endit*] Made  
end of H.

938. *wes*] war E ; was H.

940. *berwik his*] berwykis E ;  
 Baruike the H.

941. *soyne*] EH om. *lowdyane*]  
 lothyane E; Louthiane H.

944. *ȝhemanyry*] ȝhumanry.

945. *till*] to EH.

946. *Till*] To EH.

## [BOOK XVIII.]

**How schir Eduard the bruce vess slayn in Irland.**

Edward Bruce  
will not wait for  
his reinforce-  
ments,

but, with only  
2000 men,

goes to Dundalk.

Sir Richard of  
Clare

assembles 20,000  
men on horseback,

besides foot  
soldiers,  
and goes north-  
ward.

Three scouts are  
sent forward by  
Edward,

3. *forrouth*] before H.  
5. *furthwarde*] south-wart E;  
Southward H.  
6. *them*] written theme C.  
9. *erischry*] Irchery E; the Irishry  
H.

Bot he, that rest anoyit ay,  
And wald in travaill be all-way,  
A day forrouth thair arivyng  
That war send till hym fra the king,  
He tuk his way, furthwarde to fare  
Magre them all that with hym war.  
For he had nocht than in that land  
Of all men, I trow, twa thousand,  
Outane the kyngis off erischry,  
That in gret rowtis raid hym by.

Toward dundawk he tuk the vay ;  
And quhen richard of clare herd say  
That he com with añe few menȝhe,  
All that he mycht assemblit he,  
Of all Irland, of Armyt men ;

Swa that he had thar with him then  
Of trappit horȝ twenty thousand,  
Bot thai[m] that war on fut gangand ;  
And held furth northwarde on his vay.  
And quhen schir Eduard haȝ herd say  
That cummyn neir till hym wes he,

He send discourouris hym till se ;  
The sowlis and the steward war thai,

11. *dundawk*] dundalk.  
13. *ane*] a H; sa E.  
18. *thaim*] them H; thai CE  
19. *vay*] way EH.  
22. *till*] to EH.  
23. *sowlis*] sowllis E; Sowles H.

And als schir philip the mowbray.	24
And quhen thai seyn had thar cummyng,	
Thai went agane to tell the king,	
And said weill thai war mony men.	who report that the host is very large.
In hy schir Eduard ansuerd then,	28
And said, that he suld fecht that day,	
Thouch Tryplit or quadruplit war thai.	
Schir Iohne steward said "sekirly,"	
I red $\exists e$ ficht nocth in sic hy.	
Men sais my brothir is cumand	
With xv hundreth men neir hand ;	
And war thai knyt with $\exists$ ow, $\exists e$ mycht	
The trastlyar abyde to ficht."	32
Schir Eduard lukit richt angrely,	
And till the sowlis said in hy,	
"Quhat sais thou?" "schir," he said, "perfay,	
As my fallow [has] said, I say."	De Soulis gives the same advice.
And than till schir philippe said he.	40
"Schir," said he, "sa our lord me se,	
Me think it na foly to byde	
$\exists$ our men, that spedis thame to ryde.	44
For we ar few, our fais ar feill ;	
God may richt weill our veirdis deill ;	
Bot it var vounder that our mycht	
Suld ourcum so feill in ficht."	48
Than with gret Ire, "alla $\beta$ ," said he,	
"I wend neuir till here that of the !	
Now help quha will, for sekirly	

24. *als*] E om.26. *the king*] tithing EH.30. *Tryplit — quadruplit*] tribill  
and quatribill E; fие or sex times  
ma H.32.  *$\exists e$ —nocht*] nocth  $\exists e$  ficht CE;  
but H has—ye fecht not; which is  
far better. *in* on.34. *hundreth*] so CH; thowsand E.  
37. *richt*] all.38. *sowlis*] soullis E; Sowles H.  
*said*] he said C; but EH omit he.39. *sais*] sayis.

40. [has E] CH om.

41. *than*] E om. *And—philippe*]  
Then to Sir Philip the Mowbray H.43. *it — foly*] na foly for. H  
wrongly omits na.46. *veirdis*] werdis.47. *var vounder*] war wondir.

	This day, but mair baid, fecht vill I.	52
	Sall na man say, quihill I may dre, That strynth of men soll ger me fle! God scheld that ony suld vs blame, That we defoull our nobill name!"	56
They agree to do so.	[“Now] be it swagat than," quod thai ; “We soll tak that god will purvay."	
But the Irish kings, hearing of this,	And quhen the kyngis of Erischry Herd say, and vist all sekirly,	60
counsel him to wait;	That thar kyng, with sa quheyn, vald ficht Agane folk of sa mekill mycht, Thai com till [him] in full gret hy, And consalit hym full tendirly	64
which he refuses to do.	For till abid his men ; and thai Suld hald thar fais all that day Doand, and on the morne alsua, With thair saltis that thai suld ma.	68
Then they say they must withdraw from him.	Bot thair mycht na consell availl ; He wald all gat haff the battaill. And quhen thai saw he wes so thra To fecht, thai said, “ <i>ȝe</i> may weill ga	72
	To ficht with <i>ȝon</i> gret Cumpany ; Bot we acquyt vs vtirly, That nane of vs will stand to ficht ; Assuris nocht tharfor in our mycht.	76
	For our maner is, of this land, Till follow and ficht, and ficht fleand, And nocht till stand in plane melle	

52. *vill*] will EH.53, 54. *dre*] drey. *fle*] fley.56. *That—defoull*] That we defile H; Giff we defend (!) E.

57. [Now EH] C om.

59. *Erischry*] Irchery E; Irishry H.60. *vist*] wyst. *all*] it H; E om.61. *quheyn*] quhone. *vald*] wald EH.63. [*him EH*] C om.68. *saltis*] assaults H; rounnyngis E.70. *the*] E om.

73, 74. Transposed in H.

76. *Assuris*] Trust H. *in*] into H.77. *of*] in H.78. *Till*] To E. *and—and*] and to H.79. *till*] to EH; *and in l.* 92

Quhill the ta part discumfit be."	80	[Fol. 61. E.]
He said, "sen that ȝour custum is, I ask no mair at ȝow bot this, That is, that ȝhe and ȝour menȝhe Wald all to-giddir arayit be, And stand on fer, but departing, And se our ficht and our endyng."		He asks them to wait a little apart,
Thai said weill at thai suld do swa, And syne toward thair men can ga, That war weill fourty thousand neir. Edward, with thame that vith him weir, That war noct fully twa thousand, Arayit thame stalwardly till stand	84	[Fol. 139 b. C.]
Agane fourty thousand and ma. Schir Eduard that day wald noct ta His cot-Armour, bot gib harper, That men held [as] withouten peir Of his estat, had on that day All haill schir Eduardis aray.		to see him fight and die.
The ficht abaid thai on this wiſ ; And in gret hye thar enymyȝ Com, till assemmyll all reddy, And thai met thame richt hardely. Thai war sa few, forsuth to say, That ruschit with thair fais var thai ;	100	They withdraw accordingly,
And thai that pressit mast to stand War slaȝe douȝe, and the remanand Fled till erischry for succour. Schir Eduard, that had sic valour,		and Edward prepares for battle, having 2000 men only.
cf. ll. 17, 18, 93.	92	
93. fourty] so CE; threttie H.		Sir Edward's armour was worn that day by Gib Harper.
96. [as H] miswritten has C; als	96	
80. ta] ane H.	E.	
82. I] Ik. no—ȝow] at ȝow no mar.	101. assemmyll] assemble.	
86. our (2)] the E.	103. Thai—forsuth] Bot thai sa	
87. at] that EH.	few war south E; They were sa few, the sooth H.	
88. can] gan thai.	105. pressit mast] so in E; CH transpose the words.	
89. fourty] threttie H; twenty E; cf. ll. 17, 18, 93.	107. erischry] the Irche E; the Irishry H. for] so CH; to E.	
96. [as H] miswritten has C; als		

80. *ta*] ane H.  
 82. *I*] Ik. *no—ȝow*] at ȝow no  
mar.  
 86. *our* (2)] the E.  
 87. *at*] that EH.  
 88. *can*] gan thai.  
 89. *fourty*] threttie H; twenty E;  
 cf. ll. 17, 18, 93.  
 93. *fourty*] so CE; threttie H.  
 96. [as H] miswritten has C; als

- E.  
 101. *assemmyll*] assemble.  
 103. *Thai—forsuth*] Bot thai sa  
few war south E; They were sa few,  
the sooth H.  
 105. *pressit mast*] so in E; CH  
transpose the words.  
 107. *erischry*] the Irche E; the  
Irishry H. *for*] so CH; to E.

Sir John Steward,  
and Sir John de  
Soulis are all  
slain.

Wes ded, and Iohne steward alsua ;  
And Iohne de sowlis als vith thai,  
And othir als of thair Cumpany.

[Thai] wencust war sa suddenly,  
That few in-till the place war slayne.  
For the laiff haſt thair vayis tane  
Till the erische kyngis, that ves thar,  
That in haill battale howand war.

112

Iohne tomasswn, that wes leder  
Of thame of carrik that thair wer,

Quhen he saw the discumfiting,  
With-drew him till aſe erische king

116

John Thomasson,  
leader of the men  
of Carrick,

That of his acquyntans had he ;  
And he resauit him in lawte.

120

And quhen Iohne cummyn wes to that king,  
He saw be led fra the fechting

124

and soon sees  
Sir Philip  
[Fol. 140. C.]  
Mowbray being

Schir philipe [the] mowbray, the vicht,  
That had beyne doysnyt in the ficht,

led by 2 men  
along the cause-  
way leading to  
the town.

And be the Armys led wes he  
With twa men, apon the cawse

128

That wes betuix thame and the toune,  
That strekit lang in a randoune.

Toward the toune thai held thair vay,  
And quhen in myd cawse war thai,  
Schir philip of his desynaiſt  
Ourcome, and persauit he waſt

132

110. *Iohne de*] Iohne the E; Sir John H.

122. *lawte*] leawte E; daintie H.

112. [Thai E] They H; That C.  
wencust war] war wencussyt E; van-  
quisht were H.

125. [the E] CH om. *vicht*] wicht.

113. *place*] Plaine H.

126. *doysnyt*] dosnyt E; discom-  
fist (!) H. *in*] in-to.

114. *laiff*] lave EH. *vayis*] wayis.

127. *be*] by the H; with E.

115. *erische*] Irsche E; Irish H.

128. *the*] so CH; A E. *carve*]

*res*] war.

cause E; Caussey H.

116. *That*] And.

130. *That*] And.

117. *tomasswn*] thomas sone E;  
Thomson H.

132. *cause*] cause E; the Caussey

120. *erische*] Irsch E; Irish H.

H.

133. *desynaiſs*] desynes E; busi-

nesse H.

134. *wass*] wes E.

Tane, and swagat led with twa.

The tane he swappit soyñe hym fra,  
And syne the tothir in gret hy ;  
Syne drew his cuerde deliueryl,  
And till the fecht the vay he tais  
Endlang the cawse, that than waß  
Fillit in-to [sa] gret foysouñe

Of men that than went to the touñe.  
And he, that met thame, can thame ma  
Sic payment, quhar he can ga,

That weill añe hundreth men gert he  
Leiff, magre thairis, the cawsee ;  
As Iohñe tomasswn said suthly,  
That saw his deid all halely.

Toward the battall evyn he ȝeid.  
Iohñe tomasswn, that tuk gud heid  
That thai war vencust all planly,  
Cryit on hym in full gret hy,

And said, "cum heir, for thar is nañe  
On liff; For thai ar dede ilkañe."  
Than stude he still a quhile, and saw  
That thai war all done out of daw;

Syne went toward him sarraly.

This Iohñe wrought syne sa vittely,  
That all that thidder fled than wer,  
[Thouch] that thai lesit of thair ger,

Com till cragfergus haill and feir.

135. *swagat led*] led suagat.

136. *swappit*] swakked H.

138. *Syne*] And E; He H. his the.

139. *the—he*] his wayis.

140. *cawse*] cause E; Caussey H.

141. *into*] so CH; in-till E. [sa

H] CE om.

142. *to*] till.

143. *can thame*] agayn gan.

144. *ga*] them ta H.

145. *ane hundreth*] A hundir.

146. *cawsee*] cause E; Caussey H.

136 Sir Philip shakes off his captors,

draws his sword,  
and goes along  
the causeway  
towards the  
battle-field,

140

144

turning 100 men  
aside from it as  
he goes.

148

John Thomasson  
calls to him to  
come back.

152

He waits awhile,  
and then comes  
back.

156

Thomasson's men  
retreat to  
Carrickfergus.

160

147. *tomasswn*] thomas sone E;  
Thomson H; and in l. 150.

151, 152. *Transposed in H. vencust*] wencussy E; vanquisht H.  
*Cryit on*] And cried to H.

156. *out*] E om.

157. *sarraly*] sikkerly H.

158. *vittely*] wittely EH.

160, 161. *Transposed in H. [Thouch that]* Thouched that E; Although H; How that C. *lesit*] losseyt E; left some H. *till*] to EH.

The soldiers try to get Sir Edward's head,	And thai, that at the fechting weir, Soucht schir Eduard, to get his hede, Emange the folk that thar ves ded ;	164
and, finding Gib Harper,	And fand gib harper in his ger. And, for sa gude his armys wer,	
cut Gib's head off,	Thai strak his hed of, and syne it	
[Fol. 140 b. C.] which they put in salt, and send to the king of England.	Thai haf gert saltit in-till a kyt, And send it syne in-till Ingland, To Eduard king in-till presand.	168
	Thai wend schir Eduardis it had beyne ; Bot, for the armyng that wes scheyne,	172
Thus died these noble men.	Thai of the hed dissauit war, All-though schir Eduard deit thar.	
	On this wiþ war thai nobill men Throu wilfulnes all losit then ;	176
	And that wes syn and gret pite. For had thair outrageouſ bounde	
[Fol. 61 b. E.] Had they been well led, they would not have been so easily conquered.	Beyne led with wit and with mesure, Bot gif the mair misaduenture	180
	Befell thame, it suld richt hard thing Be till leid thame till outraying ;	
	Bot gret outrageouſ Succudry	
	Gert thame all deir thair vorschip by.	184
	And thai, that fled fra the melle, Sped thame in hy toward the Se, And to cragfergus cummyn ar thai.	
The men sent by king Robert to help Sir Edward	And thai that war in-to the vay, To schir Eduard send fra the king, Quhen thai herd the discumfiting,	188

164. *Emange*] Amang.168. *saltit*] salt.169, 170. *syne*] E. *om.* *To-in-*  
*till*] Till the king Eduward in E. H  
*has*—And in a Present but hething In  
England sent it to the King.174. *All-though*] Allthoutht.176. *Throu*] For. *losit*] lesyt E ;  
lossed H.181. *Befell*] Bene fallyn, *richt*]  
bene H.182. Should lead them to discom-  
forting H. *till* (1)] to. *outraying*]  
owtreyning.183. *Succudry*] so H; surquedry E.184. *deir*] her E. *vorschip*] wor-  
ship EH.188. *vay*] way EH.

- Till cragfergus thai went agane ;  
And that wes nocth forouten pane. 192  
For thai war mony tymes that day  
Assalit with erischry, [bot thai]  
[Ay] held to-giddir sarraly,  
Defendand tha e so wittely  
That thai eschapit oft throu mycht,  
And mony tymes al  throu slicht ;  
For oft of thairis till thame gaf thai  
Till let thame scathles  pass thar vay. 200  
And to cragfergus com thai swa.  
Than batis and schippes can thai ta,  
And salit till scotland in hy,  
And thar arivit all saufly. 204  
Quhen thai of scotland had wittering  
Of schir Eduardis discomfiting,  
Thai menyt hym full tendrely  
Our all the land all comonly ; 208  
And thai that with hym slayne var thar  
Full tendrely al  menyt war.
- return to  
Carrickfergus,  
escaping thither  
with much  
difficulty.
- They then sail  
back to Scotland.
- The Scotch  
lament Sir  
Edward's death,

**H**ow king eduard com agane in scotland with his  
power till Edinburgh eftir the ded of gud Schir  
eduard the Bruce in-till Ireland.

**E**duard the bruce, as I said air,  
Wes discumfit on this manare. 212

And quhen the feld wes clengit cley e,

[Fol. 141. C.]

191. *Till*] To EH.  
192. *forouten*] withoutten H.  
193. *tymes*] tyme.  
194. *erischry*] Irschery E; Irishrie  
H. [bot thai EH] that ay C.  
195. *Ay held E*] Thai held C;  
Held them H.  
196. *Defendand thame*] And de-  
fendyt. *wittely*] worthely H.  
198. *als*] alsua E; oft H.  
199. *till*] to EH; and in l. 201.  
H is corrupt.  
200. *Till*] To EH.
202. *Than*] That. *schippes*] ship-  
men H. *can*] gan E; H om.  
204. *thar arivit*] arivit thar C;  
but E has thar arywyt.  
205. *wittering*] witting H.  
206. *discomfiting*] wencussing.  
208. *all comonly*] full commonly  
H; commonly E.  
210. *war*] thai war CH; but E  
omits thai.  
211. *I*] is H. *air*] aire H; her E.  
212. *manare*] maner.

Sir Richard of  
Clare goes to  
Dundalk.

Sa that na resisteris wes seyne,  
The vardane than, richard of clare,  
And all the folk that with him war  
Toward dundawk has tane the vay ;  
Swa that richt na debat maid thai  
At that tyme with the erischrye,  
Bot to the toune thai held in hy.

216

John Maupas  
takes Gib  
Harper's head  
to king Edward  
of England, who  
is much pleased.

And syne haſ send furth to the king,  
That Ingland had in gouernyng,  
Gib harperis hed in-till aña kyt.  
Iohñe mawpaſ till the king had It,  
Quhilk he resauit in gret dayntee ;  
Richt blith of that present wes he ;  
For he wes swa glad that he wes swa  
Deliuering of sic fellouñe a faa.

220

In hert tharof he tuk sic prydye,  
That he tuk purpoſ for to ryde  
With a gret host in-till Scotland,  
Till revenge hym, with stalward hand,  
Of the tray, travaill, and of teyne,  
That done till hym tharin had beyne.

224

King Edward  
determines to  
invade Scotland,

And a richt gret hoost gaderit he,  
And gert his schippes by the se  
Cum, with gret foysoun off vittale ;  
For at that tyme he thought all hale  
For till distroy so cleyn scotland,

228

and sends ships  
thither with  
much provisions.

214. *na resisteris*] ne resistens E ;

*na resistance* H.

215. *vardane*] wardane. *richard*] schyr Richard.

217. *dundawk*] dundalk E ; Don-dalk H.

219. *erischrye*] Irschery E ; Irishry H.

221. *haſſ*] had.

222. *Ingland had*] had Ingland.

223. *in-till*] into H ; in E. *ane*]

A EH.

224. *mawpass*] mavpas E ; Mawppas H.

225. *Quhilk—resauit*] And he  
ressawynt It. *gret*] E om.

228. *sic—a*] so CH ; a felloun E.

231. *in-till*] into H ; in E.

232. *Till revenge*] For to weng.

233. *the*] E om. *trawaill*] of  
trawaill. *of*] the H.

234. *till—thar-in*] tharin till  
him.

238. *thought—hale*] so CH ; wald  
him taile E.

239. *So* CH ; To dystroy wp sa  
clene the land E.

That nane suld be thar-in liffand ;	240	
And with his folk in gret aray		
Toward scotland he tuk the vay.		
And quhen king robert vist that he		King Robert prepares to resist him.
Com on hym with sic añe menze,	244	
He gaderit men, bath fer and neir,		
Quhill sa feill till him cummyn weir,		
And war als for till cum hym to,		
That him weill thought he suld weill do.	248	
He gert with-draw all the catele		
Of lowdiane euerilk deill,		He collects all the cattle of Lothian into fortresses.
And till strynthis gert thañe be send,		
And ordanit men thame to defend.	252	
And with his hoost all still he lay		
At culross, for he walde assay		He awaits his foes at Culross.
Till ger his fais throu fasting		
Be feblis, and throu lang walking ;	256	
And fra he feblis had thair mycht,		
Asse[m]yll he wald with thañe till ficht.		[Fol. 141 b. C.]
He thought till wirk apon this viſ;		
And Inglis men with gret mastris	260	
Com with thar hoost in lowdiane,		
And soyne till Edinburgh ar gañe,		The English soon reach Edinburgh, where they stay 3 days.
And thair abaid thai dayis thre.		
Thair schippes that war on the se	264	
Had the vynd contrar till thañe ay,		

240. *be]* leve.  
 241. *folk]* Oast H.  
 243. *vist]* wist EH.  
 244. *ane]* A EH.  
 245. *men]* his men.  
 247. *till]* to EH.  
 248. *weill* (1)] EH *om.* *suld*  
*weill]* rycht weill suld.  
 250. *lowdiane]* lowthiane EH.  
 251. *till strynthis]* into strengths  
*H.* *send]* led H.  
 252. *thame—defend]* to defend  
 that stead H.
253. *hoost all]* ost als.  
 256. *feblis]* feeble H. *walking]*  
 waking H.  
 258. *he—till]* with them he wald  
 to H; than with thaim to E.  
 259. *till]* to EH; and in ll. 265,  
 267, 268, 273.  
 261. *in]* to H. *lowdiane]* low-  
 thian E; Louthiane H; and in l.  
 273.  
 262. *soyne]* sone E; then H. *ar]*  
 are they H.  
 265. *vynd]* wynd.

Their ships are  
delayed by  
contrary winds.

Swa that apon no maner thai  
Had power till the fyrth till bring  
Thair vittale, till releiff the king.

268

They send out  
foragers, who  
find only one  
lame cow.

And thai of the host that falit met,  
Quhen thai saw that thai mycht nocht get  
Thair vittalis to thame by the se,  
Than send thai furth a gret menzhe  
For till forray all lowdiañe ;  
Bot cattell haf thai fundyn nañe,  
Outane a kow that wes haltand,

272

[Fol. 62. E.]

That in tranentis corñe thai fand ;  
Thai brought hir till thair hoost agane.

276

When Earl  
Warenne sees  
them bringing it,

And quhen the Erll of varane

That cow saw anerly cum swa,

He askit ‘ gif thai gat no ma ? ’

280

And thai haf said all till him, “ nay.”

“ Than, certis,” said he, “ I dar say

This is the derrest beiff that I

Saw euir zeit ; for sekiriy

284

It cost añe thousand pund and mar ! ”

And quhen the king and thai that war

Of his consell saw thai mycht get

Na catell till thar host till et,

288

That than of fasting had gret Payne,

Till Ingland turnyt thai hame agayñe.

At melroſ schupe thai for till ly,

And send befor ane cumpany,

292

The English  
retreat to  
Melrose,

againe H.

277. *Thai—hir*] That brought thai.

278. *varane*] warayne.

279. *That—saw*] Saw that bule E ;  
And a Kow H.

280. *gat*] fand H.

282. *certis—he*] said he certis.

283. *beiff*] best E ; beast H.

285. *ane*] A EH ; and in l. 292,

290. *hame*] E om.

291. *till*] to EH.

H.

271. *to*] till.

272. *Than—furth*] They sent then  
foorth H ; Thai send furth rycht E.

275. *Outane*] Owtakyn E ; Except  
H. *kow*] so CH ; bule E.

276. *tranentis corne*] so CE ;  
Tranent toun H.

277, 278. And when the Erle of  
Warrane, Saw their Forrayours come

Thre hundredth neir of Armyt men.  
 Bot the lord dowglaſ, [that] wes then  
 Besyde in-till the forest neir,  
 Vist of thar com and quhat thai veir ;  
 And with thaſe of his Cumpany  
 In-till melroſ all preuely  
 He hufit in-till aſe enbuschement.  
 And a richt sturdy frer he sent  
 Without the ſet, thar com till ſe,  
 And bad him hald him all preve,  
 Quhill that he ſaw thame cumand all  
 Richt till the Cunȝe of the wall,  
 And [than] crye hye, “dowglaſ ! dowglaſ !”  
 The frer furth than hiſ way he tais,  
 That wes derff, stout, and ek hardy ;  
 His mekill hude helit haly  
 The Armyng that he on hym had ;  
 Apon a stalward horſ he raid,  
 And in his hand he had a ſpere,  
 Abydand apon that maner  
 Quhill that he ſaw thame cumand neir.  
 And quhen the formast paſſit weir  
 The Cunȝe, he cryit, “dowglaſ ! dowglaſ !”  
 Than till thame all aſe courſ he maiſ,  
 And bare aſe doune deliuery ;  
 Than dowglaſ, with his Cumpany,  
 Yſchit apon thame with a ſchout.  
 And quhen thai ſaw ſa gret a rout

sending on 300  
men in advance.

296 Douglas lies in  
wait for them,

300 and ſends a friar  
to watch,

[Fol. 142. C.]

who is to cry  
“Douglas !”  
304 when they come  
near enough.

308 The friars’ hood  
hides his armour,

and he awaits  
the English on  
horseback.

312

He cries  
“Douglas !”  
316 and charges.

Douglas and his  
men rush out.

320

- 294. [that EH] C om.
- 295. *Vist*] Wyst E ; Wist H. *com*] comming H ; and in l. 301.
- 299. *hufit*] howyt E ; howered H. *in-till*] into H ; in E. *ane enbuschement*] A buschement E ; a bushment H.
- 303. *cumand*] comming H.
- 304. *till*] to EH. *Cunȝe*] coynȝe E ; cunyie H. *of*] thar of.
- 305. *than crye*] than cry E ; crye
- C ; erie on H.
- 306. *furth than*] than furth EH. *way he*] wayis EH.
- 307. *derff—ek*] all stout derff and E ; right darfe, stout, and H.
- 308. *helit*] couered H.
- 309. *Armyng*] armur.
- 312. *Abydand*] And abaid EH.
- 315. *Cunȝe*] coynȝe E ; cunyie H.
- 316. *ane*] A EH.
- 318. *Than*] And. *with*] and.

The English flee,  
and are nearly  
all slain.

A remnant  
escape, and tell  
how Douglas  
welcomed them.

Cum apon thame sa suddanly,  
Thai war abaysit richt gretumly,  
And gaf the bak but mair abaid.

The scottis men emang thame raid,  
And slew all thaim thai mycht ourta ;  
Añe gret martirdome thair can thai ma.

And thai that eschapit vnslayne  
Ar till thar gret host went agañe,  
And tald thaſe quhat kyn velcummyng  
Dowglas thaim maid at thair metyng,  
Convoyand thame agane roydly,  
And varnyt thame the playn herbery.

324

328

332

How the gud king robert the bruce followit the king  
eduard of Ingland south in his awn land.

The English are  
much grieved,

and encamp  
near Dryburgh ;  
and soon after  
return home.

**T**He king of Ingland and his men,  
That saw thair herbrouis then  
Cum reboytit on that maneir,  
Anoyit gretly in hert thai weir,  
And thought that it war gret foly  
In-to the wode till tak herbery.  
Tharfor by drburgh, in the playne,  
Thai herbryit thame ; and syne agañe  
Ar went till Ingland haym thar vay.  
And quhen the king robert herd say

336

340

322. *richt*] EH *om.**Rubric in H*—Here followed King Robert in hight, The English King with all his might.323. *gaf*] E *om.*334. *herbreouris*] harbreours come H.325. *thaim thai*] thaim at thai C ;335. *Cum*] H *om.*; see last line.  
*reboytit*] rebutyt E ; Rebuted H.

but them they H ; that thai E.

336. *gretly—hert*] in thair hart E ;  
in their hearts H.326. *Añe*] A E ; And H. *thai*] H *om.*338. *In-to*] In-till. *till*] to EH.327. *eschapit*] scaped were H.339. *the*] a H.328. *Ar*] And H. *gret—went*]341. *haym*] E *om.* *haym—vay*]

Oast went hame H.

329. *kyn*] good H.330. *metyng*] comming H.331. *Convoyand*] That convoyit.342. *roydly*] rudly E ; rudely H.332. *varnyt—playn*] warnyt planly.

but delay H.

That thai war turnyt hame agane,  
 And how thair herbreouriſ var slane,  
 In hy his host assemblit he,  
 And went south our the scottis se,  
 And till Ingland his way he tais.  
 Quhen his host all assemblit was,  
 Auchty thousand he wes and ma ;  
 And aucht battellis he maid of tha ;  
 In ilk battell wes ten thousand.

344

[Fol. 142 b. C.]

Syne went he furth on to Ingland,  
 And in hale rout followit sa fast  
 The yngliſ king, quhill at the last  
 He com approchand to byland,  
 Quhar, at that tyme, thar ves liand  
 The king of Ingland with his men.  
 Kyng robert, that had wittering then  
 That he lay thair, with mekill mycht,  
 Tranontit swa on hym añe nycht,  
 That, be the morne that it wes day,  
 Cummyn in-till playn feld war thai,  
 Fra biland bot añe litill space.  
 Bot betuix [thaim] and It thar waſ  
 Añe craggy bra, strekit weill lang,  
 And a gret peth wp for to gang.  
 Othirwayis mycht thai nocht avay  
 Till paſ till bilandis abbay,  
 Bot gif thai passit fer about.  
 And quhen the mekill Inglif rout

348

King Robert,  
with 80,000 men,  
in 8 battalions,

352

pursues the  
English,and finds them  
at Byland.

356

360

But between the  
Scotch and  
Byland there is a  
steep hill.

364

368

[Fol. 62 b. E.]

346. *south*] foorth H.  
 347, 348. H omits. *way he*] ways.  
*all*] E om.  
 351. *wes*] war.  
 352. *on to*] till E ; to H.  
 353. *in*] in-till.  
 355. *to*] by H.  
 356. *ves*] wes.  
 358. *wittering*] witting H.  
 360. *Tranontit*] Tranounty E ;  
 Tranoynted H. *ane*] A E ; ane H.  
 362. *in-till*] in A E ; to the H.  
 363. *ane*] A EH.  
 364. [thaim E] them H ; him C.  
 365. *Ane*] A EH.  
 366. *peth*] so CE ; Path H.  
 367. *aray*] away E ; haue way H.  
 368. *Till*] To EH (twice).  
 370. *And*] But.

When the English  
find that the  
Scotch are so  
near, they occupy  
the hill,  
  
and prepare to  
defend it.

Herd at king [robert] wes so neir,	
The mast part of thame that thar weir	372
Went to the path and tuk the bra,	
Thair thought thai thair defens to ma.	
Thair baneris thair thai gert display,	376
And thair battellis on breid aray,	
And thought weill to defend the place.	
Quhen king robert persauit [has],	
That thai thame thought thair to defend,	
Eftir his consell haſ he send,	380
And askit quhat wes best till do.	
The lord dowglaſ ansuerd thar-to,	
And said, "schir, I will vndir-ta	
That in schort tymē I sall do swa,	384
That I sall vyn ȝon place planly,	
Or than ger all ȝon Cumpany	
Cum douñ till ȝow heir in this plañe."	
The king than said till him agane,	
"Do than," he said, "and god the speid!"	388
Than he furth on his wayis ȝeid,	
And of the host the mast party	
Put thame in-till his Cumpany,	
And held thar vay toward the plas.	392
The gud Erl of murreff, thomas,	
Left his battell, and in gret hy,	

371. *at*] that EH. *king*] the king  
CH; but E omits the. [robert EH]  
C om. *so*] sa E; H om. *neir*] ner  
E; neere H.

372. *thar weir*] thar wer E; were there H.

373 math] path

373. *pain*] petn.

375. *Thair*] There H: The E-

376. *breid*] braid.

377. *place*] *so* CE; pass E.

378. [has E] hes H; wass C.

379. *thame—thair*] thought than  
thaim E; them thought for H.

381. *till*] to EH; and in l. 387.

385 *run*] wvD EH.

387. *heir in*] her to E : into H.

388. *than said*] said than. H  
has—Or ye sall neuer trow me  
againe.

389. *Do-and*] Do than quhar mychty E ; The King then said, great H

391 *partu] hardy*

393. *vay*] way EH. *plass*] place  
H: pass E: and in l. 398.

394. *gud*] H om. *thomass*] *schir*  
*thomass* C; Sir Thomas H; but E  
omits *schir*, and H omits *gud*.

- |   |     |  |
|---|-----|--|
| Bot with thre men in Cumpany,<br>Com till the lordis rout of dowglaſ ;<br>And, or he enterit in the plas,<br>Befor thame all the place tuk he,<br>For he vald that men suld him se.<br>And quhen schir Iames of dowglaſ<br>Saw that he swagat cummyn waſ,<br>He prisis him thar-of gretly,<br>And velcummyt hym full humylly,<br>And syne the place can sammyn ta.<br>Quhen Inglis men saw thaim do swa,<br>Thai lichtit and agane thame ȝeid.<br>Twa knychtis, that douchty war of deid,<br>Thomas arthyn añe hat to name,<br>The tothir schif rauf of [cobhame],<br>Com doune befor all thair menȝe,<br>Thai war bath of full gret bounte,<br>And met thair fais richt manly ;<br>Bot thai war presit gretumly.<br>Thair mycht men se men weill assale,<br>And men defend with stout battale,<br>And arrowes fle in gret foysouñe,<br>And thai that owth war twmmyl douñe<br>Stanis apon thame fra the hicht. | 396 | with 3 men only,   |
|   | 400 | hurries up the<br>hill before all<br>the rest.   |
|   | 404 | Douglas praises<br>him greatly,  |
|   | 408 | Two English<br>knights, Sir<br>Thomas Arthin<br>and Sir Ralph<br>Cobham,<br>advance to attack<br>the Scotch. |
|   | 412 |  |
|   | 416 | A fierce fight<br>ensues.  |

396. *thre*] four E; few H. *in*] of his.

397. *till—of*] to the Court of the Lord H.

399. *place*] *so* CH; pass E; and  
in ll. 400, 405.

400. *vald*] wald.

403. *prisit*] praised H.

404. *full humyly*] hamlyly E;  
honorable H.

405. *syne*] to H. *can*] so CH;  
thai E. *sammyn ta*] togidder ga H.

408. *that—war*] *rycht douchty.*

409. *arthyn*] ouchtre E; of Struthers H. *ane hat*] heght ane H;

ane had E.

410. *rauf*] rawf E; Ralph H.  
[*cobhame* E] coubane C; Cowbane  
H; but note the rime.

*After l. 410 H inserts—Thir twa  
Knights of good degree; and omits l.  
414.*

413. *richt manly*] manly E;

right manfullie H.  
414. H omits. presit] pressyt rycht.

415. men (2)] ryght E. men weill] well other H.

417. *arrowes*] harnys E; but H as  
C. *fle* fley.

418. *owth*] owe E; abone H.  
*tummul*] tumbill E; tumbled H.

W. H. G. [unclear] 1888, Cambridge, Mass.

The Scotch put Sir Ralph Cobham to flight,	Bot thai that set bath will and mycht To vyn the peth, thame pressit swa, That schir raulf [of cobhame] can ta The way richt till his host in hy, And left schir thomas manfully	420
and take Sir Thomas,	Defendand with gret mycht the plas, Quhill that he swa supprisit waſ That he wes tane throu herd fechting ; And tharfor syne, quhill his ending,	424
who was ever afterwards held to be the best of English knights,	He ves renownnyt for best of hand Of a knyght, wes in all Ingland For this ilk [schyr] raulf of [cobhame]	428
since he surpassed Cobham.	In all Ingland he had the naſe For the best knyght of all that land ; And for schir thomas duelt fechtand	432
[Fol. 143 b. C.]	Quhar schir raulf, as befor saide we, With-drew him, prisit our hym wes he.	436

When Sir Robert  
saw his men  
assail the hill so  
boldly,

**T**Hus war thai fechtande in the plas ;  
And quhen the king robert, that waſ  
Wiſ in his deid and ek verty,  
Saw his men ay swa douchtely

440

The peth apon thair fayis ta,  
And saw his fais defend thame swa,  
Than gert he all the erischry  
That war in-till his Cumpany,

444

421. *ryn*] wyn EH.422. *raulf*] rauff E; Ralph H.  
[of cobhame E] Cowbane H; cou-  
bane C. *can*] gan.423. *richt*] wp. *host*] Oast H;  
horſſ E.424. *manfully*] manlily.425. *plass*] place H; pass E.428. *quhill*] while H; in E.430. *wes in*] off.431. [schyr E] Sir H; C om.  
*raulf*] Rawf E; Ralph H. [cob-  
hame E] Cowbane H; coubane C.432. *In*] In-till. *the*] E om.433. *we*] so CH; I E.436. *he*] so CH; hely E (*wrongly*).437. *Rubric* in II—The discomfit-  
ing of Englishmen At Bylands Path  
into the Glen. *plass*] place H; pass  
E.439. *ek verty*] auerty E; eke  
worthie H.440. *ay swa*] sa rycht.441. *peth*] so CEH.443. *erischry*] Irschery E; Irishry  
H.

Of Argyle and the Ilis alsua,  
 Spede thame in hy on-to the bra.  
 He bad thañe leiff the peth haly,  
 And clym vp in the Craggis by,  
 And speid thame fast, the hicht to ta ;  
 And thai in gret hy haſ done swa,  
 [And (clamb) allgait wp to the hycht,  
 And (left) nocht for thair fayis mycht.  
 Magre thair fayis, thai bar thaim swa  
 That thai ar gottyn aboun the bra.]  
 Than men mycht se thame ficht felly,  
 And rusche thair fais sturdely.  
 And thai that till the paſ war gañe,  
 Magre thair fais, the hycht haſ tañe.  
 Than layd thai on with all thar mycht ;  
 Thair mycht men se men felly ficht.  
 Ther wes aňe pereluf Bargañe :  
 For a knyght, hat schir Iohñe bretaňe,  
 That lichtit wes abovyn the bra,  
 With his men gret defens can ma ;  
 And scottis men sa can assaill,  
 That gaf thame so fellowuňe battale,  
 That thai war set in sic affray  
 That thai, that fle mycht, fled avay.  
 Schir Iohñe of bretane thar wes tane,

he sends the  
men of Argyle  
to help them,

448 telling them to  
climb up the side  
of the hill.

452 They do so, and  
gain the summit.

456

There is again a  
fierce struggle.

460

Sir John Breton  
defends the hill  
bravely,

464

[Fol. 63. E.]

468

but is at last  
taken,

446. *hy on-to*] hy vnto H; gret hy to E.

right sturdely H.

457—460. H omits.

460. *men* (2)] thaim.

461. *ane*] A E; a right H.

462. *hat*] heght H; E om. *bret-*

*tane*] the bretane E; of Brittaine H.

463. *wes*] hes H. *abovyn*] aboune

E; abone H.

464. *With*] And. *can*] gan.

465. *And*] Bot the H. *sa can*] sua gan E; can sa H.

466. *That*] And EH. *thame*] to thame CH; but E omits to, and H has feill for fellowune.

468. *fle mycht*] mycht fley.

469. *of*] the.

451—454. C omits. From E; found also in H.

451. [*clamb*] clambe H; clymb E.

*allgait*] as Gaittes H.

452. [*left* H] leve E.

455. Then faught they wonder fel-

lounly H.

456. *rusche*] rushed H. *sturdely*]

And richt feill of hir folk war slane.

together with two  
French knights.

472. Of frans<sup>3</sup> thar tane ves knychtis twa ;

The lord of souly wes a<sup>n</sup>e of tha,

The tothir wes the marschall breta<sup>n</sup>e,

That wes [a weill] gret lord at hame.

The laiff sum deid, and sum war ta<sup>n</sup>e ;

The remanand thai fled ilka<sup>n</sup>e.

476

The king of  
England, seeing  
his men thus  
beaten, flees  
southwards.

And quhen the king of yngland,

That zeit at biland wes liand,

Saw his men discumfyt planly,

He tuk his way in full gret hy,

480

And southwardis fled with all his mycht.

The scottis men chast hym herd, I hicht,

And in the chaf<sup>3</sup> ha<sup>n</sup> mony tane.

The king quytly avay is gane,

484

And the mast part of his men<sup>3</sup>he.

[Fol. 144. C.]  
Walter Stewart,

Valter steward, [that] gret bounte

Set ay on hye cheuelry,

with 500 men,

With v hundredth in Cumpany

488

chases the  
English to the  
gates of York.

Till 3ork<sup>3</sup>s 3ettis chaf<sup>3</sup> can ma,

And thair sum of thair men can sla,

And abaid thair quhill neir the nycht,

Till se gif ony vald ysche to ficht.

492

And quhen he saw nane vald cum out,

He turntyt agane with all his rout,

470. And maist part of his Menyie  
slaine H.

482. *chast*—I] chassyt fast Ic.

471. *tane ves*] tane wes E; were  
tane H.

483. *tane*] slaine H.

472. *of souly*] of Sowllie H; the  
sule E.

484. *quytly*] quickly or quitylly E;  
quickly H.

473. *tothir*] other H.

486. *Valter steward*] Walter  
Stewart H; Stewart waltir E. [that  
E] of CH.

474. [a weill E] a right H; ane  
C.

487. *on hye*] on hey E; upon hie  
H.

475. *deid—war*] ded war and sum  
EH.

488. *hundreth*] hundir.

476. And the remanand fled ilkane  
E; The remnand fled were euerilkane  
H.

489. *chass*] the chass E; a chase  
H. *can*] gan. *ma EH*] may C.

481. *southwardis*] Southward H;  
furthwart E.

490. *can*] gan. *sla EH*] slay C.

492. *Till*] To EH. *vald*] wald;  
and in I. 493.

493. *cum*] ishe H.

And till the host is went in hy,  
 That than tane had thair herbery  
 In-till the abbay of Biland,  
 And riweus that wes by neir hand.  
 Thai delt emang thame that war ther  
 The king of Inglandis ger,  
 That he had levit in-to biland ;  
 All gert thai lepe out our thar hand,  
 And maid thame all glaid and ek mery.  
 And quhen the king had tane herbery,  
 Thai brought till him the prisoneris  
 All vnarmyt, as it efferis ;  
 And quhen he saw Iohñe of Bretañe,  
 He had at hym richt gret disdeyne ;  
 For he wount wes till spek hely  
 At hayñe, and our dispitfully ;  
 And bad haf him avay in hy,  
 And luk he kepit war stratly,  
 And said, “war it noct [that] he war  
 Sic a catiff, he sulde by sair  
 His wourdis that war sa angry ;”  
 And mekly he hym cryit mercy.  
 Thei led him furth, forouten mair,  
 And kepit hym weill, ay quhill thai war

He then returns  
to the main host,  
496  
who are at Byland  
and Rievaulx.

500

504 When the  
prisoners are  
brought before  
king Robert,

508 he is much  
displeased with  
Sir John Breton,  
on account of his  
spiteful speeches ;

512

516

who is therefore  
closely guarded,

495. *the—is]* his ost he E; the Oast they H.

496. *than]* miswritten thane C. *than—had]* tane had than E; then had tane H.

498. *riweus]* ryfuowis E; Rewes H. *wes]* were (!) H. *by—hand]* neere by lyand H.

499. *emang]* amang.

500. *The]* And gaue the H; *but* Inglandis has four syllables.

501. *in—to]* in.

502. *gert—our]* gripped they into H.

503. *all]* H om. *ek]* E om.

508. *disdeyne]* disdaine H; en-

gaigne E.

509. *till]* to E. *wount—till]* of him wald H. *hely]* hychtly.

510. *our]* too H. *dispitfully]* disputously.

511. *And]* He H. *avay]* away EH.

513. [that EH] *thar* C.

514. *catiff]* catyve. A Captive, as he then was there H.

515. *wourdis]* wordys. His words he sould full deare aby H.

516. *mekly — cryit]* he humbly cryit him E; he full fast can cry H.

518. *weill]* H om. *ay]* EH om.

Cummyn haīne to thair awīe Cuntre.  
 till ransomed for 520  
 20,000 pounds.

Lang eftir syne ransomyt wes he  
 For tuenty thousand pund to pay,  
 As I haf herd mony men say.

Then the two  
 French knights  
 come before the  
 king.

[Fol. 144 b. c.]

He addresses  
 them courteously.

They thank him.

At last he sends  
 them to France  
 without ransom.

**Q** when that the king this spek had maid,  
 The franche knychtis, that tane men had, 524  
 Wes brought richt thar byfor the king ;  
 And he maid thame fair velcummyng,  
 And said, “I wat richt weill that ȝhe,  
 For ȝour gret worship and bounte 528  
 Com for till se the fichting heir.  
 For, sen ȝe in the Cuntry war,  
 ȝour strinth, ȝour vorschip, and ȝour mycht  
 Vald nocht thoill ȝow escheve the ficht ; 532  
 And sen that cauȝ ȝow led thar-till,  
 And nouthir wreth na euill will,  
 As frendis ȝhe sall resauit be,  
 Quhar velcum heir all tym ȝe be.” 536  
 Thai knelit and thankit hym gretly  
 Of the grace he thame did suthly, }  
 And he gert tret thaīne curtasly ; 537\*  
 [And lang quhill with him thaim had he,  
 And did thaim honour and bounte. 538  
 And quhen thai ȝarnyt to thair land,  
 To the king of Fraunce in presand  
 He sent thaim quit, but ransoun fre,

519. *to]* till.

522. *I]* Ik. *mony]* so H; syndry

E.

524. *franche]* frankys E; French H. *that-men]* men takyn E; they taken H.

525. *W'es]* War E; Were H.

526. *velcummyng]* welcuming.

529. *till]* to EH.

532. *thoill]* thole H; lat E. *escheve]* eschew EH.

534. *wreth]* wreyth E; wrath H.

*euill]* ȝeit euill C; Iwill E; yet ill H.

536. *velcum—tym]* all tyme welcum her E; And welcome be all time to me H. *ȝe be]* be ȝe.

537\*. *In C only.*

539—546. *From E; also in H;* in place of these 8 lines, C has but one—Frendis he coude resaif hamely.

539. *And]* A H. *had]* held H.

542. *To]* Vnto H.

And gret gyftis to thaim gaff he.	544	
His frendis thusgat curtasly		
He couth ressawe, and hamely,]		
And his fais stoutly [to]-stonay.		
At biland all that nyght he lay.	548	
For thair victor all blith thai war ;		
And on the morn, forouten mair,		
Thai haiff furthwarde tane thair vay.		
So fer at that tyme travalit thai	552	
Byrmand, slayand, and distroyand,		
Thair fayis, vith thair mycht, noyand,		
Quhill to the wald cummyn war thai.		
Syne northwarde tuk thai haſe thar way,	556	Then they return home, destroying the vale of Beauvoir (?) as they go.
And distroyit, in thair repair,		
The vale haly of beauvare.		
And syne with prisoners and catele,		
Richeſt, and mony fair Iowele,	560	
Till scotland tuk thai haſe thar way,		
Blith and glad, Ioyfull and gay.		
And ilk man went to thair repair,		
And lovit god thame fell so fair,	564	They praise God for their success.
That thai the king of Ingland		
Throu vorschip and throu strinth of hand,		
And throu thair lordis gret bounte,		
Discumfit in his awne Cuntry.	568	

544. *gret gyftis*] gifts great H.546. *hamely*] right humbly H.547. *to-stonay*] certainly the right reading; miswritten till stonay C (by usual change of till for to); astoney H; stonay E.549. *victor*] wictour E; victorie H.550. *forouten*] withouten H.551. *furthwarde*] forthwart E; Southwards H.554. *with*] with all.555. *to*] till. *wald*] so CE; wall H.556. *northwarde*] northwart. Syne North againe they tooke the way H.557. *distroyit*] syne hameward H.

558. The wale all planly of Beauwar E; They destroyed haill the wall of Bewar H.

561. *Till*] To EH.562. *Blith*] Bath blyth. *glad—gay*] ioyfull of their Pray H.563. *thair*] his H.

564. Thanking great God of their welfare H.

566. *vorschip*] worship.567. *lordis*] Kings H.568. *Discumfit*] Discomfist had H.

## [BOOK XIX.]

How the lord sowlis thought throu tressoun with his  
complisis till haf put doun gud king robert the  
bruce & how he wes varnit be a lady.

A short peace.

**T**Hus wes the land a quhile in peſ;

Bot covatis, that can nocht ceſ

Till set men apon felony,

Till ger thame Cum till senzory,

4

Gert lordis of full gret renoune

Mak a fell coniuracioune

Agane robert, the douchty king ;

Thai thought till bring him till ending,

8

And for till bruke, eftir his dede,

The kynrik, and [ryng] in his sted.

[Fol. 63 b. E.]

The lord of Sowlis, schir vilȝamē,

The lord de Soulis  
was the chief of  
them,

12

Of that purchaſ had mast defame ;

For principall tharoff wes he

Bath of assent and cruelte.

He had gert be with him syndri,

Gilbert mayle-Erll, Iohn of logy,

16

Thir war the knychtis I tell of heir,

And richard brouñe alþ, a squyeir ;

RUBRIC. *haf*] miswritten hap.

1. *Thus*] Than.

3, 4. *Till*] To EH.

9. *for till*] for to H; to E.

10. [ryng] liff C; to ryng E;

Reigne H.

11. *Rubric in H*—Of the great  
Treasoun the ordaining, To Robert  
the Brvce the noble King.

11. *of Sowlis*] the soullis E; Sowles

H.

14. *Bath*] E om. and] of that.

15. *gert be*] gottyn.

16. *mayle-Erll*] male-herbe E;

Malyerd H.

17. *the*] EH om. I—of] that I

tell.

And gud <i>schir</i> dauid the brechyñe		and Sir David Brechin was implicated in it.
Wes of this deid arettit syne,	20	
As I sall tell ȝow forthirmair.		
Bot thai ilkañe discouerit var		They were found out by means of a lady,
Throu añe lady, as I herd say,	24	
Or till thair purpoȝ cum mycht thai.		
For scho tald haly to the king		who told the king.
Thair purpoȝ and thair ordanyng,		
And how that he suld haf beyn ded,	28	
And sowlis ryng in-till his sted ;		
And tald him werray takynnyng		
That this purches wes suthfast thing.		
And quhen the king wist it wes swa,	32	The king seizes them.
Sa sutell purchas can he ma,		
That he gert tak thame euirilkañe.		
And quhar the lord sowlis ves tañe,		De Soulis has 369 squires in his livery.
Thre hundredreth and sexte had he		
Of squyeris, cled in his liverye,	36	
At that tyme in his Cumpany,		
Outane knyghtis that var Ioly.		
In-to berwik than takyn ves he ;		He was taken at Berwick.
Than mycht men all his menȝe se	40	
Sary and wa ; for, suth to say,		
The king leit thame all paȝ thar vay,		
And held thame that he takyn had.		
The lord sowlis syne eftir maid	44	De Soulis confesses all,
Playn granting of [all] that purchas.		

19. *the]* off.20. *arettit]* arrested H.22. *var]* war.23. *ane]* A EH.24. *Or]* Ere H.25. *haly]* hailly H ; all E.28. *ryng]* Ring H.29. *werray]* so CE ; very H.30. *That]* E om. *purchess]* purchase H.32. *can]* gan. *ma]* ta H.34. *ves]* was.35. *hundreth]* hundir.38. *var]* war.39. *than]* EH om. *ves]* wes.40. *Than]* That.41. *for]* bot E ; the H.42. *thar vay]* thair way E ; away H.43. *that]* at EH.44. *syne]* sone E ; then H.45. *all that]* so E ; that haill H ; that C.

A parliament tharfor set tharfor vaſ ;  
And thiddir broughth thir menze war.

The lord sowlis haſ grantit thar

in open parlia-  
ment,  
and is imprisoned  
in Dumbarton  
Castle,

where he dies.

[Fol. 145 b. C.] Schir gilbert male-erll, and logy,  
And richard brouñe, thir thre planly,  
War with ane assisſ thar ourtane.

Three others were  
beheaded.

Sir David Brechin  
is tried.

He confesses that  
he knew of the  
plot,

but did not  
consent to it.

He is condemned  
to be hung.

The deid in-to plane parliament ;  
Thar soyn eftir he wes sent  
Till his penans till dumbertañe,  
And deit in that tour of stañe.

52  
56  
58  
60  
64  
68

Tharfor thai drawin war ilkañe,  
And hyngit and hedit alſ thar-to,  
As men had demyt thame till do.

And gud schir dauid the brechyñe  
Thai gert challanſ richt stratly syňe ;  
And he grantit, that of that thing  
Ves maid till hym discoueryng,  
Bot he thar-till gaf na consent.  
And for he helit thair entent,  
And discouerit [It] nocht to the king,  
That he held of all his halding,  
And had maid till him [his] fewte,  
Iugit to hang and draw wes he.

And as thai drew him for to hyng,  
The pepill ferly fast can thring

46. *tharfor set*] set tharfor. *thar*] *H om.*, *vass*] was.

47. *thiddir brought*] broughth thid-  
*dir.* *thir*] this E ; that H.

48. *sowlis*] the sowlis E ; Sowles  
*H.* *thar*] so EH ; miswritten war  
(copied from l. 47) C.

51. *Till*] To H. *penans*] paines H.  
*till*] to E ; in H.

52. *in that*] thar in a.

53. *male-erll*] maleherbe E ; Maly-  
erd H.

55. *ane assiss*] a-syss E ; assise H.  
*thar*] than.

57. *hyngit*] hangyt. *alſſ*] E om.

58. *demyt*] dempt E ; damned H.  
*had—thame*] them damned had H.  
*till*] for to E ; to H.

59. *dauid the*] dawy off.

60. *challanſ*] chalance E ; chal-  
lenge H.

62. *Ves*] Was H ; Wes wele E.

64. *And*] Bot H.

65. [It EH] C om.

66. *That—of*] Whome of he held  
H.

67. *had*] E om. [his E] CH om.

68. *to*] till.

70. *can*] gan.

Him and his myscheiff [for] to se, That to behald was gret pite.	72	
Schir Ingerame vmpgravell, that than Wes with the king [as] scottis man, Quhen he that gret mischeif can se, “Lordis,” he said, “quhar-to press ȝe To se at myscheiff sic a knycht, That wes so worthy and so wicht, That I haf seyn ma preþ to se Him for his richt souerane bounte	80	Sir Ingraham Umphraville, seeing him drawn to execution, expresses his great regret.
Than now dois for till se him heir?”		
And quhen thir vordis spoken weir, With sary cheir he held him still, Quhill men had doñe of him thar vill. Syne, with the leiff of the king, He brought him menskfully till erding. And syne to the king thus said he, “A thing, pray I ȝow, grant to me ; That is, that ȝe of all my land, That in-to scotland is lyand, Wald gif me leiff till do my will.”	84	After the execution, he buries the body honourably.
The king than soyne haþ said him till,	88	He asks the king to let him dispose of his lands in Scotland.
“I will weill graunt that it swa be ; Bot tell me, quhat anoyis the ?”		
He said agañe, “grant [me] mercy, And I sall tell ȝow it planly.	92	[Fol. 146. C.]
Myne hert giffis me no mor to be With ȝow duelland in this Cuntry.	96	He says he has no heart to remain in Scotland.

71. [for EH] C om.

73. *vmpgravell*] the umfraweill E; Vmfraule H.

74. [as E] a CH.

75. *can*] gan E; did H.76. *Lordis—said*] He said lord-ingis EH.79. *I*. *ma*] so EH; may C.81. *till*] to EH; and in ll. 91, 108, 112.85. *Syne*] And syne.86. *menskfully*] so CH; menskly E.87. *thus*] EH om.88. *pray I*] I pray EH. *to*] E om.90. *into—is*] is in-till scotland E; is into Scotland H.92. *hass*] hes H; had E.94. *anoyis*] annoyes H; amowis E.95. *grant me H*] schyr graunt E; grant C.

	Tharfor, bot at it nocht ȝow greif,	
	I pray ȝow hertly of ȝour leiff.	100
	For quhar sa richt worthy a knycht,	
	And sa cheuelrus and sa wicht,	
	And sa renounit of vorschip syne	
For, since Sir David Brechin was hung,	As gud schir dauid the brechyne,	104
	And sa fulfillit of all manheid,	
	Wes put to sa fellowyne a ded,	
He cannot remain in Scotland longer.	My hert forsuth may nocht gif me	
	Till duell, for na thing that may be."	108
The king grants him all his request.	The king syne said, "sen thou will swa, Quhen-euir thou likis, thou may ga ; And thou sall haf gude leiff thar-to Thi liking of thi land till do."	
He thanks him, and disposes of his lands.	And he him thankit gretumly, And of his land in full gret hy As him thought best, disponit he. Syne at the king of gret bounte,	112
He takes his leave.	Befor all thai that with him war, He tuk his leyff for euirmair ; And vent in Ingland to the king, That maid him richt fair velcummyng,	116
[Fol. 64. E.]	And askit him of the north tithing. And he him tald all, but lesing, How thai knychtis distroyit war, And all, as I tald [till] ȝow air,	120
King Edward receives him graciously.	And of the kyngis Curtasye, That levit him debonarly Till do of his land his liking. In that tyme war send fra the king	124
		128

99. *bot at*] bot that E; that H.  
 101. *richt*] Noble and H.  
 103. *vorschip*] worschip EH; hye  
     vorschip C.  
 104. *the*] off.  
 106. *fellowne*] welanys E; villanous H.  
 109. *syne—sen*] said sen that EH.
110. *thou likis*] the likys E; ye  
     will H.   *thou* (2)] ye H.  
 119. *vent*] went EH.  
 120, 121. H omits.  
 124. *all*] E om.   *[till E]* CH om.  
 126. *lerit*] lewyd.  
 127. *Till*] To EH.   *of*] with H.  
 128. *war*] wes.

Of scotland messingeris to tret  
Of peſ, gif that thai mycht it get,  
As thai oftsiſ befor war send,  
Quhar that thai couth noct̄ bring till end.

Messengers come  
from king Robert  
to the English  
court,  
to treat of peace.

132

For the gud king had in entent,  
Sen god sa fair grace till him sent,  
That he had wonnyn all his land  
Throu strinth of Armys till his hand,  
That he peſ in his land wald ma,  
And all the landis stabill swa,  
That his air eftir hym suld be  
In peiſ, gif men held thair laute.

[Fol. 146 b. C.]

136

King Robert is  
desirous that his  
successor should  
enjoy peace.

**I**N this tyme now that vmpfrevele,  
As I bair ȝow on hand eir-quhil,  
Com till the king of Ingland,  
The scottis messingeres thaſ he fand  
Of peſ and rest to haf tretiſ.

144 These messengers  
arrive.

The kyng wist schir yngerame veſ viſ,  
And askit his consell thair-to,  
Quhat he wald rede him for till do.  
“For him,” said he, “thought herd to ma  
Peſ wyth kyng robert bruce his fa,  
Quhill that he of hym vengit war.”

King Edward  
asks Umphra-  
ville’s advice,

148

not wishing for  
peace.

Schir Ingerame till hym maid ansuar,  
And said, “he delt sa Curtasly  
With me, that on na viſ suld I

152 Umphraville says  
he will give no  
counsel against  
Bruce.

129. *to EH*] for to C.

131. *oftsiſ beſor*] beſor oft-syſſ.

132. *Quhar that*] How that E;  
Suppose H. *till*] it to H.

134. *sa fair*] sik H. *till—ſent*]  
to him had ſent H; had him lent  
E.

137. *land*] so CH; tyme E (*per-*  
*haps better*).

138. *the*] E om. *landis stabill*]  
land eſtabliſt H.

140. *thair*] E om.

141. *In*] In-till. *now that*] that the  
H; that E. *vmpfrevele*] umfrawill  
E; Vmfraile H.

146. *yngerame*] Ingrahame E; In-  
grame H. *vess viſſ*] wes wiss.

147. *his*] E om.

148. *till*] to EH.

149. *him—he*] he ſaid him. *herd*]  
hard. *him—herd*] he ſaid, he was  
laith H.

152. *till—maid*] maid till him.

Being further urged, he says that the Scotch are now so hardy in war that they cannot be beaten.

- Giff consell till his merring." 155.
- "The behufis neid-way," said the king, 156
- "To this thing heir say thine avis."
- "Schir," said he, "sen ȝour willis is That I say, wit ȝhe sekirly,
- For all ȝour gret cheuelry, 160
- Till deill with hym ȝhe haf no mycht.
- His men ar worthyn all sa wicht
- For lang vsage of gret fechting,
- That has beyne norist in sic thing, 164
- That ilk ȝeman is sa wicht
- Of his, that he is worth a knycht.
- Bot and ȝhe think ȝour weir to bring
- Till your purpoȝ and gud liking, 168
- Lang trewis with hym tak sall ȝe.
- Than sall the mast of his menȝhe,
- That ar bot sympill ȝhemanyr,
- Be distrenȝeit all comonly 172
- To wyn thair met with thair travale.
- And sum of thame neid mon thame call
- With plewch and harrow for to get,
- And othir ser craftis, thair met, 176
- Swa that thai armynge sall worth ald,
- And sall be rottyn, dystroyit, or sald ;
- And feill, that now of weir ar sle,

[Fol. 147. C.]

and meanwhile the Scotch would become less warlike.

155. *merring*] nethring E; hurt-  
ing H.

156. *The—neidway*] The behowis nedwayis E; Thou behooues need-  
wise H.

158. *willis*] so CE; will it H.

161. *Till*] To EH. *hym*] them H.

162. *ar—sa*] all worthyn ar sa E;  
sa worthie are and H.

163. *gret*] EH om.

164. *has beyne*] has bene E; haue  
bene H.

165. *ȝeman*] ȝowman E; Yeman  
H.

167. *and*] gif H.

168. *Till*] To EH. *your*] good H.  
*and gud*] and ȝour E; at your H.

169. *sall*] EH om.

172. *distrenȝeit*] dystroyit E; dys-  
troynit P; strenyed H. *all comonly*]  
commonaly.

174. *neid—call*] of need mon call  
H; nedis but faill E.

176. *ser—thair*] Crafts their dayly  
H.

178. *sall*] H om. *rottyn*] rousted  
H. *dystroyit*] stroyit, *or*] and EH.  
Here follows the catchword—

And fele that now of ver are sle.

In-till a lang trewis sall de,	180	
And othir in thair sted sall riſ		
That sall cwn litill of sic maſtriſ.		
And quhen thai thus [diswsyt] ar,		And then, when they are grown
Than may ȝhe move on thame ȝour wer,		184 unused to war,
* And sall richt weill, as I supposſ,		185* the English can attack them better.
*Bryng ȝour entent till gud purpoſ."		186*
Till this assentit thai ilkane ;	185	
And eftir syne war trewis tañe		A truce for 13 years is agreed upon.
Betuix the twa kyngis, that wer		
Talit to [lest] for thretten ȝheir,	188	
And on the marchis gert thame cry.		
The Scottis men kepit thame lely ;		
Bot ynglis̄ men apon the se		
Distroyit, throu gret Iniquite,		192 But the English did not keep to it, but destroyed the Scottish ships.
Marchand-schippis that saland war		
Fra scotland to flandriſ with war,		
And distroyit the men ilkane,		
And till thar oyſ thar gude haſt tañe.	196	
The king send oft till ask redreſ,		Bruce demands redress, but none is given.
Bot nocht thar-of redreſ ther wes ;		
And he abaid all tyme askand.		
The trevis on his half gert he stand	200	
Apon the marchis stabilly,		
And gert men kep thame lelely.		

180. *a]* the E; tha H. *trewis]*  
trewes H; trew E.

182. *cwn]* conn E; ken H. *sic]*  
that.

183. *thus]* E om. [diswsyt E]  
diffused (*for disused*) H; deuisit (!)  
C.

185\*, 186\*. *Found in EJ; but omit-*  
*ted in P.* H also omits these lines.  
*till]* to.

185. *Till]* To EH.

186. *syne]* sone.

187. E wrongly inserts Butwer be-  
fore Betuix. *the]* E om.

188. *Talit]* Tailȝet E; Taken H.  
[lest E] last H; rest C; see l. 204.  
*thretten]* thretteene H; viij (*for xiij*)  
E; see l. 229.

190. *lely]* lelely.

191. *Bot]* Bot the.

192. *Iniquite]* crueltie H.

194. *to]* till. *war]* waire H.

195. *the—ilkane]* euirilkane.

196. *till]* to EH. *thar (2)]* the

EH. *gude]* goods H.

198. *thar—ther]* off It redressyt.

200. *trewis]* trewes H; trew E.

## The ded of gud schir valter steward.

While this truce lasted	<b>I</b> N this tyme that the trevis war Lestand on marchis, as I said ar,	204
Walter Stewart falls ill.	Walter steward, that worthy was, At bathket a gret seknes tais.	
His sickness is incurable,	His euill it wox ay mair and mair, Quhill men persauit by his fair	208
and he dies.	That hym worthit neyd to pay the det That na man for till pay may let. Schrevyn, and als repentand wele, Quhen all wes done him ilke dele	212
He is greatly lamented.	That nedit cristin man till haf, As gud cristyn the gast he gaf. Than mycht men heir folk gret and cry, And mony a knyght and ek lady	216
[Fol. 147 b. C.]	Mak in [apert] richt euill cher ; Sa did thai all that euir thair wer. All men hym menynt comonly ; For of his elde he wes worthy.	220
He is interred at Paisley with great honour.	Quhen thai lang tyme than dule had maid, The cors to paslay haf thai had, And than, with gret solempnite And with gret dule, entryrit wes he.	224
	God for his mycht his saull he bring Quhar Ioy ay lestis but Endyng !—Amen.	

203. *Rubric in H*—Walter Stewart here died he. At Paslay eirded syne was he. *the]* E om.

205. *Walter]* schir waltir.

206. *bathket]* Bathcat H; bathgat E.

207. *it—ay]* ay woux E; waxt ay H.

209. *hym—to]* he of need must H.

210. *for]* E om. *till]* to EH.

211. *Schrevyn]* schrywyn E; Shriuen H. *repentand]* repenting H; repentit E.

212. *him]* to him H.

213. *nedit—till]* crystyn man nedyt till E; Christen men ought for to H.

215. *mycht—folk]* men mycht her men. *gret]* weepe H.

216. *ek]* mony A E; faire H.

217. [apert E] apart C. *Mak—richt]* Murning and making full H.

219. *comonly]* commonaly.

221. *tyme]* quhill.

224. *entryrit]* erdyt E; eirded H.

225. *he]* mot H; E om.

- E**ftir his ded, as I said air,  
The trewis that swa takyn war  
For till haf lestit xijj ȝeir,  
Quhen twa ȝeir of thame passit weir  
And ane half, as I trow, alsua,  
Kyng robert saw men wald nocth ma  
Redreȝ of schippes that war tane,  
And of the men alȝ that war slan̄e  
Bot continuit thair mavite  
Quhen euir thai met thame on the se.  
He send and acquyt hym all planly,  
And gaf the trewis wp oppinly,  
And, in wengeans of this trespaȝ,  
The gud erll of murreff, thomas,  
And donald Erll of mar alsua,  
And Iames of douglas with thaim twa,  
And Iames steward, that ledar was  
Eftir his gud brother disseȝ,  
Of all his brothir men in weir,  
He gert apon thar best maner  
With mony men bown thaim to ga  
In Ingland, for to burne and sla.  
And thai held furth soyn till Ingland—  
Thai war of gud men ten thousand—  
And brynt and slew in-to thair way ;  
Thair fais fast distroyit thai.  
And swagatis furthward can thai fair,
- 228
- [Fol. 64 b. E.]
- When two years  
and a half of the  
truce was over,
- 232 Bruce finds he can  
get no redress;
- 236
- wherefore he  
declares the truce  
broken.
- 240 Sir Thomas  
Murray,  
the Earl of Mar,  
  
Sir James of  
Douglas,  
and Sir James  
Stewart
- 244
- 248 prepare to make  
a raid upon  
England.
- 252
- They invade  
England,

227. *Rubric in H*—The Erle of Mvrray and Dowglas, With their Oast commen to Wardal was. *ded*] death H.

229. *xijj*] thretteene H ; viij E.

232. *Kyng*] The king.

235. *continuit*] ay continuit C ; ay continued H ; contynowyt (omitting ay) E. *mavite*] mawyte E ; prauitie H.

237. *acquyt*] so CE ; quit H. *all*] E om.

239. *in*] in the.

242. *thaim* E] them H ; thai (*for* thaim) C.

244. *brother*] brotheris.

245. *brothir*] bruderyis.

248. *burne*] bryn.

249. *soyn*] soone H ; E om.

251. *And*] Thai. *in-to*] in-till.

253. *swagatis*] swagat E ; thusgaite H. *furthward*] southwart. *can*] gan.

and advance to  
Weardale.

[Fol. 148. C.]  
At this time  
Edward of  
Carnarvon dies,  
and is succeeded  
by Edward of  
Windsor.

Till wardill quhill thai cummyn war.  
That tymē Eduard of carnavarāne,  
The king, wes ded, and laid in stañe.  
And Eduard, his soñe, that wes ȝyng,  
In Ingland crownyt wes for kyng,  
And surname had of wyndissoyr.

256

He had in france beyn of befor  
With his moder dame Isabell,  
And wes weddid, as I herd tell,  
Till a ȝoung lady fair of face,

260

That the erlis douchter waſ  
Of hennaut ; and of that cuntrē  
Brought with hym [men] of gret bounte.

264

Schir Iohñe of hennaut wes thar leder,  
That wes richt viſ and wicht in wer.

268

And that tym that scottis men war  
At wardale, as I said ȝow ar,  
In-to ȝork wes the new maid king,  
And herd tell of [the] distroying

272

That scottis men maid in his Cuntrē.  
A gret host till him gaderit he ;  
He was weill neir fifty thousand.

276

Than held he northwarde in the land  
In haill battale with that menȝhe.

He is 18 years old. xvij ȝeir ald that tyme wes he.

The scottis men all cokdaill

254. *Till*] To EH. *wardill*] war-  
daill E ; Wardall Park H.

266. [men EH] ane C.

255. *carnavarane*] carnauerayne  
E ; Carnauerane H.

267. *of hennaut*] the hennaud E ;

256. *stane*] Lame (!) H.

de Henault H. *thar*] E om.

258. *wes for*] wes to E ; then was

268. *richt*] E om. *viss*] wyss.

H.

269. *that—that*] in that time the

259. *had*] E om. *wyndissoyr*] wynd-  
ssor E ; Windsore H.

H.

260. *of*] thar E ; H om.

270. *wardale*] wardaile E ; Wardall

262. *I*] Ik.

Parke H.

263. *Till*] To H ; With E.

271. *In-to*] In-till.

265. *hennaut*] hennaud E ; He-

272. [the EH] thair C.

nault H.

276. *northwarde*] northwart.

266. *all cokdaill*] a day cokdaile

E ; they had all Cokdaill H.

280. *thai heryit*] had heryd.

282. *had* (1)] has E; hes H.

284. [thair EH] thai C.

286. [for H] CÉ om. till] to EH.

290. *host*] ost E ; Oast H

292. *The—schir]* That ost *za schir*

e said E ; The Oast? yea

(aid) H.

294. [suorn E] made H; C om.

*him] euen H; E om.*

295. *thame*] them, yea H.

296. *Zeit—eftsonis*] Full ma by far

I. *ar*] now are H

298. *ane*] A EH.

299. [dar EH] can C.

304. *nane*] na E; no H

305. *Till*] To EH.

Toward thame evyn a battell braid ;  
Baneris displayit enew thai had.

followed by  
another,

And añe othir come eftir neir,  
And richt apon the sammyn maner

312

till 7 of them  
appear.

Thai com, quhill sevyn battellis braid  
Out-our that hye Ryg passit had.

The Scotch are on  
the North bank  
of the Wear,

The scottis men war than liand  
On north half [wer], toward scotland.

316

The daill wes strekit weil, I hicht.

the banks of which  
are steep.

On athir syde thar wes añe hicht  
Till the vattir douñe, sum deill stay.

The scottis men in gud aray,

On thair best wiſ buskit ilkañe,

Stude in the strynth that thai had tañe ;

The Scotch are a  
quarter of a mile  
from the river.

And that wes fra the wattir of wer  
A quartir of ane myle weill ner.

324

Thai stude thar, battell till abyd.

The English ride  
down to the river  
on the other side.

And yngliſ men, on athyr syd,  
Com ridand dounward, quhill thai wer

To weris wattir cummyn ner ;

And on othir half thair fais war.

Than haf thai maid a-rest richt thar ;

And send out archeris a thousand

With hwdis of, and bowis in hand,

328

And gert thaim weil drink of the vyñe,

And bad thaim gang to bikkyr syñe

The scottis host in abandoune,

[Fol. 149. C.]  
The English send  
their archers  
forward,

309. *a]* in H.

310. *enew]* Inew E; anew H.

311. *ane othir]* a nothyr E; an-  
other H.

314. *hye]* hey.

315. *than]* thar.

316. [wer E] neir C; neere H;  
see l. 323.

317. *I]* Ik.

319. *Till]* And till E; And to H.  
*vattir]* watir.

323. *fra]* far fra H.

324. *ane]* A EH.

325. *Thai—thar]* Thar stud thai  
EH.

328. *weris]* Weeres H. *ner]* als  
ner.

329. *And]* As.

332. *hwdis of]* hudis off E;  
Hounds (!) H.

333. *vyne]* wyn.

335. *abandoune]* a randoun H.



	Sum of his playis ken ȝow till!"	364
	And quhen thai herd spek of dowglaſ,	
	The hardyest affrayit was,	
	And agane turnit halely.	
But Douglas gives the signal, [Fol. 149 b. C.] and 300 archers are slain.	His takyñ maid he thaim in hy ;	368
	And the folk that enbuschit war	
	So stoutly prekit on thame thar,	
	That weill thre hundredth haf thai slayñe,	
	And till the wattir hame [agayne]	372
	The remanand all can thai chaſ.	
Sir William Erskine, a young Scottish knight, is taken prisoner.	Schir williame of Erskyn, that waſ	
	*Newlyngis makyn knycht that day,	375*
	*Weill horsit intill gud aray,	376*
	Chassit, with othir that war thar,	
	So fer-furth, [that] his horſ him bar	376
	Emang the lwm̄p of Inglis̄ men,	
	That with strang hand he [tane] wes then.	
	Bot of hym weill soyn chaynge wes maid	
	For othir that men takyn had.	380
A retreat on both sides.	Fra thir Inglis̄ archeris war slayñe,	
	Thai folk raid till thar host agane.	
	And richt swa did the lord dowglaſ ;	
	And quhen that he reparit was,	384
The English begin to pitch their tents for the night.	Thai mycht emang thair fayis se	
	Thair palyȝeownys soyne stentit be.	
	Than thai persauit soyne in hy,	
	That thai that nycht wald tak herbery,	388

364. *Sum*] follows *ken* in EH.366. *affrayit*] effrayit.368. *thaim*] than E; then H.  
*maid—thaim*] then he made H.371. *hundreth*] hundir.372. [agayne] agane E; againe H;  
miswritten ar gayne C.373. *all*] begins the line in E.  
*can*] gan.374. *that*] thar.375\*, 376\*. In CH; E om. H has  
—New made Knight that samine day,  
Well horsed into good array.

376. [that EH] with C.

377. *Emang*] Amang. *lwm̄p*] lump.378. *That*] And EH. *he—wes*] he takyn wes C; wes takyn EH. *For* takyn, read tane.379. *chaynge*] chang E; change H.382. *Thai*] Thir.383. *lord*] lord off.385. *emang*] amang.386. *Thair*] The. *palyȝeownys*] pailȝownys E; Pauillions H.387. *Than*] And.

And schap till do no mar that day,  
Tharfor alsua thame herbreit thai,  
And stentit palȝownys soyn in hy.

The Scotch do the  
same.

Tentis and luggis als thair-by

392

Thai gert mak, and set all on raw.

Twa novelreis that day thai saw,  
That forrouth in scotland had beyn nañe.

Two novelties  
were seen that  
day, viz. crests  
and cannon.

Tymbrys for helmys wes the tane,

396

That thame thought than of gret bewte,  
And alsua wounder for to se ;  
The tothir crakkis war of wer,  
That thai befor herd neuir eir.

400

Of thir twa thyngis thai had ferly.  
That nycht thai wachit stalwardly ;  
The mast part of thame armyt lay,  
Quhill on the morñe that it wes day.

The Scotch keep  
watch all night.

404

**T**H E ynglis men thame vmbethoucht,  
Apon quhat maner that thai moucht  
Ger scottis lewe thair avantage ;  
For thame thought foly and outrage  
To gang wp to thaȝe, till assale  
Thame at thar strynthis in playn battale.  
Tharfor of gud men aȝe thousand,  
Armyt on horȝ bath fut and hand,  
Thai send, behynd thair fayis to be  
Enbuschit in-till a wale ;  
And schup thair battellis, as thai wald

[Fol. 150. C.]

The English wish  
to make the  
Scotch leave their  
position.

408

They place an  
ambush of 1000  
men in a valley.

412

They make a  
feigned attack.

389. *schap*] shape H; *schup* E. *till*] to EH.

crakys E; Craikes H. *of*] for H.

390. *alsua thame*] thaim alsua.

400. *herd*] had H.

391. *stantit*] stented H; *stent* E; *styntit* C (*but see l. 386.*) *soyn*] E om.

402. *wachit*] walkyt.

394. *novelreis*] noweltyis E; new things H.

407. *lewe*] leve E; leaue H.

395. *forrouth*] before H.

409. *to*] till.

396. *Tymbrys*] Tymbres H; Tymmeris E. *wes*] war.

410. *strynthis*] strenth E; Strength H.

399. *tothir*] other H. *crakkis*]

411. *ane*] A EH.

413. *behynd*] before (!) H.

414. *wale*] so CE; valley H.

	Apon thame till the fechting hald.	416
	For thame [thought] scottis men sic will	
	Had, that thai mycht nocht hald thaim still.	
They know the Scotch will come out to meet them.	For thai knew thame of sic corage,	
	That thai trowit strenth and avantage	420
	Thai suld leyff, and meit thame planly.	
	Than suld thar buschement hastely	
	Behynd prek on thaīe at the bak ;	
	Sa thought thai weill thai suld thaim mak	424
	For till repent thaīe of thair play.	
The 1000 men go to their ambush.	Thair enbuschement furth send haf thai,	
	That thame enbuschit preualy.	
Next morning the advance is sounded.	And on the morn, sum-deill airly,	428
	[In-till] the host syne trumpit thai,	
	And gert thair battell braid aray ;	
	And all arayit for to ficht,	
	Thai held toward the wattir richt.	432
The Scotch see them coming,	Scottis men, that saw thame do swa,	
	Bown on thair best wif can thaim ma ;	
and advance likewise.	And in battell planly arayit,	436
	With baneris to the vynd displayit,	
	Thai left thair strynth, and all planly	
	Com doune to meit thame hardely	
	In als gud maner as thai mowcht,	
	Richt as thair fayis befor had thought.	440
	Bot the lord dowglaſ, that ay-quhar	

417. *thame*] thai E; they H.  
[*thought* EH] C om. *sic*] of sik H.

418. *Had*] H om.

420. *trowit*] thought E; sould leauue H.

421. *leyff*] leve. And meeete them in the field plainly H.

422. *hastely*] halily.

423. *prek*] brek EH.

424. *mak*] wracke H.

425. *For—of*] And make them to repent H.

426. *send haf*] sent H.

429. [In-till E] Into H; And till C. *syne*] soone H; hey E.

430. *battell braid*] battells brade H; braid bataillis E.

431, 432. Transposed in H. *all*] well H. *Thai*] And H.

434. *can*] gan.

436. *to*] till. *vynd*] wynd.

438. To feght they shupe them hastily H.

441. *quhar*] where H; was war E.

Set out wachis heir and thar,  
 [Gat] wit of thair enbuschement.  
 Than in gret hy soyn is he went  
 Befor the battellis, and stoutly  
 He bad ilk man turn hym in hy  
 Richt as he [stud], and, turnit swa,  
 Vp till thair strynt he bad thaim ga,  
 Swa that na let thar-in be maid.  
 And thai did as he biddin had,  
 Quhill to thair strynt thai com agañe ;  
 Than turnyt thai thame with mekill mayn,  
 And stude reddy to giff Battale,  
 Giff thair fayis wald thame assale.  
 Quhen Inglis men haſ seyn thaim swa  
 Toward thar strynt agane wp ga,  
 Thai cryit hey, ‘thai fled thar way.’  
 Schir Iohñe de hennaut said, “ perfay,  
 3one fleying is right degyse.  
 Thair armyt men behynd I se,  
 And thair baneris, swa that thai thar  
 Bot turne thame as thai standard  
 And be arayit for the ficht,  
 Gif ony pressis thame with mycht.  
 Thai haf seyne our enbuschement,  
 And agane to thar strinth ar went.  
 3one folk ar gouernyt wittely ;  
 And he that ledis thame war worthy,

442. *Set*] so CH; And set E. (Had set would do best.)

443. [Gat E] To CH.

444. *in—soyn*] in-till gret hy.

447. [stud E] stood H; said C. H has—Right as they stood, them turned them sa.

449. *thar-in be*] be therein H; thar thai E.

451, 452. *Transposed in H. to]*  
*till. mayn]* so CE; Payne P; paine H.

455. *hass*] hes H; had E.

But Douglas finds out about the ambush,

441

[Fol. 150 b. C.]

and bids his men turn right about without breaking the ranks, and so retreat.

448

[Fol. 65 b. E.]

They do so, and when they come to their former place of strength, they face their foes again.

452

456

Sir John of Hainault sees the manœuvre, and explains it.

460

464

He says the Scotch are led by a captain

468

457. *fled*] fley E; flee H. *thar way*] away H.

458. *de*] of H; E om.

459. *degyse*] Tragedie (!) H; E om.

461. *thai*] so EH; miswritten thaim C.

462. *Bot*] Sall H.

463. *the*] to.

464. *pressis*] pressyt. *pressisthame*] wald them preasse H.

466. *to*] till.

468. *And*] For H. *thame*] E om. *war*] is EH.

fit to govern the  
Empire of Rome.

The ambushed  
men return.

The English,  
having thus failed,  
retreat to their  
tents.

For a-vif<sup>b</sup>, worschip, and wisdomē,  
To gouerne the Empyre of rome."

Thus spak that worthy knyght that day ;  
And the enbuschement, fra that thai  
Saw that thai swa discouerit war,  
Toward thar host agane thai far.

And the battell of Inglis<sup>b</sup> men,  
Quhen thai saw thai had falit then  
Of thar purpos, to thair herbery  
Thai went, and lugit thame in hy.  
On othir half richt swa did thai ;  
Thai maid no mar debat that day.

472

476

480

At night fires are  
lighted.

**Q** when thai [that] day ourdrivyn had,  
Fyres in gret foysoun thai maid,  
Als soyne as the nycht fallen was.

Than the ged lord of dowglas,  
That spyit had a plaſt thar-by,  
Twa myle fra thine, quhar mar trastly  
The scottis host mycht herbery ta,  
And defend thame bettir alsua  
Than ellis in ony place thar-by.

484

[Fol. 151. C.]

Douglas finds a  
place 2 miles off,  
better suited for  
encampment.

It wes a park, that halely  
Wes enveronyt about with [wall] ;  
It wes neir full of treis all,  
Bot a gret playn in-till it was.  
Thiddir thought the lord dowglas  
Be [nychtyrtale] thair host to bryng.  
Tharfor, forouten mair duelling,

488

492

496

469. *a-viss]* auise H; awise E.  
*worschip]* wit H.

486. *Twa—thine]* Twa myile thine  
that E; That twa mile hyne H. *mar]*  
maist H.

470. *Empyre]* miswritten Enpyre C.

490. *that]* all.

475. *battell]* bataillis E; battells

491. [wall EH] all C.

H.

494. *lord]* lord of.

478. *lugit]* logit.

495. [nychtyrtale E] nychtir daill

481. [that EH] the C.

C; night all H.

484. *Then]* Then H; And than E.

496. *forouten]* without H.

485. *spyit had]* had spyit.

Thai bet thair fyres and maid thaīc mair,  
 And syne all sammyn furth thai fair,  
 And till the park, without tynsele,  
 Thai come, and herbryit thaim richt wele  
 Vpon the vattir, and als neir  
 Till it as [that] thai forrouth weir.  
 And on the morn, quhen it wes day,  
 The Inglis host myssit avay  
 The scottis men, and had ferly,  
 And gert discurrouris hastily  
 Prek to se quhar thai var avay.  
 And by thair fyres persauit thai,  
 That thai in the park of wardale  
 Had gert herbery thar host all hail.  
 Tharfor thair host, but mair abaid,  
 Buskit, and evin anent thaim raid,  
 And on othir half the vatter of wer  
 Gert stent thair palȝeownys, als neir  
 As that befor stentit war thai.  
 Aucht dayis on bath halffis swa thai lay,  
 That Inglis men durst nocht assale  
 The scottys men with playne battale,  
 For strinth of erd that thai had ther.  
 Thar wes ilk day Iustyng of wer,  
 And scrymmying maid full apertly,  
 And men tane on ather party.  
 And thai that tane war on a day

By night, the  
 Scotch, after  
 having made up  
 their fires,  
 retire to the park.

500

At daybreak,  
 the English miss  
 504 the Scotch,

and send out  
 scouts to find  
 them.

508 They find them  
 in the park in  
 Weardale.

512

The English also  
 shift their camp.

516 For eight days  
 nothing is done

520 beyond jousting  
 and skirmishing.

497. *mair*] mar E ; yare H (*which perhaps is right*).

498. *syne—sammyn*] syne all samyn E ; all sammyn syn C ; syne togidder H. *furth*] can H.

499. *without*] for-owtyn. *tynsele*] tynseill.

500. *richt*] all H ; E om. *wele*] weill E ; haill H.

502. [that] inserted for the metre ; see I. 515. *forrouth*] beforouth E ; before H.

504. *avay*] away EH.

507. *Prek*] Pryk E ; Passe H. *var*  
*avay*] war away.

509. *wardale*] werdale E ; Wardaill H.

513. *And*] H om. *half*] side H. *vatter*] watir. *wer*] Weere H.

515. *that*] thar E ; of H.

516. *halffis*] halff. *thai lay*] lay thai. *bath—swa*] this wise H.

521. *scrymmying*] scrymyn E ; skirmishing H. *maid*] H om.

[Fol. 151 b. C.]	On añe othir changit war thai. But othir dedis nane war doñe, That gretly is apone till mone ; Quhill it fell, on the nynt day, The lord dowglaſ haſ spyit a vay,	524
On the ninth day Douglas sees a way to circumvent the English.	The lord dowglaſ haſ spyit a vay, How that he mycht about thame ryd, And cum apon the ferrest syd. And at evyn him purvayit he,	528
He takes 500 men with him,	And tuk with him a gude menȝe, v hundreth on horſ, ves richt hardy ; And in the nyght, all preuely, For-out noyis so fer he raid,	532
and, in the night, rides to the other side of the English host.	Quhill that he neir enveremyt had Thar host, and on the ferrer syd Toward thame sleyly can he ryd, And half the men that with hym war	536
Half his men carry bare swords,	[He gert in hand have suerdis bar ; And bad thaim hew rapys in twa, That thai the pailȝownys mycht ma To fall on thaim that in thaim war.]	540
to cut the ropes of the English tents,	Than suld the laiff that forouth ar Stab doun with speres sturdely. And, quhen thai herd his horne, in hy To the wattir hald doun the way.	544
whilst the rest should use their spears.	Quhen this wes said that I here say,	548

526. *is apone*] here are for H. *till*] to EH. *mone*] so EH; moyne C.  
 527. *nynt*] *nynth* H; *seywnd* E (*wrongly*).  
 528. *hass*] *hes* H; *had* E. *ray*] *way*.  
 530. *apon*] *on* E; *on them at* H. *ferrest*] *ferrer* E; *Forrest* (!) H.  
 531. *him purvayit*] *purvayit him* E; *puruayed* H.  
 533. *ves richt*] *wicht* and EH.  
 535. *For-out—fer*] *Without noyse* or *din* H.  
 536. *enveremyt*] *enweronyt* E; *enuironed* H.  
 537. *ferrar*] *ferrar* E; *Forrest* (!)
- H. 538. *can*] *gan*.  
 539. *half*] E om. (*wrongly*). *half-men*] the maist part H.  
 540—543. C omits. From E.  
 540. *He—have*] Bare in their hands H.  
 541. *rapys*] Pauillions (*by mistake*) H.  
 542. *pailȝownys*] Pauillions H.  
 544. *forouth*] *folowit* E; *Forrayours* (!) H. *ar*] *thar*.  
 545. *Stab*] *Strike* H.  
 547. *the*] *thair*.  
 548. *I*] Ik. *that—here*] as I heard H.

Toward thair fais fast thai raid,  
That on that syd no vachis had.  
And as thai neir war approchand,  
Añe ynglis man, that lay bekand  
Hym by a fyre, [said] to his feir—  
“I wat nocth quhat may tyd vs heir;  
Bot a richt gret [growyng] me tais;  
I dred me sair for the blak dowglas.”  
And he, that herd [him], said, “perfay,  
Thou sall haf caus, gif that I may!”  
With that, with all his Cumpany,  
He ruschit on thame hardly,  
And proud palȝownys doune he bare,  
And with speris that scharplly schar  
Thai stekit men dispuisly.  
The noyis weill soyn raiȝ, and the cry;  
Thai stabbit, stekit, and thai slew;  
And mony palȝownys doun thai drew.  
A felloun slauchtir maid thai thair,  
That thai, that liand nakit war,  
Hed na power defens to ma;  
And thai but pite can thame sla.  
[Thai] gert thame wit that gret foly  
Wes, neir thar fayis for to ly,  
Bot gif thai trastly vachit war.  
The scottis men war slaand thar  
Thair fayis on this viȝ, quhill the cry

550. *vachis*] wachis E; Marches H.  
553. [said EH] syde C.  
555. *a richt*] rycht a E; a H.  
[*growyng* E] groouing H; grevynge  
C.  
556. *me*] E om. *the*] H om.  
557. [*him* EH] C om.  
560. *on*] in on.  
561. *proud*] E om.  
562. *And*] E om.  
564. *the*] als the H; E om. *cry*]  
skry H.

565. And thai stabbyt stekyt and  
 slew.  
 566. *mony*] E om. *doun*] doun  
 3arne. *drew*] threw H.  
 569. *Hed*] Had EH.  
 570. *can*] gan.  
 571. [Thai E] They H; That C.  
*gret*] E om.  
 573. *strastly*] straitly H. *rachit*]  
 wachit E; watched H.  
 574. *staand*] slayand.  
 575. *viss*] E om.

555. *a richt*] rycht a E: a H.

555. *a* *Nien*] tyent a  
[*gawung E*] grooving H

[*growing* E] growing H, greving  
C.

556. *me*] E. *om.*

557. [him EH] Come

560. *on*] in on.

561. *prowd*] E or

562. *And]* E *om.*

564. *the*] als *the*

skry H.

566. *many*] E *em*, *down*] *down*

*ærne. dren]* threw H.

569. *Hed*] Had EH.

569. *Heu*] Had EII.

570. *vah*] gath.

571. [Thai E] They H; That C.  
gret] E em

*gret]* E om.

543. *trustly*] straitly  
meekit Fe. watched II.

wachit E; watch

574. *slaand*] slayand

575. *viss*] E om.

The whole of the English host is at last aroused.	Raiſ throu the gret host comonly, That lord and othir var on steir ; And quhen the dowglas wist thai veir Armand thame all comonly,	576
Then Douglas blows his horn, to collect his men.	He blew his horne for till rely His men, and bad thame hald thar vay Toward the wattir, and swa did thai .	580
He retreats behind the rest.	And he abaid henmast, to se That nane of his suld lefit be.	584
A man with a club attacks him, and nearly kills him.	And as he swa abaid hufand, Swa come añe with a club in hand, And swa gret rowtis till him raucht, That, had nocht beyn his mekill maucht	588
But he at last kills his assailant.	And his richt souerane gret manhede, In-till that plaf he had beyne ded. Bot he, that na tyme wes affrayit, Thouch he weill oft wes herd assayit,	592
The Scotch miss their leader.	Throu mekill strynth and gret manheid Has brocht the tothir on-to ded. His men, that to the wattir douñe War rydyn in-till a randouñe,	596
They determine to go and seek him.	Myssit thar lord quhen thai com thar. Than war thai dredand for him sar ; Ilkane at othir sperit tithing, Bot ȝeit of hym thai herd no thing.	600

576. *gret*] EH *om.* *comonly*] com- (better; for see l. 608).  
 monaly E; all commonly H.
577. *lord*] Lords H. *var*] war.
- 578. *veir*] wer.
579. *comonly*] commonaly.
580. *till*] to EH.
583. *henmast*] hindmest H.
585. *swa—hufand*] baid swa how- and E; abade sa howand H.
586. *Swa come*] Come thane. *Swa—a*] There came a Carle with H
587. *rowtis*] A rowt.
589. *gret*] E *om.*
- 591—594. H omits.
591. *affrayit*] effrayit.
594. *on-to*] to the.
595. *to*] till EH.
596. *rydyn*] ridyne E; ridden H.
601. *can*] gan.
602. [wald EH] can C.
603. *affray*] effray.

- A tutlyng of his horne herd thai. 604 They hear the  
And thai that haſt it knawin swith tootling of his  
War of his cummyng woundir blith, horn.  
And sperit at him of his abaid ;  
And he tald how a carll him maid 608  
With his club richt añe fellouñe pay,  
That met him stoutly in the way ;  
"That, had nocth vre helpit the mair,  
I had beyn in gret perell thair." 612  
Thusgatis spekand, thai held thar way,  
Quhill to thar host cummyn ar thai,  
That on fut, armyt, thame abaid,  
For till help, gif thai myster had. 616  
And, alſo soyne as the lord dowglaſſ  
Met with the Erll of murreff was,  
The Erll sperit at hym tithing  
How he had farñ in his outyng. 620  
"Schir," said he, "we haf drawyn blude." and says—"Sir,  
The Erll, that wes of mekill mude, we have draw'n  
Said, "and we had all thiddir gane, blood."  
We had discumfit thame ilkane." 624  
"It mycht haf fallyn weill," said he,  
"Bot sekirly enew war we  
To put vs in ȝon auentur.  
For, had thai maid discumfitur 628  
On vs that ȝondir passit wer,  
It suld all stonay that ar heir."  
The Erll said, "sen that it swa is,

604. *tutlyng*] tutilling E; towting H.

609. *his*] A. *richt ane*] sic E; sa H.

611. *vre*] fortoun E; God H. *helpit*] helped him H.

612. *I*] He EH.

613. *Thusgatis*] Thusgat E; Thus-gaite H.

614. *thar*] the.

619. *hym*] thaim.

620. *he*] thai. *his*] thair. *outyng*] owting.

622. *mekill*] Noble H.

624. *discumfit*] destroyed H.

625. *It*] That.

626. *enew*] ynew.

630. *It—stonay*] It might haue stonisht them H.

The Earl advises to attack the English.	That we may nocht with Iuperdīſ Our fellowoun faire forſ assale, We sal it do in playn battale."	632
Douglas said it would be great folly to do so.	Lord douglas said than, " be saint bryd, It war gret foly at this tyd.	636
	Till ws with sic aña host till ficht, That ilk day growis of mycht, And vittale haſ thar-with plente.	
	And in thar cuentre heir ar we,	640
He says it would be more prudent to retreat,	Quhar thar may cum vs na succourſ ; Herd is to mak ws heir rescourſ ; Na we may forra for to get met ; Sic as we haf heir mon we et.	644
	Do we with our fayis tharfor That ar heir liand vs befor, As I herd tell this othir ȝer How that a fox did vith a fischar."	
as the fox did from the fisher- man.		648
<b>Nota. how the fox playt wyth the fischar.</b>		
[Fol. 153. C.]	" How did the fox ? " the Erll can say.	
Douglas says— "A fisherman had a little hut near a river,	He said, "a fischar quhilome lay Besyde a ryver for till get His nettis, that he thar had set. A litill luge thar had he maid ; And thar-within a bed he had, And ek a litill fyre alsua ; and but one door. A dure ther wes, withouten ma.	652
		656
632. <i>Iuperdiss</i> ] Iupertys E; ieopard- ies H.	meat H.	
633. <i>forſſ</i> ] force H; for to E.	644. <i>Sic</i> ] Swilk. <i>mon we</i> ] we mon.	
634. <i>it do</i> ] do It.	647. <i>I</i> ] Ik.	
635. <i>Lord</i> ] The lord EH. <i>than</i> ] EH om.	648. <i>How</i> ] E om. <i>vith</i> ] with.	
638. <i>ilk—growis</i> ] growys ilk day. <i>of</i> ] of maire H.	649. <i>can</i> ] gan.	
639. <i>vittale hass</i> ] has wictaill. <i>tharwith</i> ] at all H.	651. <i>for till</i> ] for to E; fish to H.	
641. <i>vs</i> ] to vs H.	652. <i>that</i> ] then H. <i>thar had</i> ] had	
643. Na we ne may ferrar mete to get E; Nor we not forray may to get	thar EH.	
	653. <i>luge</i> ] loge. <i>thar had</i> ] thar- by.	
	655. <i>ek</i> ] E om.	
	656. <i>A—ther</i> ] And ane doore H. <i>withouten</i> ] for-owtyn.	

A nycht, his nettis for till se  
 He raif, and thair weill lang duelt he.  
 And quhen that he haſ done his ded,  
 Toward his luge agane he ȝed,  
 And with licht of the litill fyre,  
 That in the luge wes byrnand schyre,  
 In-till the luge a fox he saw,  
 That fast can on a salmond gnaw.  
 Than till the dure he went in hy,  
 And drew aȝe swerd deliuерly,  
 And said, “tratour, thou mon heir out.”  
 The fox, that wes in full gret dout,  
 Lukit about sum hoill to se ;  
 Bot nane ysche thar couth he se,  
 Bot quhar the man stude sturdely.  
 A lawchtaȝe mantill than hym by  
 Lyand apon the bed he saw ;  
 And with his teyth he can it draw  
 Atour the fyre ; and, quhen the man  
 Saw his mantill ly byrnand than,  
 Till red it ran he hastely.  
 The fox gat out than in gret hy,  
 And held his way his warand till.  
 The man leit hym begilit Ill,  
 That he his salmond swa had tynt,  
 And alsua had his mantill brynt,

One night,  
on his return to  
the hut,

660

he sees there a fox,  
gnawing at a  
salmon.

664

He draws his  
sword, and stands  
in the doorway.

668

[Fol. 66 b. E.]

The fox, seeing  
no other way of  
escape,

672 seizes a mantle  
that lies on the  
bed,

and draws it  
towards the fire.

676

The man rushes  
forward to save it,  
and the fox  
escapes.

680

So the man lost  
his salmon,  
and had his  
mantle burnt,

657. *A*] Ane H. *till*] to EH.  
 659. *that*] EH *om.* *hass*] had  
EH.

660. *luge*] luge or lugis C ; loge E ;  
see I. 653. So also in II. 662, 663.

663. *the*] his.

664. *can—gnaw*] on ane salmound  
gan gnaw E ; in can a Salmond draw  
H.

666. *ane*] a H ; his E.

667. *tratour*] Reiffar. *out*] lout

(!) H.

670. *ysche—se*] eschew persave

couth he E ; ishe foorth there could  
get he H.

672. *lawchtaȝe*] lauchtane. A  
Mantle he perceiued him by H.

674. *teyth*] teth. *can*] gan.

675. *Atour*] Out our E ; Out ouer  
H.

676. *bynand*] brinnand E ; burn-  
ing H.

677. *Till*] To EH. *red*] rid H.

680. *leit*] thought H.

681. *salmond swa*] gud salmound.

and the fox  
escaped.

And the fox scathleſſ gat his way.

684

This ensampill I may weill say

We are the fox,  
and they the  
fisherman.

By ȝon folk and vs that ar heir.

[Fol. 153 b. C.]

We ar the fox, & thai the fischer

That stekis forouth ws the way ;

I think I can spy  
a way of escape,  
though it is  
rather wet.

Thai weyñe we may nocht get avay,

688

Bot richt quhar [that] thai ly ; perde,

All as thai think, it sall nocht be ;

For I haf gert spy ws a gat.

Suppoſt that it be sum-deill wat,

692

A page of ouris we sall nocht tyñe.

Our fayis, for this small tranontyne,

Wenys we sall weill pryd ws swa,

That we planly on hand sall ta

696

To gif thame oppynly battale ;

Our foes shall fail.

Bot at this tyme thair thought sall fale.

For we to-morne heir all the day

Sall mak alſſ mery as we may,

To-morrow night  
we will make up  
our fire brightly,

And mak ws boune agane the nycht.

as if all the world  
were ours,  
and, when it is  
very dark, we will  
retreat.

And than ger mak our fyres bricht,

And blow our hornys, and mak fair

As all the warld our awne it war,

704

Quhill that the nycht weill fallyn be.

And than, with all our harnaſſ, [we]

Sall tak our way hamward in hy,

And we sall gyit be richt graithly

Quhill we be out of thair danger,

That lyis now enclosit her.

683. *scathless*] harmellesse H. *his way*] away EH.

694. *tranontyne*] tranowntyn E ;  
tranoynting H.

684. *I—weill*] weill I may.

695. *weill*] precedes *we* in E. *ws*]

685. *folk*] ost.

us.

687. *forouth*] before H.

702. *bricht*] lycht.

688. *weyne*] thinke H.

704. *it*] E om.

689. [that H] CE om. *perde*] bot  
perde E ; Parde H.

706. [we EH] hye C.

690. *All*] Yet H.

708. *richt*] E om. And alltgidder

691. *spy*] se.

hald sickerly H.

710. *lyis*] thinks us H.

Than sall we all be at our will,  
 And thai sall let thame trwmpit Ill,  
 Fra thai wit weill we be avay."  
 Till this haly assentit thai,  
 And maid thame gud cher all that nycht,  
 Quhill on the morn that day wes licht.

712 They shall be deceived."

716

**A** pon the morn all preualy  
 Thai turst harnaf<sup>s</sup> and maid reddy ;  
 Swa that, or ewyn, all bouñe war thai.  
 Thair fayis, that agane thame lay,  
 Gert haf thair men that thar wes ded  
 In cartis till añe haly sted.  
 All that day caryand thai war  
 With cartis, men that slayne war thar.  
 That thai war feill, men mycht weill se,  
 That in carying so lang suld be.  
 The hostis bath all that day wer  
 In pes<sup>s</sup>; and, quhen the nycht ves ner,  
 The scottis folk, that lyand war  
 In-till the park, maid fest and far,  
 And blew hornys and fyres maid,  
 And gert thame byrñ bath bricht & braid,  
 Swa that [thair] fyres that nycht war mair  
 Than ony tyme befor thai war.  
 And quhen the nycht wes fallyn wele,  
 With all thair harnaf<sup>s</sup> ilke deill  
 All preualy thai raid thair way.  
 Soin in a mos<sup>t</sup> enterit ar thai

Next morning  
they pack up  
everything.

720

The English  
employ the day in  
burying the dead.

724

There were many  
of them.

[Fol. 154. C.]

728

At night,  
the Scotch make  
up great fires,

732

brighter than ever  
before.At nightfall,  
they ride away  
privily,

and enter a moss,

712. *trwmpit*] trumptyt.718. *turst*] tursyt.719. *ewyn*] Euen H.720. *Thair*] And thair.721. *wes*] war.722. *haly*] hallowed H.

723—726. H omits.

725. *men mycht*] mycht men.727. *all*] E om.728. *and quhen*] till that H. *ves*]  
wes.732. *thame*—*bath*] mak thaim.733. *that* (1)] at. *thair*—*nycht*]  
fyres that nycht C; their fires that  
night H; that nycht thair fyris  
E.736. *ilke*] ilka E; euirilk H.

that was a mile broad.  
They cross the moss on foot,  
leading their horses.

They lose very little,  
except a few sumpter-horses.

When all have crossed the moss,  
they are very glad,  
and ride homewards.

The English, next day, are astonished.

They find their traces, leading to the moss,

which they dare not cross.

739. *had*] was H. *a—on*] twa myle lang of E; twa mile of H.

742. *It*] And it. *richt añe*] rycht A E; a full right H. *noyus*] noysome H.

*After l. 742 H inserts four lines, and alters ll. 743, 744; thus—*  
Bot Flaikes in the Wood they made  
Of wands, and them with them had:  
And sykes therewith brigged they:  
And sa had well their horse away,  
On sik wise, that all that there were,  
Came through the Mosse baith haill  
and feere.

743. *thar*] thai. See also last note.

746. *ony*] ony auld H. *swmmer*]

That had weill a lang myle on breid;  
Out-out that moſ on fut thai ȝeid,  
And in thair hand thar horſ led thai.  
It wes richt añe noyus way;

And nocth-for-thi all that thar wer  
Com weill outour it, haill and fer,  
And tynt bot litill of thar ger,  
Bot gif it war ony swmmer  
That in the moſ wes left liand.

Quhen all, as I haf born on hand,  
Out-out the moſ that wes so braid  
War cummyn, a gret gladschip thai had,  
And raid furth hamwarde on thar way.  
And on the morn, quhen it wes day,  
The ynglis men saw the herbery  
Quhar scottis men war wount to ly  
All woyd; thai wonderit gretly then,  
And send furth syndry of thar men

To spy quhar thai war gane avay,  
Quhill at the last thair traſ fand thai,  
That till the mekill moſ thame had,  
That wes so hydwif for till waid,  
That aventure thame thar-to durst nañe;  
Bot till thar host agane ar gane,

summer E; Sowmeere H. (*Summer = sumpter-horse.*)

748. *I*] Ik.

749. *the*] that.

750. *a*] H om. *gladschip*] gladesse H.

751. *hamwarde*] hamwart.

754. *war—to*] before can H.

755. *woyd thai*] voyde and H.

757, 758. H transposes these lines, and (for l. 757) has—And syne when they were gane away.

760. *till*] to EH.

761. *aventur*] awntyrr E; aventure H. *thame tharto*] thame to thar C; but thaim thar-to E; H has—of them.

And tald how that thai passit war,

Quhar neuir man wes passit ar.

764

Quhen ynglis men herd it wes swa,

In hy till Consale can thai ta,

That thai wald follow thaim no mar.

Thair host richt than thai scalit thar,

And ilk man till his awn he raid.

Kyng robert than, that witteryng had

That his men in the park swa lay,

And at quhat myscheiff thar war thai,

Ane host assemblit he in hy.

Of tuenty thousand richt hardy

He send furth haſ with erlis twa,

Of marche and angouſ war thai,

The host in wardale till releiff;

And, gif thai mycht so weill escheiff

That sammyn mycht be thai and thai,

Thai thought thair fayis till assay.

So fell it that on the sammyn day

That the moſ, as þe herd me say,

Wes passit, the discurreouris, that thar

Rydand befor the hostis war,

Of athir host haſ gottin sicht.

And thai, that worthy war and wicht,

At that metyng Iustit of wer.

Ensenȝeis hye thai cryit ther;

And by thair cry persauit thai

[Fol. 154 b. C.]

768 The English host  
disperses.King Robert  
sends 20,000 men  
to relieve Douglas,

772

with the Earls of  
March and Angus.

776

[Fol. 67. E.]

780

When Douglas's  
scouts, having  
crossed the moss,

784

get sight of the  
other host,788 warceries are  
raised.

764. *wes*] had H; E *om.*

766. *till*] to EH. *can*] gan.

769. *he*] they H; E *om.*

770. *Kyng—than*] And king Robert. *witteryng*] witting H.

771. *That*] At.

772. *at quhat*] so E; quhat at C. *at—thatar*] what mischiefe then at H.

774. And x thousand men, wicht & hardy E; Ten thousand men wight and hardy H.

775. *He—hass*] He has send furth

E; And sent them foorth H.

776. *marche*] the merss E; Stratherne H. *angouſſ*] anguss E; Angus H.

777. *wardale*] werdale. *till*] to EH.

779. *mycht*] nycht E; night H. *be—thai* (2)] so CE; that meete might they H.

784. *hostis*] ost.

787. *that*] thair EH.

788. *hye*] hey.

By the cries they  
discover that they  
are friends.

That thai war frendis, and at a fay.  
Than mycht men se thañe glad & blith,  
And tald it to thair lordis swith.

792

The hosts meet  
with great joy.

The hostis bath met sammyn syne ;  
Thar wes richt hamly welcummyñe  
Maid emang gret lordis thar ;  
Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war.

796

Earl Patrick's  
men have plenty  
of provissons,  
which they give  
to Douglas's men.

The Erll patrik and his men;he  
Had wittale with thame gret plente,  
And thar-with weill relevit thai  
Thar frendis ; for, the suth to say,  
Quhill thai in wardall liand war,  
Thai had defalt of met, bot thar  
Thai war relevit with gret plente.

800

All go to Scotland  
joyfully.

Toward scotland with gammyn & gle  
Thai went, and hame weill cummyn ar thai,  
And sealit syñe ilk man thar vay.

804

[Fol. 155. C.]  
King Robert  
welcomes them  
home,

The lordis ar went on-to the king,  
That maid thame richt fair welcummyng ;

808

and rejoices at  
their safe return.

For of thar come richt glad wes he :  
And that thai [sic perplexite]  
For-out tynsale eschapit had,  
Thai war all blith and mery made.

812

790. *at—fay*] so CE ; na fay H.

793. *hostis*] ost.

795. *emang*] amang thai.

798. *wittale*] wictaillis E ; vittaile H.

799—806. *For these 8 lines H has these four—* And gaue it to them with glad cheare, Thus went they hame-ward all in feare : Destroying the Countric in their way, In Scotland well commen are they.

802. *defalt*] defawt.

806. *thar vay*] thair vay. (*Better*  
—*his way.*)

807. *ar went*] went then H. *on-to*] all to H ; to E.

808. *maid—richt*] has maid thaim.

809. *come*] comming H.

810. [sic perplexite E] with sic prosperitie CH.

811. *Forout*] Withoutten H.

812. *Thai—all*] All war thai. They were all blyth, mery, and glad H.

## [BOOK XX.]

**How gud kyng robert the bruce crownyt his young  
sone davy & dame Iohane his spouss.**

Soyne eftir that the Erll thomas  
Fra vardale thus reparit was,  
The kyng assemblit all his mycht,  
And left nañe that wes worth to ficht.  
A gret host than assemblit he,  
And delt his host in partis thre.  
A part to norhame went but let,  
And thair añe strat assege wes set,  
And held thame in, richt at thar dik.  
The tothir part on to awnwyk  
Is went, and thair añe sege set thai ;  
And quhill at thir assegis lay  
At the castellis, I spak of ar,  
[Apert] assaltis maid thai thar,  
And mony fair gud cheuelry  
[Eschewyt wes full douchtely].

King Robert  
assembles a  
large army,

and besieges  
Norham.

8

Another part of  
his army besieges  
Alnwick ;

12

16

1. *Rubric in H*—The King Robert assembled there, Three Oasts, in England for to fare.

2. *vardale*] wardaill E; Wardall H.

3. *The kyng*] E om.

7. *norhame*] norame EH.

8. And a stark assege has set E;  
And there a stalward Siege they set H.

10. *on to*] vnto H; till E. awnwyk] Anwyk E; Anuike H.

11. *ane*] A E; a H.

12. *at*] that EH. *thir assegis*] there the Siege H.

13. *the*] thir. *castellis*] Castell H. I] as I C; but E omits as. I—of] as I said H.

14. [Apert E] Part of CH. *assaltis*] eschewys oft.

15. *gud*] EH om.

16. *From* E; so also H; C omits. *Eschewyt*] Encheeued H. *wes*] war E; was H; the usual form is wes, which I have therefore adopted; see l. 24.

whilst a third  
part,  
commanded by  
himself,

overruns  
Northumberland.

King Edward  
advised by his  
mother and  
Mortimer,

makes peace with  
king Robert.

[Fol. 155 b. C.]

Robert's son  
David,  
then five years old,  
is betrothed to  
Edward's sister,  
Joan of the  
Tower,

then 7 years old.

The kyng at thai castellis liand  
Left his folk, as I bare on hand,  
And with the thrid host held his way  
Fra park to park, hym for to play,  
Huntand, as all his awn It war.

And till thame that war with him thar  
The landis of northumbirland,  
That next scotland thar wes liand,  
In fee and heritage gaf he,  
And thai payit for the selys fee.

On this wif raid he distroyand,  
Quhill that the kyng of Ingland,  
Throu consell of the mortymer,  
And his moder, at that tyme wer

[Ledaris] of hym, that than ȝoung wes,  
To kyng robert, till tret of peþ

Send messyngers, and swa sped thai,  
That thai assentit on this way,  
Than a perpetuall peþ to [tak],  
And thai a mariage suld mak

Of kyng robertis soñe davy,  
That than bot fiff ȝeir had scarsly,  
And of dame Iohane alf of the tour,  
That syne wes of full gret valour.

Sistir scho was to the ȝoung king  
That Ingland had in gouernyng,  
That eild had sevin ȝer.

[And monymenis and lettryss ser,

20

24

28

32

36

40

44

18. *bare*] bar.

21. *It*] E om.

24. *next*] neyst. *scotland thar*] to scotland EH. *wes*] war.

30. *at*] that E; that at H.

31. [Ledaris E] Leaders H; Leder C. *of*] to H.

32. *till*] to EH.

34. *thai*] he H.

35. Suld tha a perpetual pess tak E. [tak E] take H; mak C.

37. *Of*] With H; Off the E.

38. That fие yeeres auld was then surely H.

39. *Iohane*] Iane H. *tour*] towre H.

41. ȝoung] ȝing.

42. *Ingland had*] had Ingland.

43. [eild EH] Ingland (!) C. *than—had*] had in eild then H.

44—49. From E; CH omit.

That thai off Ingland that tyme had,  
 That ought agayn scotland maid,  
 In-till that trety $\beta$  wp thai gaff ;  
 And all the clame that thai mycht haff  
 In-till scotland on ony maner.]  
 And king robert, for scathef $\beta$  ser  
 That he till thame of Ingland  
 Had done of weir, with stalward hand,  
 Fully xx thousand pund suld pay  
 Of syluir in-to gude monay.

Quhen men thir thyngis forspokin had,  
 And with selys and athis maid  
 Fesnyng of frendship and of pef $\beta$ ,  
 That neuir for na chan $\beta$  suld cef $\beta$ ,  
 The maryage syne ordanit thai  
 Till be at berwyk, and the day  
 Thai haue set quhen [that] it suld be ;  
 Syne went ilk man till his Cuntry.  
 Thus maid wes pef $\beta$  quhar wer wes air,  
 And syne the assegis rasit wair.  
 The kyng robert ordanit till pay  
 The siluir, and agane the day  
 He gert weill for the [mangery]  
 Ordane, quhen that his sone davy  
 Suld weddit be ; and erll thomas $\beta$ ,  
 And the gud lord al $\beta$  of douglas,  
 In-till his stede syne ordanit he  
 Devysouris of that fest till be ;

48 The English give up all claim to Scotland,  
 and king Robert agrees to pay the sum of 20,000 pounds.

52

When this is arranged,

56

the marriage is appointed to take place at Berwick.

60

64 The sieges of Norham and Alnwick are raised.

68 [Fol. 67 b. E.] Arrangements are made for the wedding, and Murray and Douglas are appointed to conduct the marriage-feast.

72

Sieges H.

65. *robert*] H om. *till*] to E ; for to H.

66. *agane*] against H.

67. [*mangery* E] manitory C ; *misprinted* Maugery H.

70. *alss*] E omits ; follows And in H.

71. *syne*] E om.

72. *till*] to EH.

50. *scathess*] scaithis. *ser*] misprinted feare H.

51. *till*] to.

52. *of*] in H. *with*] through H.

54. *in-to*] and gold and H.

57. *Fesnyng*] Festnyng E ; Seesing H.

60. *Till*] To EH

61. [*that EH*] C om. *it*] this.

64. *syne*] thus. *assegis*] segis E ;

	For aīe male eī tuk hym so sare, That he on na viī mycht be thar.	
King Robert falls ill.	His maill eiī of Aīe fundyng Begouth ; for, throu his cald lying,	76
[Fol. 156. C.]	Quhen in his gret myschef wes he, Him fell that herd perplexite.	
He stays at Cardross.	At cardroī all that tym he lay ; And quhen neir cummyīne wes the day	80
Murray and Douglas go to Berwick with prince David,	That ordanit for the wedding wes, The Erll and the lord dowglaī To berwik come with mekill fair,	84
where they are met by the English queen, Mortimer,	And brought ȝoung davy with thaim thair. And the queyne and mortymer On othir party cummyn wer	
and the princess Joan.	Vith gret affeir and rialte ; The ȝoung lady of gret bewte Thidder thai brought with rich affeir.	88
Much rejoicing takes place,	The wedding haue thai maid richt ther With gret fest and solemnite ; Thair mycht men myrth and gladschip se.	92
and English and Scotch are very friendly.	For full gret fest thai maid richt thar, And Inglis men and scottis war To-gidder in Ioy and in solaī ;	96
The queen leaves the princess at Berwick.	Na fellowune spek betuix thaim was. The fest a weill lang tyīne held thai, And quhen thai buskit till fair avay,	100
	The queyn haī left hir douchter thar With gret richeī and ryall far.	
73. <i>ane -ess</i> ] a malice E; his sicknesse H. <i>tuk hym</i> ] him tuk.	86. <i>party</i> ] part.	
75. This malice off enfundeyng E; His sicknesse came of a fundyng H.	87. <i>Vith</i> ] With. <i>rialte</i> ] reawte E; Royaltie H.	
76. <i>Begouth for</i> ] He had tane H.	90. <i>maid richt</i> ] makyt.	
81. <i>weddyn</i> ] weddyn.	92. <i>gladschip</i> ] gladnesse H.	
82. <i>lord</i> ] lord of.	93. <i>full</i> ] rycht. <i>richt</i> ] E om.	
83. <i>To -come</i> ] Come to berwik.	95. <i>in (2)</i> ] EH om.	
84. <i>davy</i> ] dawy E; Dauid H.	96. <i>spek</i> ] speech H; E om.	
85. <i>and</i> ] and the. The Queene, and with her the Mortimer H.	98. <i>till</i> ] for till C; to EH. <i>avay</i> ] away.	
	100. <i>ryall</i> ] reale E; Royall H.	

I trow that lang quhill no lady  
 To houſe wes gevin so richly.  
 The Erll and the lord dowglaſſ  
 Hir in dante resauit haſſ,  
 As it wes worthy, sekyrly ;  
 For scho wes syne the best lady,  
 And the faireſt, that men mycht ſe.

Murray and  
Douglas receive  
her.

104

She was very fair.

Eftir this gret ſolempnitię,  
 Quhen on bath halfis leviſ wes tañe,  
 The queyne till Ingland hame is gane,  
 And had with hir the mortymer.

108

The queen and  
Mortimer return  
to England.

The Erll and thai that leuit wer,  
 Quhen thai a quhile hir convoyit had,  
 Toward berwik agañe thai raid ;  
 And syne, with all thar Cumpany,  
 Toward the kyng thai went in hy,

112

[Fol. 156 b. C.]

And had with thame the ȝoung davy,  
 And als dañe Iohane the ȝoung lady.

116

David and Joan  
go to visit king  
Robert,

The kyng maid thame fair welcummyng ;  
 And eftir, but lang delaying,

120

He haſſ gert set añe parliament,  
 And thiddir with mony men is went.

who appoints a  
parliament,

For he thought he wald in his liff

Crouñe his ȝoung ſone and his vif

124

At that parliament, and ſwa did he ;

With gret fair and ſolempnitię

The kyng davy wes crownyt thar ;

127

at which David  
is crowned king,  
and Joan queen.

\*And all the lordis at thar war,

127\*

102. *To—gevin*] Was gevyn till  
houſſ.

103. *The*] And the.

104. *dante*] daynte E ; great daintie  
H.

105. *wes*] war.

107. *mycht*] thurst.

109. *on*] of. *halfis*] half E ; sides  
H. *levis wes*] lewys war E ; the lieue  
was H.

111. *the*] E om.

112. *leuit*] levyt E ; leaued H.

118. *als*] precedes the in E.

*Iohane*] Iane H. *thw*] that.

120. *lang*] langer.

121. *ane*] A.

125. *At—and*] And at that parlea-  
ment.

127\*—130\*. *Found in CEHJ* ; but  
omitted in P.

127\*. *at*] that.

	*And alþ of the Comminite,	128*
	*Maid hym manrent and fewte.	129*
	*And forouth that thai crownit war,	130*
King Robert provides that, if his son David has no heir male,	The king robert gert ordane thar, Gif it fell that his sone davy Deit but air male of his body Gottyn, robert stiward suld be Kyng, and brwk [all] the Rialte, That his donchter bar, mariorty. And at this tale suld lelely Be haldin, all the lordis swar, And it with selys affermyt thar.	128
Robert Stewart, his grandson, is to be king;	And gif It [hapnyt] robert the kyng To pass till god, quhill thai [war] ȝyng, The gud Erll of murref, thomas, With the lord alsua of dowglas, Suld haue thame in-to gouernyng, Quhill thai had wit to steer thar thing ; And than the lordschip suld thai ta. Heir-till thair Athis can thai ma ;	132
and, if the king himself dies whilst David is a minor, Murray and Douglases are to be regents.	And all the lordis that wes thar Till thir twa vardanys athes swar, Till obeisþ thame in-to lawte, Gif thame hapnyt vardanys to be.	136
All the lords swear to observe these provisions.		140
		144
		148

[FOL. 157. C.]

**Q** when all this thing thus tretit wes,  
And affermyt with sekirneþ,

- 128\*. *Commuite*] comunyte.      138. *till*] to EH. [*war* E] were  
 129\*. *manrent*] manredyn E;      138. *murref*] Murray Sir H.  
 homage H.      140. *With*] And.  
 130\*. *forouth*] before H.      139. *Reigne* H.  
 130. *Deit*] Deyit E; Died H.      141, 142. *Transposed in H. thing*]  
 132. *brwk*] bruk E; brooke H.      so CE; Reigne H.  
 [all E] CH om. *Rialte*] realte E;      144. *can*] gan.  
 Royaltie H.      146. *vardanys*] wardanys; and in  
 133. *mariorty*] in Mariage H.      148.  
 134. *at*] that H. *tale*] tailȝe E;      147. *obeiss*] obey EH. *into*] in.  
 Tailyie H.      137. [hapnyt E] hapned H;

The king till cardroſ went in hy ;  
 And thar hym tuk sa felonly  
 His seknes, and him travalyt swa,  
 That [he] wist [him] behufit ma  
 Of all this liff the commouñe end,  
 That is the ded, quhen god vill send.

Tharfor his *lettres soyne* send he  
 For the lordis of his Cuntry ;  
 And thai com as he biddyn had.  
 His testament than haſ he maid  
 Befor bath lordis and prelatis ;  
 And till religioune of seir statis,

For heill of his saull, gaf he  
 Siluir in-to gret quantite.  
 He ordanit for his saull richt weill ;  
 And quhen at this wes doñe ilk deill,  
 "Lordingis," he said, "swa is it gane  
 With me, that thar is nocht bot aña,  
 That is, the ded, withouten dreid,

That ilk man mon thole on neid.  
 And I thank god that haſ me sent  
 Spas in this liff me till repent.  
 For throu me and my warraying  
 Of blud thar haſ beyne gret spilling,  
 Quhar mony sakleſ man wes slayne ;  
 Tharfor this seknes and this Payne

I tak in thank for my trespaſ.

The king returns  
 to Cardross,  
 152 where his sickness  
 becomes mortal.

156

He sends for his  
 lords,

160 and makes his  
 will.

He gives away  
 much silver for  
 164 the good of his  
 soul.

168

[Fol. 63. E.]  
 172 He says—  
 "I thank God  
 that I have had  
 time for  
 repentance ;  
 for I have been a  
 man of blood.

176

166. *at*] EH *om.* *ilk deill*] ilka-dele.

167. *Lordingis — said*] He said lordingis.

170. *mon*] sall H. *on*] so CH ; off E.

172. *till*] to EH ; and in ll. 180, 195.

174. *thar — beyne*] has bene rycht.

175. *wes*] war.

151. *till*] to EH.

152. *felonly*] felley E; suddenly

H.

153. *His*] The.

154. [he EH] him C. [him EH]  
 he C. *ma*] to ma.

155. *this*] his.

156. *the*] to. *ded*] death H.

159. *he biddyn*] thai biddyn.

162. *till*] to EH. *religioune*] Religions H. *statis*] Estates H.

165. *richt*] E *om.*

My fixed intention was,	And my hert fyschit fermly waſ, Quhen I wes in prosperite, Of my synnys till savit be, To travell apon goddis fayis. And sen he now me till hym tais, That the body may on na viſ Fulfill that the hert can deuiſ, I wald the hert war thiddir sent, Quhar-in consauit wes that entent. Tharfor I pray ȝow euir-ilkane, That ȝhe emang ȝow cheiſ me añe That be honest, wiſ, and wicht, And of his hand añe nobill knycht, On goddis fayis myne hert to bere, Quhen saull and corſ disseuerit [er]. For I wald it war worthely Brought thar, sen god will nocht that I Haue power thiddirward till ga.”	180
[Fol. 157b. c.]	Choose therefore a knight to bear it thither.”	184
They all weep;	Than war thair hertis all so wa, That nane mycht hald hym fra greting. He bad thame leiff thair sorowyng ;— “ For it,” he said, “ mycht nocht releif, And mycht [thaim-self] gretly engreif.”	192
but he prays them to carry out his wish.	He prayit thame in hy till do The thyng that thai war chargit to. Than went thai furth with drery mwde, And emang thame thai thought it gude,	196
		200
		204

178. *fyschit fermly*] fichyt sekyrly  
E : firmly set H.

181. *travell*] trawaill.

183. *That*] Swa that. *on*] E  
om.

184. *Fulfill*] Performe H. *can*] gan.

185. *the*] mine H.

188. *emang*] amang. *cheiss me*] all chuse H.

190. *anc*] A EH.

191. *myne*] my.

192. *corſ*] body H. [er E] are  
H ; were C ; see l. 216.

194. *Brought*] Had H.

198. *leiff*] leve.

199. *releif*] releve.

200. [thaim-self] themselues H ;  
thar self C ; thaim rycht E. *engreif*]  
engreve E ; grieue H.

201. *He*] And.

203. *mwde*] mode.

204. *And*] E om. *emang*] Amang.

That the worthy lord dowglaſ,	205	They choose Douglas to undertake the charge;
*Quham In bath wit and vorschip waſ,	206*	
*Suld tak this travaill apon hand ;	207*	
*Heir-till thai war all accordand.	208*	
*Syne till the kyng thai went in hy,	209*	
*And tald hym at thai thoughtrewly,	210*	and tell the king of their choice.
*That the douchty lord dowglaſ	211*	
Best schapen for that travell was.	206	
And quhen the king herd at thai swa		
Had ordanit hym, his hert till ta,	208	
That he mast ȝarnit suld it haf,		The king is much pleased at this, saying he too should have chosen Douglas.
He said, "sa god him-self me saff,		
I hald me richt weill payit, that ȝhe		
Haf chosyn hym ; for his bounte	212	
And his worschip set my ȝarnyng,		
Ay sen I thought till do this thyng,		
That he it with hym thar suld ber.		
And sen ȝhe all assentit er,	216	
It is the mar likand till me.		
Let se now quhat thar-till sayis he."		
And quhen the gud lord of Dowglaſ		[Fol. 158. C.]
Wist at the kyng thus spokyn haſ,	220	
He com and knelit to the kyng,		Douglas kneels before the king,
And on this viſ maid him thanking.		
"I thank ȝow gretly, lorde," said he,		
"Of mony large and gret bounte		and thanks him very heartily,
That ȝhe haſ done till me feill siſ,	224	

205. *worthy*] worthy. *lord*] lord of. . . 213. *And—set*] For Certes it hes  
206\*—211\*. E omits; found in bene H.  
CH.  
208\*. *Heir-till*] Hereto H.  
209\*. *Syne till*] And to H.  
210\*. *at*] that H.  
206. *schapen*] ordainde H. *travel*] trawaill.  
207. *at*] that EH.  
208. *till*] to EH; and in ll. 214,  
217.  
210. *saff*] saiff.
213. *And—set*] For Certes it hes  
bene H.  
215. *it—her*] mine heart sould  
with him beare H.  
219. *gud*] E om.  
220. *at*] that EH. *the kyng*] so  
CH; thing E. *hass*] was.  
222. *riss*] wiss. him thanking]  
his talking H.  
224. *large*] largess EH.  
225. *till*] to H; E om.

- 228
- Sen first I come to ȝour seruis.  
Bot our all thing I mak thanking,  
That ȝhe so digne and worthy thing  
As ȝour hert, that Illwmynyt wes  
Of all bounte and worthynes,  
Will that I in my ȝeemsell tak.  
For ȝow, schir, will I blithly mak  
This travell, gif god will me gif  
Laser and space so lange till lif.  
The kyng hym thankit tenderly;  
Thar wes name in that Cumpany  
That thai ne wepit for pite;  
Thair cher anoyus wes to se.
- 232
- The king thanks him.
- All weep.

- 236
- When the Douglas has undertaken this charge,
- he is much praised.
- The king grows worse,
- and gives up the ghost.
- Obitus roberti bruss regis scocie.**
- Q** when the lord dowglaſ on this viſ  
Had vndirtaſe so hye enpriſ,  
As the gud kyngis hert till ber  
On goddis fayis apon wer,  
Prisit for his enpriſ wes he.  
And the kyngis Infermitte  
Woxe mair & mair, quhill at the last  
The dulfull dede approchit fast.  
And quhen he had gert till hym do,  
All that gud cristin man fell to,  
With werray repentans he gaf
- 240
- 244
- 248

228. *so digne*] sa dyng.  
 229. *Illwmynyt*] enlumynyt E; il-  
luminate H.  
 230. *Oʃ*] With H. *worthynes*] all  
prowes.  
 231. *ȝeemsell*] ȝemsall E; keeping  
H.  
 232. *will I*] I will.  
 233. *travell*] trawaill.  
 234. *Laser*] Layser E; Laiser  
H.  
 236. *Thar*] Than.  
 237. *ne*] na. *thai—for*] weeped  
not for great H.
238. That was great sorrow for to  
see H.
239. *Rubric* in H—Here died King  
Robert, and was syne Solemnely  
buried in Dvnfermyne.
240. *hye*] hey.  
 241. *till*] to EH; and in l. 234.  
 242. *apon wer*] for to weere H.  
 243. *Prisit*] Praised H.  
 245. *Woxe*] Woux E; Was H.  
 246. *dede*] death H.  
 247. *till—do*] doe him to H.  
 248. *man—to*] men sould do H.

The gast, that god till hevin couth haf  
Emang his chosyn folk till be,  
In Ioy, solace, and angell gle.

252

When his death  
is known,

And fra his folk wist he wes ded,  
The sorow raif fra sted to sted.

Thair mycht men se men rif thar hare,  
And cumly knyghtis gret full sar,  
And thair nevis oft sammyn drift,  
And as wode men thair clathes rif,  
Regratand his worthy bounte,

His vit, strynth, and his honeste ;  
And, our all, the gret Cumpany  
That he oft maid thame curtesy.

“ All our defens,” thai said, “ allas !

And he that all our confort was,  
Our wit, and all our gouernyng,

Is brocht allas ! heir till Ending ;  
His worship and his mekill mycht  
Maid all that war with him so wicht,

260

That thai mycht neuir abaysit be,  
Quihill forouth thame thai mycht him se.

Allas ! quihat soll [we] do or say ?

For in liff quihill he lestit ay,  
With all our fais dred war we,  
And in-till mony fer Cuntrē

Of our worship ran the renouñe ;

And that wes all for his persouñe ! ”

268

272 Whilst he lived,  
we were dreaded  
everywhere.276 It was all due to  
him ! ”

250. *that*] whilk H. *couth haf*] . . . haiff E ; mot haue H.

251. *Emang*] Amang EH. *folk*] for H. *till*] to EH.

252. *angell*] Angells H.

256. *cumly*] comely H ; comounly E.

257. *neris*] newffys E ; hands H. *oft sammyn*] togidder H.

259. *Regratand*] Regarding H.

260. *vit*] wyt. *strynth and*] his strenth EH. *his (2)*] H om.

262. *oft — thame*] thaim maid oft.

264. *all*] haill H.

265. *and all*] our weale H.

266. *Is—allas*] Allace is brought.

270. *forouth*] before H.

271. [*we EH*] I C.

273. *fais*] faes H ; nychtbowris E.

274. *fer*] ser E ; other H.

275. *ran*] so CH ; sprang E.

	With sic vordis thai maid thair mayñe ;	
[Fol. 68 b. E.]	And sekirly wonder wes nane.	
	For bettir gouernour than he	
	Micht in na Cuntre fundyn be.	280
No man can describe their sorrow.	I hop that nane that is on lif	
	The lamentacioune suld discrif	
	That thai folk for thair lord maid.	
	And quhen thai lang thus sorowit had,	284
When he is disembowelled,	And he debowalit wes clenly,	285 [293]
his heart is given to Douglas.	And bawlm̄yt syñe full richly,	
	And the worthy lord dowglaſ	
His body is buried at Dunfermline.	His hert, as it forspokyn was,	288 [296]
	Haſ resauit in gret dantee,	
	With gret fair and solempnite	290 [298]
	Thai haue him had till dunfermlyñe,	291 [285]
	And hym solempnly erdit syñe,	
[Fol. 159. C.]	And in a fair towme in the queyr.	
	Bischoppes and prelatis that thar weir	294 [288]
His funeral service is carefully performed.	Assolȝeit hym, quhen the seruīſ	
	Wes done as thai couth best deuīſ ;	
	And syne, apon the toder day,	
	Sary and wa ar went thar way.	298 [292]

277. *vordis*] wordis.281. *lif*] lyve.282. The lament and sorrow can  
descriue H. *discrif*] discryve E;  
descriue H.283. *thai*] tha H; that E.284. *thai—thus*] that they lang

H.

285.—298. *The numbering in brackets follows Pinkerton's edition. Lines 291—298 are really misplaced in E, and follow l. 284. The arrangement in CH is the right one, and is here followed.*285. [293.] *debowalit*] debowaillyt  
E; bowelled H.286. [294.] *bawlm̄yt*] bawmyt E;  
balmed H. *full*] E om.287. [295.] *And—lord*] The worthyLord, the good H. *lord*] lord of.291. [285.] *him had*] had him.  
*dunfermlyne*] dunferlyne E; Dum-  
fermelyne H.292. [286.] *Here follows the catch-  
word*—And in a fair towme in the  
queyr.293. [287.] *And*] so H; spelt Ande  
C; E om. *towme*] tumb E; Tombe  
H. *in*] in-till. *queyr*] quer E;  
Queire H.297. [291.] *toder*] tothyr E; other  
H.298. [292.] *wa*] so EH; way C.  
*ar—way*] they went away H.299. *Rubric in H*—Here bouned  
the Lord Dowglas forward, To the  
haly Land with the Brvces Heart.

**Q** uhen at the gude king beriit was,  
 The Erll of mwrreff, schir thomas,  
 Tuk all the lande in governyng ;  
 All obeysit till his bidding.

And the gud lord of dowglaſ syñe  
 Gert mak añe caſ of siluir fyñe,  
 Anamalyt throu subtilite.

Thar-in the kyngis hert did he,  
 And ay about his half̄ it bare,  
 And fast him bownyt for his fare.

His testament deuisit he,  
 And ordanit how his land suld be  
 Gouernit, quhill his agane-cummyng,  
 Of frendis, and all other thing  
 That till him partenit ony viſ,  
 With sa gude forsicht and sa viſ  
 Or his furth-passyng ordanit he,  
 That na thing mycht amendit be.

And quhen that he his leif haſ tañe,  
 To schip till berwik is he gane ;  
 And, with añe nobill Cumpany  
 Of knychtis and of squary,

He put him thar in-to the se.  
 A lang way furthwarde salyt he ;  
 Betuyx cornwale and bretanȝe  
 He salit, and left the grund of spanȝe

On north half hym ; and held thar way

299

Sir Thomas  
Murray becomes  
regent.

Douglas places  
the Bruce's heart  
304 in a case of silver,  
well enamelled,

and bears it  
about his neck.

308

He makes  
arrangements for  
his absence.

312

He takes ship at  
Berwick.

316

He sails between  
Brittany and  
Cornwall,

320

315. *Or*] Ere H.  
 317. *hass*] had.  
 318. *till*] to E ; at H.  
 319. *ane*] A E ; him a H.  
 321. *thar into*] thar to E ; in hy  
to H.  
 322. *furthwarde*] furthwart.  
 323. *Betuyx*] For betuix. *bret-*  
*anȝe*] bretaynne E ; Baṛtanyie H.  
 324. *spanȝe*] spainȝe E ; Spainyie  
H.

299. *at*] that EH.

300. *mwrreff*] Murray H.

302. *obeysit*] obeyit E ; obeyed

H.

304. *siluir*] gold right H.

305. *Anamalyt*] Ennamylt E ;

Enamalled H.

306. *did*] put H.

308. *his*] to EH.

311. *agane*] gayn.

312. *of*] By H.

314. *sa gude*] sik. *riss*] wyss.

and arrives at Seville.	Quihill till sebell the graunt com thai. Bot gretly war his men and he Travaled with tempest on the se;	328
[Fol. 159 b. C.]	Bot though thai gretly travalit war, Haill and feir thai cummyn ar. Thai arivit at graunt sebell ;	
They disembark, and repair to the town.	And eftir, in a litill quhill, Thar horſ to land thai drew ilkañe, And in the touñe haſ herbery tañe. [He] hym contenynt richt richly ;	332
	For he had a fair Cumpany, And gold eneuch for till despend.	336
The king of Spain sends for Douglas, and offers him treasure.	The kyng all soyne eftir hym send, And him richt weill resavit he, And profferit hym in gret plente Gold and tresour, horſ, and armyng ;	340
Douglas refuses,	Bot he wald tak thar-of na thyng. “For,” he said, “he tuk that viage To paſ in-till his pilgrimage	344
saying that he will, however, help him against the Saracens.	On goddis fais, that his travale Micht eftir till his saull avale. And sen he wist that he had were With sarazenis, he wald dwell ther,	348
The king thanks him.	And help him at his mycht lely.” The king him thankit Curtesly, And betaucht him gud men that were Weill knawin of [that] landis [wer],	352

326. *till*] to EH. *sebell—graunt*] savill the graunt E; Massillie ground H.

328. *Travaled*] Trawaillyt. *tempest*] tempestis EH. *on*] of.

329. *travalit*] trawaillit E; grieued H.

330. *thai*] ar thai. *ar*] thar.

331. *graunt sebell*] gret savill. And landed at the great Sibille H.

335. [He E] And CH. *richt*] E om.

337. *eneuch*] ynewch. *till*] to EH. 338. *all soyne*] alsone E; Alphous H. *eftir hym*] him efte.

341. *tresour*] siluer H.

343. *he said*] E om.

344. *his*] E om.

346. *eftir—saull*] till his saule hele.

349. *help*] serve. To helpe him was his will haily H.

352. *of*] with H. [that E] the H; thai C. [wer E] weere H; seir C.

And the maner thar-of alsua;

Syne till his Innys can he ga.

Quhen that the king him levit had,

A weill gret sudIorne thair he mad.

Knychtis that com of fer Cuntre

Com in gret rowtis hym to se,

And honorit him full gretumly;

And our all men mast soueranly

The ynglis<sup>3</sup> knychtis that war thar

Honour and Cumpany hym bar.

Emang thaīne wes aīe strange knycht,

That wes haldyn so woundir wicht,

That for aīe of the gude wes he

Prisit of all the Cristianite.

So fast till-hewyn wes all his face,

That it our all neir wemmyt waī.

Or he the lord dowglaī had seyne,

He wend his face had wemmyt beyīe,

Bot neuīr aīe hurt in It had he.

Quhen he vnwemmyt can it se,

He said that he had gret ferly

That sic a knycht and sa vorthy,

And prisit of sa gret bounte,

Micht in the face vnwemmyt be.

Douglas abides  
there for some  
time,

and many foreign  
knights come to  
see him.

360

[Fol. 160. C.]

364

One knight,  
much esteemed,

had his face all  
covered with  
scars.

368

372 When he sees  
Douglas's face  
without a scar,  
he expresses his  
astonishment.

376

353. *thar-of*] of the land H.

354. *can*] gan.

355, 356. And well good Soiourne  
there he made, And meekele treating  
als he had H.

356. *sudIorne*] soiourne E; Soiourne H.

357. *fer*] ser.

358. *rowtis—to*] hy him for to.

360. *our—mast*] out our all men  
fer.

363. Amang thai strangeris was A  
knycht E; Amang them all was ane  
strang Knight H.

364. *woundir*] wonder H; worthi  
and E.

365. *gude*] best H.

366. *Prisit*] Praised H. *all*] E  
*om.* *the*] H *om.*

367. *till-hewyn*] so E; till-hewyne  
C; to Heauen (!) H; to-hewen (*a better  
form*) A. *all*] E *om.*

368. *our—wemmyt*] well neere all  
wounded H.

369. *Or*] Ere H.

370. *wemmyt*] all wounded H.

371. *ane*] A EH. *in It*] tharin.

372. *vnwemmyt*] vnwounded H.  
*can*] gan.

374. *sic*] swilk. *vorthy*] worthi.

375. *prisit*] praised H.

376. *the*] his H. *vnwemmyt*] vn-  
wounded H.

Douglas answers  
meekly,  
"Praise God,  
I had always  
hands to defend  
my face."

And he ansuerd thar-till mekly,  
And said, "love god, all tym had I  
Handis, myne hede [for] till were."  
Quha wald tak tent to this ansuer,

380

[Fol. 69. E.]

Suld se in it vndirstandynge,  
[That, and] he that maid askyng  
Had had handis to wer his face,

384

This was a  
reproof to the  
knight for his  
lack of fence.

That for defalt of fenſ so was  
To-fruscht in-to placis ser,  
Suld haf, may fall, left haill and fer.  
The gud knychtis that than war by  
Prisit this ansuer gretunly;

388

For it wes maid with meke speking,  
And had richt hye vndirstanding.  
Apon this maner still thai lay,  
Quhill throu the cunte thai herd say

392

The king of  
Belmarine  
invades Spain.

That the [hey] kyng of Balmeryñe,  
With mony a mwdy sarasyñe,  
Wes enterit in the land of spanȝe,  
All haill the Cunte till [de]manȝe.

396

[Fol. 160 b. C.]

The kyng of spanȝe, on othir party,  
Gaderit his host delyuerly,  
And delt thame in-to battellis thre.  
And to the lord dowglas gaf he

400

377. *till*] to E.

378—386. H has wrong rimes, and puts 9 lines into 6, thus:—And said, God lent me hands to beare, Wherewith I might my head weere. Thus made he courteous answering, With a right hie vnderstanding: That for default of Fence it was, That sa euill hewen was his face.

379. [for E] C om.

380. *tent*] kep.

382. [That and E] And that (wrongly) C. askyng] that asking.

383. *had*] E om.

384. *defalt—fenſſ*] faute off defence.

385. *in-to*] in-till.386. *may* E] ma C.

388. *Prisit*] Praised H. this] hys EH.

389. *meke*] small H.390. *hye*] hey.

391. *Rubric* in H—The iudging of the Lord Dowglas, That in his time sa worthie was.

393. [hey E] CH om. *Balmeryne* so CE; Palmeryn H.

394. *mwdy*] mody.

395. *in*] in-till. *spanȝe*] Spaine H.

396. *till demanȝe*] for till manȝe C; to (followed by blank space) E; to demaine H.

399. *thame*] hym. *into*] intill.

The waward, for to leid and steer ;  
 All haill the strangeris with him weir.  
 And the gret mastir of saint Iak  
 The tothir battell gert he tak.  
 The Reirward maid hym-[selvyn] thar.  
 Thusgat deuisit, furth thai war  
 To mete thair fayis, that in battale,  
 Arayit reddy to assale,  
 Com agane thame full sturdely.  
 The dowglas than, that wes vorthys,  
 Quhen he to thame of his ledyng  
 Had maid añe fair amonestyng  
 Till do weill, and na dede to dreid ;  
 For hewynnis bliȝ suld be thair meid,  
 Gif that thai deit in goldis scruiȝ ;  
 Than, as gud werriours and wiȝ,  
 With thame stoutly assemblit he.  
 Thar mycht men fellowne fechting se ;  
 For thai war all wicht and hardy  
 That war on the cristyn party.

\*[Bot ere they ioyned in battell,  
 \*What Dowglas did, I sall you tell.

\*¶ The *Bruces Heart*, that on his brest  
 \*Was hinging, in the field he kest,  
 \*Vpon a stane-cast, and well more :  
 \*And said, “ now passe thou foorth before,  
 \*As thou wast wont in field to be,

The Spanish king  
 gives Douglas  
 the command of  
 the vanguard.  
 The Master of  
 St Iago leads the  
 second battalion;

and the king  
 himself,  
 the rearguard.

408

Douglas exhorts  
 his men,

412

416 and leads them  
 forward.

420

421\*

424\*

Then Douglas  
 takes from his  
 neck the case  
 with the Bruce's  
 heart, and casts it  
 before him,  
 saying, “ Pass  
 thou forward,

401. *waward*] awaward E; Vangard H. *for*] E om.

402. And all the strangers that with  
him were H.

403. *Iak*] Iake H.

405. *Reirward*] Reeregard H.  
[*selvyn*] selwyn E; self CH.

408. *Arayit*] Arayit wes C; Arrayed  
was H; Arayit (omitting wes) E.

409. And came against them  
sturdely H.

410. *than*] E om. *wes*] wes sa.

412. *ane*] A EH. *amonestyng*]  
monesting E; admonishing H; *mis-*  
*written* amostyng C.

413. *Till*] To EH.

414. *hewynnis*] hevynnis.

419. *hardy*] worthi.

421\*—432\*. CE omit; *in* H  
*only*.

422\*. *Dowglas*] the Dowglas H.

423\*. *Bruces*] printed in roman,  
not in black letter.

and I will follow or die."	*And I sall follow, or els de."	428*
	*And sa he did withoutten ho,	
	*He faught euen while he came it to,	
	*And tooke it vp in great daintie ;	
	*And euer in field this vsed he.]	432*
Many are slain on both sides.	So fast [thai] faucht with all thar mayñe,	421
	That of sarasenys war mony slayñe ;	
	The quhethir, with mony fell fachouñe,	
	Mony cristyn thai dang thar douñe.	424
At last Douglas and his men put the Saracens to the rout.	Bot at the last the lord douglas, And the gret rout that with hym was, Pressit fast the sarasenys swa, That thai haly the bak can ta.	428
Douglas chases the fugitives till he is in front of all his men.	And thai chassit with all thar mayñ, And mony in the chaſſ haſſ slayñ. So fer chassit the lord dowglas With few folk, that he passit wes	432
[Fol. 161. C.]	All the folk that wes chassand then.	
	He had nocht with him atour ten Of all men that war with him thar.	
	Quhen he saw all reparit war,	436
He then turns backward;	Toward his host than turnit he. And as he turnit, he can weill se That all the chassaris turnyt agane ; And thai [relyit] with mekill mayñe.	
	And as the gud lorde dowglas,	440
but, in returning,	As I said air, reparand was,	

428\*. *de*] die H.421. [thai] they H; C om. So—  
faucht] And faucht sa fast.422. *of*] E om. sarasenys] their  
seruants (!) H.423. *fell*] fele.424. *Mony*] Mony A EH. thai—  
thar] dang that EH.426. *gret rout*] Christians H.427. *fast*] vpon H; E om428. *bak*] flight H. *can*] gan.431. *lord*] lord of.432. *folk*] E om.433. *wes*] war. Foorth far fra  
them that chased then H.434. *atour*] our E; bot skant H.438. So CH; And quhen the sary-  
zynys gan se E439. *all*] E om.440. *And*] E om. [relyit E] reelled  
H; relevit C. (Here thai = the Saracens; see l. 500.)441. *lorde*] lord of EH.442. *air*] er.

So saw he, richt besyd hym ner,  
 Quhar that schir willȝame de sancler  
 With a gret rout enveremyt waſ.  
 He wes anoyit and said, “allaſ !  
 3one worthy knycht will soyn be ded,  
 Bot he haf help throu our manhed.  
 God biddis vs help him in gret hy,  
 Sen that we ar so neir hym by.  
 And god wat weill our entent is  
 Till lif and de in his seruſ ;  
 His will in all thing do sall we,  
 Sall na perell eschevit be  
 Quhill he be put out of ȝoñe payñe,  
 Or than we all be with hym slayn.”  
 With that with spurris spedely  
 Thai strak the horſ, and in gret hy  
 Amang the saracenys soyne thai raid,  
 And rowme about thaſe haf thai maid.  
 Thai dang on fast with all thair mycht,  
 And feill of thame to ded haſ dicht.  
 Gretar defens maid neuir sa quhoyñe  
 Agane so feill, as thai haue doyne,  
 Quhill thai mycht lest to gif battale.  
 Bot mycht no worschip thar avale  
 That tym, for ilkane war ſlayn thar ;  
 The sarasynys sa mony war  
 That thai war tuenty neir for Añe.  
 The ged Lord douglaf thar wes ſlaſe,

sees Sir William  
de Sinclair  
surrounded.

444 448 Douglas turns  
to rescue him,

452 exhorting his  
men to help him.

456

He and his men  
charge the  
Saracens,

460

and fight bravely,

464 but are over-  
powered by  
numbers.

All are slain.

468

[Fol. 161 b. C.]

Douglas is slain,

443. *hym*] thaim.

444. *de sancler*] the sanctecler E ;  
de Sinclere H.

445. *enveremyt*] enweround E ; en-  
uironed H.

448. *throu*] and.

449, 450. *Transposed in C. God*] E om. For l. 449, H has—Let vs then helpe him now in hy.

451. *god*] I H.

452. *and*] or. *his*] Gods H.

454. *eschevit*] eschewyt.

457. *spurris*] spurres right H.

459. *soyne*] syne H ; E om.

465. *to gif*] thei gaf.

466. *avale*] awaill.

467. That thai ilkan war slayne doun thar.

468. *The*] For.

and with him Sir William Sinclair,	And vilȝame sancler syne alsua ; And other worthy knychtis twa, Schir robert [logan] hat the tañe, And the tothir walter Logañe ; Quhar our Lord for his mekill myeht Thair saulys haue to hevynnis Licht !—AMEN.	472
Sir Robert Logan, and Sir Walter Logan.		476

The Saracens retire.	<b>T</b> HE gud Lord douglas thus wes ded ; And the sarasenys in that sted Abail no mair, bot held thar way ; Thair knychtis ded thar levit thai.	480
Douglas's men find his body,	Sum of the Lord douglassis men, That thair Lord [ded] had fundyn then, ȝeid weill neir wood for dule & wa.	
and bear him away.	Lang quhile our hym thai sorowit swa,	484
[Fol. 69 b. E.]	And with gret dule syne hame him bar.	
They also find the Bruce's heart,	The kyngis hert haue thai fundyn thar. And that haym with thame haue thai tañe,	
with which they depart in sorrow.	And ar toward [thair] Innys gañe With greting and with euill cher ; Thair sorow angyr wes to her.	488
Sir William Keith,	And quhen of keth gud schir vilȝame, That all that day had beyn at hame— For at sa gret myschef wes he,	
	That he come nocth to the Iournee,	492

471. *vilȝame—syne*] *schyr wilȝam*  
the sancte cler E; Sir William Sin-  
clare H.

473. [logan] logane EH; mis-  
written regan C.

474. *walter*] schyr waltir.

475. *Quhar*] Wherefore H. *for*  
*his*] with II.

476. *to*] till his E; to the H.  
*hevynnis Licht*] hewynnys hycyth E;  
Heauens hight H.

478. *the*] E om.

480. *levit*] lewyt E; soone leaved  
H.

\* 481. *Lord*] good Lord H. doug-

*lassis*] dowglas EH.

482. [ded EH] C om. *had*] has.

483. *wa*] so EH; miswritten way  
C.

485. *with—syne*] syne with gret  
dule.

488. [thair E] their H; the  
C.

490. *angyr—to*] wes angry for till.  
That sorrow and grieve it was to heare  
H.

493. *myschef*] malice (*for male*  
ese) E; disease H.

For his Arme wes brokyne in twa—  
 [Quhen he that folk sic dule saw ma,  
 He askyt quhat it wes in hy,  
 And thai him tauld all opynly,  
 How that thar douchty lord wes slayn  
 With sarazynys that releyt agayn.  
 And quhen he wzyst that It was sua,]  
 Atour all other he wes mast wa,  
 And maid so woundir euill cher,  
 That all wunderit that by him wer.  
 Bot till tell of thair sorowynge  
 Anoyis, and helpis litill thing.  
 Men may weill wit, thouch nañe thaim tell,  
 How angry, sorowfull, and how fell  
 Is till tyne sic añe lord as he  
 Till thame that war of his menȝhe.  
 For he wes [swete] and debonar,  
 And weill couth tret his frendis far,  
 And his fais richt felonly  
 Stonay, throu his gret cheuelry.  
 The quhethir of litill effer wes he,  
 Bot our all thing he lufit Lawte ;  
 At tresoun [growyt he] so gretly,  
 That na tratour mycht be hym by,  
 That he mycht wit, na he suld be  
 Weill pwnyst of his Cruelte.

495. *wes brokyne*] brokyn wes.496—501. *From E; also in H;*  
*not in C.*496. *that folk*] tha folkes H.498. *him tauld*] tauld him H.500. *releyt*] had turned H.502. *he—mast*] him was.505. *till*] to EH.506. *Anoyis*] It noyis.507. *tell*] told H.508. *sorowfull*] for sorow. What  
dule and sorrow men make wald H.509. *Is*] For H. *till*] to EH.  
*ane*] A EH.

496 kept at home  
that day by a  
broken arm,  
asks for whom  
they grieve ?

500 Hearing of  
Douglas's death,  
his grief is  
excessive.  
504 It is needless to  
say how they  
were all grieved.

508

[Fol. 162. C.]

512 For Douglas  
was kind to his  
friends,  
and terrible to  
his foes.

516

He detested  
disloyalty.

520

510. *Till*] To. *Till-war*] Was  
vnto them H.

511. [swete E] sweet H; stout C.

514. *Stonay*] Astonish H. *gret*]  
E om.515. *effer*] affer. For of full little  
feare was he (*wrongly*) H.516. *Bot*] E om. *our*] so E; ouer  
H; out-our C. *he lufit*] luffit he.517. [growyt he E] groowed H;  
grevit C.519. *That—mycht*] But he should  
H. *na he*] that he ne E; that he H.520. *pwnyst*] punyst. *of*] for H.

Fabricius, who warrel against Pyrrhus, hated treason as he did.  Once, when Fabricius was defeated,	I trow, the leill fabricius, That fra rome [to warray] pirrus Wes send with a gret menȝe, [Hatif] tresoune na leſ than he.  The quhethir, quhen this pirrus had, On him and on his menȝe, mayd Añe outrageouȝ disemfitour, Quhar he eschapt throu auentour, And mony of his men war slane, And he gaderit añe host agañe, A gret mastir of medicyne That pirrus had in governyne Profferit to this fabricius In tresoune for to slay pirrus; For in his first potacioune He suld him gif dedly poysoune.	524
Pyrrhus' physician offered to poison his master.	 Fabricius than, that wondir had That he sic proffer till hym maid, Said, "Certis, rome is wele of mycht Throu strynth of Armys in-to ficht, Till vencouȝ weill thar fais, thouch thai Consent to tresoune be na way.  And for thou wald do sic tresoune, Thou sall, to get thi warisoune, Ga till pirrus, and lat hym do	528
But Fabricius replied that Rome could conquer her foes without foul means,	 529. <i>will</i> ] Lord H. 522. [to warray] to warray E ; to wearray H ; warrayit C.  524. [Hatif] Hated H ; Lufit (!) C ; Luffyt (!) E. 525. <i>this</i> ] that H ; E om. 528. <i>auentour</i> ] auentour E ( <i>printed</i> ane tour PJ); auenture H. 530. <i>gaderit</i> ] had gaderyt EH. ane] his H ; E om. 532. <i>pirrus had</i> ] had pyrrus. 533. <i>Profferit</i> ] Profferyt E ; mis- written Perofferit C. <i>to this</i> ] to E ; vnto H.	532
and sent the physician to Pyrrhus,	 534. <i>for</i> ] E om. 535. For in-till his neyst potioune. 536. <i>him gif</i> ] gifft hym. <i>poysoune</i> ] pusonne. 537. <i>than</i> ] EH om. 538. Off that preffre that he him maid. 539. <i>wele</i> ] welle E ; meekle H. 541. <i>Till vencouȝ</i> ] To wencouȝ E ; To vanquish H. <i>weill</i> ] E om. 544. I sall the gat A warysoun E ; Thou salt ga fetch to warisoun H. 545. <i>till</i> ] to. <i>Ga till</i> ] Euen at H.	536

521. *will*] Lord H.522. [to warray] to warray E ; to  
wearray H ; warrayit C.

524. [Hatif] Hated H ; Lufit (!) C ; Luffyt (!) E.

525. *this*] that H ; E om.528. *auentour*] auentour E (*printed*  
ane tour PJ); auenture H.530. *gaderit*] had gaderyt EH.  
ane] his H ; E om.532. *pirrus had*] had pyrrus.533. *Profferit*] Profferyt E ; mis-  
written Perofferit C. *to this*] to E ;  
vnto H.534. *for*] E om.

535. For in-till his neyst potioune.

536. *him gif*] gifft hym. *poysoune*]  
pusonne.537. *than*] EH om.538. Off that preffre that he him  
maid.539. *wele*] welle E ; meekle H.541. *Till vencouȝ*] To wencouȝ E ;  
To vanquish H. *weill*] E om.544. I sall the gat A warysoun  
E ; Thou salt ga fetch to warisoun  
H.545. *till*] to. *Ga till*] Euen at H.

Quhat euir in hert hym lyis the to."

[Fol. 162 b. C.]

Than till pirrus he sende in hy

This mastir, and gert [him] oppenly  
Fra end till end tell all this tale.

Quhen pirrus had it herd all hale,  
He said, "wes neuir man that swa

For laute bar hym till his fa,

As heir fabricius dois till me,

It is als [Ill] to ger hym be

Turnyt fra way of richtwisnes,

Or to consent till vikidnes,

As at mydday to turne agaue

The sone, that rynnys [his] courf all playn."

Thus said he of fabricius,

That syne vencust this ilk pirrus

In playne battell throu hard fechting.

His honest lawte gert me bryng

In this ensampell her, for he

Had soueraue pris of his lawte;

And richt sua had the lord douglas,

That honest, leill, and worthy was;

That ded wes, as befor said we;

All menyt hym, strange and prewe.

Quhen his men lang had maid murnyng,

Thai debowellit hym, and syue

Gert seth hym, [swa that] mycht be taue

The flesche all haly fra the baue.

548 to tell him all  
the plot.

When Pyrrhus  
heard it,

552

he declares that  
Fabricius could  
no more be turned  
from virtue than  
the sun from its  
course.

556

560 Afterwards,  
Fabricius  
conquered  
Pyrrhus in fair  
fighting.

564

So likewise was  
Douglas honest,  
loyal, and worthy.

568

Douglas's men  
boil his body to  
remove the flesh  
from his bones.

572

546. Quhat euir him lyis on hart  
thar-to.

564. *priss*] praise H. *his lawte*] true Lawtie H; leawte E.

548. [him H] CE om.

565. *richt*] E om. *lord*] lord of.

549. *all*] him.

566. *ded wes*] wes ded EH.

551. *neuir*] euir.

567. *strange*] strange or strangis

553. *dois*] beares H.

C; strang E. *prewe*] priue. H has

554. [Ill EH] euill C.

—Men meened him in ilk Countrie.

556. *to*] ellis. *till*] to EH.

568. They bowelled him but de-

558. [his EH] the C. *all*] E om.

laying H.

560. *vencust*] wencussynt E; van-

quisht H. *ilk*] same H.

563. *her*] now H.

571. *Gert*] And gart H. *seth*]

seeth H; scher E. [swa that E] that

H; and syne C.

The carioun thair in haly plas  
 Erdit with richt gret vorschip waſ ;  
 The Banys haue thai with thame tañe,  
 And syne ar till thar schippes gañe.

576

They take his  
 bones with them,  
 and depart  
 homewards.

[Fol. 163. C.]

Quhen thai war levit of the kyng,  
 That dule had of thar sorowyng,  
 Till se thai went, gud wynd thai had,  
 Thair courſ till Ingland haf thai maid,

580

And thair saufly arivit thai ;  
 Syne toward scotland held thar vay,  
 And thar ar cummyñe in full gret hy.

584

And the banys richt honorabill  
 In-till the kirk of dowglaſ war  
 Erdit, with dule and mekill car.

They return  
 to Scotland,

and bury the  
 bones in the  
 church of  
 Douglas.

His son,  
 Sir Archibald,  
 [Fol. 70. E.]  
 rears a tomb of  
 alabaster to him.

Schir arch[i]bald his soñe gert syñe  
 Of alabast bath fair and fyñe  
 [Ordane] a towme full richly,  
 As it behufit till swa worthy.

588

**Q** when that [on] this viſ ſchir vilȝañe  
 Of keyth had brought the banis hañe,  
 And the gud kyngis hert alsua,  
 And men had richly gert ma  
 With fair affeir the sepulture,  
 The Erll of murreff, that the cure  
 That tyme of scotland had haly,

592

573. *The]* And the. *carioune]* Corps H. *in]* in a H.  
 576. *till]* to EH.  
 577. *levyt]* lewyt E; leaved II.  
 578. *of]* for. *sorowyng]* ſeuering H.

H. *full]* ſa.590. *behufit]* behowyt E; effeered H. *till]* to EH.591. *Rubric in H*—The Erle of Mvrray died here, Through Poysoun giuen by a false Frere. [*on EH*] of C. *viss]* wiss.592. *kcyth]* keth. *the]* his.595. *affeir]* effer E; affeere H; afeir C. *the]* his E; a H.596. *murrēff]* Murray H. *the]* had the.597. *had haly]* halely.

579. *Till]* To EH.  
 584. *richt]* E om.  
 587. *archibald H]* archebald E;  
 archbald C.  
 588. *alabast]* ſo CE (*printed ala-*  
*bastre PJ*); Allabast H.  
 589. [Ordane E] Ordanit C; Or-  
 daine H. *towme]* tumbe E; Tombe

With gret worship haf<sup>t</sup> gert bery  
 The kyngis hert at the abbay  
 Of melrof, quhar men [prayis] ay  
 That he and his haffe paradis.  
 Quhen this wes done that I deuif,  
 The gode Erll gouernit the land,  
 And held the pure weill to warand.

The law sa weill mantemyt he,  
 And held in peſ swa the Cuntre,  
 That it wes neuir led or his day  
 So weill, as I herd ald men say.

Bot syne, allaf! poysonyt wes he ;  
 To se his ded wes gret pite.  
 The lordis deit apon this viſ.

He, that hye Lorde of al thing is,  
 Vp till his mekill bliſ thaſe bryng,  
 And grant [his] grace, that thar ofſpryng  
 Lede weill the Land, and ententif  
 Be to [folow], in all thair liff,  
 Thair nobill elderis gret bounte !  
 [The] afald god in trinite  
 Bryng ws hye vp till hevynnis bliſ,

Quhar all-wayis leſtand liking is !—AMEN.

Murray causes  
 the Bruce's heart  
 to be buried in  
 the Abbey at  
 Melross.

600 Melross.

604

He maintained  
 the laws,  
 and kept the  
 country at peace.

608

At last he was  
 poisoned ;  
 and thus the  
 lords died.

612 [Fol. 163b C.]

God grant that  
 their successors  
 may imitate  
 their virtue.

616

God bring us ail  
 to heaven !

620

600. [prayis] prays E ; do pray H ; miswritten playis C.

602. wes] E om.

604. pure] poor H ; power E.

605. law] Lawes H ; lave E. man-  
 temyt] so CE ; maintained H.

607. led] E om.

608. I] Ik.

609. poysonyt] pusonyt.

610. By a false Monk full traiter-  
 ously H.

611. The] Thir.

612. hye] hey E ; H om.

613. mekill] ioyfull H.

614. [his E] vs CH.

615. the Land] E om.

616. [folow E] follow H ; mis-  
 written forow C.

617. nobill] so E ; Noble H ; mis-  
 written nobillis C.

618. [The EH] Quhar C. afald]  
 afauld E ; anefald H.

619. Bryng] May bring H. hye—  
 hevynnis] hey till his mekill E ; vp  
 to Heauens H.

620. leſtand liking] ioy and rest-  
 ing H. Amen] E om.

(Colophon in C.)

Aug. 28,  
A.D. 1487.

Explicit liber excellentissimi et nobilissimi principis roberti de broyss scottorum regis illustrissimi qui quidem liber scriptus fuit & finitus in vigilia sancti Iohannis baptiste viz. decollacio eiusdem per manum I. de R. capellanum Anno domini Millesimo quadragesimo octagesimo septimo.

## EPITAPH.

**Epitaphium regis roberti broyss.**  
**Hic Iacet inuictus Robertus Rex benedictus;**  
**Qui sua gesta legit, reperit quot bella peregit;**  
**Ad libertatem deduxit per probitatem**  
**Regnum scottorum: nunc viuit in arce polorum.**

(Colophon in E.)

A.D. 1489.

[Finitur codicellus de virtutibus et actibus belli-  
 cosis, viz. domini Roberti broyß, quondam Scottorum  
 regis illustrissimi, Raptim scriptus per me Iohannem  
 Ramsay, ex iusu venerabilis & circumspecti viri, viz.  
 magistri Symonis lochmaleny de ouchtirmunseye, vicarij  
 bene digni, Anno domini millesimo quadragesimo  
 octuagesimo Nono.

Anima domini Roberti bruyß, et anime omnium  
 fidelium defunctorum per Dei manum, requiescant in  
 pace. Amen, Amen, Amen.

Desine grande loqui, frangit deus omne superbum;  
 Magna cadunt, inflata crepant, tumefacta premuntur;  
 Scandunt celsa humiles, trahuntur ad yma feroceis;  
 Vincit opus verbum, minuit Iactantia famam.

Per ea viscera marie virginis que portauerunt eterni  
 patris filium. Amen.—E.]

(Colophon in H.;  
ed. 1616.)

Here endes the booke of the Noblest King,  
 That euer in Scotland yet did ring,  
 Called King Robert the Brvce,  
 That was maist worthy of all ruce;  
 And of the Noble & good Lord Dowglas,  
 And mony ma that with them was.—H.

How the good wife taught her daughter.

---

A Dietary.



# [How the good wife taught her daughter.]

---

[THE two following pieces are printed here because they immediately follow "The Bruce" in the St John's College MS. They are in the same handwriting as "The Bruce," and were no doubt written at the same time, viz. in 1487.

Of "How the good wife taught her daughter" there are at least eight copies extant. They are numbered and described at p. xiv of "The Hystorie of the Moste noble Knight Plasidas, and other rare pieces, collected into one book by Samuel Pepys, and forming part of The Pepysian Library at Magdalene College, Cambridge. Printed for the Roxburghe Club. 1873," edited by H. H. Gibbs, Esq. Following Mr Gibbs' numbering, the copies are as follows:

1. A version reprinted in the volume just mentioned, pp. 163—171, said to have been derived from a MS. "reserved long in the Studie of a Northfolke Gentleman," and first printed in 1597, with the following Title-page :

THE | NORTHREN | MOTHERS | BLESSING. | *The way of Thrift.* | VWritten nine yeares | before the death of G. | Chaucer. | LONDON, | Printed by Robert Robinson for | *Robert Dexter.* 1597. | In 33 seven-line stanzas, the last three lines being much shorter than the first four, as in Nos. 5, 6, 7, and 8. Some of the stanzas are irregular. It is proper to add that "The Way to Thrift" is a separate poem, of 71 lines, beginning—"Lord God what is this worldes wele," and ending—"And from solace turnes to suddain sorrow;" reprinted in The Hystorie of Plasidas, pp. 173—175.

2. A copy in MS. Kk. i. 5 in the Cambridge University Library, printed in Ratis Raving, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby (E. E. T. S. 1870); pp. 103—112, and entitled "The Thewis off Gudwomen." It consists of 316 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed, and is of the same type. See further remarks below.

3. The copy here printed, from MS. G. 23 in the library of St John's College, Cambridge, foll. 164—167. Written out by J. de R. in 1487.

4. A copy in MS. Ashmole 61, fol. 7, entitled "How þe Goode Wyfe tauȝt hyr Douȝter," printed in Queene Elizabethes Achademy, &c., ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S., Extra Series, 1869), pp. 44—51. It consists of 208 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed.

5. A copy in Porkington MS., No. 10, leaf 135, back, entitled "The good wye wold a pylgremage." Printed in the same volume, pp. 39—43. In 14 stanzas, the metre resembling that of No. 1.

6. A copy in MS. Lambeth 853, p. 102. Printed in The Babees Book, ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 36—47. In 31 stanzas; metre similar to that of No. 1.

7. A similar copy in MS. R. 3. 19 in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge. The collations with No. 6 are given by Mr Furnivall.

8. A copy in the Loscombe MS.,<sup>1</sup> entitled "How the Goode Wif thaught

<sup>1</sup> Now MS. cxxx in the possession of Lord Ashburnham; described in Piers Plowman (B-text), pref. p. xxi; ed. Skeat.

hir Daughter ;" printed in 1838 by Sir F. Madden, and again by Mr Hazlitt, in his Early Popular Poetry, vol. i. In 35 stanzas; metre similar to that of No. 1.

At p. xxi of The Historye of Plasidas, Mr Gibbs gives a harmony of the copies numbered 1, 6, 7, and 8, which more or less resemble each other. No 5 is in a similar metre. The copies to be compared with that here printed are therefore Nos. 2 and 4. Of these, No. 2 is expressed in different language, and can only be compared as regards the general sense ; but No. 4 is no other than a different copy of the very same type of the poem, and agrees sufficiently closely with the text to admit of collation. I denote the text here printed by the letter A, and the text printed by Mr Lumby by the letter B. The following is the general scheme, shewing the corresponding lines of the two versions.

VERSION A (here printed).	VERSION B (ed. Lumby).
1—54	1—54
55—68	—
—	55—62
69—80	63—74
81—110	—
111, 112	75, 76
113—116	—
—	77, 78
117—166	79—128
167—170	—
171—210	129—168
—	169, 170
211—218	171—178
(a) [235, 236]	(a) 179, 180
—	181, 182
(b) [241, 242]	(b) 183, 184
(c) [237, 238]	(c) 185, 186
219—234	187—202
(a) 235, 236	(a) [179, 180]
(c) 237, 238	(c) [185, 186]
239, 240	—
(b) 241, 242	(b) [183, 184]
243, 244	like 203, 204
245—254	205—214
—	215—218
255—272	219—236
—	237, 238
273, 274	239, 240
275—278	like 241, 242
279—296	243—260
297, 298	—
299—302	261—264
303—306	—
—	265—316.

Such verbal variations as seemed to me to be worthy of notice are given in the footnotes.

I must add that, in the marginal summary, I have copied Mr Lumby's words where practicable, for the convenience of the reader.]

## Incipiunt documenta matris ad filiam.

[Fol. 164. C.]

THE gud wiff schawis, the best scho can,  
 Quhilk ar the thewis of a gud voman ;  
 Quhilk gerris women be haldin deir,  
 And makis pouer women princis peir ;  
 With sum ill techis and Ill thewis,  
 That followis foul women & schrewis.  
 As to the first, men suld consyder  
 That womanis honor is mair slyder,  
 And eythar blekyt be mekill thing,  
 As farest rof<sup>s</sup> soyne takis fadyng.  
 A woman suld haue euir raddour  
 Of thing that greif mycht hir honour ;  
 With pite and humilite,  
 And litill of langage for to be.  
 Nocht lowd of lauchtir, na of langage crouf,  
 And euir do sum gud to the houf :  
 Nocht oyf of tratlyng in the touñe,  
 Na with men for to rowk & rowñe ;  
 Suet and hamly, sempill and coy,  
 Vith fenȝeit fair nocht mak our moy.  
 Nocht nyse, proude, na our delicat,  
 Na contrefet our gret estat ;  
 Favour na dedis of dishonour,  
 Kep vorschip till all creatour ;  
 Be nocht lefull tratlyngis till heir,  
 Na till reherf<sup>s</sup>, quha vald thaim speir.

The good wife  
shews how  
women are held  
dear.

4

8 Women's honour  
is tender,

and fades like  
a rose ;  
therefore women  
should be  
cautious,  
pious, humble,

12

16 always doing  
good,  
not gossiping,

20

not proud nor  
assuming.

24 Be respectful,

1. *the]* fore.
2. *the]* B omits.
3. *Quhilk gerris]* Quhilkis gar.
4. *makis]* B omits (*better*).
5. *techis]* maneris. *Ill (2)]* B om.
8. *mair]* tendyr &.
9. *eythar blekyt]* raithar brekis.
10. *soyne takis]* takis sonest.
11. *haue euir]* ay have.
13. *With]* Ful of.
15. *lauchtir]* lange. *of langage]*

- lauchtir.*
16. *do—the]* doand gud in her.
17. *of]* na.
18. *men—to]* no ȝonge men. *ȝ]*  
na.
19. *Suet — hamly]* Weill of hir  
smylinge.
20. *fenȝeit]* fenȝeand.
22. *our]* nocht our.
25. *till]* to.
26. *till]* to. *vald]* wald.

and obedient;	Till hir frendis obeysand be,	
not too gay in dress,	In gudly thing that may supple ;	28
to make folks envious ;	Nocht delicat in hir clething, Bot playn mancir and gudly thing. Nocht our costlik, na <i>ȝeit</i> sumptuous,	32
not to dress for shew,	To mak folk at hir Invyouȝ ; Na covat nocth clething mair deir Na be resoȝe hir stat suld feir ; And thouch scho be cled preciously, Couat nocth to be seyn for-thi.	36
<i>[Fol. 164 b. C.]</i>	Quhen scho is proude to schawe hir than, Is taknyng of aȝe euill woman ; Bot quhen it aw with reson to be, To schaw hir than is honeste, With suet gud rownd contyrnans ; Nocht our fer preȝ hir till avans.	40
but it should be done with modesty.	Till schaw hir pryd, that men may se, That is bot pomp and vanite.	44
God honours lowliness.	Bot euir with dreid and schamfulnes Scho suld draw to the lawast plaȝ, And erar lawar place to tak Na hear, and be put abak.	48
After pride comes shame.	God dois honour till lawlynas, Quhen prid is pwnyst in all plaȝ, Quhilk in women is mair to blaȝe, For eftir pryd oft followis schaȝe.	52

27. *obeyſand*] obeyent.  
 28. *thing*] thingis.  
 29. *delicat*] outragouss.  
 31. *ȝeit*] B. om.  
 32. *folk*] vthir.  
 34. *hir—feir*] suld hir effeir.  
 35. *preciously*] honestly.  
 36. *Couat*] Desyr.  
 38. *taknyng*] takin. *ane euill*] a licht.  
 39. *aw with*] suld be. *to*] B. om.

41. *gud*] hamly. *contyrnans*] contenans.  
 43. *Till*] To. *pryd*] proud. *that*] at.  
 44. *That—pomp*] Is pryd, wan-glore.  
 48. *hear and*] fra her place.  
 49. *till*] to.  
 51. *mair*] maist.  
 54. *estat ilk*] stat euerilk.

And hear honour, *bettir* thing,  
And lawar stat, lakar clething.  
For pryd gais no thing be the claiß,  
Bot be the hert that woman haß.  
For sum will be sa stoutly cled,  
Or thai will crab thar men in bed,  
That half the richeß that he haß  
Sall scant be worth his viffis claiß.  
Than quhen thai cled ar our statly,  
Men will presoyme na gud, treuly,  
Bot that scho dois it for paramour;  
And thus-gat faid sall hir honour.  
Tharfor the best thing is, I wat,  
Is to be cled *eftir* thair estat.  
Kepe thame fra delit nocth variabill,  
And fra all dedis dishonerabill,  
Nocht fra the deid all anerly,  
Bot fra all that is Ill likly.  
Fle ill folk and suspekit place,  
Gret lak followis of Ill liklynace;  
For euir dishonorit Cumpany  
Fadis all honour comonly.

Dress should be  
suitable to the  
rank in life.

56

60

Some men's  
riches are of less  
value than their  
wives' clothes.

64

Too fine clothing  
is dishonourable.

68

Keep women  
from all  
dishonourable  
deeds,

72

from all suspected  
places.

Bad company  
damages  
character.

76

Give not women  
too delicate food  
or drink.

[Fol. 165, C.]

80

Let them not  
attend clerk-  
plays or  
pilgrimages.

**D**ant nocth madenys our wantonly,  
Na feyd thame nocth deliciously;  
For metis and drynkis deliciousß  
Drawis to lichery: men sais thus.  
Na let thame nocth ga to thar will  
Bot it weill suddane be thair-till.  
Na to clerk-playis na pilgrimage,

55—68. B omits. See insertion in  
B, ll. 55—62.  
68. *Is*] Perhaps better omitted.  
69. *variabill*] In margin of A—  
*vel vakabile*; walable B.  
70. *dedis*] deid.  
71. *Nocht—the*] Bot nocth fra.  
72. *that*] thinge that.

74. *of*] B om.

75. *dishonorit*] defamydt.

76. Defadis the honor of al wy B.

77. *madenys*] women.

78. *deliciously*] our delygatly.

80. *Drawis to*] Caussis.

81—110. B omits.

	Bot thar be with thaim viſ folk of age.	84
	Thoill thaim nocht rage with rybaldry,	
	Na mengill thame with neuir with ladry.	
Let not young people be together alone.	Nouthir nycht nor day to hant allane, - That has beyn ded of mony aña, All be thai neuir so syb no tendir ; For nakit lying lufrent will gendir.	88
After seven years of age, nature is strong.	Fra thai be passit sevin ȝeir and mair, Natur spryngis and will nocht spair ; Suppos no man will thame mystrast, The lang acquyntans will nocht lest Vith fors of nature ; and sutele Of the fals fend, that is so slee, Drawis sic plesand acquyntans Throu ȝouthede and throu ignorans.	92
Great harm comes thus.	And ȝouthede can no perellis cast Quhill at all be perist at the last. Than "had I wittyn !" will thai say, With mony "allas" and harmesay.	96
It were better to guard against such harm.	Than war it bettir forsee the Ill Or sic mysfortoun fall thame till. For, as men redis in ald storys, Ten thousand tynt ar on this viſ Of sistir and brothir in sic lik caſ, That banyſt syne fra frendis waſ,	104
Brothers and sisters often perish thus.	In strange rewmys fled for schame, That durſt neuir eftir be seyne at hame. Kepe thame fra giftis to gif or craff, Or billis of Amowris till resaff ;	108
Let them not dance or sing publicly, nor "run at bars."	Or ȝeit till danſ in-to the ryng, Na oppinly in the rew to syng, Na ryn at bares in the vay ; Bot halde thair Innyſ gif thai vill play.	112
	111. Na giftis gyf na drowreis craif B.	113—116. B has 2 different lines here.
	112. Or billis] Na bill. till] to.	

111. Na giftis gyf na drowreis craif B. 113—116. B has 2 different lines here.

112. Or billis] Na bill. till] to.

Oyſ nouſhir flying, ſturt, no ſtriff,  
 Preſ nocht to greiff nouſhir man na viſſ.  
 In thriſt ſtrif ay with hir nychtbour,  
 Quha best can thriſ bot dishonour.  
 Preſ nocht in fest to ſyt our hye,  
 Na euire day in lik prowde be ;  
 Na our cleyn veschyn on verk-dayis,  
 Na on the verkday gang to playis.  
 Flawm nocht na fluriſ that vill fade,  
 To mend the mak that god has made,  
 Vith paynteyn vatteris to ger hir ſcheyne :  
 On haly dayis hir hyde hald cleyne :  
 Nocht with colouris na vith pantrie,  
 For ſic thing is bot geglotrye.  
 Schaym is, to day be quhit and rede,  
 And vallowit on the morn as lede ;  
 Bot kep the hew of hir natur,  
 For ſic fairnes ſall langast dur.  
 Kep bydding ay, and lyf clenly ;  
 Thank god, and luf hym ythandly.  
 Be euir of pure folk pyteabill,  
 Do almuſ deid, be cheritabill,  
 Gif nane Ill word behynd thar bak,  
 And loyf all leid, and no man lak.  
 And gif ſcho be in goddis band,  
 Be leil and trew till hir husband,  
 And gracious ay till hir menſhe,

117. *nouthir*] noght. *no*] na.  
 118. *nouthir*] B om.  
 119. *hir*] thi.  
 122. *euire*] euer ilk. *in—prowd*] lyk proud to.  
 123. *veschyn*] wesching.  
 124. Na ȝhit onne werk-dais oyſſ  
na plays B.  
 125. *Flawm*] Flam. *na*] the.  
*that*] at.  
 126. *the*] hir. *that*] at.  
 127. *paynteyn vatteris*] payntyng  
wattrys.

Let them not  
indulge in strife,

[Fol. 165 b. C.]  
but vie with their  
neighbours in  
thriſt.

Be not proud,  
nor lazy on  
workdays.

124

Let not women  
use painting ;

128

for it is a shame  
to be white and  
red one day,  
and faded the  
next.  
Keep the hue  
of nature.

136

Be piteous to the  
poor.

Speak well of  
people behind  
their back.

Let a wife be  
loyal to her  
husband.

129. *Nocht*] Bot nocht. *vit*  
*pantrie*] payntry.

130. *geglotrye*] gyglotry.  
132. And onne the morne waleyt  
as a wed B.

135. *ay*] B om.  
137. *pyteabill*] petousable.

139. *nane Ill*] folk gud.  
140. *no man*] nane to.

142. *Be—till*] Se euer honore to.  
143. And be gracious to his  
menſhe B.

	Kepand in houshald honeste ;	144
Be sweet and debonair,	Till all folk suet and debonar, With gudly deid at hir power.	
not loitering in the streets, for that is folly.	Be ferme of hed, bath fut and hand, Nocht oft in-to the strete vaverand ; For vaveryng betakynnis vilsumnas, Vanvit, velth, or wantownas.	148
Let her keep to her husband.	Or ellis to sek sum Cumpany, Quhilk war nocth lik to be gudly. Bot euir hald rowme and playn maneir, Euir hald hir fallowschip till hir feir.	152
	Fle fra diffamyt Cumpany ; Lik drawis till lik ay comonly.	156
Love not sleep.	Luf nocth gret sleping na <i>ȝeit</i> sueirnas, For mekill Ill cummys of ydilnas.	
[Fol. 166. C.]	Nocht leif to vantouñe giglotrif, Kepe feris of women that ar vis ; And euir conforme hir to the best Of women that ar vorthyest.	160
Keep wise companions. Imitate the best.	Do na thing that lik Ill may be, Gif na occasioune for till le ; For quhen scho dois that is lik Ill, Trast nocth that folk will hald thaim still.	164
Folk will not conceal evil doing.	Thoch it be neuir so secretly, Trast weill, it beis nocth hyd for-thi ; Suppoȝ scho heir of it na thing,	168
Evil will not be hid.		

144. *in houshald*] her husbandis.146. *deid*] wyll.147. *bath*] B om.148. *into—strete*] in stret to be.  
*vaverand*] wauerand (*printed waner-and*).149. *vaveryng*] wauerynge (*printed wanerynge*). *vilsumnas*] wylsumnes.150. *Vanvit*] Wanwyt. *velth*] velth.152. *Quhilk*] At.153. *euir*] ay. *rowme*] rownd.154. *Euir—hir*] Haldand ay. *till*] with.155. *diffamyt*] defamyt.156. *till*] to.157. *gret*] B om. *ȝeit sucirnas*] gret suernes.159. *vantoune*] wantoune.160. *that*] at.162. *vorthyest*] worthyest.163. *lik Ill*] ill lyk ; see l. 165.164. *till*] to.

167—170. B omits.

Folk will nocth leiff of thar demyng.

Hant nocth with men our anerly,  
All-thouch thai be neuir sa worthy.

Seek not men's  
company.

172

Na gang nocth allane hir erand,  
Tak child or madyn in hir hand ;

Go not alone on  
errands.

It is na poyn of honeste

It is not good  
for women to be  
out alone.

A gud woman allane to be

In cumpany of mony aña ;  
And mekill les of aña allaña.

Trast weill, it is aña euill custum ;

176

For na folk will the gud presum.

180

And quhen scho passis hir erand,  
Byde nocth apon it lang dremand,

Be not long on  
errands.

Na syt nocth doune to hald talkyng  
Quhill scho forȝet hir hame-ganging.

184

Think quhat scho has till do at haymē,  
And euir be dredand till haue blaymē ;

Think of what is  
to be done at  
home.

Voman that has aña vantouñe hert  
Ane hour or twa thinkis bot aña stert.

188

Gif men thaṁe withgang wantonly,  
Syne will thai couat the mastry ;

Women forget  
how time flies.

Thar is no thyng thai couat mair  
Na fredome, fawyng, and gud fair ;

Women like to  
rule,

Na thai vald neuir repreuit be,  
Na zeit correkit in na degre.

192

Thai suld kep laute, with all mycht,  
And mast quhar thai haf laute hycht.

but should be  
obedient.

196

Hate nocth but gret caus manifest ;  
The ferst luf euir be luft best ;

Indulge not  
hatred.  
Stick to a first  
love.

172. All be thai neuer mar sa  
worthi B.

186. *euir*] ay. *till*] to.

173. *Na—allane*] Ga nocth alone  
in.

187. *Voman*] Women. *ane van-*

*touñe*] a thowlas.

178. *of*] with.

190. *Syne*] Than.

179. It is no point of gud custum B.

192. *fawyng*] fauore.

180. *folk*] man. Cf. l. 64.

193, 194. *thai vald*] wald. B

182. Byd nocth lang one It tareand  
B.

*transposes* repreuit and correkit.

185. *till do*] ado (*for* at do).

195. *with—mycht*] day & nycht.

198. *euir*] ay.

[Fol. 166b. C.]	That scho serwe nocth to haue repruf For vnlaute to forfeit luff, And vyn lufrant of hir menȝe.	200
Flee drunkenness.	Fra drunkyn folk and taverne fle. Be of gud prayer, quhen scho may, And heir meſ on the haly day.	204
Go to church.	For mekill grace cumis of praying, And bringis men ay to gud ending. And in the kirk kepe our all thing Fra smyrking, keking, and bakluking;	208
Behave well while there.	And eftir noyne, on the haly day, Owthir pray, or sport at honest play. But leif set nocth thi hert to luff, For eftir followis gret repruff.	212
Follow advice.	Leiff thi awn will and tak consale, Or it sall turn the to tynsale.	
Toy not with men.	Tayt nocth with men, na mak raging, For oft it takis añe foul ending; It is añe takyn of foul women To tyg and tayt oft with the men.	216
Be not a go-between.	<b>B</b> e nocth lefull chargis to tak, Na erand ber, na message mak, For thai condicones ar of barnys; At eyn nocth seis, hert nocth ȝarnys;	220
What the eye does not see, the heart does not desire.		
199, 200. That sche of luf have neuer repruf To do wnlawte to hir lufe (sic) B.	211. thi] hir. 212. Thar folowis efter gret repruf	
201. Press to be lowyt with her menȝe B.	B.	
203. of gud] leif of.	213. thi] thare. tak] do.	
205. grace] gud.	214. the] thaim.	
206. bringis —ay] garris men mak.	216. takis aȝe] makes a.	
207, 208. And our al thinge kep her in kirk To kek abak, to lauch, or smyrke B.	217. of] a.	
209. noyne] nwne.	219—242. For variations in the order of lines in B, see the scheme abore, p. 524.	
210. sport] play. After l. 210, B inserts 2 lines—To reid bukis or lere wefinge, Be occupeid euer in sum thinge.	219. lefull] redy. 220. erand] erandis. 221. condicones ar] are condicioneis. 222. eyn] E.	

Tharfor women suld kepit be,  
 That thai mycht na licht women se.  
 Suppos it war agane thair will,  
 It savis thame mony a tym fra Ill.  
 For foul women ar sa smytbill,  
 And till all vikit wycis abill,  
 That euir the Cumpany quhar thai tak  
 Sall neuir chap for-outen lak.  
 Men byndis oft folk agane thar will  
 Quhill sum gret cure be doñe thaim till,  
 Quhilk, war nocht fors, thai wald nocht do it ;  
 And ȝeit it turnys to mekill gude.  
 Thus our all thing, as air said I,  
 Kepe thame fra cancryt Cumpany ;  
 For quha diffamyt is, or wik,  
 Vald all the layff war to thame lik ;  
 Quha smyttit war, wald all var swa,  
 And slanderit folk vald euir haue ma ;  
 Bot tak sampill ay by hir nyghtbour,  
 Gif euir scho thinkis to haff honour.

**G**if madynnus euir gud teching,  
 And doctryne thame quhill thai ar ȝing,  
 In keping with a gud mastres,  
 Quhilk kennis vertues, mair and les ;  
 And chasty thame quhill thai ar cheld,  
 Quhill visdome cum throu vit in eld.

- 223. *women suld*] suld women.
- 224. *That*] At. *mycht*] may nocht.
- 226. *savis—tym*] kepis thaim oft tymis.
- 228. *ikit*] wykit.
- 230. *for-outen*] without a.
- 233. *do it*] dud (*for do 't*).
- 234. *it*] is (*by mistake for it*).  
*turnys—mekill*] cummrys thaim al for.
- 235. *Thus*] And. *air*] oft.
- 236. *thame*] hir. *cancryt*] cankryt.

So women should be kept close, and not allowed to see wicked ways.

228

Such restraint may be used for their good.

232 236 Keep from bad company. Bad people wish others to be like them.

240 [Fol. 167. C.]

244 These rules should be particularly observed with the young.

Correct girls while young.

248

- 237. *is*] war.
- 238. *Vald*] Wald.
- 239, 240. B omits.
- 241. *Bot*] And. *sampill ay*] ay sampyll.
- 243—246. B *has*—And ȝeit weil mar suld madenis ȝhinge Be straity keptit with gret awinge ; In teiching with a gud maistress, Quhilk knawis gud thewis, mar & less.
- 247. *chasty*] chaiste ; see ll. 259,
- 278. *cheld*] child.
- 248. *vit—eld*] wyt or eild.

You cannot  
correct them  
when older.

Young lords are  
put under  
governors.

Had they (the  
girls) been well  
taught when  
young,

they would have  
been chaste and  
charitable.

But if their  
friends fail to  
train them,

they are much to  
blame,

and shall be  
punished;

For *ȝouthede euir* enclynis to vice,  
For seilden fynde we barnys wiſ.

Thow may in *ȝouthede tyſ* a cheld  
That for na gold wald do it in eld.

For-thi *ȝoung lordis* ar put in cure,  
Quhill visdome cum thaim be nature.

For falt of aw and of teching

Bryngis thame oft to mysgouernyng ;

Quhilk and thai had in thair *ȝouthage*,

Quhill thai of visdome had knawlage—  
(And chasty thame quhen thai do myſ,

Our rekles thoulaſ wantoun is)—

Thai suld be chast and cheritabill,

Worthy women, wiſ and abill,

And eftir cum to gret valour,

And do thair frendis gret honour.

And quhen thai get nane instructione,

Na for mysdeid ma pwncioun,

Bot lettis thame follow thair vantownes,

And favouris thame in thair vikkidnes,

Of all thair Ill thai haue the vit ;

And, do thai weill, the mast merit.

For oftymes frendis, as men redis,

Ar dampnit for thar barnis dedis.

Quha will kep bath fra perisching,

Tak tent, and kep wele thus teching ;

252

256

260

264

268

272

249. *euir*] ay.251. *Thow*] Folk. *tyſſ*] tift.*cheld*] child.252. *it*] B om.253. *in*] to. After l. 254, B inserts  
4 lines.256. Gerris madenis oft tak ill end-  
inge B.257. *Quhilk and*] i.e. which if;  
referring to *teching*. Lines 259,  
260 are out of place; see ll. 275,  
276.259. *chasty*] chaste.260. Fore wantone thowless rakless  
Is B.265. *get nane*] haf na.266. *mysdeid ma*] thar misdeid.267. *follow thair*] flow in.269. *Of all*] Than of. *vit*] wyt.270. *mast*] mar.271. *as—redis*] have no dreid.272. *dedis*] deid. Here B adds  
two lines.274. Teich thaim in *ȝouthed* our all  
thinge.

And pwnys thame quhen thai do my $\beta$ ,  
 And rekles or our wantoun is,  
 And let thame nocht haf all thar will,  
 Bot chasty thame quhen thai do Ill.

Bettir is with chastyment thame mend  
 Na saull and liff bath tak Ill end.

And kep thame fra neyd and mystair,  
 That pouerte gar thame nocht mysfair ;  
 For pouerte makis mony Ill woman  
 Quhilk, and thai had a thrifty man,  
 With gudly sufficiand lyffing,  
 Thai wald neuir forfalt, for na thing.

For oft tymes vrechit neidliking  
 Sic mysteris haldis madynnus In,  
 That thai ar pynit with pouerte,  
 Quhilk gret neid gerris thar hertis de ;  
 And may nocht, for thair vrechitnes,  
 Gret couati $\beta$ , and gredynes,

Put thame in  $\beta$ outhed to profit.  
 Thus of thar Ill thai haf the vit,  
 And all the charge haill of thar syn  
 That neid and pouerte puttis thaim In.  
 Bath plicht and perell on thaim lyis,  
 That tynis thar barnys on this wi $\beta$ .  
 Thai haue no craft ; how suld thai liff,  
 Quhen frendis will thame na thing gif?

Than is thar nocht bot do or de ;

therefore correct  
your children.

276

[Fol. 167b. C.]

280

Keep them from  
poverty;

for want often  
leads women to  
do wrong;

288

and great need  
makes their  
hearts die,

292 so that they  
come to no good.

296

Great peril  
is theirs,  
who thus lose  
their children.

300

275—278. Two lines in B—And  
 pwnis thaim quhen thai do Ill,  
 And lat thaim nocht have all thar  
 wyll.

279. Bettir pwnis thaim and gar  
 thaim mend B.

280. *bath tak*] tak baith.

281. *mystair*] mistere.

283. *makis—Ill*] tynis mony gud.

284. *a—man*] thriffee men.

285. *sufficiand*] suet neidfull.

286. *forfalt — na*] do mys for

nakyne.

287. *neidliking*] ned y kynne.

288. *mysteris*] neid & stress.

292. *gredynes*] gret nedynes.

293. *ʒouthed to*] tyme to thar.

294. Thus, do thai mys, thai have  
 the wyt B.

295. *charge haill*] chargis.

296. *pouerte*] myster.

297, 298. B omits.

300. *Quhen*] And.

When the  
children fall,  
they curse their  
elders who misled  
them.

On neyd thus mon thai fulis be.

And syne, quhen thai haf tane a fall,

Than wary thai thair frendis all,

And puttis thame out of goddis grace ;

Thus bath ar tynt throu vikkidnaſ.

304

306

**Explicit doeumentum matris ad filiam. per manum**  
**J. de R. cap<sup>m</sup>.**

302. *neyd*] fors.

303—306. *Not in B; which has 48 lines in place of them.*

[A Dictionary.]

[THIS poem, here turned into Lowland Scottish, is attributed to Lydgate. There are several versions of it. One in MS. Harl. 2251, foll. 4, 5, was printed by Mr Halliwell in his Selection from the Minor Poems of Dan John Lydgate for the Percy Society, 1840, pp. 66—69. Mr Halliwell remarks that “the poem is very common in manuscript, but several of the copies vary considerably from each other. It may be sufficient to refer to MS. Harl. 116, fol. 116; MS. Oxon. Bernard. 1479; MS. Rawlinson, Oxon. C. 86; MS. Arundel 168; MS. Sloane 775; and MS. Sloane 3554, which contains a Latin version. Ritson has inserted this in his list of Lydgate’s works in two places, under Nos. 55 and 61.” Another copy is in MS. Lambeth 853, which Mr Furnivall has printed, side by side with the Latin version from MS. Sloane 3534 [3554?], in his Babees Book (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 54—59. The copy in the Lambeth MS. has its stanzas arranged in a different order from that of the Latin version; but the present copy both follows the order of the Latin version exactly, and translates it closely. The metre, be it observed, is that of Chaucer’s Monk’s Tale.]

## **Incipit documentum notabile.**

I.

For heill of thy body, kep wele fra cald thi hede ;  
Ete no raw met, tak gude heid thar-to ;

Keep your head  
from cold.

Drink hailso<sup>m</sup>e aill, feyd the on licht bred.

#### **4** Rise from meals with an appetite.

With agit women Heschly haue nocht ado.

Drink not after  
sleep,  
and do not sup-  
late.

And oyſ neuir late for to sowp.

late.  
8 [Fol. 168, C.]

II.

And gif so beis that lechis doith the fale,  
Than tak gud hede till oyf thyngis thre,

If you cannot get a doctor, be careful in your diet.

6. *Apon thi slepe*] Lat. post sompnum.

7. [and] inserted to make sense;  
see Lat. version.

Eat temperately, work moderately,	Temperat dyet, temperat trauale, Nocht malicius for none aduersite;	12
be meek and content,	Mek in troubill, glad in pouerte, Rich of litill, content with sufficians,	
not grudging, but cheerful.	Neuir grunching, bot mery lik thi degré ; Gif phisik lakis, mak this thi gouernans.	16

## III.

Believe not every tale ; be not too hasty,	To euere tale soyne gif thou na credans,	
nor violent to the poor, but courteous in talk.	Be nocht hasty nor sodanly vengabill ; To pouer folk do no violans,	
Be secret and true.	Curtaß of langage, of feding mesurabill ; On syndry metis nocht gredy at the tabill ;	20
Try to say the best of everybody.	Of fedyng gentill, prudent in daliens, Cloß of toung, of word nocht dissavable, To say the best set alwayis thi plesans.	24

## IV.

Hate double- faced people.	Haue in dispit mowthis that beyn dowbill, Suffer at thi tabill no dissencioune ;	
Keep no tale- bearers with you.	Haue in despit folkis that beyn trowble ; Of fals rownaris and of fallacioune Within thi court suffer no diuisioune ;	28
Live at peace with your neighbours.	Quwhich in thi houshald shall cauß gret encresß Of all weillfair, prosperite, and fusioune, And with thi nyghtbour liff in rest and peß.	32

## V.

Be clothed according to your rank.	Be clynly cled eftir thine estat ; Paß nocht thi boundis, kep thi promeß belif.	
Strive not with your better, your equal, nor your inferior, but live in peace and win a good name.	With thre folkis be nocht at debat ; First, with thi bettir bewar for to striff ; Agane thi fallowis na querellis to contrif ; Vith thi subiect to striff it is gret schame ; Quharfor I conseil the to preserue all thi liff Till liff in peß, and get the a gud name.	36
		40

## VI.

Fyre at morow and toward bed at ewe,  
 Aganis mystis merk and air of pestilens ;  
 Be tymly at meſ, thou sall the bettir eschewe ;  
 First at thi rysing, do to thi god reuerens ;  
 Wise[t] the pouer with ententif diligens,  
 Of all in myster haf ay compassioune ;  
 And god sall send bath grace and Influens  
 The till encreſ and thy possessioune.

Have a fire morn  
and eve.

44 Rise early,  
and say your  
prayers.

[Fol. 168 b. C.]  
 Visit the poor,  
pity the needy,  
and God will  
reward you.

48

## VII.

Suffer no surfattis in thi houſ at nycht,  
 Be war with reirsuppers & of gret exceſ ;  
 Of nodding hedis and of candill-licht,  
 Of sleuth at morow and slummeryng Idilnes,  
 Quhich of all vice is chef porteress.  
 Voyd all dronkyn-lew learis and lychours,  
 Of all vnthrifty evill the mastres,  
 That is to say, dys-playeris and hazardouris.

Allow no surfeits,  
nor eat late  
suppers,  
nor sit up  
nodding by  
candle-light.

52

56 Have nothing  
to do with  
drunkards, liars,  
lechers,  
and dice-players.

## VIII.

Eftir met be var, mak noct lang to slepe ;  
 Hede and stomok preserue ay fra cald ;  
 Be noct pensiff, of gret thought tak no kepe ;  
 Eftir thi power maynteme ay thi houshald.  
 Suffer in tyme ; in thi richt be bald ;  
 Swer no athis, no men to begile.  
 In ȝowth be lusty, sad quhen thou art ald ;  
 No varldy Ioy lestith bot a quhile.

Do not sleep long  
after meals ;  
and keep both  
head and stomach  
from cold.

60 Live according to  
your income.

Swear not to  
deceive.

64 This world's joys  
will change.

## IX.

Dyne noct at morow befor thine appetit,  
 Cleyne air and valking makis gud degestiouñe ;

Do not dine  
before you have  
an appetite.

41. *ewe*] eue (eve) in Lambeth MS.

written On in C.

43. *eschewe*] i. e. escheue (achieve).

53. *porteress*] miswritten portreas ;

45. *Wiset*] Wise in our MS.; visite in Lamb. MS.; Lat. version, visita.

the line is borrowed from Chaucer,  
Sec. Nonnes Tale, Prologue, l. 3;  
Lat. version, janitrix.

52. *Of*] so in Lamb. MS.; mis-

Drink not  
between meals,  
and avoid salt  
meat.

Betuix malys drink noct̄ for na plesand delit,  
Bot thirst or travale be the occasiouñe. 68  
And salt met doith gret oppresiouñe  
To febill stomokis, quhen thai can noct̄ restreyñe  
Fra thingis contrar to thair complexiouñe ;  
Of gredy handis the stomok has gret peyne. 72

## X.

Man consists of  
body and soul.

Moderate feeding  
is best for the one,

and charity for  
the other.  
This dietary  
is good,  
though bought  
neither of master  
Anthony nor of  
master Hugh.

Thus in two thyngis stondeth all the velth  
Of soull and body, quho so lest thame sew ;  
Modreth fude giffeth to a man his helth,  
And all surfat doith fra hym remew ; 76  
And cherite is to the saulis dew.  
This rescript both is of no potyngary,  
Of master Anton nor of master hew.  
Till all indifferent richeſ is dyetary. 80

Explicit documentum valde vtile, quod<sup>1</sup> I to ȝow, &c.

<sup>1</sup> Written merely as “q,” with a stroke through the tail.

75. *Modreth*] Lat. moderata.

78. *both*] Lamb. bouȝt ; Lat.

77. *saulis*] for saule ; no doubt altered to suit the metre ; Lat. anime.

emittur.

80. *dyetary*] miswritten dyetry.

*dew*] Lat. debita.

## N O T E S.

---

### SCHEME SHEWING THE REFERENCES TO JAMIESON'S EDITION.

N.B.—The division of the poem, in this edition, into 20 Books, and the numbering of the lines, are exactly copied from Pinkerton's edition (extra lines being marked with an asterisk), *because it is to his edition that the references in Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary are made*. Hence Jamieson's Dictionary serves equally well for the present edition. It is most extraordinary that Jamieson should, in his own edition, have divided the poem into *fourteen books*, thus introducing a new system of references, for which *his own* Dictionary is useless!

To compare any passage in the present edition with the corresponding one in Jamieson, observe the numbering of the folios marked E. Thus the first line on p. 81 is marked "Fol. 12. E.", and answers to the "Fol. 12 a." in Jamieson, p. 68. The 1869 reprint of Jamieson follows the old edition *page by page*, a very convenient arrangement.

Another method of comparing the present edition with Jamieson's is to employ the following scheme.

Here "ORDER A." signifies the arrangement in Pinkerton's and in the present edition, an arrangement also followed in Jamieson's *Dictionary*; whilst "ORDER B." refers to the arrangement in Jamieson's *edition*. I omit notice of *slight* differences in the number of the lines in a Book. The "breaks" below shew where certain Books commence *together*.

ORDER A.		ORDER B.
I. 1—630	...	I. 1—630
II. 1—194	...	" 631—824
" 195—589	...	II. 1—395
III. 1—534	...	" 396—929
" 535—762	...	III. 1—228
IV. 1—774	...	" 229—1003
V. 1—656	...	IV. 1—656
VI. 1—372	...	" 657—1028
" 373—672	...	V. 1—300
VII. 1—635	...	" 301—935
VIII. 1—520	...	VI. 1—520
IX. 1—459	...	" 521—980
" 460—757	...	VII. 1—298
X. 1—825	...	" 299—1126

## ORDER A.

XI.	1—655	...	...	...	VIII.	1—659
XII.	1—406	...	...	...	IX.	660—1065
"	407—588	...	...	...	X.	1—182
XIII.	1—744	...	...	...	IX.	183—931
XIV.	1—554	...	...	...	X.	1—554
XV.	1—550	...	...	...	IX.	555—1124
XVI.	1—694	...	...	...	XI.	1—698
XVII.	1—260	...	...	...	XII.	699—958
"	261—946	...	...	...	XIII.	1—686
XVIII.	1—210	...	...	...	XIV.	687—896
"	211—568	...	...	...	XV.	1—358
XIX.	1—226	...	...	...	XVI.	359—586
"	227—812	...	...	...	XVII.	1—586
XX.	1—620	...	...	...	XVIII.	587—1210

## ORDER C.—THE EDITION BY PROF. COSMO INNES.

Unfortunately, there is yet a *third* numbering of the lines in "The Bruce." Prof. Cosmo Innes, instead of dividing the poem into books, divided it into 150 paragraphs, following the divisions (not always marked alike) of the manuscripts. The following scheme will probably suffice to shew the references. I may remark that the *pages* in Innes are numbered very nearly as in the present edition. Thus p. 273 of Innes is p. 283 of my own.

## ORDER A.

Book I.	Paragraphs I.—X.	(pp. 1—25).
," II.	," XI.—XVII.	(begins p. 26).
," III.	," XVIII.—XXVII.	(p. 47).
," IV.	," XXVIII.—XXXVI.	(p. 74).
," V.	," XXXVII.—XLV.	(p. 102).
," VI.	," XLVI.—LII.	(p. 126).
," VII.	," LIII.—LIX.	(p. 150).
," VIII.	," LX.—LXV.	(p. 173).
," IX.	," LXVI.—LXXXIV.	(p. 192).
," X.	," LXXXV.—LXXXVI. 38	(p. 219).
," XI.	," LXXXVI. 39—XCIV.	(p. 249).
," XII.	," XCV.—CII.	(p. 273).
," XIII.	," CIII.—CXI.	(p. 294).
," XIV.	," CXII.—CXV.	(p. 321).
," XV.	," CXVI.—CXIX. 26	(p. 340).
," XVI.	," CXIX. 27—CXXV. 36	(p. 360).
," XVII.	," CXXV. 37—CXXXII. 38	(p. 385).
," XVIII.	," CXXXII. 39—CXXXVII. (p. 418).	
," XIX.	," CXXXVIII.—CXLIV.	(p. 438).
," XX.	," CXLV.—CL.	(p. 466).

The references to Jamieson's edition (Order B.) are given by Innes in his "Table of the Chapters," pp. xxxiii.—xlivi.

## NOTES TO BOOK I. (A.D. 1286—1305.)

(Jamieson, I. 1—630; Innes, pp. 1—25.)

REFERENCES to Pinkerton's edition are denoted by 'P.,' to Jamieson's edition by 'J.,' and to Innes' edition by 'I.' For the signification of 'C.,' 'E.,' and 'H.,' see the first footnote on p. 1.

Before beginning, the reader should learn, once for all, that the letters *v*, *w*, and *u* are completely interchangeable in both the MSS., and particularly so in the Cambridge MS. Thus, we have *envy* = *envy*, l. 47; *have* = *have*, l. 89; *veyle* = *weyle*, i.e. well, 118; *awcht* = *aucht*, ought, 255; *vre* = *ure*, experience, 312; &c.

The heading is from E.; so also is the text as far as Bk. iv. 56, the Cambridge MS. being imperfect at the beginning.

2. *Suppos that*, even if. *Nocht bot*, only; common in Yorkshire as 'nobbut.'

4. *And*, if. The reader is referred to the Glossarial Index for explanations of the significations of words. Only a few of the more striking peculiarities of diction are observed upon in the Notes.

7. *The tothir* for *thet othir*, the second. The italic letters denote the contractions of the MS. The word 'tothir' is written 'toy,' followed by an upward curl; where the 'y' stands for þ = *th*, and the curl is the usual abbreviation for *ir*. In l. 9, the word 'that' is written 'y<sup>t</sup>.' In l. 22, the word 'thar' is written as 'y' followed by a curl. The contractions are all of the usual character. The capitals are those of the Edinburgh MS., as far as Book iv. 56, after which the Cambridge MS. (imperfect at the beginning) becomes the basis of the text, and is closely followed.

9. *Suth*, sooth, true. Obviously the right reading, as pointed out by Innes; printed *such*, P. and J.

15. *Lenth of tyme*, length of time. So in H., and obviously the right reading, though the modern editors ignore it. The various readings are so fully pointed out in the footnotes that it will seldom be necessary to draw attention to them.

37. As observed in the footnote, ll. 37—132 are quoted by Wyntown, in his Cronykil of Scotland, ed. Macpherson, book viii. c. ii. 1—54, and 57—98; or ed. Laing, book viii. 123—176, and 179—220. Wyntown makes a slight break at l. 90 of our text, merely to introduce the lines—

"For-thi sayd Mayster Ihon Barbere,  
That mekyll tretyd off that matere"—

in order, no doubt, to acknowledge his obligation to the elder poet. Wyntown also quotes other passages, viz. ll. 135, 136, 141—164, 168—170, 187—194, and 197—212. See the footnotes.

The first passage, as it stands in Wyntown, is quoted with singular fidelity, and agrees with our text very closely upon the whole. It seems

fair to conclude that the existing transcripts and oldest editions of our poem are also tolerably faithful, and that no great change took place in the language between 1375 and 1487.

On account of the closeness of the agreement between our text and Wyntown's quotation, some results of a collation with Wyntown are recorded in the footnotes to ll. 37—132.

Line 37 exactly agrees with the first line of an old song upon the death of Alexander III., which is preserved by Wyntown at the end of his seventh Book. As it consists of only 8 lines, I quote it entire from Laing's edition, ii. 266 :

“ Quhen Alexandyr oure Kyng wes dede  
 That Scotland led in luwe and le,  
 Away wes sons off ale and bred,  
 Of wyne and wax, off gamyn and gle :  
 Oure gold wes changyd in-to lede :  
 Crist, borne in-to Vrygynyte,  
 Succoure Scotland and remede  
 That stad is in perplexyte.”

A facsimile of the first four lines of this song, from three MSS., may be seen in the Preface to Laing's edition of Wyntown, Pref. p. xl.

Alexander III. of Scotland died March 16, 1286. The crown nominally went to his granddaughter Margaret, generally known as “the maid of Norway.” At her death in 1290 (Oct. 7), no less than 13 claimants for the crown presented themselves; Tytler (Hist. Scot. i. 34) gives the names of twelve. John Baliol was not declared king till Nov. 30, 1292. The period from 1286—1292 makes up Barbour's ‘six years.’

It would be out of place to point out all the points in which Barbour agrees with, or differs from, other historians, or to discuss the historical value of the poem. The reader who studies history will consult the various chronicles which treat of this period, and are cited by Lord Hailes and Tytler. The general reader will probably be satisfied with the familiar account in Scott's Tales of a Grandfather, or he may consult the clear epitome, with numerous dates, in The Annals of England, ed. 1876. I may, perhaps, call attention here to Wyntown's Chronicle, ed. Maepherson, or ed. Laing; Fordun's (Latin) Chronicle, ed. Skene; Political Songs, ed. Wright (Camden Society); Robert of Brunne's translation of Langtoft's Chronicle, ed. Hearne; Annals of Scotland, by Sir David Dalrymple (Lord Hailes), 2 vols. 4to. 1779; Hume of Godscroft's Hist. of the Houses of Douglas and Angus, Edinb. 1644; and Tytler's and Burton's Histories of Scotland; to some of which I shall refer again. See also Scott's notes to The Lord of the Isles, in a *complete* edition.

51. *Eldest systir.* Baliol was the grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of David, earl of Huntingdon, who was the grandson of David I. of Scotland. Robert Bruce (grandfather of the great king of that name) was the son of Isabel, the second daughter. A third

claimant, John Hastings, lord of Abergavenny, was grandson of Ada, the third daughter. *Annals of England*, p. 171.

57. "They said, the succession to a kingdom was not like a succession to fiefs of a lower character." The argument was that Bruce (a male) took precedence of Baliol's mother (a female). It was quite untenable.

62. "They asserted it was quite otherwise." To 'bear in hand' often signified to 'assert strongly.'

63, 64. The drift is rather dark. The context makes the argument here to be in favour of Bruce; in which case it must run thus. "They (Bruce's friends) asserted it was quite otherwise (from what the others said); because then [i. e. were Baliol in the right] the next of kin, whether male or female would succeed; [which would be quite unlawful.]"

67. "Robert Bruce, earl of Carrick." See note to l. 477 below.

90. "But the game went quite otherwise." Here Wyntown interpolates the two lines quoted in the note to l. 37.

105. *Ride*, ride on horseback. See the remarkable description of the Welsh fighting on foot, and charged by English cavalry, in Sir Walter Scott's *The Betrothed*, ch. iv. Wales was subjugated in 1283, only three years before the death of Alexander III.

106. *Fra ewyn fell*, from the time when the evening fell; i. e. after nightfall.

115. "That always seized, without restoring."

122. The proverb referred to is well expressed in the Ingoldsby Legends (*Misadventures at Margate*) in the form—"Be warned in time by others' harm, and you shall do full well." Chaucer has a proverb somewhat like it, C. T. ed. Tyrw. 5762; and Tyrwhitt notes that the Latin form of it is—"Qui per alios non corrigitur, alii per ipsum corrigentur." Cf. "Wise men learn by other men's mistakes, fools by their own;" Hazlitt's Eng. Proverbs, p. 477.

132. Wyntown has—"Reserwys that till hys Majeste;" and omits ll. 133, 134.

137. "And by the whole (i. e. full) assent of them all."

140. "Warring against Saracens." However, that was in A.D. 1272. Perhaps Barbour confused the capture of Acre in 1291 with Edward's presence there in 1272.

171. *A litill quhile*; from Nov. 30, 1292, to July, 1296.

187. "From Wick near Orkney [really in Caithness] to the Mull of Galloway [in Wigtonshire]," i. e. from the one end of Scotland to the other.

194. If the king's officers treated the Scotch ill, it is also probable that they treated the English poor not much better. The description of them here given bears a striking resemblance to one in Piers Plowman, B. iv. 47—60. See also the Song of the Husbandman, and a Poem on the Evil Times of Edward II., in *Polit. Songs*, ed. Wright, pp. 149, 323.

247. "As full liberty to leave, or fulfil, whatever his heart impels him to."

254. *Let*, leave, let alone; as in l. 299. This, as explained in the footnote, is the obvious solution of the passage, misprinted in former editions. Hence, in l. 256, we have *do furth*, i. e. continue, go on with.

276. "Both the poor, and those of high birth also."

283. "Baron William Douglas was the first nobleman who joined Wallace, May, 1297, in the heroic attempt to free his country, overrun in 1296 by Edward I., an attempt utterly ruined at Falkirk, July, 1298; so that Wallace's progress was terminated in a twelve-month or so; and Henry's poem on him is but the history of two years, while this of Barbour embraces twenty-four. Wallace was taken, and beheaded, 1304-5; but William Douglas had deserted him, August, 1297, and yielded himself prisoner to Edward I. See Annals of Scotland [by Lord Hailes], I. 249. Baron James Douglas, whose deeds grace this poem, was his son."—P. See Hume (of Godscroft); Hist. of House of Douglas, p. 18.

313. *James* is, in general, disyllabic in Barbour.

323. *Will off wene*; cf. *will of red*, l. 348. See this phrase explained in the note to ii. 471.

339. "Two Roberts, Earls of Artois, are famous; Robert I., 1237; Robert II., 1250. It seems uncertain to which our author alludes."—P. Or perhaps the allusion is to Robert, count of Artois, counsellor of Edward III., born 1287, died Aug. 16, 1343. Froissart narrates some of his adventures, capp. viii, xxv, xxvi, xci—xciii. He is described as wise and wary, and, on one occasion, came to England in the disguise of a merchant. Jolnes refers us to three memoirs of him, by M. Lancelot, in vols. 8 and 10 of the Mémoire de l'Académie des Inscriptions.

343. *Catone*, i. e. Dionysius Cato, an author of the fourth century, known for his *Breves Sententiae* and *Distichorum Libri IV*, often quoted by old authors; e. g. by Chaucer and by the author of *Piers the Plowman*. The particular allusion is to *Dist. ii. 18*—

"Inspiens esto, quum tempus postulat aut res;  
Stultitiam simulare loco prudentia summa est."

354. *The byschop*; called "byschop Wylzame off Lambyrtoun" in l. 412. Fordun records his death as taking place in 1328. He was archbishop of St Andrew's. See Wyntown, viii. 3087, and the account of him in Hailes's Annals of Scotland, ii. 10, 11, 27, and 30.

356. So it is said of Chancer's Squire, that "he carf beforne his fader at the table." Cf. ii. 92 below.

364. Douglas's fidelity is again enlarged upon near the end of the poem; see Book xx. 516.

393. *Wlispyt*, lisped. In the allit. Troy-Book, ed. Panton and Donaldson, l. 3881, we are told that Hector "stotid a little;" and Guido de Colonna says—"parum vero erat balbutiens in loquela."

406. *Lovyt*, praised (*not loved*). Common in Barbour; see l. 476 below.

409. *Strevillyne*, Stirling; spelt ‘Strivelyn’ in Fordun, ed. Skene, cap. cxi. Stirling castle was besieged by Edward, and surrendered July 24, 1304. See Peter Langtoft’s Chronicle, translated by Mannyng, ed. Hearne, ii. 326; Wyntown, bk. viii, c. 18.

445. Here the story of the Bruce really begins. Lines 1—444 form an introduction; and ll. 445—476 form the real exordium of the poem.

446. *Romanys*, lit. romance; i. e. the story or narrative. Barbour so calls it, not because it is fiction, but because his “soothfast story” concerning the deeds of the Bruce is a story celebrating the actions of a hero. The old ‘romances’ of Alexander were regarded as containing veritable history.

455. Barbour’s use of the word ‘thai’ is perfectly reckless; it is often almost impossible to follow him in this respect. The passage clearly means that their foes (the English) were so numerous, that ever, for one of themselves (the Scotch), they (their foes, the English) were a thousand strong. Yet, by God’s help, the Scotch were a match for their enemies. Cf. Joshua xxiii. 10.

458. “They were sometimes rather more than less.” Here *they* is a repetition of *thai* in l. 455, and means the English; and the sense is that, for every Scotchman, the English numbered rather more than a thousand instead of less. Barbour has several similar exaggerations, and often transfers the word ‘they’ from one side to the other after this sort. Pinkerton’s reading, that the Scotch were “more than inferior” to their enemies (if I understand him rightly) is mere nonsense. His text has—“Thai war sum tyme ev’n mar than les,” and his note is—“As being not only few, but discomfited, divided, dispirited.”

465. So Fordun (ed. Skene, cap. cxii) calls Robert Bruce “alter Machabæus.” But Peter Langtoft (ed. Hearne, ii. 290) exhorts *Edward I.* to follow the example of the Maccabees; which is taking the other side. Cf. 1 Macc. iii, iv.

477. “This lord the Bruce, of whom I spake before.” Barbour has often been censured for this odd mistake. The Bruce of whom he is going to speak is the hero of his poem; but the Bruce of whom he has already spoken (see ll. 67, 153) is that hero’s grandfather. Robert Bruce the grandfather, Baliol’s rival, died in 1294. His son, of the same name, died in April, 1304. The grandson, our hero, “who throughout adhered to the English interest, succeeded to his earldom of Annandale, but continued to pass his time at the English court;” Annals of England, p. 175, note s; cf. p. 174, note l. Of course the similarity of the names caused the confusion, and the chief wonder lies not so much in the fact that Barbour fell into the error, as in the fact of his doing so at a time when the deeds of those worthies were still fresh in men’s memories. Wyntown, writing at a later period, distinguishes carefully between the three generations; bk. viii. cap. 7. However, Barbour’s mistake causes little trouble; we have now done with the two elder Bruces, and have only the grandson to consider henceforward.

481. Here Wyntown again follows Barbour more or less closely ; see his bk. viii. cap. xviii. l. 2769, ed. Laing. He says--

“ Quhen all this sawe the Brws Robert,  
That bare the crowne swne efftyrwart,  
Gret pyte off the folk he had,  
Set<sup>1</sup> few wordis tharoff he mad.  
Apon a tyme Schyr Ihon Cwmyn,  
Togyddyre rydand fra Streylyn,” &c.

He then quotes the rest of the passage, to the end of l. 514, with much exactness. The only variations are as follows. 489. *suld lord*] full lord *suld*. 490. *And gyff that*] Forthi *gyve*. 491. Wyntoun inserts *yow*, correctly. 501. *than thai*] *thay ne* (*printed thayne*). 504. *suthfast*] *fyathfull*. 506. *his assent sone*] *sone* his consent. 509. Wyntoun omits *that*. 511. *The barowrys thus*] Thus thir twa lordis. 512. *And that Ilk nycht*] That ilke nyght than. 514. *that thai forspokyn*] all that *thai spokyn*.

Fordun tells the same story about Bruce and Comyn ; ed. Skene, cap. exiii. p. 337. And see The Wallace, ed. Jamieson, x. 1107.

515. Wyntown passes over ll. 515—560, evidently considering the passage as a digression.

520. “That may ever guard himself against treason.”

525. The allusion is to the legends of the Trojan war *said* to be composed by Dictys of Gnoissus, and to the Latin prose history of the Fall of Troy ascribed to Dares the Phrygian ; see the account of Lydgate’s Troy-book in Morley’s English Writers, ii. 432. The real author of the mediaeval Roman de Troie appears to have been Benoit de Sainte-Maure, about A.D. 1175 to 1185. Hence was probably derived the version of the Historia Troiana by Guido de Colonna, finished in 1287. See Preface to the Gest Hystoriale of the Destruction of Troy, ed. Panton and Donaldson (E. E. T. S.), p. ix. I suppose that Dares was a merely imaginary author, to whom it was convenient for the romance-writers to ascribe their fictions ; the work ascribed to Dictys is older, and can be traced back to the time of Nero. See *Dares* and *Dictys* in Smith’s Classical Dictionary ; Warton’s Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, iii. 81 ; and Dunlop’s Hist. of Fiction, ch. vi.

533. *Punsoune*, poison. The reference is not to the historical account of Alexander’s death, but to that which is given by the romance-writers. See the romance of Alexander, in Metrical Romances, ed. Weber, i. 320, where he is said to have been poisoned by Antipater. So too Chaucer, in his Monkes Tale, regrets Alexander’s death by poison.

545. *Punsoune*, a dagger ; see the footnote. Perhaps a still better reading would be *punsounes*, in the plural. This is evidently the word meant. Halliwell gives “*Punchion*, a bodkin,” as a Northern word. Cotgrave has “*Poinson*, a bodkin ;” in modern French *poinçon* means an awl ; and Richardson gives quotations for *punchion* in the sense of a weapon. This shews that *poinson* was regarded as synonymous with

<sup>1</sup> although.

*bodkin*; and *bodkin* was also a word which could be used in the sense of dagger. Chaucer, in his account of Cæsar's death in the Monkes Tale, uses the very word, saying the conspirators "stiked him with boydekins." Nares (s. v. Bodkin) gives two other quotations in which Cæsar is spoken of as having been slain with *bodkins*. Hamlet speaks of a man making his quietus "with a bare *bodkin*;" Act iii. sc. 1.

549. *Arthur*. See Sir Thomas Malory's *Morte Arthur*, and the Alliterative *Morte Arthur*, ed. Brock (E. E. T. S.). We there read how he defeated the Roman emperor, Lucius Iberius, and was himself crowned emperor at Rome; and how he was slain by his nephew, Modred or Mordred. See also Wyntown, ed. Laing, v. 4301, and the next note.

560. *The broite*, i. e. the Chronicle called "The Brut." Wace translated Geoffrey of Monmouth into French verse as "Li Romans de Brut," and Wace's work was the chief foundation of the English version by Layamon; see Morley's Eng. Writers, i. 505, 615. The death of "Luces the emperor," i. e. Lucius Iberius, occurs in Layamon's Brut, ed. Madden, iii. 111.

However, the really interesting point about this allusion to the Brut is that Barbour himself wrote a poem with this title, though it is not now extant. This we learn from Wyntown, who frequently alludes to it in his *Cronykil*, ed. Laing, bk. ii. 133, 773; bk. iii. 622; bk. iv. 1183; bk. v. 511, 3154, 4245, 4292.

561. Here again we come to a passage quoted by Wyntown, who continues the narrative from l. 514 above in these words:—

It fell, efftyr this band-makyng,  
Ihon the Cwmyne rade to the Kyng  
Off Ingland, and tald all the cas,  
To trow, noucht all yhit as it was.  
Bot the indenture till hym gave he  
Off thare cunnandis prwff till be.

He then misses ll. 567, 568, gives ll. 569—572 in a different form, misses ll. 573—588, and continues:—

Than Cwmyne hys leve tuk, and hame went.  
And the kyng a Parlement, &c.

The only variations in ll. 592—601 are these. 592. *Somownys—hy]* he sowmownd ryght stratly. 595. *Bydding]* Word. 596. *na persaw-*  
*yng]* than na wytting. 597. *the—the]* tresoun, na off that.

602. Wyntown continues the above-mentioned quotation to l. 601, but for this line he substitutes—On the morne in his Parlement. He then continues his quotation, more or less closely, to the end of Book II. l. 9. The variations are slight and unimportant.

625. "And, to secure that, I put in pledge my whole heritage." That is, he offered to forfeit all his lands if he did not appear; and the king accepted this security.

## NOTES TO BOOK II. (A.D. 1305—1306.)

(Jamieson, I. 631—II. 395; Innes, pp. 26—47.)

1. Fordun and Wyntown add that the duke of Gloucester, a friend to Bruce, sent him a piece of money and a pair of spurs. Bruce took the hint, and set off for Scotland with all speed. With Book II., compare Fordun, ed. Skene, capp. cxiv.—cxix., pp. 338—342; and Wyntown, ed. Laing, bk. viii. 2853—2930.

The first 9 lines of this Book are quoted by Wyntown; see note to Book I. l. 602. He also cites, more or less closely, ll. 17—36. See note to l. 36.

16. Fordun and Wyntown add that Bruce, in his flight, met a messenger who was bearing a letter to Sir John Cumyn, and who endeavoured to avoid him. The message was accordingly intercepted, and the messenger slain.

17. *Fyft*, fifteenth. Wyntown says—“on the fyft day.” So also Hart; see the footnote. “Robert the Bruce com hame on the ferd [i. e. fourth] day;” Wallace, xi. 1155.

18. Lochmaben Castle is in Annandale, not far to the N. E. of Dumfries, which is mentioned in l. 26.

23. A halting line; the reading *summond* (H) scans better than *soucht*. Wyntown has—

“ How he chapyd, and all the eas,  
How before all hapnyd was.”

33. *In the freris*, in the (Gray) Friars’ church. The Grey Friars were the Franciscans or Minorites. The place meant is the chapel of the Minorite convent. The date of the murder, according to Fordun, is Feb. 10, 1306. See Lord of the Isles, i. 27, ii. 13; and Scott’s note to i. 27.

36. Here Wyntown’s quotations from Barbour cease. He omits all the rest of Bruce’s history, referring his readers to Barbour for information.

37. “Sir Robert Cumin, not Sir Edward. See Annals of Scotland, i. 291.”—P. The readings are—*Edmund*, E., J., I.; *Edward*, P., H.

44. “Who did not respect the sanctity of the altar.” See *Gyrth* in the Glossary.

81. *Byschop*; see note to i. 354.

86. See The Romance and Prophecies of Thomas of Erceldoune, ed. J. A. H. Murray (E. E. T. S.); pref. p. xvii.

92. See Book i. 356, and the note.

96. “When the tables were removed;” i. e. after dinner.

112. *Clyffurd*, probably Lord Robert Clifford; Ann. Scot. i. 5.

118. *Ferrand* is the horse’s name; possibly the same as *farrand* or *weil-farand*, i. e. handsome. However, it occurs again as the name of a horse in the *Buik of Alexander the Great*, pp. 79, 92.

121. "Take him as if you did it of your own head," i. e. without any suggestion from another. Accordingly, he adds—"as if I had given no advice thereto."

130. *Taucht him*, gave him, handed over to him. Pinkerton is wrong in suggesting the reading *raucht*.

148. "Arickstone in the head of Anandale;" Hume's Hist. of Douglas, p. 24.

150. "Scone, near the left bank of the Tay, rather more than a mile north from Perth, is memorable for its palace, the ancient residence of the Scottish kings, and the place of their coronation;" Cyclopaedia of the British Empire, ii. 727.

151. *In kingis stole*, on the royal throne, lit. stool; cf. l. 180. The celebrated "stone of destiny," on which the Scottish kings, before Bruce, had been crowned, had been carried off from Scone by Edward I. in August, 1296. The stone is now at Westminster, embedded in the coronation-chair. It came originally from Spain (!), by way of Ireland; Wyntown, bk. iii. c. 9.

178. Bruce was crowned at Scone, March 25, 1306, in presence of the bishops of St Andrews and Glasgow. The ceremony was repeated on Palm Sunday, March 27; Annals of England, p. 176. Cf. Fordun, cap. cxviii.

189. *Maymteym*, maintain; the usual spelling in Barbour.

199. Lord Hailes observes that the "letters patent to Pembroke are drawn up in an enraged and vindictive style." It is true that, worn by disease and age, Edward displayed a ferocity during the last two years of his life which has somewhat tarnished his greatness as a king.

200. Sir Aymer de Valence, earl of Pembroke, was third son of the half-brother of Henry III. His arms are described in Walter of Exeter's poem on the Siege of Carlaverock; see Ann. of England, p. 178, note *l*, and p. 152, note *k*. His tomb is in Westminster Abbey; see an account of him in Brayley's Hist. of Westm. Abbey, ii. 275. Pembroke College, Cambridge, was founded in 1347 by his widow, Mary de St Paul.

205. *Raiss dragoun*, lit. raise the dragon. Jamieson explains it by "to deliver up to military execution." The context rather implies that it signifies to harry, to act tyrannically, or probably, "to play the devil." In the absence of other explanation, I would suggest that to "raise the dragon" may very well be equivalent to raising the devil's standard. Ducange gives—"Draco, (1) vexillum in quo draconis effigies effecta; (2) effigies draconis, que cum vexillis in ecclesiasticis processionibus deferri solet, qua vel *diabolus ipse*, vel haeresis designantur, de quibus triumphat ecclesia." We are all familiar with St George and the dragon, wherein the dragon represents evil. Perhaps the verb to *dragoon* has hence drawn somewhat of its sinister meaning.

211. Sir Philip Mowbray nearly captured king Robert at Methven; ii. 413. He was afterwards defeated by Douglas; viii. 21. He held Stirling castle against Bruce; x. 806. After the battle of Bannock-

burn, he not only yielded up the castle according to his previous engagement, but took the Scottish side. He accompanied Edward Bruce to Ireland, and performed great deeds of valour after Edward's death; xviii. 125.

Sir Roger Mowbray was engaged in the conspiracy of De Soulis against Bruce (see Book xix. 11), but died before he was brought to trial; Fordun, cap. cxxxv.

Sir Ingraham de Umphraville was on the English side at Bannockburn, xii. 451; he afterwards joined the Bruce, but left him on finding that Sir David Brechin had been executed for joining in De Soulis' conspiracy; xix. 73. He was mainly instrumental (says Barbour) in establishing a truce between England and Scotland; xix. 158. Compare his three pieces of advice, all of the same tenor; ii. 257; xii. 452; xix. 158.

235. Lennox was formerly written Leuenax, a name probably compounded of Leven, and *ax*, a stream or water, so that Levenax merely meant, originally, the river Leven, but afterwards included that district of Dunbartonshire through which the Leven flows; see Jamieson's note. The reference is to Malcolm, 5th earl of Lennox; Hailes's Annals, ii. 2. By *Atholl* is meant John de Strathbogie, Earl of Athol, afterwards executed; see Lord of the Isles, note to ii. 26. "When John, Earl of Atholl, nobly descended, who had with other murthered John Comin, was apprehended by King Edward the first, and some intreated for him, the king answered: 'The higher his calling is, the greater must his fall be; and as he is of higher parentage, so shall he be higher hanged:' which according was performed, for he was hanged on a gallows fifty feet high;" Camden, Remaines concerning Britaine, ed. 1657, p. 259.

236. Edward Bruce was Robert's impetuous and headstrong brother, afterwards slain in attempting to make himself king of Ireland; see Book xviii. See Lord of the Isles, note to iv. 20.

237. Sir Thomas Randolph's great exploit was the taking of Edinburgh castle; x. 584. He had just been made Earl of Murray, x. 264. At king Robert's death, he became regent of Scotland, xx. 300. Wyntown greatly praises his powers of governing; bk. viii. 3143. He was Bruce's nephew (ix. 732), and died in 1332; Hailes's Annals, ii. 146; Fordun, cap. cxlv. See Lord of the Isles, vi. 1, and the note.

Hugh de la Haye (lit. of the hedge) was "brother of Gilbert Hay of Errol."—P. Cf. Book ii. 490; iii. 25; and see notes to Lord of the Isles, ii. 13; and The Wallace, viii. 581. "David Barclay, of Cairns in Fife."—P. On which Jamieson remarks—"on what authority this is asserted we are not informed [yet it is clearly copied from Hailes, Ann. Scot. ii. 2]. It seems probable that this is the same David who received from Robert I. the lands of Knocqy in Glenesk, Forfarshire; also Rothmay, Brechine, Kinlock, &c. on the forfeiture of David de Brechin; see Robertson's Index, 18. 79—26. 79. A charter of the lands of Colcarny, Kinross-shire, to John, son of David Barclay, in the reign of David I., is referred to, ibid. 53. 28." See Jamieson's note.

239. *Fresale*, Fraser. "Alexander Fraser, the brother of Simon Fraser of Oliver Castle in Tweeddale, the ancestor of the families of Lovat and Salton."—J. See the song on the Execution of Sir Simon Fraser, A.D. 1306, in Polit. Songs, ed. Wright, 212; also Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26. Barbour calls him Alexander below; ii. 407.

*Somerueile*, Sir John Somerville; see Craufurd's Peerage, p. 445, and Jamieson's note.

243<sup>o</sup>. *Cristall of Setoun*, i. e. "Christopher Seton, of Seton, ancestor of the Duke of Gordon, Earl of Winton, Earl of Dunfermline, and Viscount Kingston; see Hailes' Annals, ii. 2."—P. (note to ii. 418). He rescued Bruce at the battle of Methven; Book ii. 418. He was (according to Barbour) betrayed to the English, and executed by Edward; iv. 16. He was Bruce's brother-in-law; see Annals of England, p. 176, note *a*; and Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26.

247. Saint Johnston is another name for Perth, on account of its church being dedicated to St John. Instances of the use of this name are common. Thus Lambarde says—"He was by birth a Scot, of Perthe, now commonly called Saint John's Town;" *Perambulation of Kent*, ed. 1656, p. 413. And see Skelton, ed. Dyce, ii. 218.

279. *Bot gyf thai fail*, "unless they fail to keep their word."

303. *Meffayn*, Methven, about six miles to the west of Perth; still vulgarly called *Meffen*. "Eodem anno [1306] rex Robertus, xix die mensis Junii, victus est apud Methven," &c.; Fordun, cap. cxix.

329. *Our werdis dele*, allot our destiny.

346—445. Quoted in Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 286.

365. *Renk*; so in JI; *reuk*, P. The MS. may, of course, be read either way. *Renk* means a rank of fighting men, and the text says that those that remained on horseback dealt such blows that the rank of men around them reeled. So also, in l. 380, the expression is—"that all the *semble schuk*," i. e. till all the assembly reeled. For examples of the word, see *reng* in Stratmann, who gives an example of the spelling *renk* from St Brandan, ed. Wright, 12. Chaucer has the pl. form *renges*, Kn. Tale, 1736. Jamieson reads *renk*, but in his Dictionary explains it as "*reuk*, the atmosphere," since that was the reading before him in Pinkerton's edition. He was thinking of *rak* or *roke*, a mist; but I cannot accept that interpretation here, when l. 380 is considered.

378. *Assenzhe*, warcry; better spelt *enseinzie* (see l. 426 and iii. 27), from the French *enseigne*, a token.

381. *Till-hewyt* is a false spelling of *to-hewyt*, i. e. hewed in twain; due to the constant confusion, throughout this poem, between the prepositions *till* and *to*. The past participle would be *to-hewyn*, which appears in Book xx. 367, but is miswritten *till-hewyne* in the Cambridge MS. Cf. *to-hewe* in Chaucer, C. T. Group B, 430.

384. *Thai feble fast*, they are giving way already; a natural exclamation of encouragement, which did not, however, express the truth.

437. "And it may yet happen, if they wish to pursue us, we shall, however, to some extent requite them a turn."

471. *Will off wane*, lit. wild of weening, i. e. wandering in opinion, at his wit's end, at a loss. See *Specimenes of English*, ed. Morris and Skeat, p. 94, l. 155, and the note at p. 309. It occurs again, i. 323; vii. 225. It is equivalent to *will of red*, i. 348, iii. 494; and Wallace, ii. 259. Both phrases are equivalent to the expression in i. 318—"He wyst nocth quhat to do na say."

479. *Boroundoun*. The source of this name has not been traced, nor is it clearly known to whom allusion is made. Hart reads 'Halyburton.' Sir W. Scott has it *Barendown*; Lord of the Isles, ii. 13. However, Tytler (i. 91, note 7) says it was Sir William de Barondoun; "this knight is a witness to a charter of Haig of Bemerside to the Abbey of Melrose, along with Thomas Rymer of Ercildoun and others. *Chartulary of Melrose*, Bib. Harl. 3960, fol. 109 a."

491. *Sir Nele Cambell*. "This was the predecessor of the family of Argyll. He was an early and faithful adherent of King Robert, who gave him his sister, the Lady Mary Bruce, in marriage. He died in 1315. His brother, Sir Donald Campbell of Redhouse, was ancestor of the noble family of Loudon. See *Craufurd's Peceage*, pp. 13—15."—J. *Nele* is also written *Nigel*, and in Latin *Nigellus*; but it is a Scandinavian name. Hence also the name of *Nelson*.

494. "Enduring their tribulation in the mountains." Jamieson's *Scot. Dict.* gives—" *Month, Mounth*, (1) a mountain; (2) the Grampian mountains towards their Eastern extremity. *To gang o'er the Month*, to cross the Grampians; North of Scotland dialect." It is opposed to 'the planys' in l. 496, and is rendered by 'the hyllis' in l. 508. See *Wyntown*, vi. 2229; and notes to *Fordun*, ed. Skene, ii. 385.

503. *Fur thai*, they fared, they acted. *For he*, because he.

513. *Nele the bryss*, Neil or Nigel Bruce, Bruce's brother. He defended Kildrummy Castle, iv. 61, 185; but was taken and executed, iv. 313; see *Lord of the Isles*, notes to ii. 26.

517, 518. *Tyttar-na*, rather—than. *Angyr*, affliction.

528. *Thebes*. See *Statius, Thebais*, lib. xii. King Adrastus was one of the Seven Heroes who warred against Thebes, and the only one who returned home in safety; see l. 547. Compare—

"Yet, as some authors make mentiouin,  
Or Theseus entred into the toun,  
The women first, with pekois and with malles,  
With gret labour beat downe the walles."

Lydgate, *Storie of Thebes*.

534. *Campaneus*, properly Capaneus; he was struck by lightning whilst attempting to scale the walls of Thebes, because he had defied Zeus. Cf. Euripides, *Phoenissæ*, 1172; Sophocles, *Antigone*, 126—136; Æschylus, *Seven against Thebes*, 425; Statius, *Thebais*, x. 826; Dante, *Inferno*, xiv. 63. Barbour no doubt followed the account in Statius.

## NOTES TO BOOK III. (A.D. 1306.)

(Jamieson, II. 396—III. 228; Innes, pp. 47—74.)

1. *Lord of Lorne.* Probably the rubric in Hart's edition, suggesting that this was John of Lorn, is wrong. The person intended is rather John of Lorn's father, Allaster Macdougal, who was really Lord of Lorn at this time. He had married the third daughter of Comyn, and was therefore Comyn's son-in-law, though Barbour here calls him his nephew. See the long note to the Lord of the Isles, i. 11. John of Lorn is mentioned further on, vi. 481; vii. 80, 92.

48. *Him abandonyt*, took upon himself, gave himself up to. In I. 80 it means 'demeaned himself'; in iv. 655, *abandonyt* means 'completely subjected.' In the last sense it occurs in Skelton, ed. Dyce, i. 273; ii. 260.

62. The old phrase for 'stand in awe' was simply to 'stand awe,' here slightly altered to *stand ane sik aw*, which is equivalent to *stand sik ane aw*, lit. to 'stand such an awe,' i. e. to stand in such awe. There is no real difficulty, when once the old phrase becomes familiar. Thus, in Havelok, I. 277, we have—

"Al engelond of him *stod awe*,  
All engelond was of him adrad."

In my edition of Havelok, I have printed "stod [in] awe," but now perceive that the MS. reading is correct. I add another example of this odd idiom, from p. 78 of The Buik of Alexander:—"As he stude of thame lytill awe." And it occurs in The Wallace, v. 929, vi. 878, ix. 458.

66. "Stop them, himself alone, without more (to help him)."

67. *Marthokys sone.* This is in the vocative case, and refers to the person addressed. Jamieson's guess is surely correct; he supposes *Marthok* to be *Muratach*, now *Murdoch*, and thus 'Marthokys sone' is simply Macmurdoch.

68, 69. "Just as Gaul (or Gall) Mac Morna was wont to rescue his men from Fingal." In the Book of the Dean of Lismore, Translation, p. 43, Oisin (or Ossian) the poet addresses 'high-minded Goll, who combats Fionn.' Here Fionn (or Fingal) is Fionn Mac Cumhaill, Oisin's father. See Morley, Eng. Writers, i. 182, 183. Prof. Morley says that Barbour makes the Lord of Lorn "quote to his men Fionn, by the name of Fingal, in his strife against Goll Macmorna, as an example of courage." Of course this is a slip; it is Goll Macmorna whose courage is here praised. Fordun (cap. cxx) says that the conflict here described took place at Dalry, Aug. 11, 1306; and Bower calls it the "battle of Dalry;" Scotichron. xii. 11. Dalry or Dalree means the King's Dale. "It is close to the celebrated pool of St Fillan, about a mile, or little more, below the village of Tyndrum"—J. Tyndrum is in Strath Fillan, Perthshire, near the border of Argyle.

73. *Gaudifer* is “Sir Gaudifer de Larys, whose adventures in arms form the chief subject of that chapter of the Romance of Alexander the Great which treats of the ‘Forray of Gadderis,’ where he [Alexander] is opposed by the mighty ‘Duke Betyis, that Gaderis aucht ;’ pref. to Bruce, ed. Innes, p. xxvii. The story is to be found in the *Buik of the Most noble and vailȝeand conquerour Alexander*, callit the *Forray of Gadderis*, *Bannatyne Club*, 1834; but, as this appears, from the concluding paragraph, to have been translated from the French about 1438, Barbour must have seen it in an earlier form. Cf. Warton, *Hist. Eng. Poetry*, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 142, 299. *Laryss* may be Larissa, in Thessaly. The story is, that Alexander, when besieging Tyre, also sent some men on a foray, who were attacked by duke Betis of Gaderis. Subsequently, Alexander himself was opposed by Betyis and Gaudifer; and, on the flight of Betyis, Gaudifer rallied the flying host, and even unhorsed Alexander himself and several of his leaders. *Tholimar* no doubt means Ptolemy, one of Alexander’s generals. *Coneus* and *Dauklyne* are called Caulus and Dauclene in the Romance.

93. This is the story of the Brooch of Lorn, so well told in Scott’s *Tales of a Grandfather*, ch. viii; cf. *The Lord of the Isles*, ii. 14; and the note. But Barbour does not make any mention of the Brooch.

99. *Makyne-drosser*, spelt *Makindorser* in Hart. The name is Gaelic, and signifies the sons of the doorkeeper, or (as Barbour rightly explains it) the ‘durwarth sonnys’ or door-ward’s sons. The derivation is from the Gaelic *mac*, a son, and *na dorsair*, of the door-keeper; *dorsair* being again derived from *doras*, a door, and *fear*, a man.

102. “They had a third man in their agreement (or plot).” Sir W. Scott makes the third man the father, or Mac Androsser himself. See Book v. 521. See the list of stories of this character in the Note to Book v. 521.

109. “Between the side of a lake and a steep bank.” They were retreating from Dalrie, near Tyndrum, and most likely towards the Tay, whence they started; ii. 589. If so, the scene of the encounter would be in Glen Dochart, between Loch Dochart and Ben More. Tydeus was caught in a similar situation, vi. 211.

146. Pinkerton remarks that Bruce here kills *three* men; afterwards, *three* more, v. 521; *three* more, vii. 189; *five*, vi. 149; *fourteen*, vi. 313. However, Barbour clearly exaggerates in many places, and his business was chiefly to impress his readers. The recurrence of the number three is awkward. It is probable that at least the “Brooch of Lorn” story is told twice over, viz. here (iii. 93—146) and in v. 559—656; but the details are varied in a very skilful manner. See note to Book v. 521.

153. Macnaughtan was a baron of Cowal, which is the district of Argyleshire between Loch Fyne and Loch Long. “All that I can discover in our records is, that the lands which formerly belonged to John, the son of Duncan, the son of Alexander of Yle, were given by David Bruce to Alexander Macnaughtan; v. Ind. Chart. 99, 100.”—J.

172. "So may our Lord preserve me!" lit. 'see me.' This expression is in Chaucer; v. *See* in Tyrwhitt's Glossary.

186. "Deploring the harm that they have received."

208. Alluding to the battle of Cannæ. "Here, on 2 Aug. 216 b.c., Hannibal with 50,000 Africans, Gauls, and Spaniards, defeated Paulus Æmilius and Terentius Varro, with 88,000 Romans, of whom 40,000 were slain. The victor sent to Carthage three bushels of rings, taken from the Roman knights;" Haydn, Dict. of Dates. Cf. Wyntown, bk. iv. c. 16.

235. The story of Hannibal's close approach to Rome, and of his attack upon the Romans being stopped by a storm on two successive days, is given in Plutarch; see North's translation, ed. 1631, p. 1077. It occurs also in Wyntown, bk. iv. c. 17.

242. *Twyss*, twice. Plutarch and Wyntown say only twice in all; but Barbour generally enlarges his numbers.

281. "Nil actum credens, si quid superesset agendum;" Lucani Pharsalia, ii. 657.

291. "Unless he be very unlucky, he will partially achieve it; and if he lives, it may well be that he will achieve it wholly."

301. "Than he had reason for, by far."

321. "These afflictions I can no longer endure; for, though it should thereby come about that I should die, I must stop here."

337. Kildrummy Castle is on the Don, in Aberdeenshire. It is described in Cordiner's Antiquities and Scenery of the North of Scotland.

385. *Kyntyrs*, Cantire, a peninsula in Argyleshire; Gaelic Ceann-tire, lit. land's end; from *ceann*, head, headland, extremity, and *tir*, land. See Lord of the Isles, ii. 9, and the note.

390. "And pursue his destiny to the end."

418. *Fut-hate*, foot-hot, with all speed; and so in xiii. 454. Spelt *foothot* in Chaucer, Man of Lawes Tale, Group B, l. 438.

420. *Thresum*, holding three at a time, with three in all. So also *fifsum*, five in all; &c. Cf. l. 424.

437. *Ferambrace*, Fierabras or Ferumbras the Saracen, son of Balan or Lavan, the sultan of Babylon, and brother of the fair Floripas or Florippa. "We have [in English] two versions of this romance; one of them the Farmer MS. analysed by Ellis (vol. ii. p. 369), and now in the library of Sir Thomas Phillipps; the other a fragment [unprinted] of great length, MS. Ashmole 33. They both belong probably to the end of the fourteenth century. The original of the romance is the French Fierabras; see Les Anciens Poetes de la France, tom. iv.;" &c. Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 197, q. v. The Farmer MS. was printed for the Roxburgh Club in 1854, with the title—"Romaunce of the Sowdone of Babylone and of Ferumbras his sone, who conquered Rome." The reader who consults this will find in it all the points mentioned by Barbour. The Ashmole MS. begins with the combat between Fierabras (*ferri brachium*) and Oliver, in which the latter is victorious.

440. *Duk-peris*, apparently ‘duke-peers;’ but really a corruption of *douze pairs*, the twelve peers of France. Wyntown writes *dowch-sperys*, v. 4350; and, what is most to the point, we find, in the Sowdone of Babylone, p. 10, the spelling *dospers*; and, at p. 14, *dosityperys*.

441. *Egremor*, the tower of Aigremont (called *Agremare* and *Egremoure* in the Farmer MS., and described as in Spain), in which eleven of the twelve peers were imprisoned together with Florippa, the daughter of Balan, by Balan himself, king of the Saracens, who is here called *Lawyne*, and in the Farmer MS. is called *Lavan*. They were released by Charlemagne. Pinkerton refers us to Conquestes du Grand Charlemagne, Roi de France, &c.; printed at Troyes, about 1750. And see Fierabras, Chanson de Geste, ed. Kröeber and Servois, Paris, 1860.

455. *Mantrybill*. In the Complaint of Scotland, ed. J. A. H. Murray, p. 63, is mention of “the tail of the brig of the *mantribil*,” which is evidently an episode in the romance of Fierabras; and accordingly, in the Sowdone of Babylon, p. 77, I find that “Mauntreble” is Lavan’s “cheif cite,” and that the giant Alagolofure was warden of the “brigge” over the river Flagote that led to it. Richard of Normandy swam his horse over the river, killed the giant (p. 105), and won the bridge (p. 106). *Flagot*. An extract relating how Richard of Normandy swam his horse over “Flagote the flood” is printed in Warton’s Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 200.

459. *The naylis*, those with which Christ was crucified. *The sper*, the spear (of Longinus), which pierced the Saviour’s side. These relics are here said to have been recovered from Fierabras. Wheeler, in his Noted Names of Fiction, says that “Fierabras, who was a Saracen, made himself master of Rome, and carried away from it various sacred relics, especially the crown of thorns and the balsam which was used in embalming the body of the Saviour.” In the Sowdone of Babylon (p. 113), Charles wins back these relics, offers the cross at Paris, the crown at St Denis, and the “nayles thre” at Boulogne.

479. “And sought the thick groves, and set snares.”

493. “For he supposed the king had been dead;” cf. l. 509.

494. *Will off red*, lit. wild of rede (or counsel), i. e. at a loss what to do. Cf. i. 348; and see note on *will of wane*, ii. 471.

517. *But anger gret*, without severe affliction. *Anger* commonly means affliction, not only in Barbour, but in Piers the Plowman, &c. In l. 530, the adj. *angry* may have the usual modern sense.

540. *Salss*, sauce; alluding to the proverb—“Hunger is the best sauce;” in French, “Il n’y a sauce que d’appétit;” in Italian, “Appetito no vuol salse.” Ray says—“this proverb is reckoned among the aphorisms of Socrates—‘Optimum cibi condimentum fames, sitis potūs;’ Cicero, de Finibus, lib. ii.”

561. “Forsan et haec olim meminisse iuuabit;” Virg. AEn. i. 203.

577. *But, Bute*; on their way from the Clyde to Cantire.

578. *Frely fute*, noble or handsome child. Jamieson explains it to

mean ‘noble woman,’ unnecessarily. *Fute* is the same as *fode*, spelt *fude* in Sir Perceval, 1326; and Stratmann quotes “þis freli fode,” Sir Eglamour, 1254; “to wedde þat freli fode,” Amadas, ed. Robson, liv. 6; cf. “min øgene child, my leue fode,” King Horn, ed. Lumby, 1340. Mätzner (note to K. Horn, 1340) quotes “that frely fode,” Amis and Amiloun, 557. *Fode* usually has the sense of child, and is used of both sexes; it means, literally, one *fed* or nourished up. The sense is—“as they, in rowing, rose with their oars, they could see many a handsome child along the coasts, looking on at them.”

583, 584. “So spanned the oars, that the skin might often be seen left behind on the wood;” i. e. on the handle. The oars were, probably, but roughly made, and the knights were not much accustomed to the exercise. Compare Lord of the Isles, v. 13.

588. “To advance them in their floating.”

658. *Stycht*, determination, resolve. The word is not in the Dictionaries, but the connected verb is found in the form “*Stightele*, to establish, to dispose,” Halliwell; *stihtlen*, to dispose, Stratmann; *stihten*, to dispose, fix, Stratmann; cf. A.S. *stihtan*, to establish. Thus *stycht* means fixed purpose, resolution, determined course of action.

659. “Angus at that time was the lord of Islay.” The isle of Islay was formerly called *Ila*, and is here denoted by *Ile*; see Jamieson’s note. It lies beyond Cantire.

666. *Donavardyne*, Dunaverty, where there was once a castle. It is near Southend, which, as its name implies, is on the southern coast or end of Cantire.

680. *Rauchryne* is now called Rathlin. Jamieson remarks that the spelling here given is no corruption, and cites ten ways of spelling the name, including *Rachryne*, *Rachraind*, *Rechran*, *Rochrinne*, from Archdall’s *Monasticon Hibernicum*, p. 11. It lies in the North Channel, between Cantire and Ireland. Pinkerton refers us, for a description of it, to Hamilton’s *Observations on the North of Ireland*. Scott spells it Rath-Erin; Lord of the Isles, ii. 9.

682. *In mydwart*, in the middle, between. The readings *mid wattir* (P) *mydwatter* (J) are due to misreading the MS., and may be dismissed.

687. *Raiss*, race, i. e. current. The “Race of Brittany” can hardly be other than that now named Rennell’s Current, from Major Rennell, who first traced its course. It begins, from the Atlantic, at Cape Finisterre, follows the curve of the coast round the Bay of Biscay, and then shoots across the English Channel, often endangering vessels near the Scilly Isles. Its greatest velocity is 90 miles per day, as observed on the French coast off Brest. See *Atlas of Physical Geography*, by Petermann and Milner, p. 40. See an allusion to the channel between “Rachrin” and Ireland in Fordun, ed. Skene, ii. 387.

688. “Or the strait of Morocco in Spain;” i. e. the strait of Gibraltar. Chaucer also calls it “the straite of Marrok,” *Man of Lawes Tale*, Group B, l. 465.

696. *The mole*, i. e. the Mull of Cantire ; from the Gaelic *maol*, a promontory.

706. "Hi summo in fluctu pendent, his unda dehiscens  
Terram inter fluctus aperit ;" Virg. Æn. i. 106.

745. *Loud and still*, i. e. under all circumstances. It is a common phrase in old romances ; see Halliwell. A similar phrase is "in hey and low," used by Chaucer.

---

#### NOTES TO BOOK IV. (A.D. 1306, 1307.)

(Jamieson, III. 229—1003 ; Innes, pp. 74—102.)

13. *Robert*. "Robert Wishart, bishop of Glasgow from 1272 to 1317, celebrated for his patriotism ; see Keith's Catalogue of Scottish Bishops."—P. See Wyntown, viii. 1910 ; Ann. of Scot. ii. 13.

14. *Marcus*. "Marcus, bishop of the Isles [which included the Isle of Man] from 1272 to 1303 ; see Keith's Catalogue."—P. Pinkerton adds that there seems to be no authority for saying that he died in 1303, and observes that Barbour here makes him alive in 1306. "The Isle of Man at this time belonged to the crown of Scotland."—J. The sea is still called that of Sodor and Man, where Sodor means 'the southern Islands ;' cf. Icel. *sudr-eyjar*, a name given to the Hebrides in the Landnámabók.

16. See note to Book ii. 243<sup>o</sup>. Jamieson, in a long note (p. 479), clearly shews that *Loudon* (l. 17) means the castle of Lochdon in Ayrshire, of which Sir Gilbert de Carrick (ancestor of the Earl of Cassilis) was hereditary keeper. Lochdon, or Loch Doon, is the source of the "bonny Doon."

18. Judas, i. e. Iscariot. The phrase "disciple of Judas" or "child of Judas" means a very wicked man ; see P. Plowman, B. prol. 35.

29. *In Ingland*, to England ; probably a mistake. Jamieson says (p. 480)—"Such regard had King Robert for the memory of Sir Chrystal, that he erected a chapel on the spot where he had been executed, hard by the town of Dumfries."

36. Sir Reginald Crawfurd ; Ann. Scot. ii. 19.

37. *Bruce* is here a mistake of the scribe for *Brice* ; note the reading *Bryse* in Hart. The person meant is Sir Brice Blair ; Ann. Scot. ii. 19, note. And see Jamieson's note to The Wallace, vii. 205.

41. "Was coupled in God's bond," united in matrimony.

47. "The *gyrth*, or sanctuary, of St Duthac at Tain, whence the Earl of Ross took the queen, Elizabeth, daughter of Aymer de Burgh earl of Ulster, and Marjory, the king's daughter by his former wife, Isabella, and delivered them up to the English."—P. Tain is in Rossshire, on the Dornoch Firth. See Ann. Scot. ii. 9.

56. *Dongeoun*, dungeon. The most remarkable case was that of the Countess of Buchan, "who was imprisoned within the castle of Berwick, in a cage made on purpose;" Tales of a Grandfather, chap. viii. Scott explains that this cage was not one that was hung out over the walls, as some have said, "like a parrot's cage out at a window;" but was a cage such as is not unfrequently found in prisons, "resembling one of those places in which wild beasts are confined." Her crime was that she placed the crown on Bruce's head with her own hands, at the ceremony of his coronation. See Ann. Scot. ii. 10.

57. Here, fortunately, the Cambridge MS. begins, to the considerable improvement of the text; see footnote to this line.

73. "The prince of Wales and many young nobles are knighted with great ceremony, May 22, 1306; when the king takes an oath to conquer the Scots or die in the quarrel;" Ann. of England, p. 176.

94. "Some (of the) best (were) wounded, and some were slain."

117. "And placed it high upon a heap of corn."

119. Evidently an allusion to a proverb. It looks as if the form of it intended is—

"Fire and pride  
Can no man hide."

I have not, however, so found it. Line 124 seems to intimate the usual form of the proverb, viz. "There is no smoke without some fire."

127. "First like a star, then like a moon."

181. It is well known that Snowdoun was a name formerly given to Stirling castle; see note to Lady of the Lake, vi. 28. But it would appear, in this place, that the title is applied to Kildrummy castle. Jamieson says—"In a MS. formerly belonging to Sir James Balfour of Denmilne, Lyon King at Arms, now in the library of the Advocates, the title of the Snowdoune Herald is derived 'from Snowdoune castle of the county of Rosse, the residence of our ancient Scottish kings.' I have met with no other vestige of this castle; the same account, however, is given by Nisbet; Heraldry, ii. 166."

It looks as if the name of Snowdoun may have been given, at the time, to Kildrummy castle, in consequence of the queen's being in residence there.

190. Barbour inserts the death of King Edward I. too soon. He was "obliged by sickness to remain in Northumberland and Cumberland, the summer and autumn, 1306; and he was at Lanercost all the winter 1306-7; see this proved from Rymer's Foedera in the Annals of Scotland, ii. 5."—P. In fact, we must suppose many months to elapse between lines 193 and 194. And it may be well to bear in mind that Edward's death did not occur till after the battle of Loudon Hill, described in Book viii.

203. Edward died at Burgh-on-the-Sands, about five miles from Carlisle, July 7, 1307.

209. It is remarkable that we have a very similar story told of Henry IV. See II. Henry IV.; Act iv. sc. 4. In a note on that scene

in Staunton's Shakespeare, a much earlier instance of a similar play upon words is given. Pope Sylvester II. had, it was said, been assured by a spirit that he should not die till he had said mass at Jerusalem. In A.D. 1003, he said mass in the church called 'the Holy Cross in Jerusalem ;' he was there suddenly taken ill, and soon after died. The story is fully related by Wyntown, bk. vi. c. xii, who calls the church that of "Jerusalem in Vy Laterane." Mr Furnivall kindly refers me to a note in Singer's Shakespeare, who cites "a remarkable coincidence in a passage of Anna Comnena (Alexius, lib. vi. p. 162, ed. Paris, 1658) relative to the death of Robert Guiscard, king of Sicily, in a place called Jerusalem at Cephalouia. In Lodge's Devils Conjured is a similar story of Pope Sylvester ; but the Pope outwitted the devil. And Fuller, in his Church History, bk. v. p. 178, relates something of the same kind about Cardinal Wolsey, of whom it had been predicted *that he should have his end at Kingston.* Which was thought to be fulfilled by his dying in the custody of Sir William Kingston. See Cavendish's Life of Wolsey, Chiswick edition, 1825, vol. i. p. 320."

241. The same story is told in The Complaint of Scotland, ed. Murray, ch. x. p. 84 ; where we are warned against believing a prophecy attributed to Merlin, that Scotland would one day be united to England ; and we are also reminded of similar dubious prophecies, such as that uttered by Caiaphas (John xi. 50), the response of the Delphian oracle to Croesus, and the oracle concerning the contest of Pyrrhus with the Romans. A very similar prophecy was told concerning Provenzano Salvani, who is mentioned in Dante, Purg. xi. 121 ; see the story in a note to Cary's translation. In the Compl. of Scot., chap. vi. p. 63, mention is made of a tale of "Ferrand, erl of Flandris, that marcit the deuyl," evidently some story resembling the Tale of Melusine ; see Dr Murray's preface, pp. lxxiii, lxxiv.

Ferrand, prince of Portugal, became earl of Flanders by marriage with Jane, daughter of Baldwin IX., earl of Flanders. Philip Augustus of France defeated Ferrand and Otho IV. (emperor of Germany) at Bouvines, between Lille and Tournay, July 27, 1214.

249. *Bosbek* ; so in Hart. I have no doubt that it is a misprint for *Rosbek*, or some such form, and that the place meant is the modern Roubaix, which lies a little to the north of a line joining Lille and Tournay, and not far from Bouvines.

251. *Parisius veniet*, shall come to Paris. *Parisius* for *Parisios* is not uncommon.

257. "Shall go right to Paris, without doubt." Here *went* (so spelt in both MSS.) is used in place of the more usual form *wend*.

260. "This is the meaning of the saying."

336. The story goes back to the latter part of the year 1306.

374. "Their tackle, oars, and rudder ;" cf. l. 633.

384. Sir John de Hastings, lord of Abergavenny and seneschal of Aquitaine, the chief competitor for the crown of Scotland against Baliol and the elder Bruce ; see note to Book i. 51.

388. *Brathwek*, i. e. Brodick castle, on the E. coast of Arran. Jamieson is doubtful about the etymology of it, but it does not admit of a moment's doubt; for the spelling *Brathwek* clearly points to the Icel. *breiðr*, broad, and the spelling *Brodick* is an equally obvious corruption of Broad Wick, i. e. broad bay, alluding to the semi-circular bay just at that place. See Lord of the Isles, v. 6, and the note.

391. *Abandonit*, subjected; as in l. 655. Thus Skelton has *to abandone*, i. e. to subject, in his *Magnysycence*, l. 1477, ed. Dyce, i. 273; and see Dyce's note, ii. 260.

392. *Warn*, refuse; more commonly spelt *werne*.

464. The tradition is that Bruce landed at a place on the west coast of Arran, still called the King's Cove. See Jamieson, who refers to Stat. Acc. ix. 167.

518. *The tothir day*, the next day; lit. the second day.

556. *Turnberryis nuck*, Turnberry Point, on the Ayrshire coast, some distance to the south of Ayr. The castle belonged to the Earls of Carrick, and in this instance to Bruce himself. See next note.

599. "Edward bestowed the lordship of Annandale, the paternal estate of Bruce, on the Earl of Hereford; the earldom of Carrick, his maternal estate, on Henry Percy," &c.; Ann. of Scot. ii. 15.

606. "Had become English," i. e. had sided with the English.

609. *To vend*, to go; i. e. he intended to go. The reading *went* (E and II) is wrong, as the sequel will shew that he did not go after all.

617. As for this mysterious fire, it still remains unexplained. See Lord of the Isles, v. 17, and the note. The story is continued further on, v. 14.

632. This story about the good wife is repeated in Book vii. 238, q. v.

682. *Wes*, i. e. was inspired. *Ieromy*, Jeremiah. *Ysay* (l. 683), Isaiah.

685. *So thyn ar sawin*, are sown so thinly, are dispersed so widely; i. e. come so seldom. Cf. *sawyn*; Wallace, xi. 1226.

697. *Segis*, mansions, or positions. *Soft*, propitious.

711. "So that he should spend his utmost power on astrology," lit. should break his head in (studying) the stars.

721. "That confers upon them their natural dispositions."

735. "That men, naturally predisposed (by their nativities) to evil."

747. *Nigramansy*, necromancy; spelt *nigromancye* in Piers Plowman, A. xi. 158. The Latin mediæval writers spelt it *nigromantia*, and hence the phrase "the *black* art;" see the remarks on the word in Trench, Eng. Past and Present, Lect. V.

753. *Pithones*. This reading, from Hart's edition (but with the ending *-s* for *-sse*), was adopted as being more intelligible. Strictly speaking, the correct reading is certainly *Phitones*, as in the Edinburgh MS.; for though *Phitones* is an erroneous spelling, it was the usual spelling in mediæval writers. Thus Chaucer has *Phitonnesse*, in his *Freres Tale*, l. 7092, ed. Tyrwhitt; Lydgate has it twice; so also

Gower, Skelton, G. Douglas, and Sir D. Lyndsay ; see the references in Dyce's Skelton, ii. 151. The passage in Skelton is in *Phyllip Sparowe*, ll. 1342—1359 :—

“I coniure Phyllyp, and call  
In the name of kyng Saul ;  
*Primo Regum expresse*,  
He bad the Phitonesse  
To wytcherfart her to dresse,” &c.

Thus the *Phitonesse* is the witch of Endor ; the derivation being from Python. A similar transposition of consonants is seen in Chaucer's *Adriane*, for Ariadne.

771. “Guessed it, or certainly knew it.”

---

#### NOTES TO BOOK V. (A.D. 1306, 1307.)

(Jamieson, IV. 1—656 ; Innes, pp. 102—126.)

1—13. Quoted in Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 288. Lines 1—88 are quoted (from Jamieson's edition) in a note to Lord of the Isles, v. 9.

1. *Were*, i.e. Ver, the spring. But I suspect Barbour is wrong, and that the time of the year was the autumn (of 1306). “Bruce suddenly issues from his retreat, at the end of September. He besieges Henry de Percy in Turnbury Castle (near Girvan, in Ayrshire), but an English force puts him again to flight ;” Annals of England, p. 176. Barbour was thinking of the spring of 1307, when Douglas won his castle ; see l. 255. Hailes (Ann. Scot. ii. 17) thinks that Barbour is right.

11. “To recover the covering of their heads,” lit. head. *Herede* is early the proper reading, though written *herewid* in MS. E, and *hede* in MS. C. The final *e* is, however, superfluous, and the very best reading would be *hered*, with *reved* in l. 12.

13. In a footnote to Warton, Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 288, Mr Hazlitt explains *grewis* by ‘growing things.’ This is, of course, an error. *Grewis* = *grevis*, i.e. groves ; a word familiar to readers of Chaucer, as occurring in one of his best passages ; see Kn. Tale, 637. The reading *gressys*, i.e. grasses, is very inferior.

15. “With his fleet and a small company.” The story is continued from Book iv. 631.

24. *Intill ane*, in one direction, in a straight course. See the story as told in the Lord of the Isles, v. 13—17, and the notes.

74. *Purray*, provide, ordain ; rather than ‘prepare,’ as explained by Scott.

76. *Myne heritage*. Turnbury Castle had belonged to Bruce's mother, Martha, countess of Carrick. See Lord of the Isles, note to v. 19.

85. "For a warrior should not take much heed."
87. Cf. "dolus, an uirtus, quis in hoste requirat;" Virg. *AEn.* ii. 390.
104. Langtoft, as translated by Brunne, ed. Hearne, ii. 337, speaks of "a sergeant of Galweye, his name was Makedowel," who seized Thomas and Alexander Bruce, the king's brothers, and delivered them up to king Edward. Jamieson supposes him to be the Macdowell here mentioned, though there seems to be nothing to shew this. See Ann. Scot. ii. 19.
133. *A lady.* Speaking of this very period, Fordun (cap. cxxi.) says of Bruce:—"tandem, Deo miserante, per auxiliam et potentiam Christianæ de Insulis cuiusdam nobilis feminæ, et sibi benevolæ, adjutus, post multos et varios circuitus et infinitos labores, dolores et pressuras, rediit ad comitatum de Carryk;" &c. Cf. l. 178 below.
151. *Erl adell*, the earl of Athole; see Book iv. 62. He was executed at London; Annals of Scotland, ii. 14. See note to the Lord of the Isles, ii. 26.
152. *The queyn*; see Book iv. 55.
156. *Cristole of Setoun*; see Book iv. 16, and note to ii. 243<sup>a</sup>.
174. "Except where worth might be proved;" i. e. on the battle-field.
201. *Schonand*, shunning. The Edinb. MS. has *skownrand* or *skowurand*. Jamieson inserted the latter form in his Dictionary, but corrected it to the former one in his edition.
214. *Lap on*, leapt on horseback; i. e. took horse and fled.
236. "He shall not enjoy it without a fight."
- 255—462. Quoted from Jamieson's edition, in the Appendix to Introduction to Castle Dangerous.
262. "Dimidium facti qui cœpit habet; sapere aude;" Horat. Ep. i. 2. 40. The common English proverb is—"Well begun is half done."
271. Douglas-dale, in Kirkcudbrightshire. See the description of it in Castle Dangerous, ch. i.; and compare Barbour's account with that novel, and with Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix. See Hist. of Douglas, by Hume of Godscroft, ed. 1644, p. 27.
276. *His fader*; Lord William Douglas. Hume of Godscroft, in his Hist. of Douglas, p. 17, tells how Thomas Dickson assisted Lord William to take the castle of Sanwheire by stratagem.
307. *Palmesonday*, Palm Sunday, March 19, 1307. See Castle Dangerous, ch. xx.
317. *A mantill*. "The close vest with sleeves, and mantle or cloke over it, in the Spanish fashion, were long the dress of the men in Scotland, poor as well as rich. See Peblis to the Play, and other old Scotish poems."—P.
336. *Sanct Brydis*, Saint Bridget's or Saint Bride's. Her day was Feb. 1; see Chambers, Book of Days, i. 206.
388. *Burdis set*, tables set out; alluding to the movable tables, set

on trestles, commonly used in the olden time. They were laid aside when the feast was over. See Our Eng. Home, p. 30.

403. "Then he struck off the heads of the tuus of wine." See the description of the Douglas Larder in Castle Dangerous, ch. iv.; and Hist. of Douglas, by Hume of Godscroft, ed. 1644, p. 28, where we read that "this Cellar is called yet the Douglas Lairder."

412. *Fordid*, destroyed, spoilt, rendered useless; misprinted *sordid*, P. and J. It occurs again; ix. 323.

424. *Or than*, or, at any rate.

433. "In order that men should less know where they were."

493. *As of the men*, as among the men. Hart has—*As ony man*, a needless change.

521. This story of the three traitors who attempted to kill Bruce is told over again, in a different form, in Book vii. 400. There is another similar story in Book vii. 79. In fact, the number of times it appears, in some form or other, is rather confusing. The clearest way is to give the list of them :

(1) The two Macindrossers, with a third man not named, attack Bruce when on horseback. All are slain. Book iii. 93.

(2) A one-eyed man and his two sons undertake to slay Bruce for a reward of forty pounds, and attack Bruce and his page. All are slain; v. 485.

(3) Five of John of Lorn's men attack Bruce and his foster-brother. All are slain; vi. 595.

(4) Three traitors, carrying a wether, after passing the night with Bruce and his foster-brother in a lone house, attack them. All are slain, as well as the foster-brother; vii. 79.

(5) Three traitors find the king alone with his two hounds. All are slain, two of them by a hound; vii. 400.

These adventures do not include the fight between Bruce and Lorn's men, on which occasion he slew fourteen; vi. 108.

546. *Varrar*, more aware, better aware.

575. *About his hals*, hung round his neck. This shews that the sword was a long two-handed one, like Lord Lindesay's, as described in The Abbot, ch. xxi.

595. *Bot and*, and also. *A vyre*, a cross-bow bolt; Pinkerton wrongly says 'an arrow.'

642. *Toym*, leisure; a different word from *tym*, time.

#### NOTES TO BOOK VI. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, IV. 657—V. 300; Innes, pp. 126—150.)

3. *Yngerame*, Sir Ingraham de Umfraville. This is a manifest slip of memory; the person meant is Sir Ingraham Bell, governor of Ayr, as distinctly stated in Book v. 483.

84. "That they might land together (on the opposite shore)."

85\*. The eight lines, from *His twa men to allane abaid* should, each of them, have been preceded by an asterisk, to shew that they are not in Pinkerton's edition.

87. *Quhistlyng*, baying. The reading *questionyng* in the Edinb. MS. is a false one, added afterwards in darker ink. Hart has *whissiling*. Cf. l. 94.

101—106. These lines are a corrupt repetition of ll. 85\*—92\*. The Cambridge MS. rightly omits them.

120. "Since he was protected with armour."

121. *Thurt*, needed; clearly the right reading; see the footnote. The line means—"so that he needed not fear their arrows." Though this form does not seem to be noticed by Jamieson, it is common enough. Spelt *purt*, it occurs six times in William of Palerne; and spelt *þort*, three more times in the same. See other instances in the Glossary to William of Palerne, s. v. *þort*. Even Stratmann, however, gives but one instance of it (spelt *þort*) from Layamon, l. 22923; which he enters under *þarf*. See Book xx. 107, footnote.

128. *For litill strynth of erd*, owing to a slight vantage of position. *Tane*, undertaken.

149. *Fif sum*, five in all; cf. note to iii. 420, and *sex sum* in l. 231 below.

179. This story is clearly inserted to give some air of probability to the preceding story about Bruce. The original passage is in Statius, *Thebaidos*, lib. ii. Barbour's account may be compared with that in Lydgate's Story of Thebes, pt. ii. l. 1128. See the whole passage from Lydgate, with explanatory notes, in Specimens of English, A.D. 1394—1579, ed. Skeat, pp. 28—33, 376—379.

196. "The other (should reign) a year, after that (the first year) was past."

210. *Behufit away*, behoved to get away, i. e. had to pass.

246. *And oft fell*, and it often happened.

268. *Him allane*, alone by himself. The reference in the footnote is misprinted; see l. 178, not 378. And see ll. 273, 278, 320.

314. "Then they greatly praised God, the almighty."

316. *Thaim byrd*, it behoved them. See *buren* in Stratmann.

323, 324. "They that were always accustomed to be with him marvelled, and pressed forward (lit. yearned) to see him."

336. In a note on the Four Cardinal Virtues, pr. in Reliq. Antiq., p. 154, we find—"Fortitudo itaque habet in dextro latere audaciam, in sinistro ignaviam." See also Ratis Raving, ed. Lumby, p. 34; and Spenser, F. Q. ii. 2. 38.

348, 349. "And undertakes that which should be undertaken, and leaves what should be left."

392. *Thrillwall*, Thirlwall; mentioned above, v. 460. The name means 'pierce-wall,' and Fordun (Scotichron. iii. 10) tells a story about the Picts and Scots piercing the great Roman wall of Hadrian, whence

(according to him) the place where the wall had most suffered was called Thirlit-wall, i. e. pierced wall, in Latin *Murus perforatus*. Wyn-town (Cronykil, v. 3251) likewise says that the Roman wall was called *Thryl-wal*, though the name was doubtless only applied to a particular portion of it. Camden (Britannia, iii. 490) says that "Thirlewale castle" is near the rivulet Poltross, and that it stands "where the Scots opened to themselves a way into the province between Irthing and Tine." This means a few miles to the westward of Haltwhistle, on the borders of Northumberland and Cumberland. Thirlwall was, in fact, the name of a Northumbrian family, who may have been so named from living near a place where the Roman wall had been broken through by the Scots.

432. "Was slain there in the battle."

463. Cumnock is in Ayrshire. *Stratest*, narrowest. The reference is clearly to a *district* named Cumnock, i. e. to the valley joining Old to New Cumnock, and opening into the valley of the Nith. See l. 511.

481. John of Lorn, the son of Allaster of Lorn; see note to Lord of the Isles, i. 11; and see Scott's abridgement of the present passage of Barbour in the note to canto ii. st. 32 of the same poem. Wallace was hunted in a similar manner; see Jamieson's edition of Wallace, v. 25, note.

487. *Strecour*, a fast runner, a dog for the chase; from the verb *strekke*, to go rapidly (Halliwell). The Edinb. MS. and Hart have the absurd reading *traitour!*

503. "For the sake of Sir John Comyn, his uncle." But Comyn was father-in-law to the father of John of Lorn; see note to Book iii. 1.

510. *Randale*, Randolph; at this period on the English side; see note to ii. 237.

522, 523. "Paid attention to them, and to no other quarter, and did foolishly."

538. "Was far stronger than he (i. e. his party) was, and more in number."

561. "He (king Robert) supposed that he (Lorn) knew that it was really the king whom he was following."

650. "Has slain the fifth;" lit. has done the fifth out of days. The phrase is common. Cf. Will. of Palerne, l. 3817; and see l. 652.

656. Perhaps *till* should be *to*, i. e. too; the constant confusion between *till* and *to* in both the MSS. would easily cause the mistake, if it be one. At any rate *till* is here used with that sense. The line means—"But ye took to yourself too great a share."

666. "I could annoy them very much the more."

## NOTES TO BOOK VII. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, V. 301—935; Innes, pp. 150—173.)

1. Lines 1—230 and 400—487 are given in Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat, ed. 1873, pp. 203—214; with explanatory notes at pp. 335—337, many of which are here repeated.

2. *Vill of vayn*, for *will of wayn*, completely at a loss; see note above, to ii. 471. So also *will of vayn* in l. 225.

10. *Abide zhe heir*, if ye abide here. Observe how the inferior addresses his superior as *ye*; the superior replies with *thou*, l. 15.

18. "That whosoever would aye wade along stream the length of a bowshot."

27. "And continued their way along it;" here *held on* signifies continued, persevered in.

48. "And he is very far off by this time."

65. *Lest on lif*, last alive, remain alive.

71. "And stood lurking in a bush."

72. "Until the hound came close at hand." It is interesting to observe that even Shakespeare uses *while* in the sense of *until*; see Macbeth, iii. 1. 44; Richard II. i. 3. 122.

90. *Price and loyng*, honour and praise. If *loyng* had been intended, it would have been written *luff* or *luffing*.

103. "If he were attacked (or challenged to fight) on equal terms."

105. This is the adventure so excellently told in the Lord of the Isles, canto iii. st. 18—30.

118. "And asked them whither they wished to go."

127. *Late*, demeanour; lit. gesture, manner.

132. *Bryng hym than of daw*, then bring him out of day, i. e. kill him; as above. See note to vi. 650.

135. *Hawyng*, demeanour; lit. having.

137. "Fellows, ye must, all three, till we be better acquainted, go in front all by yourselves." Cf. l. 146.

142. "Sir, there is no need to believe any ill (to be) in us."

160. The reading of the Edinb. MS. is very inferior. The word *a* is emphatic, and means *one*.

163. The word 'houſ<sup>b</sup>' is written for 'housis,' and should be read as a disyllable.

177. "Saw that it became him of necessity to sleep." *Slep* is here a verb in the infinitive mood, not a substantive.

179. *Valk*, awake; used transitively. The intransitive form is *walkyn*, whence *valknyt* in ll. 210, 291. The introduction of the letter *n* (after a stem) renders a verb intransitive in Mœso-Gothic, Swedish, &c. See note on verbs ending in -nan; Skeat's Mœso-Gothic Glossary, p. 303. Cf. Swed. *vaka*, to watch; *vakna*, to awake.

188. *As foul on twist*, like a bird on a bough.

192. *Routit he*, snored loudly; *he* = high, i. e. loudly.

218. *Na war, &c.*; had it not been for the defensive armour which he wore.

238. *The gud wyf*, the good-wife, the mistress of the house. This story, of the good-wife who predicted Bruce's success and sent her sons with him, is repeated from Book iv. 632.

Jamieson has a long 'additional note,' containing a tradition that the three sons of a widow (all by different husbands, and consequently bearing three different names, Murdoch, Mac Kay, and Mac Lurg) helped Bruce, by a stratagem, to gain a victory at a bog called Moss Raploch, near the Dee. They were rewarded by grants of land.

302\*. *To-vauerand*, lit. to-wavering, i. e. wandering uncertainly in different directions. This is certainly the true original reading, for which *to warrand*, i. e. to a place of security (as in Hart's edition) is an ingenious substitution; so also in l. 331. We have already had *vauerand*, wandering, vagabond, in l. 112 above, and the verb *vaueryt*, wandered, in l. 41. Cf. *wauerand wynd*, i. e. changeable wind, in Wallace, iv. 340. For *varrand*, see l. 347.

330. *Nakyt*, i. e. unprovided with defensive armour; the usual sense. See l. 434.

368. The reading *sagat* (E.) instead of *sa* (C.) is better, because otherwise the line is too short. The sense is the same.

400—487. Printed in Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat.

439. *Haf zhe*, if ye have. Cf. vii. 10, and the note.

447. *But langar frest*, without longer delay.

455. *Top our taill*, top over tail, head over heels.

467. *Schot*, rushed, darted; so *schute*, dart, in l. 390. In like manner *schot* = rushed, in Havelok, l. 1838.

471. "That stone-dead he fell (lit. drove) to the earth."

494. *Glentrivell*, Glentrue or Glentrool; probably the Glen of Loch Trool, which is near the Western border of Kirkcudbrightshire. It was "a strate place," i. e. a narrow pass; l. 529.

543. *May we do swa*, if we may do so; if we can succeed in doing so. See l. 439 above, and the note.

622. *Clyffurd*, one of the family of the Cliffords of Cumberland. *Wauss*, i. e. Vaux, also the name of a Cumberland family. Vaux was originally *de Vaulx*, i. e. *de Vallibus*, of the vales. "Henry II. bestowed Gilsland on Hubert, a Norman, who took the name of *de Vaulx*, as descriptive of his property, 'from the dales or vallies, of which the country is full.' It has been said, for the same reason, that it was called Gilsland; from *gill*, which 'in the dialect of the county signifies a dale or valley.' See Hutchinson's Cumberland, i. 47; Camden, iii. 455."—J. *Gill*, by the way, signifies rather a small ravine or rocky chasm; Icel. *gil*. *Maid a melle*, had a quarrel, took to blows.

623. *Raucht him a cole*, fetched him a buffet. *Colē* is properly a blow on the neck; O.Fr. *colee* (Burgny), from *col*, the neck. It was used both of a blow given in anger and of the *accouade* given in dubbing a knight. The Edinb. MS. has *roucht nocht him to lee*, recked not

to lie to him (*or*, to call him a liar). Hart reads *raught him routes three*, gave (lit. reached) him three blows.

624. "And either then betook himself to his own men;" i. e. they took sides, and began a general fight. Hence *Departit* = parted, l. 626.

632. *Com of toune*, lit. came out of town; merely a general phrase for 'set out.'

634. "Saw so few men offer them battle."

### NOTES TO BOOK VIII. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, Book VI. 1—520; Innes, pp. 173—192.)

3. *Montanis*, the mountains in the North-western parts of Kirkcudbrightshire; cf. Book vii. 494, 516.

9. *Kyle*. This is a district of Ayrshire, occupying the central portion of it, between Cunningham on the North, and Carrick on the South. It contains the Craigs of Kyle, above the river Doon.

13. Cunningham is the name of a district, in the Northern part of Ayrshire. See above.

14. *He gert helde*, he caused to be held or kept under his dominion. *Helde* is the past participle here. Cf. *gert salit*, xviii. 168, and the note thereon.

15. Bothwell Castle; on the Clyde, above Glasgow.

18. *Quhile*, once, formerly.

28. Godscroft says—"Sir James Douglas, knowing the way by which they must go, called *Machanacks way*, he lay in a strait foord betweene two marishes, called *Ederfoord*;" Hist. Douglas, p. 28. But Jamieson says that the late David Macpherson held that the form in MS. E. is right, and that *Makyrnokis way* is "a narrow pass on the bank of Makyrnok wattyre;" Geog. Illust. He placed it near Kilmarnock; which, by the way, is mentioned in l. 95 below.

37. *South half*, south side. Correct 'north' to 'south,' and 'south' to 'north' in the marginal note.

95. Kilwinning is between Kilmarnock and Ardrossan. At Ardrossan, Sir Philip had reached the sea-coast of Ayrshire; he then followed the coast-line due north, through Largs to Innerkip. The rest fled back to Bothwell (l. 111) in an opposite direction.

123. Galston is not far to the E. of Kilmarnock. Loudoun and Loudoun castle are close to Galston

133. The year meant is 1307. "That Bruce defeated Sir Aymer at London-hill, appears from the English historians Matthew of Westminister and Trivet; see Annals of Scotland, ii. 20."—P.

218. *Eschelis*, squadrons; a better reading than *battalis*; see footnote. In Marco Polo, ed. Yule, ii. 326, we find "Ils font eschiel en

mer." Colonel Yule's note is—" *Eschiel* is the equivalent of the Italian *schera* or *schiera*, a troop or squadron, and thence applied to order of battle, whether by land or sea." It is perfectly clear that the O.Fr. *eschelle*, a squadron, sometimes spelt *eschiere*, and borrowed from the O. H. German *scara* (mod. G. *schuar*), a troop, which again is from the O. H. G. *scerjan*, *skerjan*, to divide (E. to *shear*)—is a totally different word from O.Fr. *eschelle*, a ladder, from the Lat. *scala*. The two forms were, however, early confused, and the less intelligible word *eschiere* was modified so as to coincide with the common term *eschelle*. It is one of the very numerous examples of a corruption in the form of a word, due to close resemblance of an obscure to a well-known form.

226. (Footnote.) Jamieson gives the (very corrupt) reading of E thus—

"Thar bassynettis burnyst all  
Agayne the son glemand off lycht all."

257. *That vs thar dout*, whom it needs us to fear; cf. *vs betydis* in l. 254. Pinkerton and Jamieson, not understanding the word *thar*, misread it as *char*, which is unmeaning. See the Glossary.

280. *Cant and keyn*, proud and bold; certainly the right reading. It was a common phrase. It occurs, for example, in Laurence Minot; see Spec. of Eng. ed. Morris and Skeat, sect. xi. (c.) 107—

"The king of Beme was *cant and kene*,  
Bot þare he left both play and pride."

290. *Ek thair renowne*, increase their renown; cf. *ranowne*, l. 520.

296. *Sarray*, closely; used as equivalent to *sarryal*. The line means—" And right closely together rode along." Innes rightly explains *sarray* (mis-rendered 'artfully' by Jamieson), but is himself wrong in making *raid* = arrayed. See *raid*, *rode*, in l. 89.

351. *To ga* should, probably, have been printed *to-ga*. See *to-ga* in the Glossary, and cf. Book ix. 263, 269.

361. *The king*. This must mean Edward I., who was not yet dead, though his death has been narrated at a much earlier point of the narrative; see Book iv. 333, and note to iv. 190. In l. 364, it means his successor, for Sir Aymer fought at Bannockburn; see Book xi. 176.

368. "With a small army like a rabble."

393. *The month*; i. e. the Grampian mountains; see note to Book ii. 494. Tytler (Hist. Scotland, i. 102) defines 'the Mounth' as being "the name anciently given to that part of the Grampian chain which extends from the borders of the district called the Mearns to Loch Rannach."

395. Sir Alexander Fraser was last mentioned in Book ii. 407; see note to ii. 239.

397. *Symon*. It is odd that Sir Simon Fraser should be mentioned here, as he was put to death the year before; see note to ii. 239. It is still more odd that he should be mentioned yet again, in Book ix. 10.

425. *Selcryk*, Selkirk; Hart has *Eltrik*. See a note upon "Selkirk, or Ettrick forest," in Lord of the Isles, v. 34, note.

427. *Gedword*, C; *Iedworthis*, E. This Jedworth forest must have been on the banks of the Jed, which runs past Jedburgh into the Teviot. It is called ‘Jedward forest’ by Hume of Godscroft; see last line of Appendix I. to Introduction to Castle Dangerous. Jedworth is the old name of Jedburgh. See the note to The Wallace, ed. Jamieson, vii. 1277.

447. *Lanrik*. There is a Lanrick not far from the Trossachs and Loch Vennachar, but the place here meant is clearly Lanark, the principal town in the neighbourhood of Douglasdale; and, indeed, MS. E reads *lanark*; see the footnote. The line means—“just as if they wanted to go to Lanark,” i. e. for the purpose of selling the contents of the sacks. See the story in Godscroft, quoted in App. I. to Introd. to Castle Dangerous; see also a note to the Lord of the Isles, vi. 1; and Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix. “The castle-hill of Lanark is on the south of the town, but no ruin of the castle remains; its scite (*sic*) being now (A.D. 1790) a bowling-green and garden.”—P.

450. *Ladis*, loads; see l. 467. *Gang on raw*, proceeding in a row.

453. Sir John of Webtoun is called Sir John Walton by Godscroft, and Sir John de Walton by Scott. See Castle Dangerous, especially the Appendix to the Introduction, which contains Godscroft’s account of Douglas’s successes.

#### NOTES TO BOOK IX. (A.D. 1307, 1308.)

(Jamieson, VI. 521—VII. 298; Innes, pp. 192—219.)

1. We have now come to about the time of the death of Edward I., which took place July 7, 1307. It has been inserted much too early; see note to Book iv. 190.

10. This seems to be a mistake; see note to viii. 397.

34. *Enuerrowry*, Inverury, on the Don, about 15 miles north-west of Aberdeen. “Bruce went to the north of Scotland October, 1307.”—P.

59. *But strinth*, without a strongly fortified place to protect them.

64. The sense of *apane* is not clear here; it is certainly an adverb, and represents the French *à peine* etymologically, but Barbour uses it, both here and in l. 89, in a very odd way. The quotations in Jamieson shew that it is also used, in Wallace, in an equally strange manner. Jamieson resorts to the desperate guess that, *in this particular passage*, it means ‘provided,’ from the Old French *apaner*, to nourish, provide. This is quite out of the question, and not worth considering, as it does not answer for l. 89. In Wallace (viii. 911) Jamieson says that “nocht apayn” means ‘scarcely, hardly,’ and refers us to Cotgrave, who translates *à peine* by “hardly, not without much ado.” This, again, is clearly wrong, because it ignores the negative, and makes ‘nocht apayn’ and ‘apayn’ to mean exactly the same thing. There is

another passage in Wallace (xi. 1313) where *apayn off loss off lyne* means ‘on pain of loss of life,’ a sense which is also found in Old French for *à peine*. This gives a gleam of light; and we may, I think, suppose *apayn* to mean here ‘under a penalty,’ or ‘at a pinch.’ The line then means—‘Unless they be, at a pinch, the braver men.’ So too, in l. 89, we may suppose the sense to be—‘yet shall they flee, at a pinch;’ i. e. for fear of losing their lives. So too, in Wallace, viii. 911, we have—“And nocht *apayn* to wyn it by no slycht,” i. e. and not, at a pinch, to win (the town) by any stratagem.

107. *The Slevach.* Pinkerton reads *Slenauch*, and says—“The Slenauch is probably in the mountains of Benachie, a few miles west of Inverury.” Jamieson has *Slenauch*, unexplained. The MSS. of Fordun (Gest. Annal. cap. cxxii.) have both *Slenach* (or *Sleuach*) and *Slevach*. In every instance where *Slenach* occurs, it is doubtless a misreading for *Sleuach* = *Slevach*. Innes prints *slevach*, and says—“It is believed to be Sliach, a place in the parish of Drumblane in the Garioch, where a consistent local tradition concurs with chronicle and history,” p. 497; and adds an additional remark at p. 517. But the simple solution of the whole matter is, I suspect, that the phrase ‘the slevach’ merely means the highlands, with especial reference to the rugged and difficult country within the Gaelic border. It is the Gaelic *slabhach*, mountainous, an adjective derived from *slabh*, a mountain. The same word accounts for the name of the Slieve Broughta Mountains, Slieve Bloom, Slieve Mish, &c., in Ireland. Hence it is that, in the very next line, we read that the king lay “in that strinth,” i. e. in that strong position.

110. “Johannes Cumyne, comes de Buchane, anno Domini MCCCCVII, cum multis nobilibus, tam Anglicis quam Scottis, audientes, quod rex Scociæ Robertus cum suo exercitu esset apud Slevach, processerunt ob viam ei parati ad prælium;” Fordun, Gest. Ann. c. cxxii., q. v.

127. *Martymes*, Martinmass, i. e. Nov. 11, 1307.

138. *Maid knyghtis*, dubbed some new knights; the common practice before a battle. So in xii. 413.

188. *Straboy*, Strath Bogie, the vale of the Bogie, within which is situated the town of Huntly, Aberdeenshire.

190. *Couer and ga*, to recover and walk about.

202. *Ald meldrom*, Old Meldrum, not far from Inverury.

204. *Bifor goill-evyn ane nycht*, one night before Christmas Eve, or two nights before Christmas Day. The account in Fordun differs; he makes the Earl of Buchan’s men afraid to attack the Bruce, as above, l. 183, but he dates this at Christmas, saying—“Sicque die natalis Domini pudore victi et confusi redierunt, treugas postulabant, &c.” The battle described here by Barbour (ll. 206—279) is related by Fordun under the date 1308. He says—“Iterum congregati sunt Johannes Comyne et Philippus de Mubra cum Scottis et Anglicis quam pluribus apud Innerury, anno Domini MCCCCVIII, quod, ut rex Robertus audivit, gravi adhuc infirmitate detentus, de grabato suo, quo semper

portabatur, surrexit, et suis, ut se armarent et equo ut imponerent, imperavit." Lord Hailes gives May 22, 1308, as the date of this battle; Ann. Scot. ii. 24.

249. *Merdale*, rabble; from O.Fr. *merdaille*, a dirty crew.

289. "The son of him that was in Kildrummy;" cf. Book iv. 62.

297. *Fra end to end*. The district extends along the north of Aberdeenshire, and can be traced by the names Buchan-haven, near Peterhead, Buchan Ness (S. of Peterhead), Bullers o' Buchan, still further south along the coast, and Logie Buchan, on the river Ythan.

306. *Mair and mair*. Fordun notices that this was the turning-point in Bruce's career; after his battle with the Earl of Buchan, he was always as successful as he had before been unfortunate. The real cause of this is easily traced to the death of Edward I.

309. *The scottis se*, a name given to the Firth of Forth; cf. l. 460.

312. *Forster*, forester. "A village, vulgarly named *Froster-seat*, about two miles east from Forfar, is said to be properly designed (*sic*) *Forester-seat*, as having been the place where the forester anciently resided. *Platan* is unquestionably the same which is called the Forest of *Platter* or *Plater*, in a charter of Robert Bruce 'to the Abbey of Restennet,' granting 'a liberty to cut wood in it,' Ind. Chart. 4. 43. This priory is about a mile from Forfar, and not more distant from *Forester-seat*. The grant was renewed by his son David; ibid. 38. 40."

—J. See Jamieson's note for further information.

328. *All fre*. "But Dundee was still held by the English, till 1313. See Book x. 801."—P.

338. *Moffat* seems the right reading; the Camb. MS. has *Mufhat*, as I read it. Innes read it *Mushet*, and took it to mean *Montefuc*, which seems rather far-fetched. *Olifert* or *Olifart* is the same as Oliphard, the old form of the name which is now spelt Oliphant, probably by a corruption. See Craufurd's Peerage, p. 376, and Jamieson's note.

340. *The Erll*. Malise, Earl of Strathern; see l. 434.

391. There is an odd story in The Wallace about a Sir Thomas de Longueville, who had been a pirate; and it is asserted (bk. xi. 1148) that he was the "knight of France" here mentioned by Barbour.

412. *The tothir*, the second. *Tuk*, reached the top of, surmounted.

450. Fordun (Gest. Annal. cap. cxxix.) dates the taking of Perth on Jan. 8, 1312, which seems to be the right date. Barbour here places it earlier, apparently in 1308.

509. Barbour again speaks of "Sir Aymery of Sanct John" in Book xvi. 506. He has made a mistake in the Christian name; the knight's name was *John de St John*. See Annals of Scotland, ii. 25; Jamieson's note; and a note to Lord of the Isles, vi. 1. "The custody of the marches of Cumberland and Annandale was given to him, and he died in the year 1302;" Ann. of England, p. 173. A drawing of his coat-of-arms is given in the same work, at p. 177.

517. The Cree divides Wigtonshire from Kirkcudbrightshire. Fordun says the battle took place beside the Dee. He dates it June 29, 1308.

522. The Camb. MS. has *buttil*, which Innes retains, with the remark that "the Edinb. MS. and the editions have *Bothwell*, in contempt of geography." But he does not tell us where 'Buttill' is, and, after all, Bothwell is not so very far off. However, it is generally considered that the place meant is a certain Butel Castle, on the sea-coast of Galloway, which belonged to the Balliol Family; see Ann. Scot. ii. 36, note; Tytler's Hist. Scot. i. 104; Ker's Bruce, i. 345. If this be the true solution, then the Camb. MS. is right after all, and the reading *buttil* should have been retained.

609, 610. "When they had hastily pierced through them, they boldly directed their heads inwards again," i. e. having charged right through, they turned their horses' heads round, and charged again.

673. *The forest*, i. e. of Selkirk, otherwise called Ettrick forest; see Book viii. 425, and the note. Barbour uses it in a wide sense, as he makes it extend to the Water of Lyne; see next note.

683. The "wattir of Lyne" falls into the Tweed, a few miles above Peebles.

686. "Heard their sayings, every word of them." The Edinb. MS. has the extraordinary variation—And hard ane say tharin—"the dewill!" Upon which variation, probably quite corrupt, Sir Walter Scott founded his remark in the Lord of the Isles, v. 7—"A language much unmeet he hears." See Scott's own note upon that line.

691, 692. According to Jamieson, Sir Alexander Stewart of Bonkill or Bunkle (now Bunkle) was grandson of Alexander, High Steward of Scotland. Bunkle is not far from Dunse, Berwickshire.

695. Adam of Gordon afterwards sided with Bruce, but not till after 1312; see xv. 333. He afterwards obtained from Bruce the lordship of Strathbogie, Aberdeenshire. See Jamieson's note, who refers to Nisbet, Heraldry, i. 308; Gordon's Hist. of the House of Sutherland, p. 38; Ind. Chart. 2. 40; Rymer's Fœdera, iii. 82, 300, 396. West Gordon is in Berwickshire, S.W. of Greenlaw.

#### NOTES TO BOOK X. (A.D. 1308—1313.)

(Jamieson, Book VII. 299—1126; Innes, pp. 219—249.)

8. A.D. 1308, according to Fordun, Gest. Annal. cap. cxxvi—"De conflictu regis Roberti contra Ergadienses." It was "about Aug. 23;" Ann. Scot. ii. 26.

11. *John of Lorn*; see Book vi. 481, and the note. This adventure is described in The Tales of a Grandfather, near the end of chap. ix., and in the Lord of the Isles, note to i. 11.

17. *Ane euill place*; the terrible pass of Brandir, down which the river Awe flows, out of Loch Awe into Loch Etive. See the description in note K to the Highland Widow.

27. *Crechanben*, Ben Cruachan, overlooking Lochs Awe and Etive, Argyleshire; see the Highland Widow, ch. i. Though not "the highest mountain in all Britain," it is of great height, about 3670 feet, or somewhat higher than Snowdon.

34. *The se*, the lake; i. e. Loch Etive, a sea-loch, not the inland Loch Awe, from which the ships could not have escaped. The reader should consult the minute descriptions of this scene in notes K and L to the Highland Widow, one of which is quoted from the Bridal of Caolchairn, the other from Tytler's Life of Bruce.

73. *Apert*, open, manifest; i. e. bold. Pinkerton prints *a pert*, and takes *pert* to mean 'brisk.' This must have arisen from inattention, as the word is very common. See l. 315 below.

82. *Ane vattir*, the river Awe.

86. *Brig*, bridge. Of course only a slight wooden one; see ll. 88, 93. It was situate at a place called the Rocks of Brandir.

113. *Dunstaffynch*, called *Dunstafynch* in Fordun, cap. cxxvi., is now generally called *Dunstaffnage*. Dunstaffnage Castle is near Oban, on the W. coast of Argyleshire. See Pennant's Hebrides, p. 410.

123. Alexander; otherwise called Allaster of Argyle; or, in Fordun, "Alexander de Ergadia." See Annals of Scotland, ii. 27, and note to Lord of the Isles, i. 11.

125. *Tretis*, an offer of a truce; the Edinb. MS. has *treyteris*, i. e. men to treat about a truce. Fordun says that Bruce and Alexander could not come to terms, expressly contrary to Barbour's account. He adds that Alexander fled to England, and died there.

129. *Rebell*, rebellious. "The Earl of Ulster is ordained to co-operate with the fleet of Johannes de Ergadia, or John of Lorn, in opposing the rebellious subjects of Edward II., as he denominates the Scots, An. 1310. See Rymer's Fœdera, iii. 223."—J.

136. Here there seems to be a considerable break in the narrative. The capture of Linlithgow castle did not take place, it is supposed, till 1311. In 1310, according to Fordun, there was a severe famine in Scotland. Also a truce had been concluded with England in 1309, which lasted till August, 1310. In September Edward II. made a fruitless invasion of Scotland, of which Barbour takes no notice.

137. *Lythkow*, Linlithgow; *peill*, a small castle; see l. 147. The story of its capture by stratagem is told in Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix.

151. *Husband*, husbandman, small farmer. *Fee*, cattle.

153. From l. 194, the man's name seems to have been Bunnock; Hart's edition says Bunny. Scott calls it "Binnock, or as it is now pronounced, Binning." Jamieson notices that the arms of some of the Binnings contain a waggon, with "a demi-horse furnished for a waggon as the crest;" with a reference to Nisbet's Heraldry, i. 100. The 'waggon' is supposed to have reference to the exploit here narrated.

180. *Hede-soyme*, the head-soam, or rope passing from the cart to the head or heads of the animals that drew it; answering to what we

should now call ‘the traces.’ See *Soyme* in Jamieson, *Soam* in Halliwell. The traces being cut, the waggon could not be withdrawn, nor the gate closed.

193. *Vonnyn hay*, lit. had won hay, i. e. had cut and dried it, ready for carrying or ‘leading,’ as it is often called in country parts. Cf. “with cartis hay to leid ;” The Wallace, ix. 701.

196. *But dangeir*, without making any trouble of it.

227. “Began to drive the waggon quickly.” So, in l. 231, *call all* means “drive along all !”

232. *He*; not Bunnock, but the driver; who let his ‘gad-wand’ or whip fall out of his hands, and seized the hatchet in his belt; see l. 174. Barbour constantly changes the persons whom he denotes by *he* or *thai*.

267. “The charter, which is curious, is published by Home, lord Kaims, in his Essays on British Antiquities, and in Shaw’s History of Moray. It has no date.”—P.

305. *His eym*, his uncle, i. e. king Robert.

313. *Mycht*. Innes says—“both MSS. have *ficht*.” This is a mistake; the readings are—*mycht*, C.; *fycht*, E.; *might*, H.; as in the footnote.

324. *Lumbard*. The name recurs in l. 761 below. For variations, see the footnotes. After *Gascoun*, i. e. Gascon, insert a semi-colon or full stop, which seems to have ‘dropped out’ at press.

336. For the continuation of the narrative, see l. 506 below.

352. *This tym that*, whilst. The two events, the capture of Roxburgh castle by Douglas and of Edinburgh castle by Randolph, were very nearly contemporaneous. Fordun (cap. cxxx.) dates the former on Shrove Tuesday, and the latter on March 14, 1313. Barbour mentions “fasteryn evyn” in l. 372, meaning likewise the eve of the great Fast-day, i. e. Shrove Tuesday. Pinkerton explains this by “6 March, 1313.” This is clearly wrong; since, according to Sir H. Nicolas’s Chronol. of History, pp. 60, 76, Easter-day in 1313 fell on April 15, and Shrove Tuesday on Feb. 27. Barbour is, at any rate, right here in his order of events. For the narrative, see Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix.

361. *Treyn*, wooden; the Edinb. MS. has *Irne*, i. e. iron, which is less probable. There is a misprint in the footnote; for ‘Irne C,’ read ‘Irne E.’

375. “They wholly covered the armour that they wore with black frocks.”

390. “He will make merry to-night, even though they be taken away by the Douglas.” That is, the man will be so taken up with the sports of Shrovetide as not to heed the chance of his cattle being stolen. Cf. l. 440.

456. This was “Gillemin de Fiennes, a knight of Burgundy;” Annals of Scotland, ii. 37.

471. I make the reading of the Edinb. MS. to be—“The castell tint be, clene and law,” i. e. the castle to be lost, clean and low, i. e. wholly

and to the bottom. So too, in l. 124 above, we have "cleyn and law," as a sort of proverbial phrase. The word could not there be read as 'cleyu,' and I have no belief in the word 'cleue,' as printed by Jamieson; still less in the form 'clef,' sheerly invented by Innes.

476. "But nevertheless he held the tower very sturdily till the second day."

481. *Tretit thame*, treated with them, made terms.

516. The readings *victory* (CH) and *body* (E) are clearly both wrong. The original word is lost, but I can give a shrewd guess at it. I do not doubt that it was *voidry*, another spelling of *woidre*, which is closely connected with *slicht* in ix. 747, in a similar allusion to Randolph's character. *Voidry*, an uncommon word, would easily be misread as *victory* on the one hand; and, on the other, if written 'voidery' (i. e. 'voidy' with a slight curl) would quite as easily be mistaken for 'body,' on account of the occasionally close resemblance between the letters *b* and *v* in Lowland-Scottish MSS. The sense of it is 'cunning, stratagem,' lit. power to avoid. This is the sense required.

529. "Before that the siege should miscarry through his fault." *Or at* = ere that. *Forfure* is the past tense subjunctive.

608. *Ayndless*, breathless; see *aynd* (breath) in the next line. The Edinb. MS. has the bad spelling *handles*.

673. "If they had been of good counsel."

705. *Tyre*. So in CH; *Treile*, E. Pinkerton rejects the reading *Tyre*, saying—"It was in a town of the Oxydracæ that Alexander incurred this danger; Arrian, lib. vi. p. 394, ed. Blancardi. But the name is unknown, and Barbour's authority escapes me." In North's Plutarch (ed. 1631, p. 705) it is said that it was "in assailing a city of the Mallians, which they say are the warlikest men of all the Indians." The solution is, of course, that Barbour did not take his story from genuine history, but from a romance; viz. from *Li Romans d'Alixandre*, par Lambert li Tors. See the edition by H. Michelant, p. 217, where the very word *befroi* (see l. 708) is used.

718. *Arestee*. Lambert li Tors (ed. Michelant, p. 218) calls him "Ariste son dru." In Plutarch's account, Peucestas and Linnæus come to assist Alexander.

737. See a notice of St Margaret, wife of Malcolm Canmore of Scotland, in Chambers, Book of Days, ii. 584. She died Nov. 16, 1093.

799. *Wonnyn*, won. Innes proposed to read *wonnin* in l. 793, but *won* here. His text reverses these readings. Both ways he is wrong; for the form *here* must be the same as *before*, being equally a past participle after *has*.

815, 816. *Lenteryne*, Lent, 1313. *Saint Iohnis mess*, St John's mass, i. e. June 24, or Midsummer day, 1313. From l. 821, we learn that the arrangement was that Sir Philip Mowbray obtained just a year's truce, during which Stirling castle was to be relieved. This led to the battle of Bannockburn, fought on June 24, 1314; i. e. on the very day on which the year expired.

## NOTES TO BOOK XI. (A.D. 1313, 1314.)

(Jamieson, VIII. 1—659; Innes, pp. 249—273.)

1. *Cunnand*, covenant ; referring to the agreement made between Sir Philip Mowbray and the Scotch. See Book x. 820.

24. *As men sayis* ; this shews it was a popular proverb. It means—"A little stone may upset a great waggon." In Hazlitt's Proverbs we find—"A little fire burns up a great deal of corn ;" and—"A little leak will sink a great ship."

32. *Outrageous*, extreme ; alluding to the great length of time assigned.

50. "God may very well dispose of our destinies."

84. See The Lord of the Isles, canto vi. st. 4, and the notes ; Fordun, cap. cxxxii. ; Rymer's Fœdera, iii. 476-8, 481.

107. "With horses covered with complete mail." Here *playn* seems to represent the Fr. *plein*. The Edinb. MS. has *in plait and mailze* ; on which Innes remarks—"The distinction between the two kinds of armour, if known, was not so specific in Barbour's age."

123. *Charre*, multitude of waggons, for carrying baggage. O.Fr. *charroy*, which Cotgrave explains by—"Carriage, portage, waynage, waggonage ; the carrying of things by wayne, cart, or waggon ; also, a cart or other carriage ; also, a cart-load, chariot-load, or waggon-load of." This word is miswritten *char* in the Edinb. MS., and is followed by a blank line. The passage somewhat puzzled Pinkerton and Jamieson, but is easily set right by the Cambridge MS.

153. "Holes shall be rent in whole cloth."

163. The young Earl of Gloucester, Gilbert de Clare, who was killed in the battle, was the king's nephew, being son of Joan of Acre, daughter of Edward I., who married Gilbert, Earl of Clare and Gloucester. See Annals of England, p. 166, and p. 183, note *n* ; Annals of Scotland, ii. 46. Barbour mentions his name below ; xiii. 466.

The Earl of Hereford was Sir Humphrey de Bohun, constable of England. See a notice of him in Annals of England, p. 185, note *y* ; and of his father in the same, p. 173, note *f*. He was taken prisoner at Bannockburn, and exchanged for Robert Bruce's queen. He died in 1322. A later Humphrey de Bohun, who became Earl of Hereford in 1336, is noticed in my preface to William of Palerne, p. xi.

174. Sir Giles de Argentine, whose fate is so well narrated in The Lord of the Isles, vi. 33, and note to vi. 35. See Annals of Scotland, ii. 48.

184. Berwick was the place appointed for the English bands to meet ; they were to be assembled there on the 10th of June ; see Lord of the Isles, note to vi. 4, which refers to the summons issued to the sheriff of Yorkshire, in Rymer's Fœdera, iii. 481, quoted in Annals of Scotland, ii. 41.

210. Torwoodhead Castle is a little to the South of Banockburn. Torwood contained Wallace's Tree; see note to Wallace, ed. Jamieson, v. 319.

274. *Yon castell*, i. e. Stirling castle; see l. 6.

290. *On fut*. Innes points out that this decision materially influenced the fate of the battle, and that, in this policy, the Scotch imitated the Flemings, who successfully resisted with infantry the best chivalry of France in the decisive battle at Courtray, July 11, 1302.

304. *Battalis*; battalions. Scott has borrowed the word.

"In battles four beneath their eye  
The forces of King Robert lie."

Lord of the Isles, vi. 10.

See the excellent note upon these lines, fully explaining the order of battle.

334. "The men of Argyle, the islanders, and the Highlanders in general, were ranked in the rear;" Lord of the Isles, vi. 10, note; q. v. Pinkerton suggests that Bruce put them there because he could least trust them, and added his own men of Carrick to their ranks, because he could trust them most.

352. *Settirday*; Saturday, June 22, 1314.

374. *Sonday*; Sunday, June 23, 1314, being the Eve of St John; see l. 382. The reading *settirday* (C) is a mere repetition from l. 352, due to inattention.

442. *The kirk*. This "can only mean St Ninian's;" Lord of the Isles, vi. 18; note.

521. *Clyfford*; Sir Robert Clifford; Annals of Scotland, pp. 44, 45 (quoted in note to Lord of the Isles, vi. 18).

547. *Faldyn*, fallen; cf. the readings *fallyn* (E), *fullen* (H). Innes says, without any authority, that "fald means to shed, or drop as withered flowers." Perhaps he took *fald* to be equivalent to *fade*; but, if so, the explanation is inadmissible, because *fade* is a weak verb, and *fald* would produce the form *faled* (weak), not *faldyn* (strong). The usual explanation is perfectly correct. "'See, Randolph,' said the king to his nephew, 'there is a rose fallen from your chaplet';" Tales of a Grandfather, ch. x. The insertion of the 'excrescent' *d* is a mere peculiarity of pronunciation, due to Scandinavian influence. So in Havelok the Dane, l. 2698, I am persuaded that the right reading is—"þat he [ne] felden so dos þe gres," that they fell not as the grass does. Still more clearly is this shewn by the Danish form of the verb to fall, viz. infin. *falde*, pp. *falden* or *faldet*. Wyclif, in like manner, writing in a Northern dialect, says—"vnclene spiritis, whenne thei seien hiun, felden down to him;" Mark iii. 11. Cf. *falding*, i. e. falling, xiii. 632.

573. *Dencort*; spelt *Dancort*, xii. 351. The real name seems to have been *Dayncourt* or *Deyncourt*; Leland, Collect. i. 546; Rymer, Fœdera, iii. 310, Anno 1312. See note in Jamieson.

655. *Feill*, feel; i. e. feel the force of his attack. Cf. xii. 588,

## NOTES TO BOOK XII. (A.D. 1314.)

(Jamieson, VIII. 660—IX. 182; Innes, pp. 273—294.)

22. Jamieson reads “An hat off tyre ;” and, in his Dictionary, refers us to A.S. *tyr*, which is a mere adaptation of *tiāra*, and is certainly not to the point. The Edinb. MS. may equally be read “An hat off cyre,” and I have no doubt that this is the real reading ; *cyre* being a corruption of the Fr. *cuir*, leather, and merely another form of the *quyrr-* in *quyrbolle*. The reading of C., viz. *quyrbolle*, is a corruption of *cuir bouilli*, that is, leather soaked in hot water to soften it that it might take any required shape, after which it was dried and became exceedingly stiff and hard. See my note on *quyrbollo* in Chaucer’s *Prioresses Tale*, &c.; Group B. l. 2065 (Clarendon Press Series). It is amusing to notice that Hart’s edition turns the word into *carbuncle*!

29. *Bowme*, Bohun ; pronounced as *boon*, and spelt *Boane* by Scott. The spelling *Bowme* is, of course, a mistake for *Boune* ; but it is remarkable that Hart also reads *Bowm*, though he makes it rhyme with *down* ; see Rubric quoted in the first footnote to Book XII. Sir Henry Bohun was cousin to Sir Humphrey Bohun, Earl of Hereford, one of the commanders of the English army. See *Lord of the Isles*, vi. 15.

49. “They sprang together in a strait career.” See *sprenten* in Stratmann.

77. “They made a great dash at them.” MS. E. has *schowt*, i.e. shout ; badly.

82. “Their horses’ feet got nearly all of them away.”

99. *Thomas*, i.e. Randolph ; see xi. 633.

110. *Relyng*, reeling, giving way. MS. E. has *relying*, which is the usual spelling of ‘rallying.’

133. *Thame*, them. I have omitted to note the reading *him* (E.), which, however, is manifestly wrong. Innes remarks that *both* MSS. read *him*, but this is a mistake ; the reading of C. is ‘thame,’ as printed.

143. Here, again, Innes says that *men* is omitted in *both* MSS. ; but it is only omitted in E., as noted.

144. “Took off their helmets in haste to give themselves air, for they were hot ; they were all covered with sweat.”

148. *Fayndit*, tested, tried, put to the proof. Either reading, *fayndit thair faygis* (put their foes to the test), or *fandit thair force* (put their strength to the test), gives good sense. The reading *fudyt* (P. and J.) is not really that of MS. E., which has *fandit*, another spelling of *fayndit*.

171. *Luf*, to praise. Such is, apparently, the sense, though we commonly find *love*, to praise, as distinguished from *luff*, to love. The two words are occasionally confounded. MS. E. reads—“we aucht to love and luff,” i.e. we ought to praise and love, where the distinction is duly made.

191. *The quhethir*, however; a very common phrase. Innes says both MSS. have ‘And quhethir;’ but this is only true of MS. E., as noted.

193. “For all shall rest with you.”

250. *Leit of ws lichly*, think lightly of us; a common phrase. Cf. “And lete liȝte of þe lawe”; P. Plowman, B. vi. 170. The reading *heyghtly* (E) is probably a mere blunder.

290. *Neill*, Nigel Bruce; see iv. 61, 176.

300. *Thar*, rightly so printed by Pinkerton, was turned into *char* by Jamieson, though the latter word does not properly exist. See note to viii. 257.

302. “Will prevent us from being surrounded.”

306. “Have an eye for taking any of their riches.”

333. *The nycht*; the night of Sunday, June 23.

335. Sir Robert Clifford’s advance had been foiled by Sir Thomas Randolph.

354. *All about*, all round. Innes proposes to read *tham about*, as in Hart; but it is hardly necessary.

360. For ‘rown and’ (a misprint), read ‘rownand,’ i. e. whispering; which is far better than *routand* (E), which means ‘making a great noise.’ Cf. I. 368.

373. *In punȝeis*, in slight skirmishes; lit. in puny things.

406\*. *Hard feld*, dry and firm ground, as opposed to the marshy ground where the ‘pollis’ or pools were.

407. The eventful day was Monday, June 24, 1314.

413. “They made knights, as it behoves men to do who use those arts;” i. e. the arts of war. See note above, to ix. 138.

429. *Schiltrum*, a squadron; see the Glossary. It means a close compact body of men, without specifying the form of them. Pinkerton says that Hearne’s edition of Robert of Gloucester shews that “*shiltrum* is an host ranged in a round form.” No reference is given, and, even if it be so in that work, it is not so generally. A similar mistaken description is given (according to Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 357) by Hemingford, vol. i. p. 165. The word is sufficiently common. Stratmann gives six references for it, s. v. *schildtrume*, to which add:—“ar the *scheltroms* come to-gedders; Trevisa’s description of the Battle of Hastings. And see seven references s. v. *scheltrone* in allit. Morte Arthure, ed. Brock; and four s. v. *sheltron* in the allit. Troybook, ed. Panton and Donaldson. In 1 Kings iv. 2 Wyclif uses *scheltrun* to translate ‘aciem.’

431. *Rad till byd*, afraid to bide.

439. *Our-tuk*, covered; lit. took over.

505. *It her*, hear it. Innes quotes from the Lanercost Chronicle, p. 225, where there is an express notice of this “sonus maximus et horribilis ex lanceis fractis et ex dextrariis vulneratis ad mortem.” Compare Scott’s line—“And steeds that shriek in agony;” Lord of the Isles, vi. 24. And see Scott’s note to that line.

509. I have omitted to note the reading *douchty* in E., which has—“And mony hardy men & douchty ;” a reading which (as Innes remarks) quite misses the meaning.

557. “And many a great and severe blow be dealt ;” lit. and many a royal severe blow be caught. *Riall*, royal; hence, simply, great. *Rymnyll*, a blow; see *remyllis* in Jamieson. *Ryde*, severe; possibly (as Mätzner suggests) connected with Icel. *reiðr*, angry. *Rought*, i. e. caught, reached, dealt.

563. *Wan plass*, won place, i. e. gained ground.

564. *The quhethir*, although. Innes is wrong in saying that *the* occurs in neither MS.; it occurs in C.

### NOTES TO BOOK XIII. (A.D. 1314.)

Jamieson, IX. 183—931; Innes, pp. 294—321.)

20. *Fluss*, swamp. The ground became quite a swamp. Cf. *Flush*, a morass, Roxburghshire; *Flesh*, a swamp, Galloway. Also *Flosche*, *Flash*, a pool (Halliwell).

32. *Tynt the suet*, lost their lives. *Suet* is lit. sweat; but the A.S. *swát* is often used to signify blood shed in battle, the life-blood of wounded heroes. See Grein's A.S. Dictionary.

36. *Slew fire*, struck fire. *Slay* was often used in the sense of strike; cf. G. *schlagen*. ‘*Slew fyrr*’ occurs also in *The Wallace*, iv. 285.

46. *Lechyng*, healing. Supply a full stop at the end of the line.

85. “That were more numerous than they were by a great deal.”

98. *Nakit* here means ‘unarmed;’ a common use of the word. See note to vii. 330.

131\*—144\*. These fourteen lines are only found in Hart, not in the MSS.; but they are certainly genuine, though Pinkerton and Innes think them unnecessary.

132. *On a side*, on one side, on one of the sides of the rank opposed to them. So *a front* = one front, l. 163. And see l. 348.

173. *Not*, employment, business. *Had apon hand so gret not*, had so much business upon their hands. *Not* is clearly the right reading, though only preserved in the best MS. It is the A.S. *notu*, employment; and not to be confused with the High German *noth*, which is merely the High German way of spelling *need*. A knowledge of German is often misleading to such as do not understand Grimm's law. The A.S. *notu* also means *use*, and the German form of it is *nutz*.

183. *Armoris and quynnis*, coats-of-arms and badges; used by the warriors as distinctions. The *armor* is Chaucer's *cote armour*, Kn. Tale, 158; of no use as a defence, being made of a flimsy material, but worn over the true armour of defence, and charged with armorial bearings. See *Cote armure* in the Prompt. Parv., where Way notes

that "Sir Thomas de la More [ap. Camden, p. 494; see Ann. Scot. ii. 48] relates that the Earl of Gloucester was slain at Bannockburn, in consequence of his neglecting to put on his insignia, termed in the Latin translation *togam propriae armaturae*." *Quyntis* is merely (as Innes says) the Fr. *cointises*, signifying finery or *quaint* attire; see Roquesfort and Burguy. The Edinb. MS. has the misspelling *quhytyss* (due to omission of *n* and insertion of *h*), an unreal word which much puzzled Pinkerton and Jamieson. The former took it to be a bad spelling of *coats* (cf. the reading *coates* in Hart); the latter was persuaded that it meant *hats!* Note the use of *discrivit* (described, discerned, made out) in l. 185, which clearly proves what the *armoris and quyntis* were intended for.

217. "That they gave way a little wee bit;" note Hart's reading *recooled*, i. e. recoiled.

Jamieson's explanation is not correct; he makes it mean 'they felt terror,' from A.S. *wandian*, to shun; but this would have given us the form *wandit*. The word is clearly French, viz. the O.Fr. *gandir* or *wandir*, to save oneself, escape, turn aside, a word of Teutonic origin; cf. Mœso-Goth. *wandjan*, to turn, A.S. *wendan*, to turn. Thus Barbour uses the word in its true sense, viz. to turn aside, to swerve. It occurs elsewhere; see the Glossary.

219. "That their undertaking was worse than before." *Covyne* properly means plot, design; in this place it means no more than attempt or undertaking.

229. "Yeoman, swains, and the rabble of camp-followers." This incident is admirably described by Sir W. Scott; Lord of the Isles, vi. 30, 31.

264. "Would, with their honour, have been away;" i. e. would have been glad to be away, if they could have retreated honourably.

275. *In tropellis ser*, in several small companies. The Fr. *troupeau* would have been spelt *troupel* or *tropel* in Old French.

305. "Have good day! for I will (turn) again." See Lord of the Isles, vi. 32; Ann. Scot. ii. 48.

308. "Than to live here and flee disgracefully." The line runs badly; but is easily restored by reading *shamly*, as in the Edinb. MS.

321. "The third best knight." In a note, Lord Hailes says—"the three most eminent worthies of that age were the Emperor Henry of Luxembourg, Robert Bruce, and Sir Giles de Argentine;" Ann. Scot. ii. 48. Jamieson has some remarks on the name in an Additional Note, p. 484 of his edition.

365. *Cum ȝhe in it*, if you were to come into it.

374. "Close your ranks as closely as you can." See below, ll. 568, 569.

379. "The Round Table is an artificial mound near Stirling Castle;" P. (who refers to Nimmo's Hist. of Stirlingshire). On the other hand, in the last note to the Lady of the Lake, Scott says—"The ring within which justs were formerly practised, in the castle-park, is still called the Round Table."

412. *Mastry*, mastery. The governor of Bothwell castle received the Earl of Hereford and his men, but took care that they did not interfere with his own powers.

415. The three parts, i. e. three quarters.

439. "For fear they should again make head against him."

447\*—450\*. Innes says these four lines are in Hart. But they are in the Cambridge MS. too.

454. *Fut-hot*, foot-hot, speedily; see note to iii. 418.

463. The Camb. MS. says 700 pairs; Edinb. MS. and Hart say 200. The latter is better; but, either way, it is an exaggeration. "Of barons and bannerets, there were slain 27, and 22 made prisoners; of knights there were slain 42, and 60 made prisoners;" Ann. Scot. ii. 51.

465. See note to l. 183 above, and note to xi. 163.

468. *Typlot* (C) is better than *typont* (EH). "By English writers he is called Payen Tybetot; Annals of Scotland, ii. 51. He is frequently designed Paganus Tybotot in the *Fœdera*."—J.

472. *Wepount*, Vipont. "It is probable that Sir Alan Wypont, who defended the castle of Lochlevin for David II. against the English, A.D. 1335, was his son; see Hailes, Ann. Scot. ii. 178."—J. The charters shew that the Latin name is *de Veteri Ponte*.

484. See this passage paraphrased in Ann. Scot. ii. 50. Lord Hailes adds—"I know not what judgment to form of this story. It is certain that the Earl of Athole returned to the service of England; *Fœdera*, t. iii. p. 644, anno 1317. And it is equally certain, that sentence of forfeiture was pronounced against him in parliament, anno 1323; *Chart. Dunferm.* t. ii. fol. 24. It is strange that punishment should have been delayed, until 1323, of an offence so atrocious, said to have been committed in 1314."

486. *At rebouris*, at cross purposes, against the grain; i. e. in great dislike. Cotgrave gives "à rebours, overthwartly, quite contrary, full against the course, wooll, or haire; inside out, upside downe, clean kamme." Also "rebours, adj. crosse, overthwart, wayward, surly, rude, froward," &c. Also "rebourser, to worke against the wooll or haire;" &c. "Rebours, the wrong way of a stuff; from Lat. *reburrus*, rough, in late Latin documents; we find, in the glosses of Isidore, 'reburrus, hispidus';" Brachet's Etym. Fch. Dict.

495. *Herth*, C.; *Airth*, H.; *keth* (i. e. Keith), E. The name intended may very well be *Airth*. There is a place of that name only a few miles S.E. of Stirling. See remarks on the family of Airth in Jamieson's note to Wallace, ix. 1283.

511. *Neir syb*, nearly related. It has already been observed that the Earl of Gloucester was nephew to king *Edward*; see note to xi. 163. Edward's sister Joan married (1) Gilbert de Clare, father of the Earl of Gloucester here mentioned; and (2) Ralph de Monthermer. As Ralph de Monthermer bore the arms of Clare at the siege of Caerlaverock in 1300 (Ann. of Eng. p. 178), and was styled Earl of Glou-

ester till the death of his wife in 1307, it must have been he who sent Bruce the pair of spurs, and so saved his life; see note to ii. 1. Tytler (Hist. Scotland, i. 87) says that Bruce received that intimation of his danger "from his kinsman, the Earl of Gloucester." The Scotch were naturally desirous of saving the young earl's life; see note to l. 183 above.

523. *Betwng* looks like Betoun. "Lord Hailes writes *Twenge*, Ann. Scot. ii. 52; Knyghton, *Twange*, Dec. Script. 2518; Rymer, *Twenge*, iii. 148; *Twyng*, 271; *Tweng*, 444."—J.

544. "Became of his dwelling," i. e. lived afterwards in Scotland, and took the Scottish side. The Edinb. MS. has *belewyt*, answering to *beleft* in Hart, with the sense of 'remained.' Jamieson, in his Dictionary, wrongly says that *belewyt* of means 'delivered up.' But see *Bileue* in Halliwell. Compare Chaucer, Sq. Tale, 583—"Swich harm I felte for he ne myghte bileue," i. e. because he could not stay, or remain behind.

580. "None could be behind his fellows so much as a stone's throw, without being at once slain, or taken so speedily that no one would attempt to rescue him, however much he loved him." Cf. ll. 601—606.

587. Winchburgh is in Linlithgowshire, in the direct road from Linlithgow to Edinburgh.

588. *Thai* is in the Camb. MS., though Innes says he found it only in Hart. The Edinb. MS. omits it.

611. "Counte Patrik of Marche ful gentely reseivid king Edward into his castel of Dunbar, and thens the king cam by water to Berwick;" Scala Chron. ap. Leland, t. ii. p. 547; see Ann. Scot. ii. 49. It is said that Oriel College, founded by Edward in 1326, was due to his gratitude to the Virgin Mary for his escape at Bannockburn; Antiq. Oxon. t. ii. p. 103; Ann. Scot. ii. 49.

623. "They left (behind them) a part of their troop," Camb. MS.; "They were very straitly bestead," Edinb. MS.

632. *Falding*, falling, downfall, reverse. The reading *fading* is a mere blunder. See *faldyn*, xi. 547, and the note.

642. *Has* stands here in both MSS. Jamieson reads *have*; Pinkerton prints *hase*.

650. "Their foes (being) vanquished, was great in power." The Edinb. MS. has here a line which is due to an adaptation of l. 656\* below; and the scribe really missed this line and the next five, by passing from *hicht* at the end of l. 649 to *hicht* at the end of l. 655\*.

674. "Sir Walter." See l. 406 above.

683. "Bishop Robert, who had become blind." I. e. Robert Wishart, bishop of Glasgow; see iv. 13, and the note. "He died in 1316."—P.

684. The queen and her daughter Marjory had been taken at Tain; see iv. 39—56.

693. *Ane knaiff child*, a boy; as in Chaucer, Cler. Tale, 612.

695. *Robert*, i. e. Robert II., the first of the Stewarts, A.D. 1371—1390. See Tales of a Grandfather, ch. xvi.

697. *Eyme, uncle.* *Davy, David II.*, who reigned (says Barbour) forty-two years. He was only about four years old at his accession, the Earl of Murray being regent. His reign lasted from the death of king Robert, June 7, 1329, to his own death, Feb. 22, 1371, or forty-one years, eight months and a half,

704. It is extremely fortunate that Barbour has thus accurately dated his work. He tells us it was in A.D. 1375, after king Robert had reigned five years. Strictly speaking, this is an inaccurate expression, for he did not *complete* the fifth year of his reign till Feb. 22, 1376. It is true that the year 1376 was called 1375 up to the 24th of March inclusive, but this will not help us out; for, in l. 707, the poet expressly says that king Robert had been dead 46 years, *and no more*, which only brings down the time to June 7, 1375. He therefore clearly alludes to the *fifth year* of Robert II., as explained in the side-note.

Barbour adds another note of date; he tells us that the reigning king was 60 years of age. Robert II. was born Mar. 2, 1316, and completed his 59th year in March, 1375. The two data, that Robert II. was in his 60th year, and that Robert I. had been dead 46 years, and no more, would limit us to the months of March, April, May, and June of 1375. But there is no reason why we should suppose all the expressions used to be taken in their strictest sense. It is sufficient to know that the poem was in hand in 1375.

It is, perhaps, of more importance to remark that this paragraph seems to have been added afterwards; we should have expected to find it at the end of the poem. Else we must suppose that Barbour merely made a note of the date *en passant*, and completed the poem afterwards.

731. "That none should be heard (should have their claims considered) afterwards."

735. This was in the latter part of the year 1314; see Ann. Scot. ii. 54.

741. "Of an approved kind, that is worth speaking of here."

#### NOTES TO BOOK XIV. (A.D. 1315.)

(Jamieson, X. 1—554; Innes, pp. 321—340.)

1. Barbour gives a full account of Edward Bruce's expedition to Ireland. He landed there May 25, 1315, and was slain in battle Oct. 5, 1318. Cf. Annals of Ireland, subjoined to Camden's *Britannia*.

9. *Erishry of Ireland*, the Erse or Irish inhabitants of Ireland, as distinguished from the Erse or Gaelic inhabitants of Scotland.

27. Sir John Soulis was, probably, a brother or a cousin of the Sir William Soulis, also called Lord Soulis, who conspired against Bruce's life in 1320; see xix. 11. According to Barbour, he perished in Ireland; xviii. 110.

28. Sir John Stewart was the brother of Sir Walter Stewart, the king's son-in-law. Barbour narrates his death in Ireland; xviii. 109. Sir Allan Stewart is mentioned in l. 405.

29. Jamieson has some remarks on the family of Ramsay. Ouchtirhouse or Auchterhouse is in the S. of Forfarshire. In *The Wallace*, vii. 890, 902, it is expressly said that the Ramsay mentioned by Barbour was Sir Alexander Ramsay, son of Sir John Ramsay, and that he won Roxburgh castle; see x. 356.

31. Jamieson has a few remarks on the name of Fergus of Ardrossan. Ardrossan is on the coast of Ayrshire.

33. *Vavering fyrth*, Wavering Firth; called Woking's Firth in E and H. The name of Woking's Firth has not been traced, nor can I trace that of Wavering Firth, which is the alternative offered by the Camb. MS. It is known that the landing-place was not far from Carrickfergus; see l. 45. Innes shews that it has been supposed that the bay intended is Larne harbour, or Lough Larne. A glance at the map will shew that Edward must have landed either in Lough Larne or Belfast Lough; and there are three reasons in favour of the former. These are (1) the tradition to that effect; (2) its somewhat shorter distance from the Ayrshire coast; and (3) that it partakes more of the character of a frith or fiord.

47. *Mavndwell*, Mandevill. "A letter is directed by Edw. I. [II.?] to Mandevill as in Ireland, 12th Aug. 1314; *Thomæ de Mandevile*."—J. "The *Mandevilles* were lords of the barony of Dufferin. After the murder of Patrick, Earl of Athol, at Haddington in 1242, the *Bissets*, then a numerous and powerful family, fled from Scotland and took refuge in the Glynnns of Antrim, where they obtained a settlement under the De Burghs, Earls of Ulster. The Macdonnels of Antrim are said to owe their possessions there to a marriage with the heiress of the Bissets. The *Logans* were considerable proprietors in the N. of Ireland; and two parishes in the Diocese of Connor had the names respectively of *Ecclesia villaæ Hugonis de Logan*, and *Ecclesia villaæ Walteri de Logan*, now Templepatrick and Ballywalter. (Dr Reeves's Down and Connor.) The *Savages* had the manors of Rathmore, Duntorsy, and others, in Ulster. A townland in the parish of Donegore, called Ballysavage, preserves this family name. They are lineally represented by Mr Nugent of Portaferry in the Ards. (Dr Reeves's Down and Connor.)"—Innes.

102. *Kyngis*, chiefs or reguli. One of them was named O Dymsy (i. e. O Dempsy); see l. 329. "Of the Reguli of Uladh or Ulster, see Reeves's Down and Connor, pp. 364—369. One no doubt was that Douenaldus [Doneualdus?] Oneyl Rex Ultoniæ, and claiming yet higher style, who was the head of the Cinel Owen, or Tyrone Oneills, from 1283 to 1325, and who is known to us from the remarkable appeal which he made to the Pope, in the name of the whole Irish people, against the dreadful oppression of the English in 1318. (Fordun, xii. 26.)"—Innes.

A sufficient list of these chieftains, including this "Doneval O Neel," will be found in *The Lord of the Isles*, note to vi. 4. It is taken from Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. iii. p. 476.

105. *Makfulchiane*, C; *Makgullane*, E; *Makgoulchane*, H. Jamieson suggests Magh Cullen or Mac Gillian; Innes says it does not mean Mac Quillan, but Mac Coolechan of Clannbrassil.

106. *Makmartane*, C; *Makartane*, E. Jamieson suggests that he is the earl of Desmond of l. 141, and interprets the name as MacCarthy. Innes makes it Mac Cartane. Perhaps Jamieson is right; for in the list above referred to (note to l. 102) we find "Dermod Mac Arthy, dux Hibernicorum de Dessemound."

108. "Where it, of necessity, behoved him (to get) away." Cf. l. 116.

113. *Endwillane*. Innes shews some reasons for identifying this with the Moiry Pass, called "the pass of Emerdullam" in 1343, which he locates in the parish of Killevy, in Armagh (in Ulster), close to the boundary of Louth (in Leinster). He adds that "a small square castle in ruins still marks the place." See the next note.

133. *Kilsaggart*. "About a quarter of a mile from Moiry Castle is Kilnasaggart, where there are traces of a cemetery, and a curious tall stone monument in memory of Ternohc Mac Ceran."—Innes. The name clearly means "the priest's cell" (*cella sacerdotis*), and might have been applied to many places. I suppose that, by "Moiry castle," Innes means the castle mentioned in the last note, as situate in the Moiry Pass. This is quite a different place from Moira, at the other (northern) extremity of Armagh. Jamieson's suggestion, that Kilsaggart is near Dublin, is out of the question. Edward had not yet advanced so far as Dundalk.

135. "Dundalk was within the pale, and a strong hold of the Anglo-Irish in those days."—Innes.

143. *Bremayne*. The name occurs again in l. 515, where we find the spellings *Briwman* (C), *Bryname* (E), and *Brunhame* (II). It is supposed to be a corruption of Birmingham, i. e. Birmingham. "Sir John de Birmingham, a valiant and distinguished commander, arrived about this time, A.D. 1315, with a select body of English forces, sent by Edward II. See Leland's *Hist. Irel.* bk. ii. cap. 3."—J. After Edward Bruce's defeat and death, he was created earl of Louth; Rymer's *Fœdera*, iii. 767; Ann. Scot. ii. 82.

*Wardoune*, possibly Verdon, as suggested by Innes; see l. 515. Sir Miles Verdon was one of the English leaders; Tytler's *Hist. Scotland*; i. 127.

145. *Butler*; i. e. Lord Edmund le Botiller (or Butler), Justiciary of Ireland; *Fœdera*, iii. 492; Ann. Scot. ii. 62.

146. Sir Maurice Fitz-thomas; *Fœdera*, iii. 492.

159. Innes says—"Barbour everywhere calls Richard de Clare the King's Lieutenant. Edmund Butler was Justiciary [or lord lieutenant]. Richard Clare, however, was one of the chiefs of the English party in

Ireland." Hailes remarks—"Barbour often mistakes the names of places and persons. He figured to himself that Richard de Clare was the English deputy in Ireland; and, from an error natural enough, he supposed that the deputy always commanded the armies opposed to Edward Bruce. He omits some events altogether, and is too apt to magnify skirmishes into battles; yet his narrative contains circumstances curious and characteristical;" Ann. Scot. ii. 61.

Perhaps Barbour really meant Richard de Burgh, at that time Earl of Ulster, and the actual leader of the army opposed to Edward Bruce.

221. *Rewis*, streets; Fr. *rues*. The Scotch took Dundalk on June 29, 1315; Ann. Scot. ii. 61.

233. *Lufre*, delivery; better spelt *leuere* (= *livere*).

252. Kilross is probably Carrickmacross, co. Monaghan, not very far from Dundalk. See note in Innes.

280. "Yon host is but the offscouring (lit. gathering) of the country."

313. Compare i. 465, and the note.

315. *Forsuk*, turned aside from, avoided; lit. forsook.

329. *Odymsy*. "Fyn O Dymsy" is mentioned in the list referred to in the note to l. 102. "O Dempsy was the name of the hereditary lords of Clannmaliere, a territory on either side of the Barrow, comprising the baronies of Portnahinch in Queen's County, and Upper Philipstown in King's County."—Innes.

337. *A gret revar*; in my opinion, clearly the Blackwater, flowing into Lough Neagh. The localities of the rivers mentioned have not been well made out hitherto, but are really not difficult to identify. Innes suggests that the 'gret revar' is "apparently the Barrow;" but if he means the large river of that name in the S. of Ireland, it is wholly out of the question; for it has nothing to do with Ulster.

We have just read of the Scotch advancing from Dundalk to Carrickmacross; in l. 394 we shall find them at Connor. See the note to that line. It is clear, too, that they went from Carrickmacross to Connor by a circuitous route, through a wild country previously unknown to them. In other words, they went round Lough Neagh on its western side, instead of going, as before, to the east of it. This simple explanation satisfies all the conditions, and enables us to point out the route, and all the places mentioned. The first thing was, that O'Dempsy decoyed the Scotch across the (Armagh) Blackwater by telling them that the Irish there were friendly. The following sentence, from the Cyclopædia of the British Empire, exactly explains this matter. "Its ancient name was Avon More, or the *great river*, a title only merited by comparison with the smaller streams of the district. The Armagh Blackwater is not remarkable for anything except its historical importance, as having been long the boundary between the jurisdiction of the English pale and the independent country of the Tyrone O'Neills." Precisely so.

The succeeding notes explain the rest.

339. "Low by a brim (of a lake)." The word *brim* originally meant not so much the sea-shore as the *sea itself*, as in "on þam bradan brime," on the broad sea; Cod. Exon. ed. Thorpe, p. 194. The sea or lake meant is Lough Neagh, the largest lake in the British Islands, about 18 miles long. O'Dempsey conducted the Scotch along its Western shore till he got them to the Northern end of it, where he expected to destroy them all by famine.

345. "Where all the cattle were withdrawn (from them) about two days' journey or more." They were two days' journey beyond the place where they had crossed the Blackwater, with wild country to the west, and, as we shall see, an impassable river beyond them.

352. Innes says—"The Camb. MS. has *owth*, meaning, apparently, a shelter or hiding-hole. In the Edinb. MS., the space for the word is left blank. Hart gives *Ane litill south*, which Jamieson adopts." There is no difficulty whatever, when it is once known that *owth* is not a substantive at all. Indeed Jamieson, in his Dictionary, explains it well enough as—"Owth, prep. above; over. *Wyntown*." Here, however, it is used adverbially, but with the same sense of *above*, or *beyond*; the word being merely A.S. *út*, our 'out,' used a little peculiarly. It occurs again in xvii. 598; xviii. 418. The sentence means—"This false traitor had caused his men to dam up the outlet of a loch, a little beyond where he had lodged Sir Edward and the Scotchmen; and then let out the water during the night."

354. *Louch*, a loch or lake. Any pool in a river would have served the purpose. We shall see that the Scotch were very near to Loch Beg, but that would have been too large to dam up, I suspect.

364. "Nevertheless, they had enough." Said ironically.

369. *Riveris tway*; either the Bann and the Blackwater; or rather, the Bann and the artificial flood which O'Dempsey had caused in their rear. Of course, the Irish knew the country well. They had now led the Scotch up to Loch Beg and the Bann, and had then created a flood behind them; thus completely catching them in a trap.

371. *The bane*, the river Bann. This was pointed out by Jamieson. The Bann is an 'arm of the sea' in a double sense. It has an estuary into the sea, but it also twice expands into a 'sea' in the old sense, i. e. into a lake; for it passes through Lough Neagh and Lough Beg. The Irish had done their work well; they had taken care that the Scotch should *not* be near the sea-coast, where they might in some way have helped themselves, but in the corner between Lough Beg and Lough Neagh, with flooded land behind them, so that all escape seemed hopeless.

373. *Wllister*, Ulster. "Ulster is here used in its limited application, as including only the counties of Antrim and Down."—Innes.

376. "Had it not been for a rover of the sea (or lake); his name was Thomas of Down." It is possible that the 'sea' is here merely Lough Neagh. This would explain the man's name—Thomas of *Down*. He was a man accustomed to traversing the lake, which is surrounded

by the counties of Antrim, Londonderry, Tyrone, and Armagh, whilst that of Down just comes up to it at one corner. This man's ship would, probably, be kept at the Southern end of the lake; in traversing it, he would come near the wild country at the Northern end, and there discover the plight of the Scottish army. He would then sail out of the lake, and 'up the Bann' (though, strictly, it was down stream), till he came to where they were. If, however, he had really come from the sea-coast, the expression is quite correct. My suggestion is chiefly intended to shew how the rover might have learnt their condition, and what was probably his cruising ground. See the next note.

380. "They knew him well." No doubt; for they may have made his acquaintance in their former march from Carrickfergus to Dundalk, when they had to pass the 'Upper' Bann, i. e. the Bann *before* it enters Lough Neagh. Probably, he had ferried them across it.

381. *Tane*, taken. Most likely, it means that he had captured or appropriated them. His object was gain, and he made it both by ferrying passengers and by picking up what was not his own.

383. *In biggit land*, in cultivated land, or in land with farm-houses built on it. They were now advancing from the neighbourhood of Lough Beg to that of Connor.

394. *Coigneris*, Connor, to the N. of the town of Antrim. In the side-note, I have called it 'Conyers,' as that is clearly the pronunciation which Barbour intended. Lord Hailes calls it 'Coyners.' In some maps it is marked as Conner; and Innes notes that some people still call it 'Con-yer.' In the Cyclopædia of the British Empire, we read—"It was a place of some note in 1315, at the time of the invasion of Edward Bruce, by whom it was taken, after the defeat of Richard, Earl of Ulster, before its walls. It is supposed to have gone to decay after the irruption of the expelled Irish in 1333. There are now no traces of an episcopal seat; a large Presbyterian meeting-house is the principal object in the village."

420. To "ryde aganis" is to ride so as to meet; as in Chaucer.

421. *Iuperdy*, a dangerous experiment; lit. a jeopardy.

515. *Bruwan*, &c. See note to l. 143 above.

522. *Kyllvanane*; perhaps *Kylkenane* (E) is the right reading. "Kilkenane was, before the reformation, a church and parish in Island Magee [near the mouth of Belfast Lough] in the county of Antrim. In 1310, Michael of Kylkenan was summoned to a parliament at Kilkenny. (Cal. Canc. Hibern.)."—Innes.

#### NOTES TO BOOK XV. (A.D. 1316; AFTER L. 266, 1315.)

(Jamieson, X. 555—1124; Innes, pp. 340—360.)

1. See an account of the events in Ann. Scot. ii. 66.

The date of this battle is before April 4, 1316; see note to l. 100.

19. *Caryage*, baggage belonging to the army.

39. *Barell-feris*, barrel-hoops, hoops of barrels that had been emptied.

This is an easy solution of the word, obtained by adopting the reading of the better (Camb.) MS.; the Edinb. MS. has *barell-ferruris*, and Jamieson's Dict. gives us—"Ferraris, s. pl. Barrell-ferruris, casks for carrying liquids. Fr. ferrière, a large leathern bottle." This is a mere guess, and really leaves *ferraris* unexplained; since "barrel leathern bottles" or "cask leathern bottles" is nonsense. I take *fer* to be merely the Fr. *fer*, an iron; and hence, an iron hoop. Ducange expressly gives—"Ferrare, compedibus vincere . . . Ferrare tonello, dolia circulis ferreis munire," i. e. to protect casks with iron hoops. The reading *ferraris* I take to be a mistake for *ferruris*, from the Fr. *ferrure* (Lat. *ferratura*) meaning 'iron-work.' Thus *barell-feris* would mean 'barrel-irons,' and *barell-ferruris* would mean 'barrel-ironwork,' which comes to much the same thing; and the expressions are therefore equivalent, as various readings should be.

In l. 20 we are told that all the baggage-attendants were withdrawn; hence *feris* cannot be taken to mean 'companions,' or *men*, but must denote *things*. I suppose that the Scotch, in abandoning their baggage for the moment, placed the more worthless parts of it on the outside, and strewed the approach with any rubbish at hand. Certainly the old hoops of emptied barrels would be very effective in giving trouble to hostile cavalry; or, as Barbour phrases it, they "considerably cumbered (i. e. embarrassed) them that were riding."

49. *Stane*, stone. In the Camb. MS. the word looks like *stare*, as Innes notes. If the reader can make anything of the reading *stare*, he may do right to adopt it.

My view of the matter is, that the right reading is *stour*, and that *stok* means a sword-thrust. The sense of *stour* is a commotion, especially the onset of battle. Thus the passage would mean—"with thrusting, with forward rush, and with retreating, according as either side beat the other." The expression, not being very clearly put, would easily be turned into "with stok, with stane" (meaning "with stock (stake) or stone") because these two words are often used in company. But surely the knights fought with swords "knyghtlik;" see l. 53.

56. "Who might be most at their above," i. e. who was getting the upper hand.

59. "And rushed at them recklessly." *Schot* = rushed, dashed.

63. "That ever dared to wait for his comrade."

75. *Fizwaryne*, Fitz-warren, already mentioned above; xiv. 515. Of this, the reading *syve-warine* or *fyre-warine* (E) is a mere corruption, and we need not resort to the desperate expedient of translating it by *sovereign*, as in Jamieson, with the explanation that *sorereign* means the mayor of the town. Still, it shews us that, in xiv. 515, the Edinburgh MS. gives the better reading, and should have been followed there.

83. *Mont-peleris*, probably Montpelier. "It appears that, even in these times, Montpelier was famous for its invigorating clime."—P.

100. Palmsunday; i. e. April 4, 1316.
101. Tuesday in Easter Week, i. e. April 13; since Easter fell, in 1316, on April 11.
105. Easter Even; i. e. April 10.
107. *Devilling*, Dublin. It is spelt *Difelin* and *Dyflyn* in the A.S. Chronicle, ed. Thorpe, p. 206; an. 937.
131. The morning of Easter-day, April 11, 1316. Cf. l. 248.
137. "He sent one to the king in haste." Edward Bruce was not really crowned king till some three weeks later, viz. May 2, 1316. Ann. Scot. ii. 66. See l. 161.
162. "When that he heard such a hasty business (lit. such haste) was in hand." *Hy*, haste; as in ll. 159, 165, and at least fifty other places. It does not mean 'a shout,' as Innes supposes.
168. "By the time that his foes were approaching."
181. *Gib Harpar*, Gilbert (the) Harper; no doubt a minstrel. His death is narrated in Book xviii. 95, 165.
198. "Lost heart, and would have been (away or back) again."
228. There should be a full stop at the end of l. 227. Lines 228—231 are, of course, genuine; though omitted by the scribe of the Camb. MS., who passed from *se* (l. 227) to *he* (l. 332) by mistake, keeping the rimes perfect.
268. Here Barbour goes back to the year 1315.
- 271\*—274\*. Missed by the scribe of E, because of the repetition of *menzhe* at the end of ll. 270 and 274\*.
272. *Turbard*, isthmus. The word is the Gaelic *tairbeart*, an isthmus; and the names of East Tarbert and West Tarbert are still given to two places situate on the narrow isthmus that joins Cantire to the mainland. Similarly we can at once account for Tarbet, the name of a place situate on the narrow strip of land between Loch Lomond and Loch Long. In l. 290, mention is made of "the two Tarberts," i. e. of the East and West Tarberts above mentioned. "Magnus, king of Norway, is said in 1098 to have, in like manner, drawn his ships across this neck of land."—P. That king Robert's great ships were occasionally hauled overland is proved from the Chamberlain's Accounts; see the quotations in Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 368.
276. *Lownyt all with treis*, all sheltered with trees. See *Loun* in Jamieson. However, *lownyt* here means no more than 'covered'; it was not so wholly sheltered that no wind could blow there at all, as the story shews us. The Edinb. MS. has *lompnyt*, which Jamieson explains by 'laid,' without any authority. This *lompnyt* can only be a corruption; the reading *loned* (Hart) is somewhat more correct. Cf. Ann. Scot. ii. 64, note.
321. Hume of Godscroft (Hist. Douglas, p. 36) calls him "Sir Edward Lillow," but adds that "the Bruce's book calls him Edmond de Callock." There is a place called *Calyo* on the Adour, near Mont de Marsan, in Gascony.
331. The Merse is a district in the S. of Berwickshire.

336. "And weened (thought) they (the English) had been few." Here again, MS. E misses several lines, passing from *he* at the end of l. 336 to *he* at the end of l. 344\*.

337\*. "Saw only the fleeing (i. e. retreating Englishmen) disperse themselves, and them that seized upon the prey." The sense of *fleund scaild* is determined by l. 353\* below; see note to that line. It means that he only saw the English in small companies at a time, and so was deceived as to their number.

337, 338. "If he would make haste, he would very easily defeat them, and rescue all the cows."

345\*. Here again MS. E omits 12 lines, owing to the repetition of *ky* at the end of ll. 338 and 356\*. Innes notes that MS. E omits two lines here, but he must have meant *twelve*. So, at l. 336 above, he notes that MS. E omits *seven* lines; but he must have meant *eight*.

353\*. "And then both the forayers and the dispersed men knit (themselves) all wholly into a squadron."

341. If we adopt the reading *scaild*, the sense is—"The rest behind them (i. e. the rear-guard) made a dispersion," i. e. followed in loose order, in order to keep a look-out. If we read *staill*, the sense must be the same as in xvii. 97, which see, as also the note. *Maid a staill*, took up a fixed position. The latter is, perhaps, the better; cf. the reading of E in the next line—"thair *lump* all haill."

351. "Let each man then think upon his love" (C); or, "think of his sweetheart" (E).

375. "And though they (the English) were, by very much, far more than they (the Scotch) were."

376. *Vre*, practice; see *Ure* in Jamieson. *Demanyt thaim*, lit. demeaned them; i. e. made them demean themselves.

398. "The fame of this deed spread very far."

415. "Ye place him (count him) as if he were without peer."

514. *Haill and feir*, whole and sound; or, as we say, safe and sound. *Feir* is the Icel. *fierr*, able, capable, safe; Pinkerton oddly confuses it with *fair*.

536. "A trite illustration of a terrible name. It is told of Talbot, of Marlborough," &c.—P.

538. *Beteche*, commit, deliver; cf. *betaucht*, xx. 351. Black Douglas; in allusion to his swarthy complexion; see Book i. 397. He was commonly called by the Scotch "the *good* Sir James." Hume of Godscroft (p. 20) heads the chapter concerning him with—"Of good Sir James, the first James, and eighth lord of Douglas." Compare—

"Ay trew till him was Jamys the *gud* Douglae ;"

*Wallace*, xi. 1203.

Cf. Gaelic *dubh-ghlas*, dark gray; and the story in Hume (p. 3) that the founder of the family, Sholto Douglas, was so named because he was a "black, gray man." Unluckily for the story, "the name is undoubtedly territorial, and taken from Douglas river and dale;" Scott's note N to The Abbot. The word *Douglas* means the "black water,"

and the name occurs in Lancashire and in the Isle of Man as well as in Scotland ; see Taylor's Words and Places.

541. *Grevit* is written for *grewit*; *thame grevit* means ‘it made them shudder.’ See *Grue* in Jamieson, and observe the various readings.

---

### NOTES TO BOOK XVI. (A.D. 1316, 1317.)

(Jamieson, XI. 1—698 ; Innes, pp. 360—385.)

29. It seems to have been in the latter part of 1316 ; see note to l. 63.

36. Loch Ryan in Galloway is a sea-loch, between Ayrshire and Wigtonshire.

46. *Fest and far*, feasting and good fare.

63. It can hardly have been May, which is the month so frequently adopted by the poets for all their incidents. It must have been later than May, 1316, and earlier than May, 1317. Lord Hailes says—“The King of Scots and his brother by forced marches, passed through the country of Lowth, and advanced to Slane ; 16th February” [1316-7]. He thinks that the battle here mentioned was but an unimportant skirmish.

119. Sir Colin Campbell, according to Jamieson, was the son of the Sir Neil Campbell mentioned in iii. 392, and seems to have been the head of the family of the Campbells of Loch Awe. “Anno 1316, during the Irish war, he got for his service the whole lands of Lochow and Ardsceodinis. He was the son of Nigellus or Neil Campbell, designated *miles* in Ragman Roll ; see Nisbet’s Remarks, p. 28.”—J. Hailes calls him “the king’s nephew ;” Ann. Scot. ii. 69.

129. “With a truncheon (which was) in his fist.”

131. “That he fell noisily against his saddle-bow.” His horse was dead, but he had not had time to get off him ; so we must suppose. Or else he had mounted another.

132. “The king bade (them) pull him down quickly.” To *tyt* is to snatch ; see Jamieson. He was to be pulled off his horse, and made to fight on foot.

141. “That we shall have (much) to do very soon.”

187. “Always one against five, when he (i. e. his army) was least.”

209<sup>o</sup>—212<sup>o</sup>. Omitted in MS. E, owing to the repetition of *mycht* ; ll. 208, 212<sup>o</sup>.

223. “In this manner they filled their castles with men.”

232. “I see many here felled under foot.”

258. *Neir*, nearer. *Ere*, before, formerly.

261. *Drouchyndra*, i. e. Drogheda, where they crossed the Boyne.

According to Hailes, the Scotch took Castleknock, near Dublin, Feb. 23; were at Leixlip, on the Liffey, Feb. 25; after 4 days, marched to Naas in Kildare; and arrived at Callan in Kilkenny, Mar. 12.

265. *Lwnyk* (C); *Lynrike* (H); *Kynrike* (E). It appears that Limerick is the place meant; see Annals of Ireland, in Camden's Britannia; and Ann. Scot. ii. 70. It is not the Southernmost town in Ireland; but it was a long way from Carrickfergus, and at the opposite corner, as it were. See note to l. 297.

275. *Mon lewe*, must remain; lit. must leave (be left).

288. *Or euir he fure*, ere ever he continued his journey.

295. *Connage*, i. e. Connaught. This makes out that Bruce crossed the Shannon.

296. *Myth*, Meath. *Irell*, Uriel. "Uriel was the district now comprised in the counties of Lowth and Monaghan. It joined Meath on the north-east, and through it lay the road northward."—Innes.

297. "And Munster and Leinster." Munster is mentioned out of order; it should have come first, before l. 295. It agrees with the mention of Limerick above; note to l. 265.

303, 304. "And did their homage to him, with the exception of one or two." Pinkerton oddly refers l. 304 to the following sentence, and explains that they had but "a skirmish or two" on their way home. See, however, the next note.

307. "Except that it were some skirmish (lit. puny encounter) that is not worth speaking about here." Pinkerton's explanation of l. 304 (see last note) would do very well *here*. *Wer* = were, was; *punzhe* is used as a substantive. But, in l. 318, the word *wer* = war.

317. "The Irishry and Ulster;" i. e. the Irish tribes who had submitted to him and the country particularly called Ulster (Antrim and Down); see note to xiv. 373. The whole phrase probably includes little more than what we now call Ulster; see ll. 319, 320, 325, 326.

327. *Succudry*, a shortened form of *surcudry*, from Fr. *surcuiderie*. "*Surcuidance*, *surcuiderie*, *surquidance*, *surquiderie*; *présomption*."—Roquefort. See *Surquedrie* in Halliwell. The word also occurs in Gower—"For yet there is *surquedrie*;" Conf. Amant. bk. i.

331. "The poet passes to the year 1317."—P

336. *Hawch*, hollow or low-lying flat; see *Haugh* in Jamieson. *Lyntoun-le*, Linton Lea. Probably this is the right reading, recovered by help of MS. C. There is a Linton within 10 miles of Jedburgh, to the N.E. Leland has *Lincelly* (see note to l. 342); but the French *Scala Cronica*, p. 143, has *Lintelly*. And see l. 443.

342. "Barbour supposes, that Thomas de Richemont commanded the English; but Seal. Chron. (ap. Leland, t. i. p. 547) says, 'King Edward sent the Erle of Arundel as capitayne yn-to the marches of Scotlandne, where he sofered reproche by James Duglas at Lincelly, yn the forest of Jedworth, and ther was Thomas of Richemont slayne.' Barbour says, that Thomas de Richemont fell by the hand of Douglas, and that Douglas took the furred hat which he wore above his helmet.

In *Histoire de Bretagne*, par Lobineau, t. i. p. 665, there is a portrait of Arthur de Richemont, Duke of Britany, with a furred hat, such as is described by Barbour."—Ann. Scot. ii. 72.

"He was no 'earl,' but Sir Thomas of Richmond, a knight of Yorkshire."—Innes. Innes refers to Scala Cronica (in French), p. 143.

383. "Was not, in breadth, so much as a pennystone's throw across." A *pennystane* is a flat stone, used as a quoit.

386. *Clewch*, a hollow in a hill-side; a better reading than *louch* (E), which, properly, means a loch or lake.

399. *Half*, side. In the Edinb. MS., Jamieson read it as *hald*; see his note. But *half* is clearly right, and very common.

421. "As a token; for it was furred." See note to l. 342. P. adds—"that he might discover who the owner was." See l. 481.

457. *Entremass*, better spelt *entremes*; and it should rhyme with *wes* (E). It is the O.Fr. *entremes*, now spelt *entremets*, from a fancied connection with *meat*; but the Fr. *mets*, O.Fr. *mes*, is the Lat. *missum*, a dish as *sent in* or served at table (Brachet). An *entremes* is a delicacy or side-dish (lit. a between-dish). The sense is—"They had a cruel sort of delicacy at their dinner," or, "an indigestible side-dish;" said ironically. Compare—

"But for to judge his moste wofull penance,  
God wote, it was a pitous entremesse;"

La Belle Dame sans Mercie, st. 20; Chaucer's  
Works, ed. 1561, fol. ccli.

458. "For that additional load was rather too heavy." The *charge* is here the load or quantity of food devoured by each. Compare the use of *bellyful*, which "is often used ludicrously for more than enough; thus king James told his son that he would have his *bellyful* of parliamentary impeachments;" Todd's Johnson.

501\*. This and the next three lines should have been marked with an asterisk at the beginning, to shew that they are not in Pinkerton's edition.

504. *Forrouth*, before; see vii. 139.

508—516. By an oversight, the marginal explanation is here quite wrong. The sense is that Sir John de Soulis, with fifty men, beset the way *against* Sir Andrew Hardelay, who had with him 300 men, all well mounted. In the first sidenote on p. 399, for 'against' read 'by.' For the second, read—"Sir John, with but 50 men against 300, had the best of it." Sir John de Soulis went afterwards with Edward Bruce to Ireland; xiv. 27.

511. Sir Andrew de Hardelay, or Harcla. "Sir Andrew Harcla, warden of the west marches, is detected in correspondence with the Scots and executed, Feb. 27, 1323. He had been but recently created Earl of Carlisle for his services against the Earl of Lancaster;" Annals of England, p. 185. In the conflict with Sir John de Soulis, he was taken prisoner; see l. 518.

527—531. Lines 528—530 are parenthetical; the others mean—

"That their names be, for evermore, ever continually enduring in praise."

557. "And expected to prevent them from landing." Cf. l. 561.

575. "William Sinclair, brother of Sir Henry Sinclair, of Roslin, was bishop of Dunkeld from about 1308 till about 1324; *Keith*."—P. See allusions to him in *The Wallace*, vii. 930, ix. 1225; and see Ann. Scot. ii. 73.

580. *Chemeyr* (spelt *chemer*, l. 601), a *chimere*, a light robe, a sort of scarf, used "for till heill his veid," i. e. to cover his (warlike) attire. Cotgrave has—"Chamarre, a loose and light gowne (and, lesse properly, a cloake), that may be worn aswash, or skarfe-wise; also, a studded garment." A bishop's *chimere* was "the upper robe, to which lawn sleeves are generally sewed; which before and after the reformation, till Queen Elizabeth's time, was always of scarlet silk; but Bishop Hooper scrupling first at the robe itself, and then at the colour of it, as too light and gay for the episcopal gravity, it was changed for a *chimere* of black satin;" Wheatley, *On the Common Prayer*, ii. § 4.

584. *Awayward*, i. e. on their return, as they came away.

589. *Allout to fele*, altogether too many.

592. *Weill to ma of zow*, to make much of you, to esteem you highly; said ironically.

593. *Takis on hand*, undertake.

594. *Till wer the land*, to defend the country.

597. "He would very soon have your gilt spurs cut off from yon."

Alluding to a common mode of treating disgraced knights; see l. 598.

617. *Se thai*, if they see. *But*, without.

635. *Held*, kept; still kept (themselves) unslain.

692. "They hoisted sail without delay."

#### NOTES TO BOOK XVII. (A.D. 1318, 1319.)

(Jamieson, XI. 699—958; Innes, pp. 385—418.)

13. *Redis swyr*, the source of the Reid. Jamieson quotes from Macpherson's Geog. Illustrations—"Ryd-swyre, *Reid-swyre*, *Reid-squair*, *Redshire* (?), the most elevated part of the Roman road at the head of the *Ryd*, and a boundary to the kingdoms; whence it was the scene of frequent border-meetings, and sometimes of petty skirmishes." *Swyr* is the A.S. *swira* or *sweora*, the neck; in the same way *hawes*, very common in place-names, is the A.S. *heals*, a neck; and the French *col*, so common in Switzerland, is the Lat. *collum*, a neck. Thus *swire*, *hawes*, and *col* all have much the same meaning, and the secondary sense is also much the same, viz. a depression between two adjoining hills, where there is commonly a *pass*. In such depressions rivers have their source; and in this case, the reference is to the *swire* which forms

the bed of the source of the Reid, which is a tributary of the Tyne. There is a special reason for mentioning it, as its *position* brought it into frequent notice; for it was the place where the road from Jedburgh to Newcastle crosses the border, and must have been very often traversed in passing from one kingdom to the other. Jamieson adds—"Redpath gives an account of a pretty severe skirmish which took place here, A. 1575, p. 650. This is celebrated in what is called *The Ballat of the Red-squair*, published in the second volume of the *Evergreen*, p. 224. There it is said to have been fought July 7, 1576."

22. The town of Berwick was taken Mar. 28, 1318; see Ann. Scot. ii. 78. The castle was held for five days longer; and taken April 2 see l. 198.

35. *Kow-set*, lit. Cow-gate. Of the five gates of Berwick, one is called the Cowport, leading to the Magdalen Fields.

44, 45. The reading as it stands is probably quite correct. For the sense, supply 'either of them' after 'took.' "And, if he took (either of them) to help him, one or the other would be rendered angry." The reason was, that the one who was not invited would have thought himself disgraced; see l. 54.

48. *Letter* has the same sense as *letteris* in l. 39, because *letteris* is a mere translation of the Lat. *literæ*. The same confusion has occurred above; see ii. 80, 83.

64. *Dwns*, Dunse; some 15 miles W. of Berwick.

67. *Ane quheyne*, a small body. Bruce ingeniously solves the difficulty. He sends Murray and Douglas *both*, each with a small train.

97. *Staill*, a fixed position; *hald a staill*, occupy a fixed position. Cf. A.S. *steal*, Eng. *stall*. Perhaps the reading *staill* should have been adopted in xv. 341; see note to that line.

103. *Twa part*, i. e. two-thirds.

134. *Baner*, the standard, raised at the *staill*; see note to l. 97.

135. *Stuffit with sa quhoyn*, surrounded by so few.

222. *At*, that. "That he took Berwick to (be under) his care."

236. "Besides burgesses and crossbow-men." *Burgess* hardly seems right. MS. E has *burdowys*, an uncertain word, supposed by Jamieson to mean "men who fought with clubs," but on very slight grounds. I suspect that the correct reading is irrecoverably lost. *Oblesteris* is merely a bad spelling of *arblasters* or *arcubalisters*, i. e. crossbow-men. Cf. "And bowe-men and alblas'teris;" Kyng Alisaunder, ed. Weber, l. 2613. "The *arblast* is first spoken of in the Life of Louis le Gros, who ascended the throne in 1108; from whence it is probable that this weapon was imported by the first crusaders from Asia. In 1139 it was formally anathematized; in consequence of which, it sunk into disrepute, till revived by Richard Cœur de Lion, who himself fell a victim to his favourite weapon."—Weber.

250. "Engines for (making) cracks (or bangs)." An odd way of describing cannon. Elsewhere Barbour calls them "crakkis of wer" or war-cracks; see xix. 399, and the note.

269—273. The sense is, that he would besiege the town with all available forces, and intrench his men so strongly as to secure them from attacks made by any army that came to relieve the town.

278. The reading *suth* (not *such*) removes all difficulty, though the editors have been troubled here, just as in l. 9; see note to that line. The sense is—"And (he) thought all truth (i. e. he was quite right); for it would be a great folly to assail openly, in its intrenchments, so strong an army."

285. In the Camb. MS. there is merely an omission of the mark of contraction over the *a* in *lācister*, i. e. *lancaster* = *lancaster*. The change of the second *a* to *i* would of course follow, by confusion with *Leicester*. This corruption is far less strange than that of *Lancaster* into *Long castell*, which is the reading in E and H; and even C has *lon-castell* in l. 852. Moreover, *Longeastell* occurs in *The Wallace*, ix. 572.

Thomas, Earl of Lancaster, was inclined to sympathise with the Scotch, and ventured to shew his sympathy; see l. 853. In 1321 he openly formed an alliance with them; see l. 864, and the note to l. 866.

286. *Sanctit*, sainted; see note to l. 875.

291. Edward ordered his army to assemble at Newcastle, July 24, 1319; Ann. Scot. ii. 88.

319. *Allye* is a trisyllable—*ally-è*. It is the Fr. *allié*, which Cotgrave translates by "joyned, coupled, knit, near unto in fellowship and friendship." Here it probably means, that they were allied to him by various marriages.

335. "And on Our Lady Mary's eve;" i. e. Sept. 7. The construction is similar to that in "Rachelle, that was Josephes Modre the Patriarke;" Mandeville's Travels, p. 72; "This is launcelotts sheld de lake;" Mort Arth. (Roxb. Club), p. 21; see note to *Castell of Loue*, ed. Weymouth, p. 24.

419. "That their fall-bridge (moveable bridge) might reach thereto." Perhaps *neych* (E), which may be rendered by "approach, draw nigh," is a mere miswriting for *reych* = reach; which is plainly intended.

423, 424. "See them that were within her become of a worse counsel (i. e. in a worse plight) by far, than they were before."

455. *With*, provided that, as long as, whilst.

470. *All anerly*, lit. all only, i. e. only, solely. It is often written as one word—*allanelry*, just as we write *alone* for *all one*. Thus 'allanelry flowers' means 'flowers and nothing else;' see the discussion of this very simple phrase in N. and Q., 3rd S. ix. 195, 289, 381, 440. Compare—"This Prynce I prayse *alonely* and no mo;" Barclay's *Ship of Fools*, ed. Jamieson, ii. 205.

515. *Wifis*, wives. We are even told that the Scotch had concerted a plan for carrying off the wife of King Edward himself, from her residence near York; Ann. Scot. ii. 90.

542. "Husbandmen, and men of all mysteries," i. e. trades. A *mystery* (Fr. *métier*, O.Fr. *mestier*) is a trade; it has no connection with *mystery*, though it is often spelt the same way.

555. *Mytoune*, Mitton, near Borough Bridge, in the N. Riding of Yorkshire. The battle was fought Sept. 20, 1319; Ann. Scot. ii. 91.

597. *Gestis* seems to be Fr. *gestes*, i. e. motions, movements. *Of gret gestis* probably means no more than ‘of large dimensions,’ or ‘suitable for great performances.’

*Ane sow*, a sow. Lord Hailes says—“In many particulars it resembled the *testudo aristaria* of the antients. ‘*Sus, machina bellica, quæ et scropha, Gallis truie;*’ Du Cange . . . In Scotland a long haystack is termed a *sow*; probably from a traditional remembrance of the warlike engine which went under that name; hence we may have a distinct notion of the figure of this engine;” Ann. Scot. ii. 89. We must remember how low the town-walls were; see l. 380.

598. *Owih* (lit. out), i. e. outside. “That had a strong covering outside it.” See note to xiv. 352.

633. Note the various readings of the MSS., viz. *assaling*, C; *defending*, E. The former is right; we must remember that the reference is to the *English* host; see l. 635.

667. *To-fruschyt*, should break in pieces; it is the past tense subjunctive. It occurs as a pp. in x. 597.

672. *Scho*, she. Clearly a great war-engine; but it is odd that there is no previous reference to it. Probably a few lines have been lost here. Barbour, with his fondness for description, would hardly have left this important engine undescribed. On the other hand, the rimes link the sentences together, which make it look like an oversight of Barbour’s own.

680. “For doubtless, it is all ours.” They were encouraged by finding that the shot went right *over* them.

686. “Then their hearts began to shudder.” They were now discouraged by finding that the shot *fell short* of them; as that might easily be rectified.

689. *Iuntly*, closely. I have suggested, in the footnote, that perhaps we should read *Iustly*, i. e. justly, exactly; but *Iuntly* is right, and occurs again in the Wallace; see “*Junctly, Juntly, compactly*” in Jamieson. It is from the French *joint*, which Cotgrave explains as—“joined, coupled, yoaked, grappled, put, couched, or closed together.”

690. *Bend*, bend back or set (the engine), ready to go off. To ‘bend’ a pistol is to cock it; cf. “with hackbut *bent*” in Scott’s Cad-yow Castle, l. 137. The engineer shot (*swappit*) the stone nearly perpendicularly into the air, so that it fell upon the ‘sow’ with crushing weight.

696. *Mast summer*, greatest beam (C); *mast sower*, most sure, strongest (E). The former reading is far the best, and preserves the original word. A *summer* is the principal beam in a wooden structure; see Halliwell. The sense is—“so that with that blow he (the engineer) brake asunder that which was the largest beam, and strongest for resisting a stroke.”

732. *Eir befor*, ere this, in a former place; see l. 379.

852. *Loncastell*, Lancaster; see note to l. 285.

856. Innes has made the correction here, of *north* to *south*, with the remark that "the inclination was the King's, not the Earl's." That is, the *he* in l. 855 refers to the King, but, in l. 858, *He* is the Earl.

866. "Lasted, till Andrew Harcla took him afterwards to Pontefract." In 1321, the Earl of Lancaster openly sided with the Scotch. In 1322, he was defeated at Boroughbridge, Mar. 16; and the next day was taken prisoner, and tried by a military council. He was executed at Pontefract, Mar. 22. It is remarkable that Sir Andrew Harcla, then warden of the west marches, was detected in correspondence with the Scots, and likewise executed in less than a year afterwards. He had but recently been created Earl of Carlisle for his services against the Earl of Lancaster. See Annals of Eng., p. 185; and note to xvi. 511.

875. *Sanctit*, sainted, canonised; as in l. 286. Lancaster was so popular that he was regarded as a martyr, and canonised by the popular voice. His countrymen believed that miracles were performed at his tomb, as at that of his namesake of Canterbury, and a regular form of service was composed for his worship. This form has been preserved in the Royal MS. 12. C. xii., and is printed in Political Songs, ed. Wright, p. 268.

#### NOTES TO BOOK XVIII. (A.D. 1318; 1322.)

(Jamieson, XII. 687—896; Innes, pp. 418—438.)

1. The story returns to Edward Bruce, and goes back to the year 1318.

13. The defeat and death of Edward Bruce took place at Fagher, near Dundalk, Oct. 5, 1318; Ann. Scot. ii. 81.

23. Sir John Soulis and Sir John Stewart; see notes to xiv. 27, 28.

33. *My brothir*, Sir Walter Stewart, who had married king Robert's daughter.

65. *Abid his men*, wait for reinforcements.

116. *In haill battale*, in one complete squadron. *Howand*, hovering near, waiting aloof.

134. *Ourcome*, awoke to consciousness, out of his swoon.

168. *Haf gert saltit*, have caused to be salted. For the construction, cf. "han doon fraught," have caused to be freighted; Chaucer, Group B, 171; "Hath doon yow kept;" id., Group E, 1098; "Hath doon wrought;" Knights Tale, 1055. Also "he gert held" in viii. 14.

199. *Of thairis*, things belonging to them; i. e. they bribed them to let them go.

224. *Had it*, took it. There is something wrong here, since John Manpas was killed in the battle himself. "John Maupas slew Edward Bruce, and was found, after the battle, stretched dead on the body of his enemy;" Ann. Scot. ii. 81.

229. Barbour is wrong here, and links together events that were rather far apart. He skips over nearly four years; for Edward II. did not invade Scotland, as here described, till August, 1322.

254. He occupied Culross because it was just on the northern shore of the Forth, so that he kept the Firth of Forth between himself and the enemy.

276. Tranent, E. of Edinburgh, on the road to Haddington.

346. I. e. he left Culross, and crossed the Forth, which was called "the Scottish Sea."

355. Byland is near Ryedale, Yorkshire; see note to l. 498.

366. The spelling *peth* occurs also in *The Wallace*, v. 5.

409. Arthin; so in C. Tytler, following the reading *ouchtre*, guesses it to be Thomas de Uchtred, mentioned in the *Fœdera*, iii. 963.

418. *Owth*, beyond, above. See note to xiv. 352.

443. *Erischry*, not Irishmen, but speakers of Erse, i. e. Highlanders.

498. *Riveus*, i. e. Rievaulx, where is the celebrated Rievaulx abbey. It is in Ryedale in the North Riding of Yorkshire, as the very name shews; for *Rie* is plainly the river Rye, and *vaulx* is from the Lat. *uallis*.

507. *Iohne of Bretane*; John de Bretagne, earl of Richemont; Ann. Scot. ii. 104.

524. One of them was Henry de Sully, grand butler of France.—Tytler, i. 145.

537\*. In the Camb. MS. only. Perhaps a line has been lost, however, as the rimes are imperfect.

547. *To-stonay*, greatly astonish. The *to-* is the common intensive prefix.

555. *The wald*, the wold; probably the Wolds, lying between York and Beverley.

558. *The vale of beauvare*, lit. the vale of Beauvoir; it appears that Beverley is meant, and the vale is that of the river Hull. They must have advanced from York over the Wolds, reached Beverley, and then retired past Driffield.

#### NOTES TO BOOK XIX. (A.D. 1320—1327.)

(Jamieson, XIII. 359—XIV. 586; Innes, pp. 438—466.)

2. *Covatiss*, lit. covetousness; here used in the sense of ambition. Cf. *Wallace*, xi. 833—848.

11. "Sir William de Soulis seems to have been the grandson of Nicolas de Soulis, one of the competitors at the time of the disputed succession. Nicolas claimed in right of his grandmother, the daughter of Alexander II., and he would have excluded the other competitors, had her legitimacy been ascertained;" Ann. Scot. ii. 97. Barbour is rather more explicit than others about this conspiracy, but he dates it

wrongly ; he here places it in 1322, but it was in 1320. See Fordun, cap. cxxxv.

15. The reading *male-herbe* (E) is better. Fordun says—"Gilbertus de Malerb, Johannes de Logi, milites, et Ricardus Broune, armiger."

23. *Ane lady*; the Countess of Strathern; Ann. Scot. ii. 96.

46. This parliament was afterwards remembered as the Black Parliament, from the condemnation of the conspirators. It was held at Scone, Aug. 1320.

73. See note to Book ii. 211. The real name of the mediator was Henry de Sully; Ann. Scot. ii. 108. He was afterwards taken prisoner by the Scotch, in 1322; see xviii. 524 (note).

84. "Till men had done all their will with him;" i. e. had completed his execution.

128. *In that tyme*. It is not at all clear at *what* time; but, as it is said in l. 188 that the truce was to last for 13 years, the reference must be to the truce which was to have lasted from 1323 to 1336. But this was three years after the conspiracy of De Soulis, which Barbour has placed two years too late.

153. There is a story of a Sir Henry de Beaumont, who refused to give his advice about the truce in 1323. See Ann. Scot. ii. 109.

165, 166. These lines may have suggested the line in Marmion, vi. 34—"Groom fought like noble, squire like knight."

188. *Thretten, thirteen*. From Mar. 30, 1323, to June 12, 1336.

205. Walter Stewart, who had married Bruce's daughter, died April 9, 1326.

206. *Bathket*, Bathgate, in Linlithgowshire.

230. See note to l. 188. Barbour makes the time a little too short. It was about 4 years; for Edward III. had ratified the truce Mar. 8, 1327; and the Scots did not invade England till June.

248. June 15, 1327; Ann. Scot. ii. 118.

254. *Wardill*, Weardale, in the county of Durham.

255. Edward II., of Carnarvon, was deposed Jan. 7, 1327; he was murdered at Berkeley, Sept. 21.

257. Edward III. was crowned Feb. 1, 1327. He was not 15 years old, having been born at Windsor, Nov. 13, 1312.

261. Isabella, daughter of Philip IV. of France.

264. Philippa, daughter of William, count of Holland and Hainault. Edward married her in January, 1328; i. e. *after* the time of which Barbour is now speaking.

267. This was John, Lord of Beaumont, the Count of Hainault's brother. See Froissart, capp. viii., ix.

271. Edward fortified York, July 15, 1327; Ann. Scot. ii. 117.

278. He was not yet so much as fifteen. See note to l. 257.

279. "This seems to be the vale watered by the river Coc, Cok, or Cock, also Cockar, in Yorkshire. See Camden, iii. 239."—J. The river Cock rises on Whin Moor, to the N. E. of Leeds, and after passing

the battle-field of Towton, falls into the Wharfe near Tadcaster; see Murray's Guide to Yorkshire, p. 515.

316. "On the N. side of the Wear." For an account of this campaign, see Froissart, capp. xvii., xviii.

332. "The English souldiers of this army were cloathed in coats, and hoods, embroydered with flowers and branches, and did use to nourish their beards: wherefore the Scots in derision thereof, made this rime, and fastned it upon the Church doore of Saint Peter in the Canon-gate, [Long] beards hartlesse, Painted hoods wilesse, Gay coat[s] gracesse, Make England thriflesse ;" Hume of Godscroft, Hist. Douglas, p. 42. The same rime is given in the Book of St Alban's and in Fabyan's Chronicle.

374. "This was the ancestor of the ancient and noble families of Mar and Buchan. Crawfurd (Peerage, p. 297) says that he could trace them by writs no farther back than to the reign of Alexander II. They took their name from the lands of Erskine in Renfrewshire."—J.

396. *Tymbrys*, crests made of light wood. They were also sometimes made of leather or cloth. They were not quite a new thing at this time; but Barbour probably alludes to the fact that, about this time, they came into more general use. See Engl. Cyclop., art. *Crest*; Godwin's Eng. Archæologist's Handbook, p. 259.

399. *Crakkis of wer*, cracks of war, i. e. noisy war-machines, or *cannon*. See Barbour's reference to them in Book xvii. 250, where he says these were unknown in Scotland in 1319. It is generally supposed that cannon were first used at Crèy in 1346; see Chambers, Book of Days, ii. 273; Notes and Queries, 1st S. x. 306, 412, 534. Yet it is said there are allusions to the use of them in India as early as A.D. 1200, and at the siege of Cambray about A.D. 1339. Consult Col. Chesney's Observations on the Past and Present State of Fire-arms, 8vo. 1852. (Notes and Queries, 3rd S. vii. 242.) Froissart (cap. 73) mentions cannons in his account of the siege of Stirling in 1340. See also a note on this subject in Weber's Metrical Romances, iii. 306, which refers us to Bp. Watson's Chemical Essays.

459. *Degyse*, feigned. Cotgrave has—"Desguisé, disguised, dissembled, feigned, counterfeited." Hart ridiculously prints *tragedie*, which Jamieson follows, and Pinkerton explains as meaning 'a stage-trick !' In MS. E, a blank space is left for the word, as if the scribe could not read what he had before him.

468. *War*, would be; the subj. mood.

490. *A park*; Stanhope Park, in Weardale; cf. l. 509. See Hume of Godscroft, Hist. Douglas, p. 43; Chron. of St Albans, sign. t. ii. b.; Hardyng's Chronicle, p. 316. Hutchinson, in his Hist. Durham, iii. 287, 288, is pleased to say that Stanhope Park was occupied by the *English*. See Jamieson's note. Cf. Froissart, cap. xviii.

495. *Be nychtirtale*, by night-time, by night, in the night. The Camb. MS. wrongly has *nychtir-dail*. Jamieson seems to have fancied that "it might be meant for the name of some place." It is almost

incredible that he should have forgotten the occurrence of the word in Chaucer's Prologue, l. 97. However, his Dictionary has the right explanation. Cf. Icel. *náttartal*, a tale or number of nights.

497. "They replenished their fires and made them larger." Cf. l. 732.

530. *Ferrest*, i. e. furthest, most remote; so also *ferrer*, further, in l. 537. The date of this exploit is Aug. 4, 1327.

571. "They made them know that it was a great folly." Froissart says that Douglas even cut two or three cords of Edward's tent.

577. "That lord (first), and another (afterwards), were upon the move." An awkward line.

611. "That, had not experience (in arms) helped (me) the more."

667. *Thou mon heir out*, thou must get out by this exit.

689. "Except where they are encamped." It is a good story, but the parallel does not hold; for the fox *did* get out where the fisherman had stood watching.

742. The additional lines in Hart are probably genuine; and his reading of ll. 743, 744, is better than in the text. Cf. Book xii. 395.

746. The reading *sower* (E) is an error for *sowmer*, the spelling in Wallace, iv. 53, for a sumpter-horse.

776. *Marche*, March. On Hart's odd reading—*Stratherne*—Innes remarks:—"He did not know even by name the once great earldom of the Dunbars."

779. For *mycht*, E has *nycht*, making utter nonsense. The line means—"that they (Bruce's men) and they (Murray's men) might be together;" i. e. if the reinforcements could effect a junction with the main army.

790. *At a fay*, lit. at one faith; i. e. of one fealty, owing obedience to the same sovereign.

810. "And that they had escaped such peril without loss."

#### NOTES TO BOOK XX. (A.D. 1327—1332.)

(Jamieson, XIV. 587—1210; Innes, pp. 466—488.)

7. About August or September, 1327.

15, 16. "And many a fair goodfeat was full doughtily achieved."

23. "It was not only to his Scotch followers that Bruce gave Northumbrian lands. Nothing serves better to mark his success and great ascendancy than the number of native lords of Northumberland and the Bishoprick who now professed adherence to him, and whose subsequent forfeiture for that cause appears in the English records; see the Patent Rolls, &c."—Innes.

26. "And they paid for the fee of the seal." This is a remarkable proof of his success. See the last note.

29. Mortimer was executed Nov. 29, 1330. The peace with Scotland was concluded March 17, 1328.

30. Queen Isabella was imprisoned at the close of 1330. At this time her influence was supreme.

37. David, son of king Robert, was born Mar. 5, 1324, so that he was only just *four* years old at this time.

39. "Joan, born in the Tower, in 1321, was in 1329 [1328?] married to David, prince of Scotland (afterwards David II.). She accompanied him in his exile in France, and solicited permission to share his imprisonment in England; but she was at length obliged to separate from him through his own misconduct, and return to her brother's court, where she died, Sept. 7, 1362;" Annals of England, p. 181.

44—49. The omission of these lines in MS. C. and some editions can hardly have been intentional, but merely due to the one chief cause of such omissions, viz. repetition of final words. Here, for instance, the scribe passed from the line ending with *ser* (l. 44) to the next line with the same ending, viz. l. 49.

59. The marriage took place at Berwick, July 12, 1328; Ann. Scot. ii. 131.

73. *Male ess*, i. e. disease; Fr. *mal aise*.

75. *Ane fundyng*, a foundering, benumbment with cold. Jamieson explains *enfundeyng* (E.) as 'perhaps asthma,' by fancifully referring it to an Old Swedish word with which it has no connection; but *enfundeyng* is merely *en-foundering*, i. e. the same word as before with the prefix *en-*. In the Prompt. Parv., p. 175, Mr Way has the following note: "Dr Turner, in his Herbal, 1562, makes use of the term [*founder*] in allusion to ailments of the human body, where he says that *pyrethrum* 'is excellently good for any parte of the body that is *fundied* or *foundered*.' In his treatise of baths and mineral waters, he says that the baths of Baden, in High Germany, 'heate mucle membrs that are *foundre* or *fretished* wyth cold, and bringe them to theyr naturall heate agayne'; and that the Pepper bath [no doubt the baths of Pfäffers] has virtues to restore limbs 'fretished, *foundered*, and made numme wyth colde.'" Again, in Jamieson's Dict., we have—"To Fundy, Funny, v. n. to become stiff with cold. *Ramsay*." These extracts make it clear that the word here intended is equivalent to *foundering*, which is used of exhaustion or physical prostration of any kind; and, in particular, of exhaustion produced by extreme cold and exposure. The disease induced was, in King Robert's case, termed 'leprosy.'

79. Cardross. "In the parish of Cardross to the W. of the river Leven [in Dumbartonshire] a small eminence still retains the name of the Castle hill; on which, according to the tradition of the country, a castle once stood, which was the occasional residence of the king, and in which he breathed his last; but no vestige even of the ruins are (*sic*) now to be seen;" Kerr's Hist. Rob. Bruce, ii. 481 (quoted by Jamieson).

102. *To houss was gevin*, was conducted home.

121. Cf. Froissart's Chron. cap. xx.

128. Barbour is here several years out. The Act of Settlement to which he refers was passed at the parliament held in Dec. 1318, nearly ten years previously.

160. See the account of king Robert's death in Froissart, ch. xx. There are seven old leonine verses called 'King Robert's Testament'; which are quoted, together with an old Scottish translation, in Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 367.

185. Observe that Bruce says his heart is to be *taken* to the Holy Land, but he does not say it is to be *left* there. It appears that he had (at any rate in May, 1329) destined it to be finally deposited at Melrose. See the curious injunction to this effect, printed at the end of Scott's notes to *The Abbot*.

248. "All that concerned a good Christian man." He died at Cardross, June 7, 1329.

257. "And often drive their fists together," i. e. clench their hands.

293 [287 in P.]. "The expenses of Bruce's funerals are very minutely recorded in the accounts of the Chamberlain of Scotland. The marble tomb was brought from Paris. A large part of it must have been gilded, if we are to judge from the quantity of leaf gold (*foliorum aurorum*) entered among the articles purchased."—Innes. Jamieson (pp. 489—493) gives several extracts from these Accounts.

324. "He left the mainland of Spain on the North of him." That is he rounded Cape St Vincent.

326. *Sebell the graunt*, Seville the Grand, the great city of Seville, on the Guadalquivir.

338. *All soyne*, very soon; ingeniously altered by Hart to Alphous (*for Alphons*). There were two Alphonsoes at this time; Alphonso XI., king of Leon and Castile, who is here intended, and Alphonso IV., king of Arragon. See Ann. Scot. ii. 134.

351, 352. "And entrusted to him good soldiers who were well instructed in the mode of warfare in that land."

367. *Till-hewen*, a bad spelling for *to-hewen*, i. e. severely cut or wounded. *Fast* signifies 'very, greatly.'

378. *Love god*, praise God. Henry the Minstrel has copied this trait in his portrait of Wallace.

" His face he kepit, for it was euir bar,  
With his twa handis, the quhilk full worthi war."

Wallace, iii. 91.

" Woundis he had in mony diuerss place,  
Bot fayr and weill kepyt was his face."—Id., ix. 1933.

393. According to Lord Hailes, who refers to Mariana, the Moorish leader was Osmyn, who commanded in Granada. On *Belmaryne*, see Tyrwhitt's note to Chaucer, Prol. l. 57.

396. *Demanze* is clearly the right reading; cf. *demeaine* in Hart, and the reading *demainze* adopted by Jamieson. It means here to control, lit. to handle, treat, manage; such being the sense of the O.Fr. *demener*, sometimes spelt *demainer*. See Roquefort's and Burguy's

Glossaries. Similarly, we read that the English ‘*demayne*’ Scotland as if it had been “thair awne heretage;” Wallace, iii. 18.

421\*—432\*. It is somewhat strange that these lines, no doubt genuine, are omitted in both MSS. However, as Jamieson points out, the sense of the passage is preserved in Holland’s poem called The Howlat (Owl), written about 80 years after The Bruce. The passage in The Howlat (ed. Laing, 1823, st. 38, 39) is as follows:—

“ Than in defence of the faith he fure to the fecht,  
With knychtis of Christindome to kepe his command.  
And quhen the battallis so brym, brathly, and bright,  
War joynd thraly in thrang, many thousand;  
Amang the heithin men the hert hardely he flang,  
Said, ‘ wend on as thou was wont,  
Throw the batell in bront,  
Ay formast in the front,  
Thy fayis amang.  
And I sall fallowe the in faith, or feye to be fellit;  
As thi lege man leile, my lyking thow art; . . . .  
Thus frayis he the fals folk, trewly to tell it,  
Ay quhil he courerit [recovered] and come to the kingis hart.”

See l. 486 below, which almost presupposes some special mention of the heart in this place.

440. “They (the chased, the Saracens) rallied;” cf. l. 500.

444. Sir William Sinclair of Roslin; cf. Scott’s poem of Rosabelle.

470. Aug. 25, 1330; see Ann. Scot. ii. 136.

521. “In B.C. 278, the consuls, C. Fabricius and Q. Æmilius Papus, undertook the command of the war. At the beginning of the campaign, a traitor offered to poison Pyrrhus; but the Romans honestly denounced the scoundrel;” Schmitz’s History of Rome.

524. Innes retains the reading *Lufsit*, loved; but it obviously makes nonsense.

571. “Caused him to be boiled.” The reading *seth* is clearly the right one, not *scher* (shear, flay), as in MS. E.

577. *War levit*, had taken leave.

587. *His sone*. So in the MSS., though it is a mistake of Barbour’s. Some editions have turned *sone* into *brother*, by way of correction. Douglas was never married; his natural son was named William. He was succeeded by his second brother Hugh, the ninth lord Douglas, of whom little is known. The person intended is his third brother, whom Hume of Godscroft calls “Archibald Douglas, Lord of Galloway, Governor of Scotland, third brother to Sir James,” giving a long account of him; Hist. Douglas, pp. 53—62.

604. “And well defended the poor;” lit. and held the poor well under guard. *Pure*, poor (C.) is the right reading; not *power* (E.).

609. Murray died July 20, 1332. Barbour says he was poisoned, but does not say by whom. The statement that he was poisoned by a monk is only to be found in the printed editions; see footnote to l. 610. See the note on the ‘Death of Randolph’ in Tytler’s Hist. Scot. i. 369.

## ADDITIONAL NOTES.

BOOK I. 122. The immediate reference is perhaps to Dionysius Cato, Distich. iii. 14 :

“ Multorum disce exemplo, quae facta sequareis,  
Quæ fugias ; uita est nobis aliena magistra.”

Compare—

“ For Caton seith, thes gode techere,  
‘ Other monis lif is owre schewere.’ ”

King Alisaunder, ed. Weber, l. 17.

The remark became, however, a common proverb. Thus in the *Vie de Seint Auban*, ed. R. Atkinson, l. 734, we have—“ ki par autres est garniz, cist beu se chastie,” i.e. he who is warned by others reforms himself well. And, in a note on the line, the editor quotes from the *Vie de Seint Thomas*, 75. 30—

“ reis, ‘suef se chastie qui d'autrui se chastie,’  
cele parole as tu en plusurs lius oie.”

BOOK III. 73. I remark, in the note to this line, that Barbour must have seen the romance of Alexander in an earlier form than that exhibited in the Scottish *Buik of Alexander*. Very likely he alludes to the great French romance by Tors and Bernay, which seems to belong to the beginning of the 13th century. See “ *Li Romans d'Alixandre, par Lambert li Tors et Alexandre de Bernay*, herausgegeben von H. Michelant ; Stuttgart, 1846.” The story of the *Forray of Gadres* begins in the chapter headed “ *Assaut de Tyr*.” Alexander tells his men to go to Gadres, p. 94 ; duke Betis appears, p. 97 ; Gadifier des Lairis appears, p. 134 ; Alexander comes to the rescue, p. 152 ; Gadifier’s combat with Alexander is described, p. 176. In this version, Tholimar is called *Tholomes* ; Coneus, *Calmu* ; and Dauklyne, *Dans Clins* (which shews that the reading in the text should be *Dan-klyne*, where *Dan* is the prefix corresponding to Lat. *dominus*, O.Fr. *dans*, Span. *dom*). An excellent epitome of “ *Li Roumans d'Alixandre*” will be found in “ *Alexander, vom Pfaffen Lamprecht* ; herausgegeben von Dr H. Weismann ;” Frankfurt, 1850 ; vol. ii. p. 291. See note to Book x. 705, where there is another reference to the same romance, p. 217—

“ Quar de l’ befroi u est, de si haut com il fu,  
Est salis en la vile, en son col son escu,” &c.

BOOK III. 99. For the following note I am indebted to Dr Murray.

No writer, so far as I am aware, seems to have seen the point of this passage. Mr J. Hill Burton (*Hist. Scot.*, ed. 1867, ii. 366) goes somewhat out of his way to shew that he does not. After quoting the lines in a note, he adds—“ Shaw, in his *Gaelic Dictionary*, has *dorsair*

for doorkeeper. One would hardly have expected that the Archdeacon of Aberdeen would have condescended to notice such a Celtic etymology." But the Archdeacon knew what he was about. At p. 98 of Mr Burton's History, will be found a full account of the troubles caused in the minority of Alexander III. by Alan *Durward* the Justiciar or Steward of Scotland, who, having married an illegitimate daughter of Alexander II., was accused of an intrigue to secure the crown. Then, at p. 213, we have "Nicholas de Soulis, descended of the marriage of Marjory, a natural daughter of Alexander II., to Alan the Durward," as one of the fifteen competitors, and consequently a rival of the elder Bruce in his claim to the crown. Finally, as late as 1320, another "de Soulis, a descendant of that Nicholas de Soulis, the competitor for the crown, whose ancestor Allan the Durward had attempted, as we have seen, to get his wife legitimated as a daughter of William the Lion," formed a dangerous conspiracy against Bruce, now nearing the end of his life (ii. 431). The *Makynbossers* or 'Durward's sons' were the clansmen of Alan the Durward, who, like the Comyns of Badenoch, the Baliols, and others, were almost more dangerous to Bruce than the arms of England ; and it was Barbour's policy, correctly or incorrectly, to attribute this attack on Bruce to the party of one of his rivals, whose pretensions, almost in his own days, had imperilled his hero's sovereignty. It is worthy of notice that the head of another family, who held a similar office under the title of *Steward*, actually transferred the sovereignty to his house by marriage with Bruce's daughter. See Burton, Hist. Scot. iii. 44.—J. A. H. M.

BOOK III. 455. Skelton also mentions "Mantryble the brygo;" Poems against Garnesche, in Dyce's edition, i. 117, l. 22. Dyce, in his note (ii. 179), refers us to Ellis's Specimens of Met. Rom. ii. 389 ; Caxton's Lyf of Charles the Grete, 1485, sig. e viii and sig. h viii ; Barbour's Bruce, ed. Jamieson, ii. 832 [the present passage] ; and Don Quixote, in Shelton's translation, pt. i. bk. iv. cap. xxii. p. 546, ed. 1612. In the original Spanish, the allusion is to "Fierabrás, con la puente de Mantible" (*sic*) ; parte i. cap. xlix.

BOOK XIV. 33. Speaking of Larne Lough, Reeves says—"In subsequent records the name assumes the various forms of Ulderfleet haven, Wolderfrith, Wolverfleet, and Olderfleet, the last of which names is still borne by the ruined castle," &c. ; Eccl. Hist. of Down and Connor, p. 265.

BOOK XIV. 522. Add—In 1320, the prior of St John of Jerusalem in Ireland complained to the king of the great privations he had suffered by the Scots and rebels, but especially by the instrumentality of *Michael of Kylkenan*, &c. ; Reeves, Eccl. Hist. of Down and Connor, p. 271. We may observe that Hart reads *Michell*, which is, perhaps, to be substituted for the *nycoll* of the text. (For these two citations from Reeves I am indebted to Mr W. H. Patterson, of Belfast.)

NOTES TO "HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT  
HER DAUGHTER."

5. *Ill techis*, bad qualities; see *Tache* in Halliwell.

9. "And more easily blemished (lit. blacked) by a great deal." Mr Lumby explains *be mekill thing* to mean "in comparison with a greater thing;" Ratis Raving, p. 129. But it merely means "by a great deal." Cf. l. 239.

20. *Nocht mak our moy*, not pretend to be over dainty.

42. *Our fer*, over far, too far.

47. "And rather (incline) to take a lower place than a higher, and (then) be put down." Cf. l. 121.

53. *Nocht than*, not but that. "Not but that they should always be decent." Mr Lumby (p. 129) explains it by "nothing should ever be more honest than they," which would require the comparative form *honester*. See l. 67.

61. Cf. P. Plowman, C. vi. 134; B. v. 31.

86. *Ladry*, common people, the rabble. See Jamieson.

95. *Lest with*, hold out against.

101. *Had I wittyn*, had I known. Corresponding to the common Southern English *had I wisst*; which see in Halliwell.

114. *In the rew*, in the street.

115. *Ryn at bares*, run at bars, play at the game of 'prison bars' or 'prisoners' base.' See "Base, or Prison-base, or Prison-bars" in Nares's Glossary.

123. *Our cleyn veschyn*, washed over-clean (!).

126. "To mend the complexion that God made."

148. *Vaverand*, lit. wavering, going about idly. Mr Lumby prints *wanerand*, and explains it by 'wandering.' This gives the right sense, but it is not the same word. It is our 'wavering;' cf. Icel. *vafra*, to hover about, *vifra*, to swing, to vibrate to and fro. See note to The Bruce, vii. 302\*.

168. *Beis nocht*, will not be.

222. "What the eye sees not, the heart covets not." The more common form is—"What the eye seeth not the heart doth not rue;" Hazlitt's Eng. Proverbs, p. 453.

233. *War nocht fors*, were not force (used). The odd contraction *dud* (see footnote) occurs again in Ratis Raving, l. 3218—"Thow art wndone, and cuer thow *dud*," i. e. thou art undone, if ever thou *do it*.

Dr Murray tells me that *duid* for 'do it', rhyming with *guid* (good), is extremely common in Scotland to this day.

257. This sentence is a muddle, owing to the interpolation of ll. 259, 260, which must be regarded as parenthetical. *Quilk and thai had*, which if they had had; so in l. 284.

260. "An over-reckless, unprofitable (*or* inactive) person is wanton." But this line is really a repetition, out of place, of l. 276.

302. *On neyd*, of necessity; which is also the sense of the reading *One fors*.

---

### NOTES TO "A DIETARY."

Another copy of this poem occurs in The Shepherd's Kalender, ed. 1656, sig. L 6, back. It begins—"For health of body, cover from cold thy head."

5. *Ado*, to do. *Ado* is really short for *at do*, where *at* is the usual Northern prefix to the infinitive, as in Icelandic, &c. Compare—

"Lordys, he said, ye wait [*knon*] quhat is *ado*."

The Wallace, ed. Jamieson, viii. 1248.

See the examples of *at do* in Mätzner, Englische Grammatik, II. ii. 58.

45. The spelling *Wise* (meaning 'visit') is easily explained. It was not usual to retain the final *t* of this word in Lowland Scottish. See *Vesie* in Jamieson's Dictionary.

50. *Be war with*, be ware *against*, i. e. beware of.

53. Chaucer's line (see footnote) is—"That porter of the gate is of delices." Cf. "Nought was foryete the porter ydelnesse;" Knights Tale, I. 1082.

78. *Both*, bought; see the footnote.

80. "To all temperate men (lit. impartial men) this Dietary is a treasure;" Lat. version—"Sed cunctis ditissimum vtentibus est dictarium."

## INDEX I.

INDEX TO SUBJECTS DISCUSSED, AND WORDS  
EXPLAINED, IN THE NOTES.

THE numbers refer to the Book and the Line ; and are available both for the Text and Notes.

The *words* discussed are denoted by beginning with a small letter ; the *subjects*, by beginning with a capital.

a, 13. 132 ; 19. 790	Arran, 4. 464
abandonyt, 3. 48 (4. 655) ; aban- donit, 4. 391	Arthin, 18. 409
abid, 18. 65	Arthur, king, 1. 549
Acre, siege of, 1. 140	Artois, Robert of, 1. 339
Adrastus, 2. 528	Arundel, earl of, 16. 342
Airth, 13. 495	assenȝhe, 2. 378
Alexander, romance of, 1. 533 ; 3. 73 ; and see <i>additional note</i> , p. 612	Athol, earl of, 2. 235 ; 5. 151
Alexander III., 1. 37	Auchterhouse, 14. 29
all anerly, 17. 470	avay, 6. 210
allane, 6. 268	aw, stand, 3. 62
allout, 16. 589	awayward, 16. 584
allye, 17. 319	Awe, Loch, 10. 17, 27, 34
Alphonso XI., 20. 338	ayndless, 10. 608
Andrews, archbishop of, 1. 354	Baliol, 1. 37, 51
anger, 3. 517 ; angyr, 2. 518	baner, 17. 134
Angus, 3. 659	Bann, river, 14. 369, 371
Annandale, 4. 599	Barclay, David, 2. 237
apane, 9. 64	barell-feris, 15. 39
apert, 10. 73	Bathgate, 19. 206
Arblast, when used, 17. 236	battale, 18. 116 ; battalis, 11. 304
arblasters, 17. 236	bear in hand, 1. 62
Ardrossan, 14. 31	Beaumont, Henry de, 19. 153
Arestee (Aristè), 10. 718	beauvare, 18. 558.
Argyle, Allaster of, 10. 123	Beg, Lough, 14. 371
Arickstone, 2. 148	belewyt, 13. 544
armoris, 13. 183	Bell, Sir Ingraham, 6. 3
	Belmaryne, 20. 393

- bend, 17. 690  
 Benoit de Sainte-Maure, 1. 525  
 berfroiss (Old French *befroi*), 10.  
   708; see *additional note to 3. 73*  
   (p. 612)  
 Berwick, 11. 184; 20. 59; taken,  
   17. 22  
 beteche, 15. 538  
 Betoun (?), 13. 523  
 Bety's, duke, 3. 73  
 Beverley, 18. 555, 558  
 biggit, 14. 383  
 Birmingham, Sir John de, 14. 143  
 Bissets, 14. 47  
 Blackwater, 14. 337, 345  
 Blair, Sir Brice, 4. 37  
 Bohun, Sir Henry, 12. 29  
 Boroughbridge, 17. 555  
 Boroundoun, 2. 479  
 Bosbek (Roubaix ?), 4. 249  
 bot and, 5. 595  
 Bothwell, 8. 15, 95; castle, 13.  
   412  
 Bouvines, battle of, 4. 241, 249  
 Brandir, pass of, 10. 17; rocks of,  
   10. 86  
 Brechin, Sir David, 2. 211, 237  
 Bretagne, John de, 18. 507  
 Bride's, St, 5. 336  
 brim, 14. 339  
 Brodic castle, 4. 388  
 Broune, Richard, 19. 15  
 Bruce, Edward, 2. 236; 14. 1; 18,  
   1, 13, 224  
 Bruce, Nigel, 2. 513  
 Bruce, Robert (the elder), 1. 51,  
   477  
 Bruce, Robert, 1. 477; his death,  
   20. 168, 185; his funeral, 20. 293;  
   his heart, 20. 185, 421\*  
 Bruce (*error for Brice*), 4. 37  
 Buchan, 9. 297; 19. 374; countess  
   of, 4. 56  
 Burgh on Sands, 4. 203  
 Bunkle, 9. 691  
 Bunnock, Binnock, 10. 153  
 burdis, 5. 388  
 burdowys, 17. 236  
 burgess, 17. 236  
 Burgh, Richard de, 14. 159  
 but, 3. 517; 7. 447; 16. 617  
 Bute, 3. 577  
 Butel (Buttil), 9. 522  
 Butler, 14. 143, 159  
 Byland, 18. 355  
 byrd, 6. 316  
 call all, 10. 227 (231)  
 Callan, 16. 261  
 Callock, Edmond de, 15. 321  
 Campaneus, 2. 534  
 Campbell, Sir Neil, 2. 491  
 Campbell, Sir Colin, 16. 119  
 Cannæ, 3. 208  
 Cannon, 17. 250; 19. 399  
 cant and keyn, 8. 280  
 Cantire, 3. 385  
 Capanens. *See* Campaneus.  
 Cardross, 20. 79, 248  
 Carrick, 4. 599  
 Carrickfergus, 14. 33  
 caryage, 15. 19  
 Castleknock, 16. 261  
 Cato, Dionysius, quoted, 1. 122  
   (*additional note*, p. 612)  
 Charlemagne, 3. 441, 459  
 charre, 11. 123  
 ehemeyr, 16. 580  
 Christiana de Insulis, 5. 133  
 Clare, Richard, 14. 159  
 clene and law, 10. 471  
 clewch, 16. 386  
 Clifford, 2. 112; 7. 622; 11. 521  
 Cock, river, 19. 279  
 colè, 7. 623  
 Comyn, John, 2. 235; 3. 1; 6. 503

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Comyn, John, of Buchan, 9. 110   | Donavardyne, 3. 666  |
| Comyn, Sir Robert, 2. 37   | Douglas, Sir Archibald, 20. 587  |
| Coneus, 3. 73  | Douglas-dale, 5. 271   |
| connand, 11. 1   | Douglas, James, 1. 364; 2. 211;<br>cuts the cords of Edward's tent, 19.<br>571 |
| Connaught, 16. 295   | Douglas, William, 1. 283; 5. 276   |
| Connor, 14. 394  | 'Douglas' larder,' 5. 403  |
| couser, 9. 190   | Douglas, meaning of, 15. 538   |
| covatiss, 19. 2  | Down, Thomas of, 14. 376   |
| covyne, 13. 219  | dragoun, 2. 205  |
| Cowal, 3. 153  | Drogheda, 16. 261  |
| Cowport (Berwick), 17. 35  | duk-peris, 3. 440  |
| Culross, 18. 254, 346  | Dunaverty. <i>See</i> Donavardyne.   |
| Cumnock, 6. 463  | Dunbar, 13. 611  |
| Cunningham, 8. 13  | Dundalk, 14. 135   |
| crakkis, 19. 399   | Dundee, 9. 328   |
| Crawfurd, Sir Reginald, 4. 36  | Dunse, 17. 64  |
| Cree, river, 9. 517  | Dunstaffnage, 10. 113  |
| Crests come into use, 19. 396  | Edward I., 1. 283; 2. 151, 243*; 4.<br>599; 8. 361; 9. 1; death of, 4. 190     |
| Cruachan, Ben, 10. 27  | Edward II., 8. 364; 17. 291; 19.<br>255  |
| cyre, 12. 22   | Edward III., 19. 257, 264  |
| Dalry, 3. 68, 109  | Egremor, 3. 441  |
| dangeir, 10. 196   | ek, 8. 290   |
| Dares, 1. 525  | Endwillane, 14. 113  |
| Date of the work, 13. 704  | enseinzie, 2. 426; 3. 27 ( <i>note to</i> 2.<br>378)                           |
| David I., 1. 51  | entremes, 16. 457  |
| David II., 13. 697; born, 20. 37;<br>married, 20. 39                         | erd, 6. 128  |
| Dauklyne, 3. 73; <i>perhaps read</i><br><i>Danklyne, addit. note, p. 612</i> | ere, 16. 258   |
| daw, of, 7. 132  | erischry, 14. 9; 18. 443   |
| Dayncourt, 11. 573   | Erskine, 19. 374   |
| degyse, 19. 459  | eschelis, 8. 218   |
| demanze, 20. 396; demanyt thaim,<br>15. 376                                  | Etive, Loch, 10. 17, 27, 34  |
| departit, 7. 626   | Ettrick, 8. 425; 9. 673  |
| Devillling (Dublin), 15. 107   | eym, 10. 305; cyme, 13. 697  |
| Dickson, Thomas, 5. 276  | Fagher, 18. 13   |
| Dictys, 1. 525   | faldyn, 11. 547; falding, 13. 632  |
| discrivit, 13. 185   | far, 16. 46  |
| do furth, 1. 256   |  |
| Dochart, Glen, 3. 109  |  |

- fast, 20. 367  
 fay, 19. 790  
 fayndit, fandit, 12. 148  
 feble, 3. 384  
 feill, 11. 655 ; fele, 16. 589  
 feir, 15. 514  
 feld, hard, 12. 406\*  
 fele, 16. 589 ; feill, 11. 655  
 fell, 6. 246  
 Fergus, 14. 31  
 Ferrand, earl of Flanders, 4. 241  
 ferrand (horse's name), 2. 118  
 ferrest, 19. 530  
 Ferumbras, 3. 437, 459  
 fest and far, 16. 46  
 Fierabras, 3. 437, 459  
 fiff sum, 6. 149 ; (*note to 3. 420*)  
 Fingal, 3. 68  
 Fitzthomas, 14. 146  
 Fitzwarren, 15. 75  
 Flagot, 3. 455  
 fleand, 15. 337\*  
 fluss, 13. 20  
 for, 2. 503  
 fordid, 5. 412  
 forfure, 10. 529  
 forrouth, 16. 504  
 Forster, 9. 312  
 forsuk, 14. 315  
 Forth, Firth of, 18. 254  
 Fox and Fisherman, 19. 689  
 foul, 7. 188  
 founder, 20. 75  
 frely, 3. 578  
 frest, 7. 447  
 Fraser, 2. 239 ; 8. 395, 397  
 fundying, 20. 75  
 fur, 2. 503 ; fure, 16. 288  
 furth, 1. 256  
 fute, 3. 578  
 fut-hate, 3. 418 ; fut-hat, 13. 454  
 ga, 9. 190  
 Gaderis, forray of, 3. 73  
 Galston, 8. 123  
 gang, 8. 450  
 Gaudifer, 3. 73  
 Gaul Mac Morna, 3. 68  
 Genitive of names, construction of,  
     17. 335  
 gert helde, 8. 14  
 gevin to houss, 20. 102  
 gill, 7. 622  
 Gillemuin de Fiennes, 10. 456  
 Glasgow, bishop of, 2. 178 ; 4. 13  
 Glentrool, 7. 494  
 Gloucester, earl of, 11. 163 ; 13. 511  
 Gordon, 9. 695  
 Granada, 20. 393  
 grevit, grue, 15. 541  
 grewis, 5. 13  
 grue, grevit, 15. 541  
 gyrth, 2. 44 ; 4. 47  
 haill, 18. 116 ; baill and feir, 15.  
     514  
 Hainault, count of, 19. 264, 267  
 half, 16. 399  
 hals, 5. 575  
 Hannibal, 3. 208, 235  
 Harcla (*or Hardelay*), Sir Andrew,  
     16. 508, 511 ; 17. 866  
 Harpar, Gib, 15. 181  
 has, 13. 642  
 Hastings, John, 1. 51 ; 4. 384  
 hawch, 16. 336  
 hawes, 17. 13  
 hawyng, 7. 135  
 Haye, Hugh de la, 2. 237  
 he, 7. 192  
 hede-soyme, 10. 180  
 held, 16. 635  
 held on, 7. 27  
 Henry IV., 3. 209

- her, 12. 505  
 Hereford, earl of, 13. 412  
 hevede, 5. 11  
 Holland's poem of the Houlate, 20.  
     421\*  
 Hoods worn by the English, 19. 332  
 howand, 18. 116  
 hy, 15. 162
- James (*disyllabic*), 1. 313  
 Jedworth, Jedwood, 8. 427  
 Jeromy (Jeremiah), 4. 682  
 Jerusalem, 4. 209  
 Inverury, 9. 34  
 Joan de la Tour, 20. 39  
 Johnston, St, 2. 247  
 Isabella, queen, 19. 261 ; 20. 30  
 Islay, 3. 659  
 Judas Iscariot, 4. 18  
 iuntly, 17. 689  
 iuperdy, 14. 421
- Kildrummy, 2. 513 ; 3. 337 ; 4.  
     181 ; 9. 289  
 Kilkenane, 14. 522  
 Kilross, 14. 252  
 Kilsaggart, 14. 133  
 Kilwinning, 8. 95  
 knaiff child, 13. 693  
 Knights made, 9. 138 ; 12. 413  
 Kyle, 8. 9  
 Kyllvanane, 14. 522 ; *and addit.*  
     note, p. 613
- Iadis, 8. 450  
 Lamberton, William of, 1. 354  
 Lanark, 8. 447  
 Lancaster, earl of, 17. 285, 866, 875  
 lap on, 5. 214  
 Larne, Lough, 14. 33 ; *and see*  
     p. 613  
 Laryss, 3. 73  
 late, 7. 127
- lechynge, 13. 46  
 Leinster, 16. 297  
 leit lichtly, 12. 250  
 Leixlip, 16. 261  
 Lennox, 2. 235  
 lenteryne, 10. 815  
 lest, 7. 65  
 let, 1. 254  
 letter, letteris, 17. 48  
 levit war, 20. 577  
 lewe, 16. 275  
 lif, on, 7. 65  
 Limerick, 16. 265, 297  
 Lincelly, Lintelly, 16. 336, 342  
 Linlithgow castle, 10. 136, 137  
 Linton lea, 16. 336  
 Lochmaben, 2. 18  
 Loch Ryan, 16. 36  
 Logans, 14. 47  
 Logie, John de, 19. 15  
 Longcastell (Lancaster), 17. 285,  
     852  
 Longueville, Sir Thomas de, 9. 391  
 Lorn, brooch of, 3. 93, 146  
 Lorn, John of, 6. 481, 503 ; 10. 11  
 Lorn, lord of, 3. 1  
 louch, 14. 354  
 loud and still, 3. 745  
 Loudon (Lochdon), 4. 16  
 Loudoun, 8. 123  
 love god, 20. 378 ; lovyng, 7. 90 ;  
     lovyt, 1. 406  
 lownyt, 15. 276  
 Lucius Iberius, 1. 549, 560  
 lufre, 14. 233  
 Lumbard, 10. 324  
 Lyne, water of, 9. 673
- ma weill, 16. 592  
 Maccabees, 1. 465  
 Macandrosser, 3. 99 ; *and addit.*  
     note, p. 612

- Macgullane, 14. 105  
 Mac Morna, Goll, 3. 68  
 Macnaughtan, 3. 153  
 Makfulchiane, 14. 105  
 Making knights, 9. 138; 12. 413  
 Makmartane, 14. 106  
 male ess, 20. 73  
 Malerb, Gilbert de, 19. 15  
 Man, isle of, 4. 14  
 Mandevill, 14. 47  
 mantill, 5. 317  
 Mantrybill, brig of, 3. 455; and see *additional note*, p. 613  
 Mar, 19. 374  
 March, 19. 776  
 Marcus, 4. 14  
 Margaret, maid of Norway, 1. 37  
 Margaret, St, 10. 737  
 Marmion, a line in, 19. 165  
 Marthokys sone, 3. 67  
 Martinmas, 9. 127  
 mast, 17. 696  
 mastry, 13. 412  
 Maupas, John, 18. 224  
 maynteym, 2. 189  
 Meath, 16. 296  
 Meldrum, 9. 202  
 melle, 7. 622  
 Melrose, 20. 185  
 merdale, 9. 249  
 Merse, 15. 331  
 Methven, 2. 303  
 Minorite convent, 2. 33  
 misteris, 17. 542  
 Mitton, 17. 555  
 Moffat, 9. 338  
 Moiry Pass, 14. 113, 133  
 mole, 3. 696  
 mon, 16. 275; 19. 667  
 month, 8. 393  
 Montpelier, 15. 83  
 Mordred, 1. 549  
 Morocco, strait of, 3. 688  
 Mortimer executed, 20. 29  
 Mounth, Month (the Grampians), 2. 494  
 Mowbray, Sir Philip, 2. 211; 10. 821; 11. 1  
 Mowbray, Sir Roger, 2. 211  
 Mull of Cantire, 3. 696  
 Munster, 16. 297  
 Murray, earl of, dies, 20. 609. See Randolph.  
 mydwart, 3. 682  
 na, 2. 517; na war, 7. 218  
 Naas, 16. 261  
 nakyt, 7. 330; nakit, 13. 98  
 naylis, 3. 459  
 Neagh, Lough, 14. 337, 339, 371, 376  
 Neil Bruce, 2. 513  
 neir, 16. 258  
 Nele (Neil), 2. 491  
 Newcastle, 17. 291  
 nigramansy, 4. 747  
 Ninian's, St, 11. 442  
 Northumbrian lands given to the Scotch, 20. 23  
 not, 13. 173  
 nychtirtale, 19. 495  
 oblesteris, 17. 236  
 O Dempsey, 14. 329, 339, 369  
 Oliphard, 9. 338  
 Oneyl, Donevald, 14. 102  
 or, 16. 288; or at, 10. 529  
 Oriel College, 13. 611  
 Osmyn the Moor, 20. 393  
 ourcome, 18. 114  
 our-tuk, 12. 439  
 outrageous, 11. 32  
 owth, 14. 352; 17. 598; 18. 418  
 Palmsunday, 5. 307; 15. 100  
 parisius, 4. 251

- |  |                                      |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| Parliament, Black, 19. 46                                    | raw, 8. 450                          |
| part, twa, 17. 103   | rebell, 10. 129                      |
| Participle, past (doubled), 18. 168                          | rebouris, at, 13. 486                |
| Patrick of March, 13. 611                                    | redis swyr, 17. 13                   |
| Peace made, 20. 29   | Reid, river, 17. 13                  |
| Pembroke, earl of, 2. 200                                    | relyng, 12. 110                      |
| Pembroke college, 2. 200                                     | renk, 2. 365                         |
| pennystane, 16. 383  | Rennell's Current, 3. 687            |
| Perth taken, 9. 450  | renownee, 8. 290                     |
| peth, 18. 366  | revar, 14. 337                       |
| Philippa, queen, 19. 264                                     | rewis, 14. 221                       |
| phitones ( <i>or pithones</i> ), 4. 753                      | reyk, 17. 419                        |
| plain, 11. 107   | riall, 12. 557                       |
| plait and mailȝe, 11. 107                                    | Richemont, Thomas de, 16. 342        |
| Platan, 9. 312   | Rievaulx, 18. 498                    |
| price, 7. 90   | Robert II., 13. 695, 704             |
| Prophecies, 4. 209, 241                                      | Robert, bishop, 13. 683              |
| Proverbs cited, 3. 540 ; 4. 119 ; 5.<br>262 ; 11. 24         | romany, 1. 446                       |
| punsoune, 1. 545   | Roubaix, 4. 249                      |
| punȝeis, 12. 373   | roucht, 12. 557                      |
| purvay, 5. 74  | Round Table, 13. 379                 |
| Pyrrhus, story of, 20. 521                                   | routit, 7. 192                       |
| quhethir, the, 12. 191, 564                                  | rownand, 12. 360                     |
| quheyne, 17. 67 ; quhoyn, 17. 135                            | ryde, 12. 557 ; ryde aganis, 14. 420 |
| quhile, 8. 18  | Ryedale, 18. 355, 498                |
| quhilstyng, 6. 87  | rymmyl, 12. 557                      |
| quhoyn, 17. 135 ; quheyne, 17. 67                            |                                      |
| quyntis, 13. 183   | sagat, 7. 368                        |
| qwyrbolle, 12. 22  | St Andrews, bishop of, 2. 178        |
| Race of Brittany, 3. 687                                     | St John, John de, 9. 509             |
| rad till byd, 12. 431  | salss, 3. 540                        |
| raid, 8. 296   | saltit, haf gert, 18. 168            |
| raiss, 3. 687  | sanctit, 17. 286                     |
| raiss dragoun, 2. 205  | sarray, 8. 296                       |
| Randolph, Sir Thomas, 2. 237 ; 6.<br>510. <i>See</i> Murray. | Savages, 14. 47                      |
| Ramsay, 14. 29   | sawin, 4. 685                        |
| Rauchryne (Rathlin), 3. 680                                  | scaill, 15. 337*, 341                |
| raucht, 7. 623   | schiltrum, 12. 429                   |
|  | scho, 17. 672                        |
|  | schonand, 5. 201                     |
|  | schot, 7. 467 ; 15. 59               |

- Scone, 2. 150  
 Scottish Sea, 9. 309; 18. 346  
 se, 3. 172  
 segis, 4. 697  
 Selkirk, 8. 425; 9. 673  
 seth, 20. 571  
 Seton, Christopher, 2. 243\*; 4. 29; 5. 156  
 Settlement, Act of, 20. 128  
 Seville, 20. 326  
 Ships drawn on land, 15. 272  
 Silvester II., 4. 209  
 Sinclair, bishop William, 16. 575; Sir William, 20. 444  
 Sir James, the good, 15. 538  
 Slane, 16. 63  
 slep, 7. 177  
 Slevach, 9. 107  
 slew fire, 13. 36  
 Snowdoun, 4. 181  
 Sodor and Man, 4. 14  
 soft, 4. 697  
 Somerville, 2. 239  
 Soulis, Sir John, 14. 27; 16. 508, 511; 18. 23  
 Soulis, William de, 19. 11  
 sow, 17. 597  
 sowmer, 19. 746  
 soyme, soam, 10. 180  
 sper, 3. 459  
 sprenten, 12. 49  
 Spurs cut off, 16. 597  
 staill, 15. 341; 17. 97  
 stand aw, 3. 62  
 stane (stare?), 15. 49  
 Stanhope Park, 19. 490  
 Stewart, Sir John, 14. 28; 18. 23  
 Stewart, Sir Walter, 18. 33; 19. 205  
 Stirling, 1. 409; castle, 2. 211  
 stok, 15. 49  
 stole, 2. 151  
 stratest, 6. 463
- Strathbogie, 9. 188, 695  
 Strathern, countess of, 19. 23  
 Strathern, earl of, 9. 340  
 strecour, 6. 487  
 strinth, 9. 59  
 stuffit, 17. 135  
 stycht, 3. 658  
 succudry, 16. 327  
 suet, tynt the, 13. 32  
 Sully, Henry de, 18. 524; 19. 73  
 sum, 6. 149  
 summer, 17. 696  
 surcharge, 16. 458  
 suth, 17. 278  
 swappit, 17. 690  
 swyr, 17. 13  
 syb, 13. 511
- Tain, 4. 47  
 takis on hand, 16. 593  
 tane, 6. 128; 14. 381  
 Tarbard, 15. 272  
 taucht, 2. 130  
 thai, 1. 455, 458  
 thar, 8. 257; 12. 300  
 Thebes, 2. 528  
 Tholimar, 3. 73  
 thresum, 3. 420  
 Thrillwall, 6. 392  
 thurt, 6. 121  
 till, 6. 656  
 till-hewen, 20. 367; till-hewyt, 2. 381  
 to-frushyt, 17. 667  
 to-ga, 8. 351  
 top our taill, 7. 455  
 Torwood, 11. 210  
 to-stonay, 18. 547  
 tothir, 4. 518; 9. 412  
 toune, com of, 7. 632  
 to-vauerand, 7. 302\*  
 toym, 5. 642

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| Traitors, stories of, 5. 521                  | Vipont, 13. 472   |
| Tranent, 18. 276                              | voidry, 10. 516   |
| tretis, 10. 125                               | wonnyn hay, 10. 193   |
| tretit, 10. 481                               | vre, 15. 376  |
| treyteris, 10. 125                            | vyre, 5. 595.   |
| treyn, 10. 361                                |   |
| tropellis, 13. 275                            | wald, 18. 555   |
| Truce made, 19. 128, 153, 230                 | Wallace, 1. 283   |
| tuk, 9. 412                                   | wane, will of, 2. 471   |
| Turnberry, 4. 556; 5. 1, 76                   | wan plass, 12. 563  |
| Twenge, 13. 523                               | war, 19. 468  |
| twist, 7. 188                                 | War-engines, 17. 597, 672   |
| Tybetot, 13. 468                              | warn, 4. 392  |
| tymbrys, 19. 396                              | Wavering Firth, 14. 33  |
| Tyndrum, 3. 68, 109                           | Weardale, 19. 254, 316, 490   |
| tynt the suet, 13. 32                         | Webtoun, Sir John, 8. 453   |
| Tyre, 3. 73; siege of, 10. 705                | went, 4. 257  |
| tyt, 16. 132; tyttar, 2. 517                  | wer (were), 16. 307   |
| Uchtred, 18. 409                              | wer (to defend), 16. 594  |
| Ulster, 14. 373; 16. 317                      | werdis, 2. 329  |
| Umphraville, Sir Ingraham de, 2.<br>211; 6. 3 | while, 7. 72  |
| Uriel, 16. 296                                | will of red, 3. 494; ( <i>and note to 2.</i><br><i>471</i> ); — of wane, 2. 471 |
| valk, 7. 179                                  | William of Lamberton, 1. 354  |
| valknyt, ( <i>note to 7. 179</i> )            | Winchburgh, 13. 587   |
| varrar, 5. 546                                | Wishart, Robert, 4. 13  |
| vauerand, vaueryt ( <i>note to 7. 302*</i> )  | with, 17. 455   |
| Vaux, 7. 622                                  | Woking's Firth, 14. 33; <i>and addit.</i><br><i>note</i> , p. 613               |
| vayn, vill of, 7. 2                           | wonnyn, 10. 799   |
| vayndist, 13. 217                             |   |
| vend, 4. 609                                  | York fortified, 19. 271   |
| Verdon, 14. 143                               | Ysay (Isaiah), 4. 683   |
| vill of vayn, 7. 2                            | Yule-eve, 9. 204  |

## INDEX II.

### BOOKS REFERRED TO IN THE NOTES.

(THIS is merely a list of the *more important* books and authors referred to in the Notes ; with references to the Notes in which they are cited.)

ALEXANDER.—The Buik of the most noble and vailȝeand conqueror Alexander, callit the Forray of Gadderis ; Bannatyne Club, 1834.  
Referred to ; 3. 62, 73 ; see additional note, p. 612.

Annals of England ; Library Edition ; J. Parker, 1876. Cited—1. 37, 477 ; 2. 178, 200, 243\* ; 4. 73 ; 5. 1 ; 9. 509 ; 11. 163 ; 20. 39.

Annals of Scotland. *See* Hailes.

Brut.—The Chronicle called ‘The Brut’ ; 1. 560.

Burton ; Hist. of Scotland, 1. 37. See additional note on p. 612.

Camden’s Britannia ; 6. 392.

Camden’s Remaines concerning Britaine, ed. 1657 ; 2. 235.

Cato, Dionysius ; 1. 343 ; see additional note, p. 612.

Chaucer ; 1. 122, 343, 356, 533, 545 ; 2. 365, 381 ; 3. 418, 688, 753 ; 5. 13 ; 12. 22 ; 13. 183 ; 14. 420 ; 18. 168 ; 19. 495 ; 20. 393.

Complaint of Scotland, ed. J. A. H. Murray (E. E. T. S.) ; 4. 241.

Dante ; 2. 534.

Dunlop’s History of Fiction ; 1. 525.

Erceldoune, Thomas of ; ed. J. A. H. Murray ; 2. 86.

Fordun’s Chronicle, ed. Skene ; 1. 37, 354, 409, 465, 481 ; 2. 1, 16, 33, 178, 211, 237, 303, 494 ; 3. 68, 687 ; 5. 133 ; 6. 392 ; 9. 107, 110, 204, 450, 517 ; 10. 8, 123, 125, 136, 352 ; 11. 84 ; 19. 11, 15.

Froissart ; tr. by Johnes ; 1. 339 ; 19. 267, 316, 399, 490 ; 20. 121, 160.

Guido de Colonna ; 1. 393, 525.

Hailes.—The Annals of Scotland, by Sir David Dalrymple (Lord Hailes), 2 vols. 4to. 1779 ; 1. 37, 283, 354 ; 2. 37, 112, 199, 235, 237, 243\* ; 4. 13, 36, 37, 47, 56 ; 5. 1, 104, 151 ; 8. 133 ; 9. 204, 509 ; 10. 8, 123, 456 ; 11. 163, 184 ; 13. 305, 321, 463, 472, 484, 735 ; 14. 143, 145, 159, 221 ; &c.

Havelok the Dane ; ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.) ; 3. 62 ; 7. 467 ; 11. 517.

Hume of Godscroft’s History of the Houses of Douglas and Angus ; Edinburgh, 1644 ; 1. 37, 283 ; 2. 148 ; 5. 271, 276, 403 ; 8. 28, 447, 453 ; 15. 321, 538 ; 19. 332 ; 20. 287.

Innes.—*The Brus*, from a collation of the Cambridge and Edinburgh MSS.; Spalding Club, 1856; 8. 296; 9. 107, 522; 11. 107, 290; 12. 133, 143, 191, 354, 505; 13. 447\*; 14. 33, 47, 102, 105, 106, 113, 133, 135, 143, 159, 329, 337, 352, 373; 14. 394, 522; 15. 162; 16. 296, 342; 17. 856; 19. 776; 20. 23.

Jamieson (denoted by 'J.')—*The Bruce*, by Master John Barbour; published from a MS. dated 1489; by John Jamieson, D.D., Edinburgh, 1820 (reprinted, 1869); 2. 235, 237, 239, 365, 491; 3. 68, 153, 659; 4. 14, 16, 29, 181, 388, 464; 5. 104, 255; 6. 481; 7. 238; 8. 28, 226, 257; 9. 107, 312, 509, 691, 695; 10. 129; 11. 573; 13. 321; 14. 29, 31, 105, 106, 133, 143, 371; 15. 75; 16. 119, 339; 17. 13; 19. 279, 374, 495; 20. 79, 293.

Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary; 2. 494; 3. 578; 5. 201; 9. 64; 15. 39; 20. 75.

Langtoft; *see* Robert of Brunne.

Layamon's Brut, ed. Madden; 1. 560.

Lucan's Pharsalia, quoted by Barbour; 3. 281.

Lydgate; 4. 753; (*Storie of Thebes*), 2. 528; 6. 179.

Morley's English Writers; 1. 525, 560; 3. 68.

*Morte Arthur*, by Malory; 1. 549. Allit. poem, ed. Brock (E. E. T. S.), 1. 549.

Nares's Glossary; 1. 545.

Piers the Plowman, ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.); 1. 194; 4. 747.

Pinkerton (denoted by 'P.')—*The Bruce*; by John Barbour. The first genuine edition, published from a MS. dated 1489; by J. Pinkerton; London, 1790; 1. 283, 339, 458; 2. 37, 130, 237, 243\*, 365; 3. 146; 4. 13, 14, 47, 190; 5. 317; 8. 133, 257, 447; 9. 34, 323; 10. 267, 705; 11. 334; 12. 429; 13. 379, 683; 15. 272, 536; 16. 303, 331.

Plutarch, translated by North; 3. 235, 242.

Political Songs, ed. T. Wright (Camden Society); 1. 37, 194; 2. 239; 17. 875.

Promptorium Parvulorum, ed. A. Way (Camden Society); 13. 183; 20. 75.

Ratis Raving, ed. J. R. Lumby (E. E. T. S.), 6. 336; and see p. 523.

Robert of Brunne's translation of Peter Langtoft's Chronicle, ed. Hearne, Oxford, 1725; 1. 37, 409, 465; 5. 104.

Romans d'Alixandre, by Lambert li Tors and Alexandre Bernay, ed. II. Michelant; Stuttgart, 1846; 10. 705, 718; and addit. Note to 3. 73, on p. 612.

Scott, Sir Walter. *The Abbot*; 15. 538; 20. 185. *Castle Dangerous*; 5. 255, 271, 307, 403; 8. 447, 453. *Highland Widow*; 10. 17, 27, 34. *Lady of the Lake*; 4. 181; 13. 379. *Lord of the Isles*; 1. 37; 2. 33, 235—513; 3. 1, 93, 385, 583; 4. 388, 617; 5. 1, 76, 151; 6. 481; 7. 105; 8. 425, 447; 9. 509, 686; 10. 11—521; 12. 505; 13. 229,

- 305 ; 14. 102. *Marmion* ; 19. 165. *Tales of a Grandfather* ; 1. 37 ; 3. 93 ; 4. 56 ; 5. 271 ; 8. 447 ; 10. 11, 137, 352 ; 11. 547 ; 13. 695.  
Shakespeare (*Hamlet*), 1. 545 ; (*Henry IV.*), 4. 209 ; (*Macbeth*), 7. 72 ; (*Richard II.*), 7. 72.  
Skelton, ed. Dyce ; 2. 247 ; 3. 48 ; 4. 391, 753 ; and see p. 613.  
*Sowdone of Babylon and Ferumbras his sone, Romance of.* Roxburgh Club, 1854 ; 3. 437, 440, 455.  
*Specimens of English Literature, from 1298 to 1393* ; ed. Morris and Skeat ; 2. 471 ; 7. 1—400.  
*Specimens of English Literature, from 1394 to 1579* ; ed. Skeat ; 6. 179.  
Statius, his *Thebais* ; 2. 528 ; 6. 179.  
Stratmann's Old English Dictionary (2nd edition) ; 2. 365 ; 3. 578, 658.  
*Troy-book. The alliterative Geste Historial of the Destruction of Troy*, ed. Panton and Donaldson (E. E. T. S.) ; 1. 393, 525 ; 12. 429.  
*Tytler's History of Scotland*, vol. i. ; 2. 479 ; 8. 393 ; 9. 522 ; 12. 429 ; 18. 409, 524 ; 20. 160.  
Vergil, quoted by Barbour ; 3. 561, 706 ; 5. 87.  
Wallace. *The Wallace*, ed. Jamieson ; Edinburgh, 1820 ; 1. 481 ; 2. 17, 237, 471 ; 3. 62 ; 4. 37, 685 ; 7. 302\* ; 8. 427 ; 9. 64, 391 ; 13. 36, 495 ; 14. 29 ; 15. 538 ; 16. 575 ; 17. 285 ; 18. 366 ; 19. 2, 746 ; 20. 378, 396.  
*Warton's History of English Poetry* ; 1. 525 ; 2. 346 ; 3. 73, 437, 455 ; 5. 1, 13.  
William of Palerne, ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.) ; 6. 650.  
*Wyntown's Chronicle*, ed. Laing ; 1. 37—602 ; 2. 1—494 ; 3. 208—440 ; 4. 13, 209 ; 6. 392.

## INDEX III. (RIME-INDEX.)

THIS Index is by no means exhaustive, but will probably suffice as a guide to the more important rimes. A complete Rime-index would occupy a considerable space, and much of the information would be valueless. We learn nothing from a large number of the rimes beyond the one very important fact that the final *-e*, so common in Chaucer, is hardly to be found in Barbour at all. Certainly it is never found as expressing an inflection of a noun or verb, and the result is that a large number of the rimes are just the same as in modern English, whilst they are very different from those in Chaucer. A comparison with the latter is easily made, and the difference is at once apparent.

Some of the most striking uses of the final *-e* in Chaucer are these.

(1) The *-e* marks : (a) the definitive form of the adjective.<sup>1</sup> In Barbour, it makes no difference whether the adjective is definite or indefinite : it always drops the final *-e*. Ex. "his gret valour," i. 556; "the maist party," ii. 215. Examples are scarce, because Barbour is remarkably sparing of his adjectives. (b) The plural of adjectives. In Barbour, the inflection is dropped. Ex. "Full feill that war douchly of deid ;" ii. 232. The final *-e* which sometimes appears is due to mistakes on the part of the scribe, and to the lateness of the existing MSS. Thus the same word is miswritten *feile*, ii. 221; *feyle*, ii. 228; but these final letters have no meaning, and are to be disregarded in the scansion.

(2) In verbs, *-e* marks : (a) the infinitive mood. But Barbour has—"Ye sall *isch* furth to the bataill ;" ii. 278. In ii. 251, the word *arme* appears, but the *-e* is an idle addition. The line runs—"Bad his men *arm* thaim hastily." And so throughout. Hence *tell* (infinitive mood) rimes with *fell* (past tense), ii. 45; a rime which will not be found in Mr Cromie's Ryme-Index to Chaucer.

(b) the gerundial infinitive. But Barbour has—"And weill mar for to *dreid* then *thai* ;" ii. 272.

(c) the past participle of strong verbs. Here, however, Barbour differs by retaining the *full form* of the inflection ; as in *cumbyn*, i. 44; *foundyn*, i. 60; *chosyn*, i. 117; *haldyn*, i. 118. Note also the pairs of rimes *knawin*, *drawin*, iv. 175; *sawin*, *knawin*, iv. 685. In some verbs

<sup>1</sup> For examples, see Dr Morris's Introduction to his edition of the Prologue, &c. (Clarendon Press), and my analysis of the metre of the Squire's Tale in my edition of The Prioresses Tale, &c. (Clarendon Press).

the contracted form occurs, as in *tan* (taken), *don* (done); &c. These are monosyllabic, though often written *tane*, *done* by the scribe.

(d) the past tense of such weak verbs as take the endings *-de* and *-te*. But Barbour has *dempt*, i. 213, *awcht*, i. 255; *thocht*, i. 303, &c.

Without going into more particulars, the above remarks will enable the reader to see the force of the statement that, whereas the final *-e* is common in Chaucer as indicating various inflections, there is *not a single example of it* throughout the whole of the rime-endings that occur in Barbour. The instances in which it is written at the end of a line are, in every case, due to the scribe only and to the written form; it was not meant to be sounded.

Throughout Book I., the only examples of a written *-e* at the end of lines (not counting instances such as *bounte*, *he*) are these.

In ll. 55, 56, we have *male*, *collaterale*. If the final *-e* were to be pronounced here, it would not be *inflectional*, but the words belong rather to a class of which I have a few more words to say below. The same remark applies to *female*, *male* ll. 59, 60, and *thrillage*, *parage*, ll. 101, 102.

In ll. 65, 66, we have *hale*, *dale*. Here the *-e* merely means that the *a* is long; the words are constantly written *haill*, *daill*.

In ll. 105, we have *ride*; but it rhymes to *abyd*. The *-e* is not an inflection, for the infinitive mood, in Barbour, does not admit of one.

So in l. 108, the infinitive *tynge* is monosyllabic, for it rhymes with the word *with-in*. The latter word never becomes *withinē* in Northern English.

In ll. 113, 114, we have *thrillag*, *vusage*. See the remark on *thrillage* above.

In ll. 119, 120, we have *bene*, *sene*. Both are monosyllables, and are also written *beyn*, *seyn*.

In l. 128, we have *wyde*; but it rhymes with *tyd*.

In ll. 143, 144, we have *tune*, *gayne*; both are monosyllabic past participles, and are also written *tan*, *gan*.

In l. 150, we have *gate*, which occurs as a monosyllable with very great frequency. It is made to rhyme with *debat*.

In ll. 157, 158, we have *save*, *have*. These words are also constantly written *sauff*, *haff*, &c.

The other examples are of a similar character, and may be easily understood. They are as follows: *quhile*, *ghyle* (171), *nane*, *tane* (173), *sone*, *wndone* (181), *toune*, *possessioune* (185), *nation*, *fellone* (193), *enchesone*, *destructione* (203), *tyne*, *pyne* (211), *nane*, *nekbane* (217), *dome*, *thryldome* (235), *syne*, *commandyne* (255), *thrillage*, *parage* (275), *gave*, *knave* (287), *page*, *waslage* (289), *seyle*, *feyle* (303), *wane*, *tane* (323), *heritage*, *thryllage* (351), *homage*, *heritage* (419), *thrillage*, *wasselage* (471), *enchesoune*, *resoune* (487), *tane*, *gane* (521), *wrate*, *state* (525),

*conqueroure, tour* (529), *pwsoune, tresoune* (533), *ded, rede* (545), *passe, was* (629).

Of these, the very last example is the clearest ; we know that *was* is, at any rate, monosyllabic. It follows that *passe* should rather have been written *pas* ; and, as a fact, it generally *is* so written ; see iv. 354.

So too, in the middle of lines, we find *fayne* for *fayn*, i. 11 ; *weile* for *weil*, i. 149, and the like ; where the *-e* has no phonetic value.

The result is that, throughout Book I., if the final *-e* is ever to be sounded at the end of a line, it can only be in the French words ending in *-age*, viz. *thrillage, vusage, parage, page*, &c. ; or in French words ending in *-ale*, such as *female, male, collaterale*. And I think it possible that some of these words may, at that early period, have sometimes (but quite *exceptionally*) retained the final *-e* as a lightly pronounced separate syllable. Still we do not find any indication of this in general when these words occur in the middle of lines ; note *thrillage* in l. 109, *wysage* in l. 383, where, however, the accent falls upon a different syllable.

Just as at the end of lines, so also in the middle of them, the *inflectional* final *-e* is wholly wanting. But I believe it will be found that there are just three or four instances in which a final *-e* really appears, but only as *an essential part* of the word. Such words are, at the most, extremely few. The word *sege* (siege) is perhaps of this character. We find—

The segē tuk full apertly ; x. 315.

Thai wald he leit the segē be ; xvii. 850.

I believe that such words will be found to be mostly of French origin, and the examples of them are so scarce that the reader may as well adopt the general rule, that the final *e* (of whatever character) is *wholly absent* from Barbour, and is *never to be sounded when inserted by the scribes*.

These few remarks will serve to introduce the index here following ; further remarks upon the metre will be found in the Preface, including some notes upon lines which are really or apparently imperfect in scansion.

#### A. LIST OF DOUBLE OR FEMININE RIMES.

(This list is nearly, if not quite, an exhaustive one ; the reference is to the former line of the couplet.)

*-abill* ; *delitabill, fabill*, 1. 1.

*-alit* (*-aylit, -aillyt*) ; *apparalit, assalit*, 9. 132 ; *assailyt, failȝeit*, 2. 538 ; *assalit, falit*, 4. 89 ; *battaillyt, assaylit*, 2. 221 ; *failyt, fortrawaillyt*, 3. 325 ; *fortravalit, assalit*, 7. 368 ; *travalit, assalit*, 4. 149.

*-akis* (*-akys*) ; *takys, stomakys*, 3. 541.

*-anis* (*-anys*) ; *banys, anys*, 1. 271 ; *montanys, paynys*, 3. 371 ; *montanis, planys*, 8. 3 ; *stanys, nanys*, 10. 57.

- aris*; clearis, chassaris, 3. 51.
- astis*; mastis, fast is, 17. 715.
- atis*; batis, howgatis, 4. 438; climatis, gatis, 4. 701; prelatis, statis, 20. 161; statis, gatis, 1. 337.
- auit*; dissauit, ressauit, 4. 272.
- awin*; knawin, drawin, 4. 175; sawin, knawin, 4. 685.
- awis*; drawis, sawis, 4. 322; shawis, blawis, 4. 121.
- ayis*; alwayis, sayis, 11. 23; Artayis, dayis, 1. 339; sayis, wayis, 2. 39.
- ayit (-ait)*; affrayit, assayit, 19. 591; appurvait, assayit, 9. 424; arayit, displayit, 12. 215, 14. 173, 15. 7, 19. 435; effrait, assait, 13. 173; purvait, displayit, 12. 411; werryit, assayit, 3. 375.
- edis (-edys)*; redis, dedys, 1. 17, 4. 739; spredis, bredis, 16. 67; stedis, wedis, 11. 466, 13. 29.
- eldis*; scheldis, feldis, 8. 227.
- enmil (-emmyll, -ymmyll, -embill, -ymbill)*; assemmyl, trymmyl, 12. 267; assembill, trymbill, 2. 294.
- eris (-erys)*; apperis, maneris, 4. 725; archeris, hobleris, 11. 109, 13. 659; archeris, oblesteris, 17. 235; archeris, speris, 13. 57; baneris, maneris, 8. 229, 17. 341; baneris, speris, 11. 464, 13. 237; baneris, Coigneris, 15. 23, 35; efferis, mysteris, 12. 413; feris, steris, 12. 41; fleieris, chasseris, 3. 81; freris, mysteris, 17. 541; maneris, afferis, 17. 247; maneris, Coigneris, 14. 393; officeris, afferis, 1. 191; prisoneris, maneris, 17. 891; prisoneris, efferis, 18. 505; speris, archeris, 14. 109; speris, efferis, 11. 27; teris, deris, 3. 519; vitteris, Coigneris, 14. 407.
- ery*; mery, herbery, 18. 503.
- etis (-ettis)*; planetis, settis, 4. 695.
- eved* (miswritten *-evede*); hevede, revede, 5. 11.
- evit*; revit, levit, 13. 23.
- ifis (-iffis, -evys)*; giffis, levys, 1. 227; lifis, driffis, 4. 147; wiffis, liffis, 17. 515. (See *-yvis*.)
- iffin (-ivin)*; giffin, drivin, 4. 735.
- ingis*; thingis, r. w. amonestyngis, 4. 532, barganyngis, 1. 305, end-ingis, 9. 634, gabbingis, 4. 767. (See *-yngis*.)
- onis (-ones, -onys, -ownys)*; coniuraciones, exorcizaciones, 4. 749; palzeonis, fassownys, 17. 299; salmonys, menounys, 2. 576. (See *-ounis, -ownis*.)
- ordyt*; concordyt, recordyt, 1. 71.
- ory*; story, memóry, 1. 13; victóry, story, 1. 473, 2. 330.
- othir*; othir, brothir, 13. 473, 16. 55.
- ounis (-ounys)*; pailzownys, toune is, 3. 239. (See *-onis, -ownis*.)
- ouris*; paramouris, rebouris, 13. 485; traytouris, socouris, 3. 599. (See *-owris*.)

- ovir; covir, discovir, 4. 123.
- ownis (-ownys); hawbyrschownys, pennownys, 11. 131; pennownys, palȝeownys, 12. 461; townys, palȝeownys, 11. 137; townys, posses-siownys, 16. 215. (See -onis, -ounis.)
- owris; flowris, colowris, 16. 69. (See -ouris.)
- ulȝeit; brulȝeit, tulȝeit, 4. 151.
- unnin (-unnyn); begunnyn, wonnyn, 2. 189.
- uschit (-usit); ruschit, refusit, 4. 145.
- ychtis; wychtis, mychtis, 2. 522.
- ydis; abydis, betydis, 8. 253.
- yngis; coueryngis, slyngis, 17. 343. (See -ingis.)
- yntis; dyntis, flyntis, 13. 35; dyntis, styntis, 13. 153.
- yvis (-ifis); knyvis, lyvis, 12. 579, 16. 455; lyvis, knyvis, 11. 590; lyvis, vifis, 12. 245. (See -ifis.)

## B. RIMES THAT ARE PERHAPS DOUBLE RIMES.

- (a) There is some doubt about -eys; machabeyς, seys, 1. 465. See -ayis above, p. 631; and see -ais in List C below.
- (b) Probably the trilled *r* in *Robert* accounts for the rime—*Robert*, speryt, 4. 13. *Speryt* is little more than *sper't*, and the rime can hardly be called a double one.
- (c) We find the odd rime *grathit, laid* (E. *layit*), 5. 387. It certainly seems to be imperfect, yet intentional.

## C. RIMES THAT ARE PROBABLY SINGLE RIMES.

- (a) -ais (-ayis); it would seem that -ayis can be shortened to -ais or -as. Exx. betraiss, alwayis, 5. 539; fayis, tais, 2. 145, 8. 405; sayis, Francoiss, 10. 746. See -ayis above in List A.
- is (-iss, -yis, -yiss); it would seem that -yis can be shortened to -is. Exx. iuperdyis, deuiss, 10. 788; lyis, viss, 5. 77.
- (b) We find the strange rime—macyss (i. e. *maces*), was, 13. 17. The explanation is that *maces* was but *one* syllable, as it will be if we pronounce it as if it were French. This is proved by the occurrence of the equivalent plural form *mas* in 11. 600. Of course this plural noun is quite a different word from *mas* (*he makes*), which latter is of frequent occurrence.
- (c) We find the impossible rime—victóry, cheuelry, 10. 516; see -ory in List A; p. 631. The explanation is that *victory* is a false reading for *voidry*, as explained in the note to the line.

## D. INDEX TO SELECTED SINGLE RIMES.

(The following list comprises all that are of any particular interest, and includes all the remarkable variations of spelling. I have particularly noted words which would not rime in modern English, such as *sa* (*so*), *stra* (*straw*).

**-a** (-*ai*, -*ay*) ; alsua, bra (*brae*), 18. 445 ; bra, ma (*make*), 6. 147, 18. 373 ; bra, wnderta, 3. 109 ; ma, tha, 18. 349 ; sa, stra (*straw*), 3. 319 ; stra, ta, 6. 505 ; ta, swa, 18. 449. We also find *thai* (miswritten for *tha*, those) riming with twa, 6. 587, swa, 7. 211, ta, 10. 147 ; in each case the phrase is the same, viz. *ane of tha*. So too—*thai*, alsua, 2. 235. We also find *may* for *ma*, riming with *ta*, 4. 642 ; *may*, *sway* (for *ma*, *swa*), 4. 570. And the rime—vay (*way*), ga (*go*), 10. 15.

**-ace.** See **-as** below.

**-ad** (-*aid*, -*ayd*). Had (*had*) rimes with : abaid, 2. 13 ; bad (*bade*), 2. 209 ; brad (*broad*), 3. 467 ; maid (*made*), 1. 397, 1. 481, 3. 543, 3. 675 ; rad (*rode*), 4. 27 ; stad (*bestead*), 3. 379 ; slayd (*slid*), 3. 701, 10. 558 ; waid (*wude*), 19. 759 ; vaid (*wade*), 9. 356. It is also written *haid*, r. w. abaid, 2. 308 ; maid, 1. 513 ; raid, 2. 175. Other rimes in *-aid* are : braid, raid (*rode*), 8. 167 ; maid, baid (*made*, *abode*), 3. 753 ; vnmaid, baid (*unmade*, *abode*), 4. 608.

**-aill** ; trawaill, bataill, 1. 23. See also **-ell**.

**-air.** See **-ar** below.

**-ais**, **-aiss.** See **-as** below.

**-aith.** See **-ath** below.

**-ak** ; valk (written for *wak*, *awake*), tak, 7. 179. ✓

**-an** ; than (*then*) r. w. ran, 5. 625 ; wan (*won*), 3. 447.

**-anch**, **-ance** ; panch (*paunch*), dance, 9. 398.

**-and** ; hand, fand (*hand*, *found*), 6. 447 ; fand, strikand (*found*, *striking*), 6. 237 ; stande (miswritten for *stand*), Yngland, 13. 635. N.B.—Present participles in *-and* are common at the end of a line.

**-ar** (-*air*). Ar (*are*) r. w. ansuar (*answer*), 4. 231 ; banar (*banner*), 7. 588 ; war (*were*), 1. 19, 135, 511, &c. ; zar (*yare*), 2. 316. Also with mair (*more*), 3. 564 ; weillfair, 12. 155. It is also written *air*, r. w. mair (*more*), 4. 703 ; and *are*, r. w. fair, 5. 239.

Ar (*ere*) r. w. disclar (*declare*), 1. 75 ; written *are*, r. w. mare (*more*), 4. 568 ; written *air*, r. w. war (*were*), 12. 5 ; written *ayr*, r. w. forsayr, 1. 477.

Ar (*oar*) r. w. schipfar, 3. 691. ✓

War (*were*) r. w. ar (*are*), 1. 19 (as above) ; rar (*roar*), 7. 326 ; squar (*square*), 3. 381 ; yhar (*yare*), 2. 346. We also find : ayquhar, schar (*everywhere, shore* = *did shear*), 2. 91 ; far, thar (*fare, there*), 3. 345 ; mar, far (*more, fare*), 2. 302 ; thar, ansuar (*there, answer*), 2. 59.

**-ar** = **-air** ; mar, schipfair (*more, shipfare*), 3. 685 ; war, rair (*were*,

- roar*), 4. 422; war, bair (*were, bore*), 9. 174. And note: sair, wair (*sore, were*), 5. 147.
- ar = -er; debonar, affer, 8. 381; grevousar, fer (*grievouser, fur*), 10. 636.
- ar = -are; bare, war (*bare, were*), 9. 442.
- air; fair, mair (*fare, more*), 5. 219; sair, wair (*sore, were*), 5. 147.
- are; spare, lasare (*spar, leisure*), 5. 389; where the final -e is not sounded. See also -er below.
- as (-ace, -ase, -ass, -ais, -aiss, -es). The characteristic word is *was*; this rhymes with cass (*case*), 1. 563, 2. 23, 3. 591; chass (*chase*), 3. 53; Douglas, 1. 29, 2. 488; Ferumbrace, 3. 437; grace, 3. 233; mais (*makes*), 17. 663; maiss, 2. 468; pass, 10. 85; passe (*miswritten for pas or pass*), 1. 627; percass, 3. 481; place, 3. 495; rase (*race*), 3. 697; solace, 3. 465; tais (*takes*), 13. 505. Written also *wass*, r. w. braiss (*braes*), 13. 337; chass, 13. 561; rass (*raise*), 3. 133; tais (*takes*), 17. 499; traiss (*trace*), 9. 580. It is also constantly written *wes* (see -es below); and we find the rime: Douglas, wes, 11. 454.
- as = -ais = -ayis; Thomas, sais, 10. 352; Thomas, assayis, 14. 119.
- ass = -ais; chass, tais, 6. 435; Douglass, tais, 15. 339\*; tais, cass, 12. 1; Thomass, sais, 17. 285.
- ais (-aiss); tais, fais (*takes, foes*), 15. 167; raiss, mais (*rose, makes*), 6. 233. And see -ayis in List A above, p. 631; also -es below.
- at (-ate); debat, fut-hat, 13. 453; gat, hat (*gait, hot*), 8. 65. Also bate, hate (*boat, hot*), 3. 417; debate, zate (*gate*), 4. 430; wrate, state, 1. 525; in all of which the final -e is not sounded. This is shewn also by -at = -ate; as in debate, wat, 2. 41; hate, stat (*hot, state*), 6. 305; state, howgat, 2. 155. We also find -at = -et, as in bonat, set, 9. 505. See -et.
- ath (-aith); ath, scath (*oath, scath*), 9. 540; bath, skaith (*both, scath*), 1. 79; raith, bath (*rath, both*), 4. 45; wrath, skaith, 1. 201.
- aw; saw, law (*saw, low*), 10. 123; saw, raw (*row*), 8. 449.
- ays; galays, assays, 10. 35. Perhaps for galayis, assayis; see -ayis in List A above, p. 631.
- e (-ey, -ye); E, fle (*eye, flee*), 5. 623; he, lawte (*high, loyalty*), 1. 363; maieste, be, 1. 431.
- e = -ey; sle, hey (*sly, high*), 17. 607 (where *hey* is put for *he*); we, hey (*wee, heigh!*), 17. 677.
- e = -ye; hye, fle (*high, flee*), 9. 85; hye, te (*high, tie*), 15. 281. In both these cases *hye* should have been written *he*, which is the usual spelling.
- ey; drey, dey (*dree, die*), 3. 321; drey, hey (*dree, high*), 2. 382. These words should have been written *dre, de, he*, as usual.
- ed (-ede, -eil); ded, red (*death, rede*), 1. 347; ded, red (*dead, rede*), 3.

- 493 ; led, sted (*stead*), 4. 490 ; red, hed (*read, pp., heed*), 2. 93 ; sted, yhed (*steed, yede*), 2. 424.
- ede** ; rede, dede (*red, dead*) ; 3. 139. Here the right spelling would have been *red, ded*.
- ed** = **-ede** ; ded, rede (*death, rede*), 1. 545, 1. 567 ; ded, rede (*dead, red*), 2. 360 ; sted, zede (*steed, yede*), 3. 111 ; stede, dred (*steed, dread*), 3. 167.
- eid** ; breid, deid (*breadth, deed*), 1. 531 ; deid, leid (*dead, lead, v.*), 1. 37 ; deid, leid (*death, lead, v.*), 1. 269 ; deid, reid (*deed, read*), 2. 83 ; dreid, speid (*dread, speed*), 4. 506 ; heid, reid (*head, rede*), 2. 121 ; heid, zeid (*heed, yede*), 5. 573 ; zeid, zowtheid, 1. 333 ; zoutheid, deid, 5. 277.
- eid** = **-ed** ; dreid, ded (*dread, death*), 4. 590 ; dreid, ned (*dread, need*), 3. 315 ; zeid, sted (*yede, steed*), 3. 127. Also ned, deid (*need, deed*), 2. 231.
- eid** = **-ede** ; beid, drede (*bid, dread*), 8. 123 ; dede, steid (*dead, stead*), 1. 609.
- eif** (-eve) ; leif, geve (*live, gave*), 6. 157.
- eill, -ele, -eile.** See **-ell** below.
- eir.** See **-er** below.
- eis** (-yis). We find seis, treis, 15. 275 ; treis, beis, 11. 298 ; cf. machabeys, seys, 1. 465. Perhaps these are really feminine rhymes ; see List B above, p. 632. We find also the rime *-eis, -yis* ; as in parteis, enemyis, 10. 75 ; cf. List C (a), p. 632.
- eit.** See **-et** below.
- ell** (-eill, -ele, -ale, -eile, -ile).
- ell** = **-eill** ; castell, weill, 3. 359 ; cf. casteill, weill, 4. 101.
- ell** = **-ele** ; catell, lele, 4. 275.
- ell** = **-ale** ; trawell, fale, 4. 664 ; trauell, avale, 7. 45. ✓ ←
- ell** = **-eile** ; weile, castell, 3. 339. For *weile*, read *well*.
- ell** = **-ile** ; perell, quhile, 7. 193 ; Lile, perell, 5. 203. We may here read *peril, quhil*, and *Lisle*.
- ele** = **-eill** ; eschele, weill, 8. 221 ; fele, weill, 3. 201 ; 11. 49 ; wele, feill, 12. 587. Here the final *-e* is not sounded, and *fele, wele* should be *feill, weill*, as usual. Compare also weill, fardele, 3. 431 ; where *fardele* is for *farddeill*.
- er** (-eir, -ere, -ar, -are, -eyr). The word maner (*manner*) rimes with : affer, 2. 181 ; apper, 1. 93 ; cher (*cheer*), 3. 299, 545 ; ner (*near*), 3. 5, 463 ; wer (*were*), 1. 3, 3. 535. The last rime links it with : comper (*compare*), 1. 403, auter (*altar*), 2. 43. Note also : auter, cher, 2. 33 ; ber (*bear*), danger, 4. 49 ; contrer, pautener, 1. 461 ; daunger, ner, 2. 43 ; daunger, fer (*feir, i. e. whole*), 3. 91 ; effer, deboner, 1. 361 ; her (*here*), daunger, 2. 434 ; sper, ber (*spear, bear*), 3. 459 ; squyer, courser, 19. 359.

**-er** = **-eir** (*-cyr*) ; ansuer, heir (*here*), 4. 247 ; heir, power, 12. 237 ; myster, weir (*were*), 11. 452 ; heyr, planer, 1. 623.

**-er** = **-ere** ; spere, ther (*spear, there*), 5. 635. Hence the final *-e* in *-ere* is not sounded in : bere, manere (*bear, manner*), 5. 339 ; mes-syngere, ere, 4. 614 ; stere, manere, 4. 374. The same appears from the writing of *-eir* instead of *-er* or *-ere*, as in : apeir, maneir, 4. 751 ; cheir, weir (*cheer, were*), 9. 728 ; deir, weir (*dear, were* = *doubt*), 4. 256 ; heir, maneir, 4. 57 ; heir, sveyeir, 19. 17 ; inqueir, weir, 4. 221 ; ledeir, weir, 11. 522 ; neir, laseir, 13. 601 ; neir, maneir, 4. 378 ; speir, effeir, 5. 607 ; steir, weir (*steer, were*), 4. 630 ; weir, zeir (*were, year*), 10. 820. With *laseir* cf. the spelling *lusare*, which see under *-are* above, in the section beginning with **-ar**.

✓ **-er** = **-ar** (*-are*) ; ansuer, mar, 1. 437 ; ger, ledar, 7. 19 ; fer, war (*far, waur*, i. e. worse), 3. 301. Also : were, mare (*were, more*), 5. 337. See **-ar** above.

✓ **-es** (*-ess, -ais, -as, -ass, -ace*). The characteristic word is *wes*, another spelling of *was*. It rimes with cass, 13. 515 ; chass, 12. 87 ; face, 10. 478 ; mess (*mass*), 10. 816 ; plass (*place*), 12. 429 ; pess (*peace*), 10. 127, 10. 774, 13. 557 ; press, 2. 430, 3. 129. Also with words in *-es* simply, such as : besynes, 2. 586 ; liklynes, 3. 87 ; seknes, 9. 47 ; suthfastnes, 1. 7. Also with words in *-ais*, such as : gais, 5. 569, tais, 6. 221 ; where the words are badly spelt, and the right rimes would be denoted by the spellings *was, gas* ; *was, tas*. Spelt *wess*, it rimes with Thomas, 14. 145. Note also : richess, blithness, 12. 275 ; seiknes, martymes (*sickness, Martinmas*), 9. 126. See **-as**.

✓ **-et** (*-eit, -eite, -ete, -eyte, -at*). We find the simple rimes : falset (*falsehood*), let, 1. 597, 5. 621 ; falset, set, 1. 377 ; gret, met (*greeted*), i. e. wept (*met*), 3. 507 ; gret, wet (*greet, i. e. weep, wet*), 3. 517 ; let, for-zet (*forgotten*), 1. 15 ; met, het (*met, hight*), 9. 9 ; met, et (*meat, eat*), 7. 153, 165 ; reset, mct, 10. 139 ; zet, het (*gate, hot*), 4. 153.

✓ **-et** = **-ete** ; get, mete, 3. 341 ; get, etc, 2. 580 ; het, wete, 11. 612 ; mete (*meat*), get, 2. 572, 3. 471 ; retrete, bet, 15. 49 ; set, etc, 3. 479.

**-et** = **-eit** ; feit, suet, 13. 31.

**-et** = **-eyte** ; met, meyte (*met, meat*), 3. 571.

**-ete** = **-eit** ; fete, zeit (*feet, yet*), 3. 123.

**-cite** = **-ete** ; meite, sete (*meat, set*), 3. 393. Here, as throughout, the final *-e* is idle ; the better spelling would be *met, set*.

✓ **-et** = **-at**. Perhaps only in the case of the word *zet* (*a gate*), which rimes with : debat, 5. 385 ; gat, 10. 229 ; therat, 17. 773, 777, 787 ; tharat, 10. 175. All confusion between these endings would be put aside by simply reading *zat*. Under *-at*, we have seen the rime ; bonat, set, 9. 505. This would be remedied by reading *bonet*, which is of course a better spelling. The confusion between *-at* and *-et* is, accordingly, due to the scribe, not to the author.

- euch (-ewch) ; dreuch, eneuch, 4. 372 ; sleuch, inewch, 1. 285. So also : inewch, drewch, 1. 627.
- ew ; trew, rew (*trow, rue*), 2. 326. See -ow.
- eyne ; seync, bedeyne, 12. 569. Miswritten for *seyn, bedyn, or sen, beden* ; the final -e is idle.
- eyr (-eir) ; queyr, weir (*choir, were*), 20. 293. See -er.

-ile. See -ell.

-in (-yn, -yne). We find : tharin, cowyn, 10. 672 ; cowyne, in, 17. 423 ; cowyne, tharin, 4. 111. Also : tharin, vyne, 15. 93 ; within, tyne, 1. 107 ; where the final -e is idle, but perhaps the vowel sound may have differed in length. Ordinary rimes in -yne (with silent -e) are : mankyne, syne (*mankind, sin*), 15. 249 ; syne, Brechyne, 9. 284 ; tyne, pyne, 1. 211.

Here take notice of a remarkable class of words in which the ending -yn or -yne (with silent -e) represents the modern -ing at the end of a VERBAL NOUN,<sup>1</sup> which is always kept quite distinct from the present participle, ending (in Barbour) in -and. Examples are : arming, i. e. armour, written armyne, r. w. syne, 17. 263 ; commanding, i. e. commandment, written commandyne, r. w. syne, 1. 255 ; douting, i. e. doubt, fear, written doutyne, r. w. vyne (*wine*), 14. 229 ; fighting, i. e. fight, written fechtyne, r. w. syne, 3. 241 ; and also written fichtyne, r. w. syne,

<sup>1</sup> The term ‘verbal noun’ is by no means suitable for the earlier stages of our language ; many who use it are thereby led to suppose that the word is not a true substantive, but a sort of semi-substantive, ‘neither fish nor flesh.’ If it be defined to mean *a substantive that happens to be formed from a verb*, the student may be better able to remember that it is a real and true substantive. *Hunting*, when not a present participle, is just as truly a substantive as *choice* is. If it be said that *hunting* is derived from a verb—why, so is *choice*.

But let me add here, to guard against mistake, that the old ‘verbal noun,’ as thus defined, has in course of time *changed its character*. By the omission of the preposition *of* in expressions like ‘choosing of houses,’ we have given the substantive a real verbal or gerundial power. There was a time when the expression ‘choosing houses’ would have sounded as ridiculous as ‘choice houses,’ whereas it is now so familiar a phrase that every one understands it, though few can explain or parse it. The account in Max Müller’s Lectures (6th ed. ii. 15—22) is incorrect ; see Morris’s Historical Outlines of English Accidence, ed. 1872, pp. 177—179. Let the student remember that the whole question is one of *chronology*. What *may* be called a verbal substantive *now* was in the 13th century a pure substantive and nothing more. Let those who doubt this examine our Early Texts. The earliest example given by Mätzner of this omission of the preposition *of* is in a passage from the English version of Mandeville’s Travels. If any one can tell us of an earlier instance, it would be worth making a note of. See my remarks in the Preface to Havelok, p. xlivi. The expression ‘romanz-reding’ (i. e. romance-reading) in Havelok, l. 2327, is a mere compound substantive like ‘sword-play’ or ‘bloodshed.’ It may be remembered, by the way, that the last expression is expressed by ‘shedding of blood’ as late as in the Authorised Version of the Bible,

4. 243; *happening*, i. e. a thing that happens, a result, written *hapnyne*, r. w. *tyne*, 12. 373; *hunting*, i. e. the chase, written *hontyne*, r. w. *syne*, 4. 512; *healing*, i. e. the process of recovery, written *helyne*, r. w. *syne*, 15. 83; *meddling*, i. e. a mixture, written *mellyne*, r. w. *vyne* (*wine*), 5. 405; *resting*, i. e. repose, written *restyne*, r. w. *Lyne*, 9. 682; ‘*tranonting*’ i. e. circumventing, written *tranontyne*, r. w. *tyne*, 19. 693; *welcoming*, i. e. welcome, written *welcummyne*, r. w. *syne*, 19. 793. We find also: *-yne* = *-ing*; as: *Brechyne*, *leding*, 9. 120. And we also find *welcoming* written *welcummyng*, r. w. *king*, 19. 807. This suggests that the sound of final *-ng* did not much differ from that of *-n*, even in a word like *king*.

**-ir** (-eir); *mystir*, *baneir*, 11. 346. See **-er**.

**-is** (-iss, -yss, -yis). Here *-is* = *-iss*; the word *is* rimes with: *Iuperdiss* (*jeopardies*), 19. 631; *viss* (*to certify*), 4. 478. Also *-is* = *-yss*; the same word *is* r. w. *wyss* (*wise*, i. e. *way*), 2. 336.

**-iss** = *-yss*; *febliss*, *enymyss*, 14. 349.

**-iss** = *-yis*; *lyis*, *wiss* (*lies*, *wise* = *way*), 2. 548.

**-it** (-ite, -yt). We find: *discumfite*, *myt* (*mite*), 12. 187. Of course the *-e* in *discumfite* is superfluous; the word occurs very often, and is usually written *discumfit*. Compare: *discumfyt*, *myt*, 3. 197.

**-o**; *to*, *scho* (*to*, *she*), 4. 759.

**-ocht**; *brocht*, *mocht* (*brought*, *might*), 1. 297.

**-on** (-one, -oun, -oune, -oyne). We find *-on* = *-one*; *nation*, *fellone* (*for felon*), 1. 193. Words in *-one* have long *o*, and silent *-e*; *sone*, *done* (*soon*, *done*), 2. 452, 3. 623. Perhaps the vowel comes near to *u* in *sone*, *wone* (*son*, *wont*), 3. 67, 4. 245.

*-one* = *-oun*; *done*, *fortoun*, 4. 648.

*-one* = *-oyne*; *done*, *soyne* (*done*, *soon*), 11. 384; *qunoyne*, *done*, 15. 363; *soyn*, *done*, 4. 179.

*-oune* = *-oyne*; *fortoune*, *soyne*, 15. 411.

**-or**; *mor*, *befor*, 10. 199. This is curious, because *more* is generally written ‘*mar*’ or ‘*mair*'; see **-ar**.

**-ord** (-orde, -urde); *worde*, *Herfurde*, 13. 671; where the final *-e* is idle.

**-orn** (-orne, -urne); *turne*, *soiorne*, 9. 368; better written *torn*, *soiorn*.

**-os** (-oss); *purpos*, *choss* (*purpose*, *choice*), 3. 263.

**-oude**. See **-ud**.

**-ouk**. See **-uk**.

**-oun**. See **-on**.

**-ount**; *vmbestount*, *hount*, 7. 398. The *ou* represents a long *u*.

**-ow** (-ew); *trow*, *now*, 4. 237; cf. *treww*, *rew* (*trow*, *rue*), 2. 326. The *ow* or *ew* represents a long *u*. See **-ount**.

**-ud** (-ude, -oude); *woude*, *stude* (*waded*, *stood*), 9. 388; *gude*, *woude*,

17. 105. The final *-e* merely signifies that the vowel is long; the vowel intended is apparently long *u*.
- uk** (*-ouk, owk*); tuk, quouk (*quaked*), 2. 364; wouk, touk (*woke, took*), 2. 552; owk, tuk (*week, took*), 15. 101. The vowel is long *u*.
- ur** (*-ure, -wr, -our*); fur, mwr (*fared, moor*), 13. 551; pure, discure (*poor, discover*), 4. 606; succour, auentur, 7. 69. The vowel is long *u*.
- urne**; see **-orne**.
- us** (*-ouss*); Fergus, curageouss, 15. 193.
- ut** (*-ute, -wt*); But, fute (*Bute, foot*), 3. 577; schute, mwt (*shoot, mute* = tell of), 13. 59.
- y** (*-ye*); Mary, openly, 11. 632; berye, honorabilly, 13. 663; succudry, folye, 11. 11. The final *-e* is wholly idle; it is not even needed to indicate the length of the vowel.
- yd** (*-id, -yde*); pryd, hyd (*pride, hide*), 4. 119; syde, prid, 12. 495. The *y* here denotes long *i*.
- yne**; see **-in** above.
- yr** (*-yre*); syr, martyr, 1. 283; fyre, schyre, 4. 618.
- ys** (*-is, -ice, -yss*). We find the word *is* riming with pryss (*prize*), 1. 239; wyss (*wise*), 1. 265; tendirnys, 3. 533. The word wyss (*wise*) also rimes with: pryss (*praise*), 1. 21; price, 1. 369; seruice, 2. 173; serwice, 3. 663. See **-is** above.

## E. INDEX TO REPEATED SYLLABLES.

It is well known that Old French poets considered it permissible to rhyme words that are really identical in spelling, if used in different senses. An excellent example of this occurs in Guillaume de Machau's *Dit de la Harpe* (Bartsch's Altfranzösische Chrestomathie, 408), which contains a large number of such rimes, as, e. g., *harpent, arpant, point* (not), *point* (a point), &c. Chaucer has similar rimes; see my edition of the *Prioresse Tale*, &c. (Clar. Press), Pref. pp. xix (note), lxv. Such rimes might conveniently be called *repeats*. The following is a list of such 'repeats' as I have observed in Barbour.

Her (*to hear*), her (*here*), 1. 445. Lorne (*Lorn*), lorne (*lost*), 10. 105. Met (*met*), meyte (*meat*), 3. 571. Se (*sea*), se (*see*), 3. 627. Thar (*there*), thar (*there, but in the phrase 'her and thar'*), 9. 196. Viss (*wise, adj.*), viss (*wise, sb.*), 5. 513. Weir (*doubt*), weir (*were*), 16. 495, 499. Wer (*war*), wer (*were*), 16. 503\*.

To the same class belong also the following: dome, thyrdome, 1. 235; Reuerently, deuotly, 11. 376; neir, maneir, 12. 105; maner, ner, 15. 347; tyne, tranontyne, 19. 693.

## INDEX IV.

## GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

## EXPLANATION.

THE references in this Glossary are alike available (1) for the present edition; (2) for Pinkerton's edition; and (3) for Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary. It is remarkable that Jamieson, after invariably referring to Pinkerton's division of the poem into *twenty* books, afterwards divided it, in his own edition, into *fourteen* books; thus introducing a fresh set of references of which he, however, made but little use. The advantage of keeping to Pinkerton's numbering of the lines is obvious.

The authorities for the text are these. C.—The Cambridge MS. (in St John's College library). This is imperfect at the beginning, but used for the *text* of the present edition from Book IV. l. 57 to the end. It is also occasionally noticed in the footnotes.

E.—The Edinburgh MS.; used for the *text* of this edition from the beginning to Book IV. l. 56. It is constantly cited in the footnotes; and the reader is requested to remark that every reading in the same to which *no* letter is appended, is also from the same MS. It seemed unnecessary to repeat the letter "E" in every case.

H.—Hart's printed edition of 1616; frequently cited in the footnotes.

A.—Anderson's printed edition of 1670; occasionally cited in the footnotes.

P.—Pinkerton's edition, 1790. Printed from MS. E., with a few mistakes, due to the difficulty experienced by the editor in reading the MS.

J.—Jamieson's edition, 1820. Also printed, with great care and accuracy, from MS. E. A particular account of the few errors in it will be found in Index VII. below.

I.—Innes's edition, Spalding Club, 1856. The spelling is the editor's own, and follows no MS. or edition. The text is due to a collation of MSS. C. and E.; very often the editor prefers the authority of the former.

## ABBREVIATIONS, &amp;c.

A few references are given to languages, cited in the usual manner; as O.F. for Old French, A.S. for Anglo-Saxon, and the like.

Besides the abbreviations *s.*, *adj.*, *adv.*, for *substantive*, *adjective*, *adverb*, &c., the following are used in a special sense:—*v.*, a verb in the infinitive mood; *pr. s.*, present tense, 3rd person singular; *pt. pl.*, present tense, 3rd person plural; *pt. s.*, past tense, 3rd person singular; *pt. pl.*, past tense, 3rd person plural. Other persons are denoted by 1 *p.* and 2 *p.* Also *imp.* is used for the imperative mood, and *pp.* for the past or passive participle. The numbers refer to the *book* and *line*. Thus “1. 367” means Book I. l. 367. Lines not in Pinkerton’s edition are marked with an asterisk, as, e.g., 7. 301\*. Some of these additional lines appear in Jamieson’s edition, but most of them are due to MS. C., with which Jamieson was unacquainted.

When a letter (as E. or H.) follows a reference, the word will, in general, be found in the footnotes rather than in the text. Thus, the spelling *Abowyne* (*s. v. Abovin*, prep.) is the spelling of MS. E. in Book X. l. 52, footnote.

The etymology of the words is chiefly given in cases of difficulty only. Many of the words in “The Bruce” exist in modern English, with but slight differences of spelling. Thus, it is sufficient to explain *Abaid* by “abode;” the etymology of *abide* being well-known.

The subjoined Glossarial Index is, of course, considerably less than a concordance; but a very large number of references are given, and care has been taken to include all words to which any interest is likely to be attached; so that most of the practical advantages of a concordance are obtained within a moderate compass. When a word recurs very often, it has not been considered necessary to insert *all* the references, but only a considerable number of them. Varieties of spelling are, in general, recorded, and in the case of verbs, every form is duly parsed. I can only hope that the result of what has involved considerable labour will be found to be sufficiently satisfactory.

*A*, one, the single, the sole, 1. 367; one, a single, 2. 339, 3. 429, 6. 155, 7. 160, 11. 407, 13. 163, 19. 523. *A fut*, a single foot, 11. 642. *A gátis*, in one way, in one and the same way, uniformly, 4. 702. A.S. *án*.

*Abaid*, *s.* delay, 2. 308, 9. 600, 10. 222, 16. 692, 19. 607; *Abad*, 1. 142. *Maik abade*, i.e. wait, 6. 60. *But abaid*, without delay, 13. 387. See below.

*Abaid*, *pt. s.* waited for (lit. abode),

3. 14; waited, 6. 92\*, 8. 373; *pt. pl.* waited, 15. 461; abode, 18. 263; *Abad*, remained, 13. 444.

*Abaiss*, *v.* to abash, dismay, 8. 247; *pp.* *Abaysit*, dismayed, 14. 411, 18. 322, 20. 269.

*Abak*, *adv.* backwards, 16. 198\*. A.S. *onbæc*.

*Abandoune*, *v. refl.* to give themselves up, 17. 642; to demean themselves boldly, 17. 393; *pt. s.* *Abandonyt* him, devoted himself,

3. 48 ; Abandownyt, made subject, 3. 664, 4. 391 ; *pp.* Abandonyt, subjected, 4. 655. *See* Abaundoune.
- Abandoune ; *at* abandoune, recklessly, 15. 59 ; *in* abandoune, in loose order, 19. 335. Cf. F. *à l'abandon*, in disorder ; *en abandon*, free to all.
- Abandounly, *adv.* in disorder, disarray, 14. 433 ; boldly, recklessly, 16. 108. *See* Abaundanly.
- Abasing, *s.* cowardice, drawing back, timidity, dismay, 9. 68, 17. 322, 573 ; Abasyng, 16. 566. *See* Abaysyng.
- Abasit, *pp.* cast down, discouraged, dismayed, discomfited, 4. 754, 8. 245, 9. 268, 10. 449, 11. 472, 562, 13. 261, 17. 196 ; Abasyd, 8. 476.
- Abaundanly, *adv.* in loose order, in a disorderly manner, stragglingly, 8. 461 ; Abaundanly, recklessly, boldly, 11. 629. *See* Abandounly.
- Abaundoune, *v. refl.* to behave themselves boldly, fight recklessly, 17. 143 ; *pr. s.* Abawndonys, exposes himself, 9. 96 ; *pt. pl.* Abaundonyt, demeaned themselves, 16. 203. *See* Abandoune.
- Abaysyng, *s.* abasement, dismay, fear, 11. 250, 12. 44 ; Abaysing, 14. 62, 16. 617. *See* Abasing.
- Abbey, *s.* abbey, 20. 599.
- Abid, *v.* to wait for, 18. 65. *See* Abyde.
- Aboue, *prep.* over, above, 16. 581.
- Aboun, *prep.* above, on the top of, 18. 454. *See* Abovin.
- Aboundanit, *pt. s.* bounded, 13. 716, 744.
- Aboundans, *s.* abundance, 10. 110.
- Abovin, *adv.* above, 17. 367, 653 ; in a victorious condition, 5. 599 ; in a superior position, 9. 94. *At thar abovin*, having the upper hand, in the better case, 14. 204, 15. 56. *See* below.
- Abovin, *prep.* above, 12. 38 ; *pp.* Abovyn, 10. 31, 11. 617, 18. 463 ; Abowyne, 10. 52 (E.). *See* Aboue, Aboun, Abuf. A.S. *ábúfan*.
- Absens, *s.* absence, 16. 594.
- Abuf, *adv.* above, 12. 172. *See* Abovin.
- Abyde, *v.* to wait for, 15. 63 ; to remain, 12. 73 ; *ger.* Abyd, to wait for, 19. 325 ; *pr. s.* Abydis, awaits, 8. 253 ; *pr. pl.* 2 *p.* Abyd, ye expect, 12. 271. *See* Abid.
- Accord, *v.* to agree, 1. 70 ; *pt. pl.* Accordyt, agreed, 1. 71 (*footnote*) ; *pres. pt.* Accordand, assenting, 20. 208\*. F. *accorder* ; from Lat. *cor*, the heart ; not from *chorda*.
- Acquyntans, *s.* acquaintance, 18. 121.
- Acquyt, *pt. s.* freed, 19. 237 ; 1 *p.* *s. pr.* we acquit, account ourselves free, 18. 74.
- Ado, for *at do*, i. e. to do, 10. 349.
- Adressit, *pt. s.* arrayed, 14. 263 ; *pt. pl. refl.* put themselves in array, 13. 620.
- Aduersouris, *s. pl.* adversaries, 17. 736.
- Afalid, *adj.* onefold, only, single, 20. 618.
- Afferes, *s. pl.* demeanours, *a reading in H. for Effer*, 7. 126. *See* Effer, and see below.
- Affeir, *s.* pomp, 20. 87 ; Affer, 2. 182 ; appearance, goodly array, 11. 242 (E.) ; appearance, 16. 27 (E.). *See* Effer.
- Afferis, *pr. s.* belongs, suits, is meet, behoves, 1. 162, 192, 11. 28 (E.), 11. 77 (E.), 17. 248. O.F. *affiert*, it concerns, becomes, belongs (*Cotgrave*) ; evidently from Lat. *aferit*, from Lat. *afferre*.
- Affermit, *pp.* confirmed, 4. 178 ; Affermyt, 20. 136, 150.
- Affrait, *pp.* frightened, 9. 613. *See* Affrayit.
- Affraityl, *adv.* in a frightened way, 6. 296. *See* Affrayitly.

- Affray, *s.* fear, 3. 26, 6. 423, 7. 342, 9. 605, 19. 603. F. *effroi*, terror.
- Affrayit, *pp.* made afraid, dismayed, 2. 291, 6. 221; afraid, 19. 366, 591. *See* Affrait, Affray.
- Affrayitly, *adv.* timidly, in terror, 6. 434, 17. 577. *See* Affraity.
- Affy, *v.* to trust, 2. 501; *pt. s.* Affyit, trusted, 5. 504; believed, 11. 179. F. *affier*, Lat. *affidare*.
- Aforgayn, *for* Ay forgane, 16. 555 (E.).
- Afrayit, *pp.* intimidated, afraid, 16. 205. *See* Affrayit.
- Agane, *prep.* against, 4. 186, 14. 263; opposite, 19. 720; Agayn, 2. 106; Agayne, 1. 431, 488. A.S. *ongean*.
- Aganis, *prep.* against, 7. 12, 14. 316; to meet, 14. 420; Aganys, against, 1. 573, 3. 233. A.S. *on-gean*, with suffix *-es*.
- Agast, *pp.* terrified, 10. 659, 13. 332. Cf. M.E. *gasten*, to terrify.
- Air, *s.* heir, 4. 71, 12. 320, 19. 139, 20. 130.
- Air, *adv.* ere, formerly, before, 12. 5, 13. 254, 16. 1, 18. 211. A.S. *ær*.
- Air, *pr. pl.* are, 4. 704.
- Airly, *adv.* early, 5. 554, 9. 562, 13. 521, 19. 428.
- Alabast, *s.* alabaster, 20. 588.
- Alane, alone; *all him alone*, alone by himself, 2. 146.
- Alanerly, *for* Anerly, 10. 608 (H.). *Alanerly* is compounded of *al* (all) and *anerly*, only, q. v.
- Ald, *adj.* old, 5. 317, 15. 111, 19. 177. A.S. *eald*.
- Alkyn, of every kind, 1. 134, 191, 2. 558, 12. 197; *alkyn rycht*, right of every kind, 5. 233; *all-hyn thyng*, things of every kind, 16. 311; Alkynd, 13. 717, 17. 214.
- All, *adv.* entirely, 1. 392.
- Allane, alone, 3. 66.
- Aller, *gen. pl.* of all; *thar aller*, of them all, 1. 137. A.S. *ealra*, gen. pl.
- All-gat, *adv.* always, by all means, 12. 362. *See* Gat.
- All-out, *adv.* utterly, altogether, 3. 312, 11. 201, 14. 274, 15. 146, 16. 589.
- Allrynn, a misprint in former editions for Alkyn, 1. 134 (footnote). *See* Alkyn.
- All-thouch, *conj.* although, 10. 464.
- All-veldand, *adj.* (lit. all-wielding), almighty, 5. 577, 6. 314.
- All-wayis, *adv.* always, 2. 92.
- Allye, *s. pl.* allies, 17. 319.
- Als, as, 3. 684, 685; also, 1. 100. *Als — as*, as — as, 1. 161. A.S. *callswā*.
- Alsner, *for* als ner, as near, 1. 54.
- Alsome, *adv.* very soon, 5. 374; Alsoyn, as soon, 10. 368; Alsoyne, as soon, 10. 208; very soon, 10. 631, 11. 569. From *als*, as; and *soyn*, soon.
- Alss-weill, as well, 1. 124.
- Als-tit, *adv.* as soon as possible, very quickly, 5. 80. Icel. *titt*, soon, from *tīð*, time. *See* Tit.
- Alsua, *adv.* also, 1. 399.
- Alswith, *adv.* very soon, 7. 553; very quickly, 8. 153. From *als*, as; and M.E. *swithe*, quickly.
- Alwaysis, *adv.* always, 6. 519, 7. 60.
- Amang, *prep.* amongst, 1. 281. *See* Emang.
- Amang, *adv.* amongst other things, i. e. every now and then, 3. 714.
- Amendit, *pp.* mended, 12. 378, 20. 316.
- Amyessyt, *pt. pl.* calmed, moderated (?), 16. 134 (E.). (Doubtful.)
- Ammonyss, *v.* to admonish, exhort, 8. 348 (E.). *See* Amonist.
- Amonestyng, *s.* exhortation, 20. 412; Amonystyng, advice, 8. 292; *pl.* Amonestyngis, lessons of advice, 4. 533.

- Amonist, *v.* to exhort, advise, encourage, 8. 348. *See Animonyss.*
- Amorus, *adj.* amorous, 10. 291.
- Amouris, *s.* love, 8. 498.
- Amoviss, *pr. s.* moves, incites, 12. 299; Amowis, moves, 19. 94 (E.); Amowytt, *pp.* affected with emotion, 3. 524.
- Anamalyt, *pp.* enamelled, 20. 305.
- Anciente, *s.* ancientness, antiquity, length of time, 6. 252.
- Ancistry, *s.* ancestry, 17. 238.
- And, *conj.* if, 1. 4, 457. Merely a peculiar use of the common copulative conj. *and*; see Mätzner. Often shortened to *an* in later English.
- Ande, *conj.* and, 9. 240.
- Ane, *indef. art.* a, 1. 410, &c. *Starkest of aue*, strongest for *one man*, 4. 74. *Intill ane*, in one direction, right forward, 5. 24.
- Aneding, *for Aynding*, 11. 615 (E.).
- Anent, *prep.* adjoining, near, 1. 187; close to, 8. 124, 19. 512. A.S. *on-eſne*, later *on-emn*, afterwards corrupted to *anent*.
- Anerly, *adv.* only, alone, 2. 58, 6. 132, 12. 249, 435; merely, 10. 608; all alone, 18. 279; in a lonely manner, alone, 7. 59; *all anerly*, quite alone, solely, 5. 281, 10. 705, 733, 17. 470. Cf. Icel. *einsliga*, singly.
- Angelis, *s. pl.* angels, 12. 426; Angellis, 8. 234.
- Angerit, *pt. s.* angered, 14. 322.
- Angirly, *adv.* angrily, 8. 486; Angirly, 4. 321 (*footnote*), 7. 611; Angrely, 11. 624; Angerly, 8. 144 (H.).
- Angry, *adj.* unfavourable, adverse, 5. 70; afflicted, 3. 530; vexatious, 17. 24.
- Angyr, affliction, 1. 235, 2. 519; Anger, 3. 517; *s. as adj.* distressing, grievous, 20. 490; *pl.* Angrys, afflictions, 3. 321.
- Anis, *adv.* once, 6. 368. *See Anys.*
- Ankyrs, *s. pl.* anchors, 3. 691.
- Anoy, *s.* annoyance, harm, 8. 371; *pl.* Anoyis, troubles, tribulations, hardships, 1. 304, 3. 380, 551, 4. 659.
- Anoy, *s.* trouble; *but an error for Not*, q.v., 13. 173 (E.).
- Anoy, *v.* to annoy, molest, 7. 381; *pr. s.* Anoyis, grieves, vexes, 1. 272, 19. 94, 20. 506; *pt. s.* Anoyit, vexed, 18. 1; *pp.* Anoyit, 6. 6, 10. 475, 11. 543, 13. 510, 17. 265, 20. 446.
- Anoyus, *adj.* annoying, vexatious, 5. 249; dreadful, 8. 305; grievous, 20. 238.
- Ansuar, *s.* answer, 2. 60, 19. 152; Ansuer, 8. 153.
- Ansuer, *v.* to answer, 11. 411; *pt. s.* Ansuerd, 18. 28; *pt. pl.* Ansuerd, 11. 406, 12. 328.
- Ansuering, *s.* answer, reply, 4. 235.
- Anys, *adv.* once, 1. 272, 6. 499. *At anys*, at once, 13. 249. A.S. ánes, once. *See Anis.*
- A-pane, *adv.* at a pinch, 9. 64, 89. See the note to 9. 64, p. 573.
- Aparale, *s.* preparation, 17. 241; Aparaile, apparel, 11. 81 (E.). *See Apparaill.*
- Apair, *v.* to appear, 8. 156.
- Apert, *adj.* open, bold, 10. 73, 20. 14; *in apert*, openly, 19. 217 (E.).
- Apertly, *adv.* openly, fully, 10. 315, 12. 40, 341, 14. 122, 16. 493, 17. 917, 19. 521; boldly, 14. 77, 94.
- Apnyt, *for Opnyt*, 17. 136 (E.).
- Apon, *prep.* upon, 1. 496, 508, 2. 74, 19. 526; against, 16. 615, 19. 441. *Apon fer*, on far, afar, 6. 87.
- Apparaill, *s.* apparel, 17. 214; gear, 17. 259; Apparall, furniture, 11. 118. *See Aparale.*
- Apparalit, *pp.* apparelled, 9. 132.
- Apper, *v.* to appear, be developed, 1. 93, 4. 232; *pres. pt.* Apperand, becoming developed, 1. 83; *as adj.* apparent, right (heir), 4. 71.

- A**ppetyt, *s.* appetite, 3. 541.  
**A**pprochand, *pres. pt.* approaching, 11. 512, 12. 26, 14. 284, 16. 553; *pt. s.* Approchit, approached, 20. 246; *pt. pl.* 14. 61.  
**A**ppurvait, *pp.* provided, 9. 424.  
**A**quynt, *pp.* acquainted, 7. 138.  
**A**r, *pr. pl.* are, 1. 1, 7. 39, 12. 229. *See Be.*  
**A**r, *adv.* formerly, in former times, before, 1. 19, 76, 12. 168; *Are, ere*, before, 4. 569. *See Air.*  
**A**r, *s.* an oar, 3. 576, 691; *pl.* Aris, oars, 3. 583.  
**A**ray, *s.* array, order, 6. 413, 9. 8.  
**A**rayande, *pres. pt.* arraying, 12. 19. *See Arayit.*  
**A**rayit, *pp.* arrayed, 2. 255, 3. 233, 7. 536, 8. 47, 11. 130, 12. 6, 14. 157, 16. 149, 17. 296, 18. 84, 19. 431.  
**A**raynge, *v.* to arrange, 12. 36.  
**A**rbitar, arbiter, umpire, *rubric*, p. 3.  
**A**rbytre, arbitrament, decision, 1. 75.  
**A**rcharis, *s. pl.* archers, 9. 151.  
**A**rest, *s.* arrest, stop, halt, stay, 7. 63, 8. 356, 12. 12, 17. 844, 19. 330; stop, stand, 14. 550 (E.).  
**A**rest, *v.* to stop, halt, 12. 7; *pt. s.* Arrestit, 16. 281; *pt. pl.* Aresfyt, 3. 738; *pp.* Arrestit, 9. 723; Arrestyt, arrested, 1. 174.  
**A**rettit, *pp.* charged, accused, 19. 20. Low Lat. *arretare*, to summon, cite; Icel. *rétta*, to judge, condemn.  
**A**ritte, *v.* to arrive, 4. 559; *pt. s.* Arivit, 16. 18; *pt. pl.* 5. 29, 14. 33, 16. 564, 20. 331; *pp.* 14. 53, 16. 50; *was arivit*, 16. 75; *ware arivit*, 5. 124. *See Arywe.*  
**A**riwyng, *s.* arrival, 5. 122, 14. 86.  
**A**rmand, *pres. pt.* arming, 19. 579.  
**A**rmouris, *s. pl.* arms (defensive), armour, 10. 62 (E.), 10. 376, 11. 76.  
**A**rmynge, *s.* armour, 3. 614, 4. 398, 7. 218, 10. 62, 13. 145, 16. 581, 18. 309; Armyne, 17. 264.  
**A**rmys, *s. pl.* arms, 11. 189.  
**A**rmyt, *pp.* armed, 5. 320, 9. 544, 11. 96, 13. 55, 14. 41, 15. 328, 16. 374.  
**A**rravis, *s. pl.* arrows, 6. 121.  
**A**rrayit, *pp.* arrayed, 11. 229. *See Arayit.*  
**A**rsoune, *s.* saddle-bow, bow of the saddle, 16. 131. Each saddle had two *arsons*, one in front and one behind. See Halliwell. F. *aron*, saddle-bow (Cotgrave). Oddly explained by ‘buttocks’ in Jamieson.  
**A**ryotit, *a reading in C. for Ryotit*, 9. 500 (*footnote*).  
**A**rywe, *v.* to arrive, 3. 389; *pp.* Arywyt, 3. 637. *See Ariffe.*  
**A**skand, *pres. pt.* asking, 19. 199; *pr. s.* Askis, requires, 1. 334; *pt. s.* Askit, asked, 5. 62, 7. 239, 9. 221, 13. 286; *pt. pl.* 7. 154, 285.  
**A**spyne, *s.* long-boat, 17. 719 (E.). *See Espyne.*  
**A**ssailȝe, *v.* to assail, 3. 151; *pt. s.* Assailȝeit, assaulted, 3. 75. *See Assale, Assalȝe.*  
**A**ssailȝeours, *s. pl.* assailants, 2. 541; Assailȝeouris, 17. 392.  
**A**ssale, *s.* assault, 9. 350. *See Assalt.*  
**A**ssale, *v.* to assail, attack, 5. 325, 7. 530; Assail, 9. 125; *pt. s.* Assalit, 6. 428; *pt. pl.* 4. 89, 6. 245, 7. 369; *pp.* 18. 194. *See Assailȝe, Assalȝe.*  
**A**ssalt, *s.* assault, 17. 474. *See Assale.*  
**A**ssalȝe, *pr. pl.* assail, 9. 31; *pres. pt.* Assalȝeand, 17. 371, 448, 706; *pt. s.* Assalȝeit, assailed, 10. 428; *pt. pl.* Assalȝeit, 12. 546; 17. 445; *pp.* Assalȝeit, 6. 308, 7. 326, 13. 574; Assalȝeit, 6. 378. *See Assale, Assalȝe.*  
**A**ssay, *s.* assault, attack, 9. 604, 11. 261, 14. 26, 34, 15. 210, 17. 154;

- essay, effort, 2. 371; trial, peril, hardship, 3. 246, 652, 4. 192; *pl.* Assayis, assaults, 14. 120; perils, 3. 270; Assays, assaults, attempts, 10. 36. *Vachis till assay*, men on guard against assault, 10. 651.
- Assay, *v.* to essay, try, find out, 9. 353, 477, 10. 88; to assault, attack, 2. 264; *pt. s.* Assayit, experienced, 1. 448; attacked, 3. 376; *pt. pl.* Assayit, attempted, 10. 146; *pp.* attacked, 9. 425, 19. 592; tested, tried, 1. 237.
- Assege, *s.* siege, 17. 270, 20. 8; *pl.* Assegis, 20. 12.
- Assegit, *pp.* besieged, 3. 441, 5. 417, 9. 290, 10. 353, 13. 366, 17. 902.
- Assemble, assembly, 1. 146; encounter, attack, combat, 8. 293, 9. 253, 12. 491.
- Assembill, *v.* to advance to battle, 2. 294, 3. 26; to attack, 15. 421; *pt. s.* Assemblit, assembled, 3. 7, 6. 477, 7. 510, 9. 548, 18. 345; attacked, 12. 543, 20. 417; *pt. pl.* Assemblit, assembled, 6. 374, 9. 199, 16. 436; attacked, 16. 155; encountered, 12. 517; charged, 15. 365; met in full force, 16. 626; *pp.* Assemblit, assembled, 7. 567, 11. 265, 13. 2, 17. 194; gathered, 12. 283, 17. 119, 283; gone to the attack, 13. 233. See below.
- Assemmyll, *v.* to assemble, 17. 341; to encounter, fight, 12. 267, 13. 64, 18. 101; Assemmyl on, to attack, 13. 7, 16. 90; *pt. s.* Assemmylit, went to the attack, 13. 11; Assemlylit, 13. 75. See Assembill.
- Assentit, *pt. s.* assented, 7. 157; Assentyt, 1. 169; *pt. pl.* Assentit, 19. 185, 20. 34; *pp.* consented, 20. 216; agreed, 1. 135, 13. 241.
- Assenȝhe, *s.* warcry, 2. 378. See the note, p. 553; and see Ensenȝe.
- Assignit, *pp.* assigned, 11. 312, 17. 360.
- Assiss, *s.* assize, sitting in judgment, trial, 19. 55.
- Assolȝeit, *pt. pl.* absolved, 20. 295.
- Assonyeing, *s.* delay (?), 17. 574 (H.). It should rather mean 'excuse.' See below.
- Assonȝeit, *pp.* excused, 2. 125. O.F. *essoiner*, to excuse; cf. Goth. *sunjon*, to excuse oneself, *sunjons*, an apology, defence.
- Assouerans, *s.* assurance, 11. 309.
- Assouerit, *pp.* browned, ripened, 10. 187. O.Fr. *sor*, Fr. *saur*, brownish red. "Saurir, to turne into a sorrel colour;" Cotgrave. See *saur* in Brachet's Etym. Fch. Dict.
- Assoweryt, *pt. pl.* felt assurance, felt secure, trusted, 11. 309 (E.).
- Astoney, *v.* to amaze, dismay, 1. 299 (*footnote*). See Stonay.
- Astrolog, *s.* astrologer, 4. 707.
- Astrology, *s.* 4. 693.
- Asyss, *s.* assize, 19. 55 (E.).
- At, *conj.* that, 1. 95, 2. 160, 9. 688, 11. 260, 14. 459. *For that at*, because that, 1. 83.
- At, *prep.* at, 5. 37; in, 19. 77; *at ȝow*, of you, 12. 484; of, from, 12. 8; *at our mycht*, with all our might, 4. 535; *at hand*, in hand, 2. 120. See Hand.
- At, *rel. pron.* that, which, 5. 63, 15. 5; *that at* = that which, 1. 248.
- Ath, *s.* oath, 9. 540; *pl.* Athes, 20. 146; Athis, 20. 56, 144. A.S. *āð*.
- Athir, *pron.* either, 2. 346, 348, 6. 76, 11. 387, 12. 492, 16. 379; Athyr, 12. 100. *Athir othir in*, each along with the other, 17. 614.
- Atour, *prep.* above, beyond, 2. 368, 3. 199, 4. 596, 9. 465, 10. 285, 11. 350, 16. 503\*, 17. 920, 19. 675, 20. 434; across, 13. 353. *For at-over*. See Outour.
- Atour, *s.* preparation, gear; used of a warlike preparation for an assault, 17. 717. O.F. *atour*, *ator*, apparel, furniture, gear; see *tor* in Burguy.

- Auaizē, *v.* to avail, be of use, 1. 336 (*footnote*), 9. 39.
- Availl, *v.* to lower, 17. 620 : *pt. pl.* Avaied, lowered, 15. 134. F. *avaler*, to lower.
- Avalzē ; in phr. *avalzē que valzē*, avail what may avail, whatever may be the result, 9. 147. Fr. *raille que vaille* (Lat. *ualeat quantum ualeat*).
- Avantage, *s.* advantage, 11. 288 ; *at our avantage*, with the advantage on our side, 6. 66 ; *pl.* Avantagis, 6. 352.
- Avaward, *s.* vanguard, 12. 179, 16. 57.
- Avawarde, *an error in C. for Vaward*, i. e. vanguard, 8. 343 (*foot-note*). The shorter form is demanded by the metre.
- Avay, *adv.* away, 5. 33 ; *mycht nocht avay*, could not get away, 18. 367 ; *thai vald avay*, they would get away, 16. 378 ; *him behuifit avay*, it behoved him to go away, 14. 108.
- Aucht, *num.* eight, 9. 370, 11. 523, 16. 189, 18. 350.
- Aucht, 1 *p. s. pt.* I ought, 1. 432 ; 1 *pl.* we ought, 12. 171 ; *pt. s.* ought, 1. 68. See below ; and see Awcht.
- Aucht, *pt. pl.* possessed, 1. 45. A.S. *ágan*, to possess, owe ; *pt. t. ic áhte*, I possessed, I ought.
- Auchty, *num.* eighty, 18. 349.
- Avenand, *adj.* well-proportioned, handsome, 17. 218. O.F. *avenant*, well-portioned, suitable ; see *venir* in Burguy. See Awenand.
- Avent, *v.* to give air to, to cool, 12. 145. Lat. *uentus*, wind. See Awent.
- Auentur, adventure, 1. 298 ; peril, 1. 605, 17. 312, 710.
- Auenturus, *adj.* adventurous, dangerous to keep, perilous, 8. 497.
- Auerty, *adj.* prudent, 18. 439 (E.) ; A-verty, well-advised, cautious, 8. 162. From Lat. *aduertere*.
- Avisè, *adj.* prudent, 8. 385. *S.e* Awisè.
- Avisit, *pt. pl.* advised, 16. 134.
- Avisment, consideration, forethought, 6. 271 ; advice, counsel, 5. 199, 7. 526. *See* Awisement.
- Aviss, *s.* advice, 19. 157 ; prudence, 10. 269.
- Aulde, *adj. pl.* old, 1. 17.
- Aw, 2 *p. s. pr.* thou oughtest, 9. 753 ; *pr. pl.* ought, 11. 430. A.S. *ágan* ; *pr. t. ic ak*.
- Aw, *s.* awe, fear, 13. 6, 11. 555 ; *to stand aw*, to stand in awe, 3. 62 ; on which phrase see the Note.
- Awailzē, *v.* to avail, be of use, 1. 338, 2. 392 ; Awaill, 1. 336 ; *pt. s.* Awailzeit, 1. 342.
- Awalit, *pt. pl.* let down, lowered, 15. 134 (E.). *See* Availl.
- A-wansemant, *s.* advancement, promotion, 15. 522 (E.).
- Awaward, *s.* vanguard, 12. 497, 13. 169. F. *avant*, before, and O.F. *warde*, guard. *See* Vaward.
- Awayward, *adv.* in their flight, in the retreat, 16. 584.
- Awblasteris, *s. pl.* arbalisters, crossbow-men, 17. 236 (E.).
- Awcht, *pt. s.* owed, ought to do, 1. 255 ; deserved, 3. 59. *See* Aucht.
- Awenand, *adj.* suitable, advantageous, 3. 41. *See* Awenand.
- Awent hym, *v.* to give himself air, to fan himself, 6. 305 (E.) ; Awent thame, to breathe themselves, to give themselves air, 12. 145 (E.). *See* Avent.
- Awerty, *adj.* prudent, experienced, 2. 213, 489 ; Awerte, 10. 37. *See* Auerty.
- Awfully, *adv.* sternly, terribly, 4. 321.
- Awisè, *adj.* well-advised, prudent, 2. 271, 3. 131, 8. 385 (E.), 10. 37 (E.), 11. 349 (E.).
- Awisement, *s.* consideration, time for considering, 2. 297.

- Awisyt, *pt. s.* advised, 2. 298.
- Awmener, *s.* purse, 8. 490. O.F. *aumosniere*, F. *aumônière*, a bag for alms.
- Awn, *adj.* own, 6. 636, 9. 286, 10. 218, 12. 117; Awne, 4. 311, 9. 116, 11. 85, 12. 214, 19. 704. *See* Awyn.
- Awncestry, ancestry, 1. 44.
- Awntyrr, *s.* adventure, hap, 19. 761 (E.).
- Awter, *s.* altar, 2. 33, 44.
- Awyn, *adj.* own, 3. 752; Awyne, 2. 121, 13. 487 (E.). A.S. *ágen*. *See* Awn.
- Awysily, *adv.* advisedly, warily, 1. 302. *See* Avisè.
- Awysit, *pp.* well advised, assured, certified, 1. 620. *See* Avisit.
- Awyss, *an error in E. for a wyss*, i.e. a way, a wise, 3. 526 (*footnote*), 10. 542 (E.).
- Ax, *s.* battle-axe, 12. 20, 52; *pl.* Axys, 3. 20.
- Ay, *adv.* aye, ever, 1. 14, 4. 148; always, 16. 625, 17. 21; continually, 3. 609. A.S. *á, áð*.
- Aynd, *s.* breath, 4. 199, 10. 610; *in aynd*, in breath, 6. 617. Icel. *andi, önd*, breath; cf. Lat. *anima*.
- Aynding, *s.* breathing, breath, 11. 615. *See* Aynd.
- Ayndless, *adj.* breathless, 10. 609. *See* Aynd.
- Ay-quhar, *adv.* lit. everywhere; hence, always, 2, 91, 4. 702, 12. 22, 19. 441.
- Ayr, *adv.* formerly, before, 1. 477. *See* Air, Ar.
- Ayr, *s.* heir, 1. 432; *pl.* Ayris, heirs, 5. 520. *See* Air.
- Ayr, *s.* oar, 4. 630; *pl.* Ayris, 3. 573, 4. 374; *on ayris*, on their oars, at their oars, 3. 580. *See* Ar.
- Ayth, *s.* oath, 14. 330, 19. 294; *pl.* Aythis, 1. 513. *See* Ath.
- Bacheler, *s.* a novice in arms, 2. 406; Bachiller, 4. 72, 8. 495.
- Backermaire, *adv.* more backward; *a reading in II. for Hendirmar*, 7. 599 (*footnote*).
- Baid, *s.* delay, 3. 754, 4. 609, 6. 403, 7. 587, 10. 404, 18. 52. *See* Abaid.
- Baid, *pt. pl.* abode for, awaited, 5. 113; waited, 12. 223; abode, 9. 413. A.S. *bídan*, to wait.
- Baill, *s.* bale, blazing pile, 17. 619. A.S. *bæl*, a blazing pile.
- Bailȝheys, *s. pl.* bailiffs, 1. 190.
- Bair, *adj.* bare, 13. 501.
- Bair, *pt. pl.* bore, 9. 175; *pt. s.* refl. bore himself, behaved, 17. 153; Bair *ȝow* on hand, 1 *p. s. pt.* I assured you, 19. 142.
- Baised, *pt. pl.* abased, overthrew (?), 4. 94 (*footnote*).
- Bait, *s.* boat, 3. 408; Bate, 3. 417.
- Baitit, *pt. pl.* baited, 13. 599. Baytit, 13. 591. Icel. *beitia*, to make to bite; causal of *bita*. *See* Bayt.
- Bak, *s.* back, 10. 723; *gaf the bak*, turned their backs, fled, 16. 210\*, 18. 323; *bakkis gaf*, 9. 269; *ta the bak*, to flee, 12. 338, 17. 124; cf. 12. 78, 17. 162.
- Bald, *adj.* bold, 8. 116, 10. 112.
- Band, *s.* bond, 1. 267, 4. 41.
- Band, *pt. pl.* bound, secured, 10. 825.
- Bandoun, *in, phr.* abandoned, 1. 244 (*footnote*). O.F. *à bandon*.
- Baneour, *s.* a banner-bearer, 7. 588, 12. 220. *See* above.
- Baner, *s.* banner, 7. 88, 17. 134; Baneir, 11. 347, 15. 419; *pl.* Baneris, 11. 464, 17. 553.
- Baneris, *s. pl.* banners, probably standard-bearers, 15. 166. (*Read baneours?*) *See* above.
- Banrentis, *s. pl.* bannerets, 11. 529.
- Banys, *s. pl.* bones, 1. 386, 20. 575.
- Banyst, *pp.* banished, 4. 522, 13. 498.
- Bar, *adj.* bare, 10. 242, 19. 540.

- Bar, *pt. s.* bore, 5. 627, 20. 133, 552; Bair, 5. 606; *pt. pl.* Bar, 11. 115, 12. 396; *doun bar*, bore down, 14. 293; *bar them*, demeaned themselves, 14. 77; *bar on hand*, vehemently asserted, 1. 62.
- Bar, *s.* a boar, 2. 233. Cf. the reading *baire* in Hart. A.S. *bár*.
- Bar fors, *an error in E. for Berfroiss*, 10. 708 (*footnote*).
- Barblyt, *pp.* barbed, 8. 57. Cotgrave has—"Barbelé, bearded; also, full of snags, snips, &c. *Flesche barbelé*, a bearded, or barbed arrow."
- Barded, *pp.* armed (said of horses), 11. 107 (H.).
- Barell-feris, *s.* *pl.* barrel-irons, hoops of barrels, 15. 39. See the Note, p. 594.
- Barell-ferraris, *s.* *pl.* 15. 39 (E.). See Barell-feris.
- Bargane, *s.* fight, fighting, combat, 2. 385, 4. 96, 5. 236, 6. 432, 7. 221, 9. 542, 10. 678, 14. 34, 15. 488, 16. 306, 17. 128, 18. 461.
- Bargane, *v.* to combat, fight, 8. 184, 9. 224.
- Barganyng, *s.* fighting, 2. 191, 4. 593, 12. 253; *pl.* Barganyngis, combats, 1. 306.
- Bargis, *s. pl.* barges, boats, 16. 641.
- Barnage, baronage, assembly of barons, nobility, 1. 41, 2. 185, 6. 186, 16. 3, 14. 256. O.F. *barnaige*, an assembly of barons.
- Barnagis, *s. pl.* wrongly used for Barnage, 14. 256 (E.).
- Barnè, *s.* barony, i. e. assembly of barons, 2. 50. (A disyllabic word.)
- Baroune, baron, 11. 232; *pl.* Barownys, 1. 69, 3. 9, 535.
- Barras, *s.* barrier, outwork, 4. 96, 17. 756. From O.F. *barres*, pl. of *barre*, a stake.
- Barrit, *pt. pl.* barred, 4. 433, 17. 444.
- Basnet, *s.* helmet, 6. 304, 12. 21; *pl.* Basnetis, 8. 225, 11. 462, 12. 144. See below.
- Bassynet, *s.* basinet, helmet, 11. 21 (E.); *pl.* Bassynettis, 8. 225 (E.), 11. 462 (E.). O.F. *bacinet*, a basin-shaped helmet, from *bacin*, a basin.
- Bataill, battle, 1. 24, 105, 10. 822. See Battalhe.
- Bate, *s.* boat, 3. 417, 423, 13. 615; Bat, 13. 645, 16. 647, 17. 403; *pl.* Batis, 4. 401, 18. 202. See Bait.
- Bath, *adj.* both, 1. 81, 6. 418, 9. 93, 10. 6.
- Battallyng, *s.* battle-array, 8. 47 (E.).
- Battaillyt, *pp.* furnished with battlements, embattled, 2. 221; Battalit, 4. 134.
- Battale, *s.* battalion, host, 11. 172; Battell, 18. 351; *in haill battale*, in a compact body, 6. 519; *pl.* Battalis, 11. 121, 12. 26; Battellis, 17. 559, 18. 350.
- Battalhe, *s.* battle, 10. 725.
- Battalyng, *s.* embattlement, 4. 136.
- Battel-sted, *s.* battle-field, 15. 74.
- Bauld, *adj.* bold, 2. 196. See Bald.
- Bauldly, *adv.* boldly, 3. 14.
- Bawlmyst, *pp.* enbalmed, 20. 286. See below.
- Bawmyt, *pp.* enbalmed, 20. 286 (E.); numbered 20. 294 in P. See above.
- Bayt, *ger.* to feed, 13. 589. See Baitit.
- Be, 1 *p. s. pr. subj.* may be, am, 1. 615; *pl.* that we may be, 3. 657; v. 5. 300. See Ar, Beis, Beyn.
- Be, *prep.* by, 1. 65, 218, 2. 230; past, 3. 577; *be then*, by then, by that time, 7. 236; *be that*, by that time, 10. 668. A.S. *be*.
- Becummyne, *pp.* become, 15. 334.
- Beddis, *s. pl.* beds, 9. 428.
- Bedene, 2. 399, 15. 108 (E.). See Bedeyn.
- Bedeyn, *adv.* forthwith, 5. 144, 8.

- 346, 11. 265; Bedeyne, 12. 570, 15. 108. Cf. Dutch *bij dien*, by that.
- Beborn, *prep.* before, 3. 136.
- Beborn, *adv.* before, 10. 245.
- Beforouth, *adv.* before, 19. 502 (E.).
- Begilit, *pp.* beguiled, 19. 680.
- Begouth, *pt. s.* began, 2. 393, 5. 9, 8. 308, 14. 198, 20. 76; *pl.* 16. 551, 17. 686. This is not the true form of the past tense, but an imitation of *couth*, the pt. t. of *connen* (A.S. *cunnan*), to know.
- Begunyn, *pp.* begun, 2. 189; Begounyn, 8. 7.
- Behaldand, *pres. pt.* beholding, 8. 91.
- Behevin, *pp.* be-hewn, hewn in two, 17. 755 (C.). See To-hewen.
- Behowyt, *pt. s.* it behoved, 14. 108 (E.). See Behufit.
- Behuf, *s.* behoof, profit, 15. 517.
- Behufis, *pr. s. impers.* it behoves, 11. 285, 19. 156; *pt. s.* Behufit, 6. 114, 9. 725, 10. 16, 11. 361, 20. 154; *behufit avay*, had to depart, 6. 210.
- Beid, *v.* to bide, wait for (*miswritten* for bide), 8. 183.
- Beiff, *s.* cow fit for killing, 18. 283.
- Beir, *v.* to bear, carry, 4. 630; *we beir ws*, we behave, 14. 275.
- Beis, *s. pl.* bees, 11. 368.
- Beis, *pr. s. as fut.* shall be, will be, 10. 576, 11. 299, 19. 300; *imp. pl.* be ye, 11. 562.
- Bekand, *pres. pt.* baking, 19. 552.
- Belewyt, *pt. s.* remained, continued, 13. 544 (E.).
- Belif, *adv.* quickly, soon, 10. 238, 481; Beliff, 17. 30. A.S. *be life*, by (or with) life.
- Bemys, *s. pl.* beams, 4. 704.
- Bend, *v.* to set an engine for casting stones, 17. 682, 690; *pt. s.* Bendit, 17. 672.
- Be-neth, *adv.* beneath, 10. 637; *prep.* 11. 286, 537.
- Beneuth, *for Beneth*, i. e. beneath, 10. 86 (E.).
- Benewth, *prep.* beneath, 11. 286 (E.), 13. 378 (E.). See Beneth.
- Benisoun, *s.* blessing, 2. 131.
- Benk, *s.* bench, 7. 238 (E.). See Bynk.
- Ber, *v.* to bear, carry, 1. 617, 3. 409, 9. 505, 11. 598; Bere, 5. 575; *pr. s.* Beris, 1. 560, 4. 549; *pres. pt.* Berand, 13. 71.
- Berdlass, *adj.* beardless, 11. 217.
- Berfroiss, *s.* a tower, 10. 708. Originally, a sort of watch-tower. O.F. *beffroi*, *berfroit*, from O.H.G. *bercrvit*, a watch-tower. Corrupted in modern English into *belfry*.
- Berne, *s.* a barn, 4. 38.
- Bery, *v.* to bury, 20. 598; Berye, 13. 663; *pp.* Beryit, 10. 489; Beriit, 20. 299.
- Berynes, *s.* burial, 4. 334. A.S. *byrignes*, a burial (Bosworth).
- Besaly, *adv.* busily, 9. 149, 10. 499, 17. 332; Besely, 8. 512.
- Best, *adj. sup.* best, 4. 94; see note.
- Best, *s.* beast, 18. 283 (E.).
- Bestiall, *an error in C. for Vessell*, 13. 448\*.
- Besyd, *prep.* beside, 11. 442.
- Besynes, *s.* busy action, painstaking activity, 2. 587, 10. 514.
- Bet, *v.* to beat, 13. 158, 15. 50.
- Bet, *pt. pl.* mended, increased, 19. 497. A.S. *bētan*, to better, mend, repair; from *bōt*, advantage.
- Bet, *a misreading for Let*, 1. 254 (footnote).
- Betane, *pp.* pursued, 3. 159. As *tane* is the pp. of *take*, so *betane* is the pp. of *betake*. The sense is shewn in Ælfric's Colloquy (Thorpe's Analecta, p. 21), where *ic betæce wildeor* translates *inse-*

- quor feras.* Jamieson suggests "surrounded," quite forgetting that *týnan*, to surround, is a *weak verb*.
- Betaucht, *pt. s.* handed over, delivered, 1. 610. *See Beteche.*
- Beteche, *v.* to commit, 15. 538; *pt. s.* Betaucht, delivered, committed, 1. 610, 5. 139, 10. 120, 20. 351; *pp.* Betaucht, 11. 325. A.S. *betæcan*, to commit.
- Betreys, *v.* to betray, 4. 23, 5. 529 (E.); Betraiss, 5. 539, 14. 343; *pp.* Betresyt, 4. 17; Betrasyt, 4. 27. From O.F. *trair* (F. *trahir*); with prefix *be-*.
- Betuix, *prep.* between, 3. 109, 118, 6. 211, 13. 337; Betux, 7. 159; Betwyx, 1. 81. A.S. *betweox*.
- Betyd, *pr. pl. subj.* may happen, 11. 224.
- Bewte, *s.* beauty, 11. 479, 19. 397.
- Beyme, *s.* beam, 11. 190.
- Beyn, *pp.* been, 1. 527, 5. 276, 12. 544, 15. 198, 16. 658; Beyne, 13. 49, 19. 164. *See Be.*
- Bibill, the bible, 1. 466.
- Biddin, *pp.* bidden, 6. 91\*, 19. 450.
- Biddyng, *s.* command, 16. 312.
- Biggit, *pt. s.* built, 5. 457; *pp.* built, 16. 338; built on, inhabited, cultivated, 14. 383. Icel. *byggja*, to build. *See Byg.*
- Bikkyr, *v.* to annoy by skirmishing, 16. 102, 19. 334. Welsh *bicr*, a battle, skirmish. *See Bykkir.*
- Bikkyrring, *s.* skirmishing, 9. 343.
- Blamyd, *pt. pl.* blamed, 12. 90.
- Blasis, *s. pl.* blazes, 4. 129.
- Blast, *s.* blast, 4. 142.
- Blaw, *v.* to blow (horns), 3. 484; to blow, 15. 278, 17. 460; *pr. s.* Blawis, manifests, 4. 122; *pres. pt.* Blawaund, blowing, 3. 702; *pp.* Blawen, 17. 471.
- Blenknyt, *pt. s.* blinked, glanced, 8. 217; shone, 11. 190. Formed from the stem *blink-*, with suffix *-nen*, used in general to form verbs of a neuter or passive sense; cf. the Goth. suffix *-nan*.
- Blenkyt, *pt. s.* looked aside (lit. blinked), 6. 633; looked up, 7. 203; Blenked, glanced, shone, 8. 217 (H.), 11. 190 (H.). Du. and G. *blinden*, A.S. *blican*, to shine.
- Blesis, *s. pl.* blazes, flames, 4. 138; 4. 129 (*footnote*). *See Blasis.*
- Blith, *adj.* blithe, glad, 7. 273, 13. 120, 14. 380, 17. 179, 19. 606.
- Blithar, *adj.* blither 16. 486. *See above.*
- Blithly, *adv.* blithely, 16. 26.
- Blithlyer, *adv.* more blithely, 8. 457.
- Blomyt, *pt. s.* bloomed (*a bad reading for blenkyt*), 11. 190 (E.).
- Blude, *s.* blood, 5. 405, 9. 732.
- Bludy, *adj.* bloody, 10. 682.
- Blwmys, *s. pl.* blooms, flowers, 5. 10.
- Blyth, *adj.* blithe, 1. 389. *See Blith.*
- Bodword, *s.* a message, 15. 423. Lit. *bode-word*.
- Bodyn, *pp.* bidden (to battle), challenged to fight, 7. 103. A.S. *beódan*, to bid, pp. *boden*.
- Boist, *s.* noise, 4. 122 (*footnote*). *See Bost.*
- Bollis, *s.* bushels, lit. bowls, i.e. bowlfuls, 3. 211. Wyntoun uses the same word in telling the same story.
- Bolning, *pres. pt.* swelling, 3. 699 (*footnote*).
- Bonat, *s.* bonnet, 9. 506.
- Born, *pp.* borne, 11. 590.
- Borwch, *s.* pledge, 1. 625; Borwch, 1. 628. A.S. *borh*, a pledge.
- Bost, *s.* noise, brag, boast, arrogance, 4. 122; insolence, 9. 231. W. *bost*, a brag.
- Bot, *conj.* but, 1. 261; unless, 3.

- 518; *adv.* only, 1. 289, 15. 347\*; Bot and = as well as, 5. 595; Bot gif = unless, 10. 462, 16. 304, 17. 772.
- Bot, *prep.* without, 5. 91; besides, 18. 18.
- Boune, *adj.* ready, prepared, 2. 160, 3. 693, 4. 578, 9. 419, 12. 327, 14. 175, 19. 701. Icel. *búinn*, prepared; pp. of *búa*, to prepare.
- Bounte, bounty, goodness, excellence, 1. 31; a deed of valour, 3. 132; welfare, 2. 48; bounty, 11. 88; valour, 12. 186, 16. 516, 17. 919, 18. 567.
- Boarding, *pres. pt.* jesting, 2. 34 (*footnote*). See *boord* in Chaucer.
- Bow, 2 *p. s. pr. subj.* bow, bend; *bow it* = (either) bow to it, submit to it, (or else) incline it, i.e. give way, 9. 753. The sense is much the same.
- Bow-draucht, *s.* a bow-shot, arrow's flight, 7. 19, 8. 169, 9. 579; used as *pl.* 6. 58. Lit. *bow-draught*.
- Bown, *pp.* prepared, ready, 5. 322, 19. 434; Bowne, 11. 65, 15. 9. See Boune.
- Bown, *v. refl.* to get themselves ready, 19. 247; *pt. s.* Bownyt, made ready, 20. 308. A secondary verb, formed from the pp. *boun* or *bown*. See Boune.
- Bowndis, *s. pl.* bounds, borders, 10. 505.
- Bowning, a reading in H. for Lukand, 3. 579 (*footnote*). *Bowning* means 'making themselves ready'; the reading can hardly be right.
- Bownte, *s.* bounty, goodness, 11. 178; valour, 7. 372. See Bounte.
- Bowrdand, *pres. pt.* jesting, 8. 383. See Bourding.
- Bow-schote, *s.* a bowshot, 12. 33 (E. and H.). See Bowdraucht.
- Boyis, *s. pl.* gyves, 10. 763. Lat. *boia*, O.Fr. *buie*, a fetter. See note to l. 680 of Vie de Saint Auban, ed. R. Atkinson.
- Bra, *s.* brae, hill, steep bank, 3. 109, 4. 372, 6. 147, 18. 365, 446, 454, 463; *pl.* Braiss, 13. 337; Brayis, 6. 77.
- Brad, *adj.* broad, 3. 467. See Braid.
- Bradar, *adj. comp.* broader, 4. 128.
- Braid, *adj.* broad, 1. 386; 7. 109, 8. 57, 10. 266, 11. 122, 19. 313.
- Brak, *pt. pl.* broke, kept off, 4. 137; broke, 4. 414 (and see note to 4. 711); *pt. pl.* 12. 396.
- Brand, *s.* sword, 5. 647, 8. 83, 87. Icel. *brandr*, a brand; also, a sword-blade.
- Brandis, *s.* fire-brands, 17. 705. See above.
- Brast, *v.* to burst, break, 15. 479; *pt. s.* burst, 4. 129; *pt. pl.* 12. 545. A.S. *berstan*, to burst.
- Bra-syd, hill-side, 3. 127. See above.
- Brawle, *v.* to contend, strive, 1. 573; Brawll, to fall into confusion, 12. 131; *pres. pt.* Brawland, wavering, 11. 131 (E.).
- Brayis, *s. pl.* braes, banks, 6. 77. See Bra.
- Bredis, *pr. pl.* spread out, extend themselves, 16. 68. A.S. *brédan*, to extend, spread. [Not explained by Jamieson.]
- Breid, *s.* breadth, 1. 531, 16. 383; *on breid*, in breadth, 12. 440, 19. 739. A.S. *brædu*, breadth.
- Brek, *v.* to break, 9. 322, 10. 88, 11. 645, 12. 464. *Brek aray*, to break the ranks, 12. 217. *Pres. pt.* Brekand, 3. 699.
- Brest, *pt. s.* burst, 2. 352. A.S. *brestan*, *berstan*, to burst. See Brist, Brast.
- Brethir, *s. pl.* brethren, 3. 93. See Broder.
- Brightly, *adv.* brightly, 12. 426. See Brycht.
- Bridill, *s.* bridle, 11. 173. See Brydill.

- Brig, *s.* bridge, 10. 86, 17. 923.  
*See* Bryg.
- Briggit, *pp.* bridged over, 12. 404 ;  
*pt. pl.* Brigged, 19. 742 (*footnote*).
- Brighouss, *s.* a bridge-house, 17.  
409. Perhaps a toll-house.
- Brist, *pt. s.* broke, burst, 8. 87, 12.  
559, 15. 481. *See* Brest, Brast.
- Bristing, *s.* bursting, breaking, 13.  
155, 16. 158. *See above.*
- Brocht, *pt. s.* brought, 11. 221 ;  
*pp.* 2. 197, 14. 451. *See* Brought.
- Brodir, brother, 2. 19 ; Brodyr, 2.  
22. *See* Brethir.
- Broilȝit, *reading in E. for Brulȝeit*,  
4. 151 (*footnote*).
- Brokyn, *pp.* broken, 12. 98.
- Brought, *pp.* brought, 20. 194.  
*See* Brocht.
- Browdyn, *pp.* braided, embroidered,  
8. 229, 11. 464. A.S. *bregdan*, to  
braid ; *pp. brogden, bródcn.*
- Bruk, *v.* to enjoy, 5. 236, 20. 132  
(E.) ; *ger.* Brûke, 19. 9 ; *pres. s.*  
Brukis, 5. 232. A.S. *brúcan* ; cf.  
Lat. *frui*. *See* Brwk.
- Brulȝeit, *pt. s.* broiled, scorched,  
4. 151.
- Brundis, *s. pl.* brands, burnt logs,  
17. 705 (E.).
- Brwk, *v.* enjoy, possess, 20. 132.  
*See* Bruk.
- Brycht, *adv.* brightly, 8. 46. *See*  
Brichtly.
- Brydill, *s.* bridle, 2. 425. *See*  
Bridill.
- Bryg, *s.* bridge, 15. 134 ; *pl.*  
Bryggis, 12. 397. *See* Brig.
- Brym, *s.* brim, edge of a lake, 14.  
339.
- Bryn, *ger.* to burn, 15. 438 (E.) ;  
*pres. pt.* Brynnand, 17. 834 (E.) ;  
*pt. s.* Brynt, 5. 413, 13. 737, 15.  
513 ; *pp.* Bryant, 17. 457, 467.
- Brynstane, *s.* brimstone, 17. 612.
- Buk, book, 1. 33, 525.
- Bule, *s.* bull, 18. 275 (E.).
- Bundin, *pp.* bound, 5. 300, 10. 361 ;  
Bundy, 7. 115.
- Burchis, *s. pl.* boroughs, towns, 4.  
213.
- Burd, *s.* board, boarded roof, 4.  
126 ; *pl.* Burdis, movable tables, 5.  
388 ; Burdys, 2. 96. To *lay burdis*  
*down* is to set aside the tables  
when the feast is over.
- Burdowys, *s. pl.* club-bearers,  
fighters with maces (?), 17. 236  
(E.). Cf. O.F. *bohorder*, to tilt.  
Jamieson suggests the above ex-  
planation ; but the reading is, I  
think, corrupt.
- Burgeony, *s. pl.* shoots, buds, 5.  
10.
- Burgess, *s.* burgess, 16. 80, 17. 23,  
326.
- Burn, *s.* bourn, stream, 7. 39, 78.
- Burne, *v.* to burn, 15. 438. *See*  
Bryn, Byrne.
- Burnyst, *pp.* burnished, 8. 225, 11.  
462, 12. 441, 13. 40.
- Buschement, *s.* an ambush, 4. 414,  
6. 415, 8. 442, 10. 204, 18. 299 (E.).  
Cf. O.F. *embuschement*, an ambus-  
cade.
- Bushed, *pp.* set in ambush, 10. 204  
(H.). Cf. O.F. *embuscher*, to set  
an ambush.
- Busk, *s. a* bush, 7. 71, 13. 519.  
Low Lat. *boscus, buscus.*
- Busk, *v.* to prepare oneself, get  
ready, 9. 358, 11. 394 ; *pt. s.* Buskit,  
got ready, 1. 142, 2. 566, 3. 569, 8.  
409, 9. 225, 565, 16. 684, 19. 512 ;  
began, 7. 492 ; went, 10. 404 ; *pt.*  
*pl.* Buskit, got ready, 6. 454 ; *pp.*  
Buskit, prepared, equipped, 9. 173,  
11. 435, 12. 413, 19. 321. Icel.  
*búast* (for *búash*), to prepare one-  
self, from *búa*. Not Celtic ; only a  
borrowed word in Gaelic.
- But, *prep.* without, 1. 74, 115 ; 2.  
179, 3. 66, 5. 30, 11. 278, 12. 266,  
15. 415, 18. 543, &c. ; besides, 10.  
85. *But persaving*, without being  
seen, 17. 92.

- But, *adv.* however, 2. 438. (The reading is perhaps corrupt.)
- Bwnte, *s.* goodness, 10. 294.
- By, *prep.* near; *the by*, by thee, near thee, 7. 257; with reference to, 19. 685.
- By, *adv.* beside, near, aside, 6. 633, 667; 13. 12.
- By, *v.* to buy; *by sair*, pay dearly for, 18. 514, to ransom, 17. 336.
- Bydding, *s.* bidding, order, 11. 279, 16. 112; *pl.* Byddingis, commands, 12. 385.
- Byg, *v.* to build, 5. 453. *See* Biggit.
- Bykkir, *v.* to skirmish with, annoy, 9. 152; *pt. pl.* Bykkirit, 9. 154, 10. 811, 16. 104, 144. *See* Bikkyr.
- Bynk, *s.* bench, 7. 238. *See* Benk.
- Byrd, *pt. s. reflex.* it behoved, 6. 316. Icel. *byrja*, to behave; cf. svá *byrjaði* Christo að líða, so it behoved Christ to suffer, Luke xxiv. 46.
- Byrkis, *s. pl.* birch-trees, 16. 394.
- Byrne, *v.* to burn, 17. 431 (E.); Byrn, 17. 525; *pres. pt.* Byrnand, 4. 619, 17. 442, 18. 553, 19. 662. *See* Bryn, Burne.
- Byrnys, *s. pl.* birnies, i. e. breast-plates, 2. 352; Byrneiss, 12. 559. A.S. *byrne*, a corslet, cuirass, coat-of-mail.
- Byrth, *s.* birth, 6. 184.
- Cald, *adj.* cold, 20. 76; Cauld, 3. 377.
- Call, *v.* to drive, 10. 227; *pt. s.* Callit, drove, 10. 223; *hence*, Call all! *interj.* (meaning) drive on all, 10. 178, 231. Cf. Scottish 'to *caw* a nail,' i. e., to *drive* it. The use of the word is curious. I see no connection with Dan. *hage*, to lash; as suggested by Jamieson.
- Callyt, *pt. s.* called, 1. 604, 16. 674; *pt. pl.* Callit, 13. 466, 16. 343; *pp.* Callit, 10. 456, 13. 695, 17. 586.
- Campioun, *s.* champion, hero, 15. 60.
- Can, *pt. s.* did (*auxiliary*), 1. 330, 3. 27, 15. 136; *pt. pl.* did, 12. 66, 15. 4. This use is common; cf. Chaucer's use of *gan*.
- Cant, *adj.* brisk, 8. 280. Cf. modern Scottish *canty*, brisk, lively. The word occurs in Minot's Poems; see Gloss. to Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat.
- Capitale, *adj.* capital, i. e. deadly, 3. 2.
- Capitane, *s.* captain, 6. 431, 8. 452 15. 112; *pl.* Capitanys, 11. 520.
- Capitole, Capitol, 1. 543.
- Car, *s.* grief, sorrow (lit. care), 20. 586.
- Carbuncle, *an error for* Qwyrbolle, q. v., 12. 22 (H.).
- Cariage, *s.* baggage, 11. 238. A common use of the word. It occurs in our Bible. *See* Caryage.
- Cariage-men, *s. pl.* baggage-carriers, 8. 275.
- Carioune, *s.* carcase, 20. 573; O.F. *caroigne*, F. *charogne*; from Lat. *caro*, flesh.
- Carll, *s.* churl, peasant, 19. 608; Carle, 10. 158. Icel. *karl*, a man; cf. A.S. *ceorl*, a churl.
- Carpand, *pres. pt.* talking, 10. 397, 630. Apparently introduced from Lat. *carpere*.
- Carpynge, *s.* speaking, relation, 1. 6; Carping, discourse, 1. 503, 4. 668, 10. 578; narrative, 17. 493. See above.
- Cartis, *s. pl.* carts, 11. 114.
- Cartit, *pp.* carted, carried, 15. 97.
- Caryage, *s.* baggage, 15. 19. *See* Cariage.
- Caryand, *pres. pt.* carrying, 19. 723; *pp.* Caryit, 16. 287, 15. 97 (E.).
- Carying, *s.* carrying, 19. 726.
- Cass, *s.* case, 1. 52, 20. 304; chance,

- good hap, 2. 24; chance, 10. 694; fortune, 3. 638; circumstance, 1. 562, 6. 9, 7. 286. F. *cas*, Lat. *casus*.
- Cassidoune, *an error for Cristendome*, 11. 471 (C.); *footnote*.
- Cast, *s.* throw, overthrow, 14. 321.
- Castell, *s.* castle, 11. 363; Castelle, 11. 444.
- Cataill, *s.* property, chattels, especially small moveables, 3. 735; Catele, cattle, 18. 249; Catell, wealth, 5. 275; Cattale, cattle, 6. 399.
- Catiff, *s.* caitiff, wretch, 18. 514.
- Cauld, *s.* cold, 3. 377, 383. See Cald.
- Causè, *s.* causeway, 18. 140, 146 (E.). See Cawse.
- Causs, cause, 1. 280, 9. 25; reason, 19. 558; *causs has mad*, i. e. have fought, 12. 122.
- Cawsè, *s.* causey, cause-way, 18. 128, 140; Cawsee, 18. 146. O.F. *chaucie* (F. *chaussée*), from Lat. *via calciata*; O.Fr. *cauch*, *chauc*, chalk; Lat. *calx*. The Eng. *cause-way* is a modern corruption of M. E. *causey*.
- Certante, certainty, 7. 501, 11. 435.
- Certis, *adv.* certainly, 1. 21.
- Cess, *v.* to cease, 19. 2; *pt. s.* Cesit, 5. 115.
- Chak-wachis, *s. pl.* check-watches, 10. 613. It probably means the men who came to relieve guard, or who went round to inspect the guards. Cf. “To *chak* the wache;” Wallace, viii. 817.
- Challanss, *s.* challenge, 8. 82.
- Challanss, *v.* to accuse, arraign, 19. 60. O.F. *chalonger*, to accuse; Lat. *calumniare*.
- Chalmer, *s.* a chamber, 5. 164, 287; Chalmyr, 11. 118; *chalmir-page*, chamber-page, 5. 580. See Chamur, Chawmer.
- Chamur, *s.* chamber, 2. 59;
- Chamyr, retiring-room, 2. 97. See above.
- Chancell, *s.* the chancel, 5. 348; Chanser, 5. 356, 366.
- Changit, *pt. pl.* changed, 7. 127; *pp.* Changit, 13. 682, 19. 524; exchanged, 13. 687.
- Chans, *s.* chance, 4. 396; Chanss, 20. 58.
- Chaplet, *s.* chaplet, garland, crown, 11. 546.
- Chaptour of mytoune, i. e. chapter of Mitton, 17. 587.
- Chapyt, *pp.* escaped; *chapyt was*, had escaped, 2. 24.
- Char, a misprint in some editions for Thar, 8. 257 (*footnote*); 12. 300 (*footnote*). See Thar.
- Char, for Charre, q. v., 11. 123 (E.). The reading *char* is wrong.
- Charge, business, 1. 141.
- Chargeand, *pres. pt.* overwhelming, full, profuse, 16. 458. See below.
- Chargit, *pp.* loaded, 4. 406, 11. 116, 15. 108; burdened, 4. 344; oppressed, overburdened, 13. 317; commanded, 16. 10; bidden, 20. 202; filled, 10. 187, 191. F. *charger*.
- Charre, *s.* array of chariots or waggons, 11. 123. The word is disyllabic—*char-rè*. Cf. modern F. *charroi*, a baggage-train.
- Chas, *s.* chase, 7. 81; Chass, 7. 81, 9. 529.
- Chass, *v.* to chase, pursue, 3. 53, 6. 435, 14. 445; *pr. s.* Chassis, 13. 376; *pt. s.* Chassit, 19. 375, 20. 431; Chasit, 9. 524; Chassy, 2. 442; Chasit on, continued the chase, 6. 416; *pt. pl.* Chassit, 9. 276, 15. 381, 16. 637, 20. 429; Chasit, 14. 129, 16. 642; Chast, 18. 482; *pp.* Chassit, 10. 99, 15. 510, 17. 582. F. *chasser*.
- Chassand, *pres. pt.* chasing, 7. 88, 20. 433. See above.
- Chassaris, *s. pl.* chasers, pursuers,

3. 52, 6. 439, 20. 439 ; Chasseris, 3. 82 ; Chaseris, 7. 91.
- Chassing, *s.* chasing, chase, 7. 83.
- Chasty, *v.* to chasten ; *him chasty*, chasten himself, improve himself, 1. 122 ; 2 *p. pr. pl.* ye reprove, 9. 742 ; *pt. s. subj.* may reprove, 9. 751 ; *pp.* Chastyit, reproved, 9. 743. O.F. *chastier*, Lat. *castigare*.
- Chawmer, *s.* chamber, 15. 164 (E.). *See* Chalmir, Chamur.
- Chaynge, *s.* exchange, 19. 379.
- Cheik, *s.* cheek, 6. 627.
- Cheir, *s.* cheer, hospitality, 9. 728 ; *sary cheir*, evil cheer, 19. 83. *See* Cher.
- Cheiss, 1 *p. s. pr.* I choose, 13. 307. *See* Chess, Cheyss.
- Chekys, *s. pl.* gate-posts, 10. 229.
- Chemer, *s.* a loose gown, 16. 580 (E.), 16. 601 ; Chemeyr, 16. 580. See note to 16. 580, p. 600.
- Chenzeis, *s. pl.* chains, 17. 623 (E.). See above, and see Cheyne.
- Chenyie, *s.* chain, i.e. trace (of harness), 10. 233 (H.) ; *pl.* Chenyies, traces, 10. 180 (H.). See below.
- Cher, *s.* cheer, look, mien, 2. 34, 11. 500 ; *gud cher*, good cheer, good entertainment, 2. 6 ; *enill cher*, great sorrow (outwardly shewn), 13. 479. *See* Cheir.
- Cheryte, charity, 1. 418 ; *per cherite*, for charity, 7. 537.
- Chess, *v.* to choose, 8. 163 ; *pt. s.* Chesit, chose, 6. 114 ; *pt. pl.* Chesit, 11. 516 ; Chesyt, 2. 518 ; *pp.* Chesyt, 4. 219 (footnote). A.S. *ceasan*. *See* Cheiss, Cheyss.
- Cheuelrous, *adj.* chivalrous, brave, 9. 536 ; Cheuelruss, 11. 167, 19. 102 ; Chewalrouss, 9. 536 (E.).
- Cheuelry, *s.* a company of knights, body of cavalry, 4. 187, 6. 458, 7. 504, 14. 508 ; a feat of arms, brave deed, exploit, 6. 12, 9. 584 ; bravery, 9. 536. *See* Chewalry.
- Chewalrusly, *adj.* chivalrously, valorously, 3. 83, 266. *See* Cheuelrous.
- Chewalry, chivalry, 1. 25, 2. 214 ; a body of knights, cavalry, 2. 210, 224. *See* Cheuelry.
- Chewiske, *s.* provision, 3. 402. M.E. *cheuisance*, what is acquired ; from O.F. *chevir*, to acquire, accomplish.
- Cheviss, *v. for* Cheviss, i.e. to achieve, 7. 427 (E.). O.F. *chevir*, to achieve, acquire, accomplish.
- Cheyff, chief, 1. 154. *Hald in cheyff*, hold in chief. “*Tenere in capite, i.e. Tenere de Rege, omnium terrarum capite*, was a tenure which held of the King immediately, as of his crown, were it by Knights service or socage.”— Blount’s Nomo-Lexicon.
- Cheyne, *s.* chain, 17. 623. *See* Chenyie.
- Cheyss, *v.* to choose, 1. 43. *See* Cheiss, Chess.
- Chiftane, *s.* a chieftain, captain, 6. 317, 15. 387, 17. 562 ; *pl.* Chiftanis, 9. 521 ; Chyftanys, 2. 226.
- Child-ill, *s.* travail, pains of labour, 16. 274 (E.) ; Child-euill, 16. 274 (H.). *See* Childyne.
- Childir, *s. pl.* children, 15. 536, 17. 820.
- Childrome, *an error in C. for* Schilrum, 12. 429, 433 (footnotes) ; 15. 354\*. *See* Schilrum.
- Childyne, *s.* childing, i.e. travail with child, 16. 274.
- Choss, *s.* choice, 3. 264.
- Chosyn, *pp.* chosen, 20. 212. *See* Chess, Cheiss.
- Chyftanys, *s. pl.* chieftains, 2. 226. *See* Chiftane.
- Claif, *pt. s.* clove, cleft, 5. 644 ; Clafe, 5. 633 ; Clave, 3. 138 ; *pl.* Claff, 13. 148.
- Clam, *pt. s.* climbed, 6. 241, 9. 316, 10. 49, 602, 644 ; *pl.* 10. 63, 605, 633 ; Clambe, 18. 451 (H.).

- Cite, *s.* city, 3. 213, 14. 191.  
 Clame, *s.* claim, 20. 48.  
 Clamys, *pr. s.* claims, 2. 104; *pt. s. subj.* Clamyd, should claim, 13. 724. *See Clemys.*  
 Clap, *s.* noise, 10. 401.  
 Clath, *s.* cloth, 11. 153; *pl.* Clathis, 5. 388.  
 Clave, *pt. s.* clove, 3. 138. *See Claiſ.*  
 Cled, *pt. s.* clad, clothed, 1. 357.  
 Cleir, *adj.* clear, 9. 588.  
 Cleiry, *adv.* clearly, 6. 100, 7. 352, 10. 591, 12. 184.  
 Cleket, *s.* clicket, holdfast, 10. 401; a trigger, catch, 17. 674. F. *cliquet*, a catch.  
 Clemys, *pr. s.* claims, desires, 1. 417. *See Clamys.*  
 Clene, *adj.* good, 11. 427.  
 Clengit, *pt. pl.* cleansed, i. e. cleared, 8. 92; emptied, 15. 508, 18. 213.  
 Clenly, *adv.* wholly, entirely, 11. 96, 98\*; excellently, 6. 406. *See Cleyn.*  
 Cler, *adj.* clear, 11. 188.  
 Clergy, *s.* learning, 4. 689.  
 Clerkis, *s. pl.* clerks, learned men, 1. 249.  
 Clething, *s.* clothing, clothes, 4. 398, 5. 394.  
 Cleue, *an error in J. for Clene*, 10. 124 (*footnote*), 10. 471 (*footnote*).  
 Clewch, *s.* a hollow, 16. 386.  
 Cleyn, *adj.* clear, empty, void, 13. 443; Cleyne, clean, fine, excellent, 11. 141. *See Clene.*  
 Cleyn, *adv.* entirely, 16. 462, 18. 239; cleyn and law, wholly and to the bottom, 10. 124; see the note.  
 Climatis, *s. pl.* climates, 4. 701.  
 Closs, *v.* to close, 11. 277; *pt. pl.* Closit, closed, 17. 444; *pp.* Closit, enclosed, 10. 221, 17. 329; Closyt, 3. 534.  
 Club, *s.* a club, 19. 586.  
 Clummyn, *pp.* climbed, 10. 606; Clumbene, 10. 650 (E.). *See Clym.*  
 Clym, *v.* to climb, 9. 410, 10. 406, 525, 544, 637; *pres. pt.* Clymande, 10. 475; *pp.* Clymen, 10. 648.  
 Clymbyng, *s.* climbing, ascent, 10. 595.  
 Coffeir, *s.* a coffer; *a bad reading in E. for Awmener*, 8. 490 (*foot-note*).  
 Colè, *s.* a buffet, 7. 623. *See the note.*  
 Collaterale, *adj.* collateral, 1. 56.  
 Colowris, *s. pl.* colours, 16. 70.  
 Com, *s.* coming, approach, arrival, 16. 39, 10. 457, 18. 296; Come, 14. 400, 19. 7.  
 Com, *pt. pl.* came, 8. 11, 12. 548, 16. 161; *pt. pl.* Comme, 11. 480.  
 Combrowss, *adj.* difficult to pass over, 10. 25 (E.).  
 Combryt, *pp.* encumbered, 11. 198 (E.); harassed, 15. 31 (E.); spelt Cumbryt, 15. 40 (E.).  
 Come, *s.* coming, 19. 7. *See Com.*  
 Comford, *for Confortit*, 11. 494 (E.).  
 Commandyne, commandment, order, 1. 256.  
 Communitie, *s.* the commonalty, the commons, 20. 128\*.  
 Commoune, *adj.* common, 20. 155; *s. in phr. into commoune*, in common, openly, 11. 484.  
 Commownys, *s. pl.* commons, 2. 497, 501.  
 Comonly, *adv.* commonly, 7. 294, 11. 248; alike, 12. 304; openly, 17. 799; generally, 15. 160; together, 9. 623.  
 Comper, *v.* to compare, 1. 403.  
 Comperying, comparison, 1. 261.  
 Compositur, arbiter in a dispute, umpire, 1. 88.  
 Compyling, *s.* compilation, 13. 699.  
 Conabill, *adj.* suitable, convenient,

5. 266; fitting, advisable, 3. 290. This has no connection with the Lat. *conabilis*, difficult (which gives no sense), as Jamieson wrongly imagined; but is a corruption of O.F. *covenable* (= *convenable*), suitable. See *Conable* in Halliwell, who explains it rightly.
- Conand**, *s.* covenant, 1. 561. Contracted like the word above. *See Cunnand.*
- Concordyt**, *pt. pl.* agreed, 1. 71.
- Condampnyt**, *pp.* condemned, 4. 26.
- Confort**, *v.* to comfort, 4. 316, 11. 486; *pt. s.* Confortit, 11. 494, 15. 371; Confortyt, 3. 365; encouraged, 8. 119, 14. 84; Confort, assisted, 5. 178; *pp.* Confortyt, 2. 586.
- Coniunctione**, *s.* conjunction, 4. 695.
- Coniuracioune**, *s.* (1) conjuration, 4. 233; *pl.* Coniuraciones, 4. 749; (2) a conspiracy, 19. 6.
- Connand**, *s.* covenant, 11. 1 (E.). *See Conand.*
- Conqueissed**, *pp.* conquered, 16. 325 (E.).
- Conquerit**, *pt. s.* conquered, 10. 707; *pp.* 16. 325.
- Conquest**, *v.* to conquer, 16. 315.
- Consaf**, *v.* conceive, understand, take in, 4. 269.
- Consaile**, *s.* (1) council, 1. 603; Consale, 5. 481; Consell, 5. 480, 11. 270; (2) Consall, counsel, 7. 546, 11. 154; Consale, 9. 166, 19. 766.
- Consalit**, *pt. s.* advised, 13. 377, 17. 854; *pl.* 18. 64.
- Consauit**, *pp.* conceived, 20. 186. *See Consaf.*
- Consentit**, *pt. s.* consented, 10. 196; *pp.* agreed, 10. 820.
- Conspyr**, *v.* to conspire, 1. 574.
- Constabill**, *s.* constable, 6. 201, 8. 507.
- Constillaciuone**, *s.* constellation, 4. 720.
- Contenance**, *s.* outward demeanour, look, show, 1. 392, 482, 3. 676; Contenans, look, 11. 507; Contenanss, show, 16. 559; look, 7. 127; Contynans, 11. 219, 243, 249, 483. *See Countynans, Cuntyrnans.*
- Contenyng**, *s.* (lit. containing), behaviour, demeanour, 7. 387, 10. 284, 14. 179; Contynyng, 11. 241.
- Conteyn ȝow**, *imp. pl.* demean yourselves, 12. 316; *2 p. pl. pr. ye* demean yourselves, 12. 277; *pt. s.* Contenyt him, contained himself, demeaned himself, 1. 379, 20. 335; *pl.* Contentit thaim, demeaned themselves, 3. 448, 4. 98, 8. 312, 12. 562, 17. 129.
- Continit**, *pt. s.* continued, 8. 68; Continuit, 19. 235.
- Contrar**, *adj.* contrary, 1. 241, 18. 265.
- Contraryit**, *pt. s.* opposed, 3. 271, 9. 470; *pp.* Contraryt, defeated, 17. 123 (E.).
- Contrer**, *s.* contrariness, persecution, 1. 461; *in the contrer*, on the contrary, 17. 57.
- Contynyng**, *s.* demeanour, 11. 241. *See Contenyng.*
- Conueene**, *s.* agreement, 3. 102 (*footnote*).
- Conuictud**, *pp.* convinced, 4. 302 (*footnote*).
- Convoy**, *v.* to accompany, convoy, 5. 195; *pres. pt.* Convoyand, 18. 331; *pt. s.* Convoyit, 10. 486, 13. 585; *pp.* Convoyit, 13. 383, 15. 269, 20. 113.
- Conweyit**, *for Convoyit*, i. e. convoyed, attended, 13. 383 (E.). *See Convoy.*
- Conwoide**, *pt. s.* convoyed, accompanied, 10. 486 (E.). *See Convoy.*
- Conwyn**, *s.* agreement, 4. 111 (*footnote*); Conwyne, secret counsel, 5. 301 (E.). O.F. *covine*, secret agreement; from Lat. *conuenire*. *Perhaps Couwyn; see Coyne.*
- Cornys**, *s. pl.* crops of corn, 18. 188.

- See Chaucer, Monkes Tale, Group B, l. 3225.
- Cors, *s.* body, 20. 192. F. *corps*.
- Cost, *s.* coast, 16. 553; *pl.* Costis, coasts, 3. 579.
- Cosynage, *s.* kin, kindred, relationship, 5. 135.
- Cosyne, cousin, near relation, 12. 31, 17. 28; *pl.* Cosyngis, 8. 396, 11. 324.
- Cot-armour, *s.* coat-armour, 18. 95; *pl.* Cot-armouris, coat-armours, armorial devices, 8. 231.
- Couer, *v.* to recover, 9. 190; *pp.* Couerit, recovered, 9. 61, 145, 226; covered, 8. 332.
- Coueryng, *s.* recovery, 9. 113.
- Coueryngis, *s.* *pl.* coverings, 17. 343.
- Countynans, *s.* demeanour, 11. 197; mien, 11. 500; *be countinans*, to all appearance, 11. 496; *ill spelt* Counternans, favour, 9. 12. See Contenance.
- Coupillyt, *pp.* coupled, united, 4. 41.
- Courseris, *s.* *pl.* coursers, horses, 11. 518.
- Courss, *s.* course, career, 18. 316; Cours, 9. 611.
- Couth, *pt. s.* (1) could, 1. 464, 568, 20. 512; *pl.* 1. 82, 3. 431, 9. 38; *pt. s.* (2) as auxiliary, did, 3. 460, 20. 250; *pl.* 5. 97. See Can.
- Covatiss, *s.* covetousness, 12. 298, 19. 2.
- Covir, *v.* to cover, 4. 123.
- Covyne, *s.* counsel, 13. 122; plan, power to contrive, 9. 77; plight, 13. 219; Covyng, plot, 9. 14. O.F. *covine*, contrivance. See Cowyn, and Conwyn (better Couwyn?).
- Coward, *adj.* cowardly, 11. 508.
- Cowardiss, cowardice, 6. 338.
- Cowardy, *s.* cowardice, 1. 26, 7. 747 (E.). The right reading in the latter place is *voidre*. See Woidre.
- Cowart (E.), *adj.* cowardly, 11. 244.
- Cowardly, *adv.* in a cowardly manner, 3. 46.
- Cowatouss, *adj.* covetous, 1. 195.
- Cowert, *s.* a covert, hiding-place, 5. 557; *into covert*, in hiding, 6. 528.
- Cowir, *v.* to recover, 14. 321. See Couer.
- Cowplyt, *pp.* coupled, associated (with), 1. 236. See Coupillyt.
- Cowyne, *s.* counsel, 4. 610, 17. 423; agreement, 11. 230, 17. 27; plot, design, purpose, 3. 102, 4. 111, 7. 538; accord, 15. 343; skill, 13. 167; Cowyn, counsel, 10. 162, 673; accord, 5. 301. See Covyne.
- Cowyt, *an error in J. for to wyt*, 4. 217 (footnote). Not explained by Jamieson.
- Coyne, *s.* corner, coign, 18. 304 (E.). See Cunhe.
- Craft, *s.* skill, 4. 723.
- Craftis, *s.* *pl.* handicrafts, 19. 176.
- Craftyus, *adj.* crafty, ingenious, 10. 359 (C.).
- Crag, *s.* crag, rock, 10. 560, 594; *pl.* Craggis, 10. 606, 13. 431; Craig, 10. 633 (H.).
- Crakkis, *s.* *pl.* cracks, explosions; *gynis for crakkis*, engines for explosions, i.e. cannon, 17. 250; *crakkis of wer*, lit. cracks of war, i.e. cannon, 19. 399.
- Crane, *s.* crane, engine, 17. 608 (E. and H.); Cran, 17. 620 (E.); Cranes, war-engines, 17. 245 (E.). See Cren.
- Craues, *pr. s.* craves, asks, demands, 1. 334 (footnote).
- Cren, *s.* a crane, war-engine, 17. 608, 620. See Crane, Trammys.
- Criyt, *pt. s.* cried, 2. 383. See Cry.
- Croice, *s.* cross, 3. 461.
- Crooke-knet, *for Cleket, or Cruchet*, 10. 401 (H.). See Cleket, Cruchet.

- Crookes, *s. pl.* for Crykis, cracks in the rock, 10. 602, 605 (H.).
- Croune, *s.* crown (of thorns), 3. 460.
- Crownit, *pp.* crowned, 20. 130\*.
- Cruchet, *s.* a crotchet, i.e. little hook, 10. 41 (E.). F. *crochet*, a hook. *See* Cruk.
- Cruelly, *adv.* 14. 198.
- Cruk, *s.* a crook, large hook, 10. 363. F. *croc*, a hook.
- Cry, *an error in editions for Ky*, i.e. cows, 6. 405 (*footnote*).
- Cry, *v.* to cry aloud, 15. 497; *pres.* *pt.* Cryand, 16. 407; *pt. s.* Cryit, 10. 231, 19. 361; Criyt, 2. 383; *pl.* Cryit, 10. 658, 19. 457.
- Crykis, *s. pl.* creeks, crannies, crevices, 10. 602, 605. A.S. *crecca*, a creek.
- Crystyndome (E.), Christendom, 11. 471.
- Cuke, *s.* a cook, 5. 340.
- Culter, *s.* coulter, 4. 113.
- Cum, *v.* to come, 1. 585, 12. 230, 17. 637; Cum *zhe*, if ye come, 13. 365; *pres. pt.* Cumand, coming, 2. 342, 5. 604, 6. 467, 7. 111; Cumande, 9. 244; Cummand, 2. 290, 12. 16; *pr. s.* Cumis, 11. 22; Cummys, 1. 584; *pl.* 11. 283. *See* Cummyn.
- Cumbly, *adj.* comely, 11. 132 (E.).
- Cumbyrsum, *adj.* difficult to cross, 13. 351 (E.). *See* Cummeyrsum.
- Cummerit, *pt. s.* cumbered, hindered, embarrassed, 6. 141, 11. 299; routed, 6. 429; Cummerryt, embarrassed, 11. 198; Cummeyrrit, 14. 298, 15. 31.
- Cummyn, *pp.* come, descended, 1. 44; come, 2. 18, 3. 430, 7. 557, 16. 6; Cummyme, 17. 533, 20. 583. *See* Cum.
- Cummeyrrit, *pp.* encumbered, harassed, 14. 298, 15. 31. *See* Cummerit.
- Cummeyrsum, *adj.* cumbersome,
- difficult to pass over, 13. 351. *See* Cumrouss.
- Cummys, *pr. s.* comes, 1. 584; *pl.* come, 11. 283. *See* Cum.
- Cumrayd, *pt. pl.* encumbered, 15. 40; Cumrait, 13. 127; *pp.* Cum-rayit, harassed, 14. 550; overwhelmed, 17. 123; defeated, 12. 308.
- Cumrouss, *adj.* cumbrous, difficult of access, 10. 25. *See* Cummeyrsum.
- Cunnand, *s.* a covenant, agreement, 3. 759, 4. 177, 10. 201, 11. 1, 15. 261. *See* Conand, Cwnnand.
- Cunnannes, *s.* cunning, skill, 3. 712.
- Cuntre, *s.* country, 9. 302.
- Cuntyrnans, *s.* face, demeanour, 9. 273. *See* Contenance, Countynans.
- Cunȝhe, *s.* a coign, corner, 18. 304, 315. From Lat. *cuneus*, a wedge, is F. *coin*, a wedge, corner; also F. *cognée*, O.F. *coignee*, *coigne*, now only used in the sense of a hatchet, but Roquefort gives—“*Cvignés, coins*,” i.e. corners.
- Curage, courage, 6. 126.
- Curageous, *adj.* courageous, 10. 275\*.
- Cured, *pp.* cured, 9. 233 (H.).
- Curiouss, *adj.* curious, prying, 4. 687; painstaking, skilful, 10. 359; Curyuss, skilful, 10. 531 (E.).
- Curtasly, *adv.* courteously, 1. 354, 2. 154, 13. 531
- Curtass, *adj.* courteous, 8. 382, 9. 574; Curtaiss, 1. 362, 401.
- Custumabilly, *adv.* customarily, 15. 236.
- Cwn, *v.* to know, 19. 182. A.S. *cunnan*, to know.
- Cwnnand, *s.* covenant, 13. 542. *See* Cunnand.
- Cyre, *s.* leather, 12. 22 (E.). — See the note to the line.
- Daill, *s.* dale, 19. 317.
- Dang, *pt. s.* hit, struck, dealt

- (blows), 2. 382, 387; 8. 330; *pt. pl.* 8. 337, 12. 511, 13. 15, 16. 170; *dang on*, beat upon, 14. 65; hau-mered away, 5. 367. *See* Dyng.
- Danger, *s.* power to harm, 19. 709; *but dangeir*, without difficulty, 10. 196. *See* Daunger.
- Dansyng, *s.* dancing, 10. 438.
- Dante, Dantee, *s.* dainty, great pleasure, joy, 8. 101, 16. 529; great respect, 20. 104; affection, 13. 475; honour, 20. 289; eagerness, 12. 159.
- Dantit, *pt. s.* daunted, held in subjection, 4. 602; subdued, 15. 316.
- Daunger, *s.* power to harm, 2. 435, 3. 43. *See* Danger.
- Daw, *of*, out of day, i.e. out of life, 7. 132, 18. 156; *pl.* Dawis; *doyn out of dawis*, killed, 6. 650.
- Dawit, *pt. s.* dawned, 17. 102; *pp.* Dawyn, 4. 377.
- Dawnty, *pt. s.* subdued, 4. 602 (*footnote*); Dawyntit, 15. 316 (E.). *See* Dantit.
- Dawyng, *s.* dawning, early dawn, 7. 318; Dawing, 17. 634.
- Dayis, *s. pl.* days; *to drif his dayis*, to live on, 10. 699. *See* Daw.
- Daynte, *s.* pleasure, delight, 3. 499, 505; 16. 673, 17. 10; kindness, 2. 163; *in daynte*, with much pleasure, 5. 141. *See* Dante.
- De, *v.* to die, 4. 211, 5. 173, 8. 62, 9. 594, 10. 414; *1 p. s. pr.* De, I die, 5. 601; *pres. pt.* Deand, dying, 5. 369. *Icel. deyja. See* Deis.
- Debaid, *s.* delay, *a bad spelling of Abaid*, 10. 222 (E.).
- Debat, *s.* debate, strife, fight, combat, 1. 149, 2. 40, 10. 182, 11. 444, 17. 864, 18. 218, 19. 480; Debate, 4. 430, 8. 502. *F. débat*, contest.
- Debonarly, *adv.* courteously, 19. 126. *See* above.
- Deboner, *adj.* debonair, of fair de-meanour, 1. 362; Debonar, courteous, 10. 283, 20. 511; gentle, kind, 8. 381. *F. débonnaire.*
- Debowalit, *pp.* disembowelled, 20. 285; Debowellit, 20. 570.
- Ded, *s.* death, 1. 347, 4. 273, 11. 412, 12. 204, 19. 106; Dede, 3. 329, 4. 208, 5. 528, 15. 152, 17. 930; *pl.* Dedis, deaths, 17. 115. *Dan. död.*
- Dedeynȝeit him, *pt. s. reflex.* it deigned him, i.e. he deigned, 1. 376.
- Dedis, *s. pl.* actions, 1. 375; Dedys, 3. 131. *See* Deid.
- Defalt, *s.* lack, 14. 368, 19. 802; Defaut, want, scarcity, 2. 569, 3. 471; Defawt, 19. 802 (E.).
- Defame, *s.* diffame, blame, disgrace, 19. 12.
- Defaut, *s.* default, lack, want, 2. 569, 3. 471. *See* Defalt.
- Defawtyt, *pp.* adjudged to be cul-pable, convicted of default, 1. 182.
- Defendant, *pres. pt.* defending, 3. 42, 6. 240, 18. 196; *pt. s.* Defendant, 10. 710, 16. 491; *pl.* 11. 594, 12. 104, 17. 446; *pp.* 8. 188.
- Defendouris, *s. pl.* defenders, 17. 394.
- Defens, *s.* defence, 4. 144, 17. 366, 19. 569.
- Defensouris, *s. pl.* defenders, 17. 745.
- Defoull, *1 p. pl. pr.* may defile, 18. 56; *pp.* Defoulit, defiled, 13. 31; Defoulyt, 2. 359; Defowlit, 13. 184.
- Degradit, *pp.* degraded, 1. 182 (*footnote*); Degradyt, 1. 175.
- Degyse, *adj.* full of disguise, feigned, pretended, 19. 459 (*omit-ted in E.*). *F. déguisé*, disguised.
- Deid, deed, action, 1. 302, 10. 333, 18. 439; mode of action, 16. 323; act, 5. 278; *pl.* Dedis, 1. 375; Dedys, 3. 131.
- Deid, death, 1. 269. *See* Ded.
- Deid, *pp.* dead, 1. 37. *See* De.
- Deill, *v.* to deal (blows), 3. 32; to deal, 14. 486; to allot, 11. 50. *A.S. délan. See* Dele.

- Deill, *s. part*; *euirilk deill*, wholly, 16. 326, 18. 250; *nocht a deill*, not a bit, 10. 625.
- Deip, *adj.* deep, 8. 189, 10. 84, 11. 366. *See* Depe.
- Deir, *adj.* dear, 4. 268, 6. 171.
- Deir, *s. pl.* deer, 7. 497.
- Deis, *pr. s.* dies, 2. 340; *pt. s.* Deit, died, 4. 333, 10. 489, 18. 174; *pl.* Deit, 9. 284, 12. 83, 17. 583, 20. 415. *See* De.
- Delaying, *s.* delay, 15. 118.
- Dele, *v.* to deal, 1. 376, 2. 329; *pt. s.* Delit, 15. 516; *pl.* Delit, divided, 17. 559. *See* Deill, Delt.
- Delitabill, *adj.* delightful, pleasing, 1. 1. O.Fr. *delitable*.
- Deliuier, *adj.* nimble, 3. 737; *see* 10. 61.
- Deliuierit, *pp.* delivered, 9. 3, 18. 228.
- Deliueryl, *adv.* quickly, 3. 711, 8. 468, 10. 732; nimbly, 9. 566, 17. 650, 18. 138. *See* Delyuerly.
- Delt, *pt. s.* dealt, divided, 1. 535; *pl.* 18. 499; *pp.* 15, 169. *See* Dele.
- Delyuer, *adj.* nimble, 10. 61. *See* Deliuier.
- Delyuerly, *adv.* quickly, nimbly, 2. 142, 3. 122, 7. 206, 10. 49. *See* Deliueryl.
- Delyuir, *v.* to deliver, 1. 469; *pt. pl.* Delyueryt, 1. 475.
- Demanȝe, *ger. to* harry, spoil, waste, ill-treat, 20. 396; *pt. s.* Demanyt, directed, 15. 376; *pt. pl.* Demanit, ill-treated, harassed, 11. 624; *pp.* Demanit, treated, 5. 229. O.F. *demener*, to guide, conduct; also, to torment.
- Dempt, *pt. pl.* doomed, condemned, 1. 213; *pp.* condemned, 19. 58 (E.).
- Demynng, *s.* judgment, decision, 1. 116, 4. 716.
- Demys, *pr. s.* deems of, judges, 4. 328; *imp. pl.* Demys, judge ye, 6. 283; *pp.* Demyt, judged, 1. 213 (E.); adjudged, 19. 58. A.S. *dém-an*, to judge. *See* Dempt.
- Den, *v.* to dam up, 14. 354.
- Depart, *v.* to part, 6. 563; *pt. s.* Departit, 10. 40; *pt. pl.* Departit, 7. 626; *pt. s.* Departyt, broke off, 2. 169; *imp. pl.* 1 *p.* Departis, let us part, 6. 543; *pp.* Departit, separated, 5. 432, 11. 187; departed, 6. 552.
- Depe, *s.* the deep, the depths of the sea, 3. 711. *See* Deip.
- Der, *adj.* dear, 2. 144. *See* Deir.
- Der, *v.* to dare, hazard, 3. 382.
- Deray, *s.* disorder, damage, 15. 453. O.F. *desroi*, *derroi*, disorder, harm, damage. *See* roi in Burguy.
- Derenȝe, *v.* to decide by fighting, 9. 746. Chaucer has *darreynē*. O.F. *derainier*, to prove an accusation; *deraine*, a plea.
- Derenȝe, *s.* an attack, conflict, 13. 325; *pl.* Derenȝeis, conflicts, 13. 324. *See* above.
- Derff, *adj.* sturdy, bold, 18. 307. Icel. *djurfr*, bold, daring.
- Deris, *pr. s.* harms, injures, 3. 520. A.S. *derian*, to harm.
- Derrest, *adj.* dearest, 18. 283. *See* Der.
- Desaly, *adv.* dizzily, 6. 629, 7. 210.
- Descendand, *pres. part.* descending, 1. 61.
- Descroyit, *an error for* Discrivit, i. e. described, 13. 185 (E.).
- Despitiously, *adv.* cruelly, 13. 140\*.
- Destane, *s.* destiny, 5. 428.
- Desynaiss, *s.* dizziness, swoon, 18. 133.
- Det, debt, what is due, 1. 253; debt, 19. 209; *pl.* Dettis, 1. 262.
- Determinabiliy, *adv.* determinately, 4. 677.
- Determynatly, *adv.* certainly, 1. 129.
- Deuillis, *gen.* devil's, 7. 23.

- Deuirly, *s.* diabolical agency, 4. 690.
- Deuiss, *v.* to narrate, tell, relate, 4. 569, 11. 195; to decide, 12. 198; 1 *p. s. pr.* I tell, 10. 2, 11. 181, 13. 396, 16. 660; 2 *p. pl. pr.* ye propose, 12. 329; *pt. s.* Deuisit, proposed, 7. 25; made his will, 20. 309; *pt. pl.* planned, 14. 495, 16. 92; *pp.* Deuisit, divided, 11. 171; arrayed, 20. 406; planned, 10. 369. F. *deviser*, to talk.
- Deuiss, *s.* device, way; *at all deuiss*, in every way, 4. 264, 11. 349; *at thair deuiss*, according to their plan or wish, 10. 363.
- Deuotly, *adv.* devoutly, 11. 377.
- Deour, *s.* duty, 11. 430, 12. 587. F. *devoir*. See Dewour.
- Devysouris, *s. pl.* arrangers, stewards, 20. 72.
- Dewill, the, i. e. the devil, *an extraordinary error in E. for ilke deill*, 9. 686 (*footnote*).
- Dewour, *s.* duty, 11. 328. See Deour.
- Dey, *v.* to die, 1. 548, 3. 98; *pt. s.* Deyt, 1. 430, 2. 42. See De.
- Dicht, *v.* to dress, 14. 423; *pp.* Dicht, provided, equipped, arrayed, 8. 210, 11. 214, 16. 374; made ready, 7. 155; consigned, 15. 388. A.S. *dihtan*, to prepare.
- Did, *pt. s.* placed, put, threw, 4. 117.
- Digne, *adj.* worthy, 20. 228.
- Dik, *s.* trench, ditch, 9. 387, 10. 795, 17. 902; entrenchment, 20. 9; dyke, 8. 206; *pl.* Dikis, trenches, 17. 330. A.S. *dic*. See Dykis.
- Dik thame, *v.* to entrench themselves, 17. 271.
- Dinging, *s.* striking; *but an error for Dinning*, 13. 153 (H.).
- Disclar, *v.* to declare, decide, 1. 75.
- Discomfit, *v.* to defeat, 12. 459; *pt. pl.* Discomfit, 14. 87; *pt. s. 10. 667*; *pp.* Discomfy, 2. 481. See Discumfit.
- Discomfite, *s.* discomfiture, defeat; *rubric*, p. 38.
- Discomford, *s.* lack of heart, discouragement, 12. 368, 372. See Disconford.
- Discomfort, *pt. s.* discouraged, 5. 206.
- Discomfortyt, *for* Discomfit, 7. 605 (E.). See Discomfit.
- Dis-conford, *s.* discomfort, discouragement, 3. 191. See Discomford.
- Dis-conforting, *s.* discouragement, 3. 193.
- Discordit, *pt. s.* disagreed, 17. 842.
- Discouerit, *pp.* discovered, 19. 22, 473; shewn (thy plan), 17. 54; 2 *p. s. pt.* didst shew, 17. 53. See Discouir.
- Discoueryng, *s.* discovery, 4. 120.
- Discouir, *v.* to discover, find out, 14. 268; to shew, 14. 124; Discowir, to spy, 14. 539.
- Discoweryngis, *s. pl.* modes of finding out, manifestations, 1. 242.
- Discrif, *v.* to describe, 20. 282; Discryve, 10. 278; *pp.* Discrivit, 13. 185.
- Discumfis, *pr. s.* discomfits, 9. 516 (*rubric*), 9. 572 (*rubric*). See Discomfit.
- Discumfit, *pt. s.* discomfited, defeated, 9. 487; *pt. pl.* 10. 92, 18. 568; *pp.* 4. 280, 7. 358, 8. 114, 9. 629, 12. 111, 13. 396, 14. 324, 15. 380, 16. 240, 17. 589, 18. 80, 19. 624; Discumfy, 18. 479. See Discomfit.
- Discumfiting, *s.* defeat, 18. 190.
- Discumfitour, *s.* discomfiture, 20. 527. See below.
- Discumfitur, *s.* defeat, 13. 276, 19. 628.
- Discure, *v.* to discover, make known, 4. 607. See Discouir.
- Discurrouris, *s. pl.* spies, scouts, 9. 244, 11. 475, 14. 526, 18. 22, 19. 282, 506, 783.

- Diseese, *s.* want of ease, disquiet, misery, 3. 563; Disess, discomfort, 5. 73.
- Disheryss, *v.* to disinherit, 2. 107.
- Disparit, *pp.* in despair, 4. 99; Disparyt, 3. 195.
- Dispand, *v.* to spend, 1. 319, 2. 130; *pt. pl.* Dispandit, 13. 456.
- Dispanding, *s.* means of spending, i.e. money to spend, 8. 509.
- Dispiss, *v.* to despise, 5. 50.
- Dispit, *s.* despite, injury, 10. 6.
- Dispitfully, *adv.* angrily, 13. 70; with spite, mercilessly, 16. 632.
- Dispitously, *adv.* angrily, spitefully, 2. 137, 11. 608 (E.); Dispitously, cruelly, severely, 1. 200, 3. 457; Dispitously, cruelly, 19. 563; Dispitwisly, angrily, 10. 656.
- Dispitouss, *adj.* disdainful, cruel, spiteful, 1. 196.
- Displayit, *pt. s.* displayed, 17. 551; *pp.* 8. 48, 12. 412, 15. 361, 16. 346, 19. 310.
- Disponis, *pr. s.* disposes, 11. 29; *pt. s.* Disponit, 19. 115; *pp.* 11. 273.
- Dispulȝeit, *pp.* spoiled, stripped, 13. 501.
- Disputacioun, disputation, argument, 1. 250.
- Dispyt, *v.* to spite; *pt. pl.* Dyspyt, spited, hated, *readings in E.*, 5. 49, 50 (*footnotes*).
- Dispyte, *s.* spite, 2. 455.
- Disrayed, *pt. pl.* disordered, 14. 550 (H.); *pp.* disarrayed, 17. 123 (E.).
- Dissaf, *v.* to deceive, 4. 237, 268; *pt. s.* Dissauit, 4. 272; *pp.* Dissauit, 18. 173.
- Dissat, *s.* deceit, 4. 247.
- Disseuerit, *pp.* dissevered, parted, 20. 192.
- Distans, *s.* distance, 7. 620.
- Distrenȝit, *pp.* compelled, 4. 231; Distrenȝeit, constrained, 12. 338, 19. 172. From Lat. *stringere*.
- Distrowbiling, *s.* disturbance, trouble, 5. 216.
- Distroyst, *v.* to destroy, 12. 251; *pt. s.* Distroit, 8. 514; *pt. pl.* Distroyit, 17. 530, 18. 557, 19. 192; *pp.* Distroyit, 17. 538, 19. 123; *pres. pt.* Distroyand, 17. 531, 18. 553, 20. 27.
- Diswsyt (E.), *pp.* out of use, unaccustomed, 19. 183.
- Disyly, *adv.* dizzily, 2. 422.
- Dittit, *pp.* stopped up, 6. 168. A.S. *dyttan*, to close up.
- Do, *gerund*, to do, 1. 586; *pres. pt.* Doand, acting, in action, exerting themselves, 3. 585, 18. 67. A.S. *dōn*. See Dois.
- Do, *v.* to thrive, succeed, 2. 128. A.S. *dūgan*, to thrive, G. *taugen*; quite distinct from A.S. *dōn*, to do.
- Dochtrys, *s. pl.* daughters, 1. 200.
- Doggedly, *an error in H. for douchtely*, 10. 727, 13. 150.
- Dois, *pr. s.* does, acts, 6. 342, 11. 643, 20. 553; causes, 3. 564; *pr. pl.* do, 13. 26; *imp. pl.* act, fight, 16. 620.
- Dois, *an error in E. for Deis*, 2. 340 (*footnote*).
- Dome, *s.* doom, 1. 235; *pl.* Domys, dooms, judgments, 4. 713.
- Done to ded, *pp.* slain, 1. 347. See Ded.
- Dongin, *pp.* thrown, 17. 832 (E.). See Dyng, Doungyn.
- Dosnyt, *pp.* dazed, stunned, 17. 721, 18. 126 (E.). Formed from the root *das-* (in Swed. *dasa*, to lie idle) with the suffix *-na* (Goth. *-nan*), used to form verbs of passive signification, so that *dasna* = to become stupefied. The same root appears in Eng. *doze*, and in *dare*, to lie idle, used by Chaucer. Cf. Icel. *dasask*, to grow exhausted.
- Doubill, *adj.* double, 1. 5; Dowbill, 4. 236.

- Douchtely, *adv.* valiantly, 4. 92, 6. 240, 9. 713, 10. 710, 12. 61. And see 10. 727.
- Douchty, *adj.* doughty, valiant, 1. 532, 2. 166, 11. 315.
- Doughtely, *adv.* doughtily, 15. 319 (H.). *See* Douchtely.
- Doune, *adv.* down, 11. 576; *thair doun*, down there, down below, 10. 647, 11. 300.
- Doungyn, *pp.* thrown, 9. 473, 10. 794, 17. 376. *See* Dyng.
- Dour, *adj.* hardy, bold, 10. 159, 170. Fr. *dur*.
- Dout, *s.* fear, 3. 311, 12. 64, 17. 630, 19. 668; uncertainty, 14. 207.
- Dout, *v.* to doubt, be in doubt, 4. 714; to fear, 8. 257; *pres. pt.* Doutand, fearing, 5. 34; *pt. s.* Doutit, 9. 538; *pp.* Doutit, feared, 16. 235. F. *douter*.
- Dowbill, *adj.* double, 4. 236. *See* Doubill.
- Dowblyt, *pp.* doubled, 1. 307.
- Dowchty, *adj.* doughty, 1. 538. *See* Douchty.
- Dowt, *s.* fear, 7. 357. *See* Dout.
- Dowtit, *pp.* feared, dreaded, *in E.*, 5. 507 (*footnote*). *See* Dout, *vb.*
- Dowtyne, *s.* doubting, doubt, 14. 230.
- Doyn, *pp.* done, 6. 650; Doyne, 3. 281, 20. 464. *See* Do; and see Dawis.
- Doysnyt, *pp.* stupefied, stunned, 18. 126. *See* Dosnyt.
- Drafe, *pt. s.* drove, 5. 634. *See* Drif.
- Dragoun; *to raiss dragoun*, to harry the country, 2. 205; see Note.
- Draw, *v.* (1) to draw, eviscerate, 2. 455; *pt. s.* Drew, 2. 467; (2) Draw, *v.* to withdraw, 8. 59; *pp.* Drawin, drawn, 4. 176, 17. 871, 19. 56; Drawyn, 19. 621; *imp. pl.* Drawis, draw ye, 4. 322.
- Draw-brig, *s.* draw-bridge, 17. 757.
- Dre, *v.* to hold out, endure, 1. 327, 4. 650, 7. 181, 18. 53; *pres. pt.* Dreand, enduring, 2. 494. A.S. *dreagan*, to endure, suffer.
- Dred, *pt. s.* dreaded, 1. 293; *pt. pl.* 12. 74; *pp.* Dred, 15. 535; *pres. pt.* Dredand, fearing, 3. 671, 4. 417, 5. 188, 6. 300, 8. 69, 10. 480, 17. 514, 19. 598.
- Dreding, *s.* dread, 4. 761.
- Dreid, *gerund*, to be dreaded, 2. 272. *See* Dred.
- Dreid, *s.* fear, 5. 313, 6. 410, 11. 412; *but drede*, without doubt, 4. 277; *withouten dreid*, without doubt, 5. 579.
- Drery, *adj.* sad, 20. 203.
- Dress, *v.* to erect, 17. 608; to arrange, 10. 212; *refl.* to direct himself, make towards, 14. 247; *pt. s.* Dressit him, took his course, 16. 411; *pres. pt.* Dressand, setting (up), 17. 372. F. *dresser*, from Lat. *dirigere*, to direct.
- Dressyt, *pt. s.* arrayed, 14. 263 (E.). *See* above.
- Dreuch, *pt. s.* drew, 10. 781; *pl. 4.* 372; Drew, dragged, 19. 566; Drewch, *pt. s.* drew, put, 1. 628.
- Drey, *v.* to endure, hold out, 2. 382, 3. 305, 7. 181 (E.). *See* Dre.
- Drif, *v.* to drive, 7. 66, 9. 534, 15. 335; to continue, 10. 699; Driff, 6. 247; to press, 20. 257; to pull, 10. 255; Driff furth, to continue to the end, 5. 428; *pp.* Drivin, 9. 633. *See* Drafte.
- Driff, *an error in C. for Dress*, i. e. arrange, 10. 212.
- Dronken, *pp.* drunk, 14. 231; Drunkyn, 19. 355.
- Drouery, *s.* love, 8. 492, 498 (E.); Drowry, 8. 498; *per droury*, with love-service, 8. 492. O.F. *druerie*, love, love-service; *drut*, a lover; cf. Irish *druth*, a harlot.
- Drownyt, *pt. pl.* were drowned, 4. 448; Drownit, 16. 444; *pp.* Drownit, drowned, 13. 336;

- Drownyt, 16. 665. A.S. *druncenian*, to sink.
- Drunkyn, *pp.* drunk, 19. 355. See Dronken.
- Dryve, *v.* to drive on, continue, 1. 310; *Drywe his werdis*, pursue his destiny, 3. 390; Dryf, to drive, 10. 173; *pp.* Drywyn, driven, 9. 156 (E.). See Drif.
- Duell, *v.* to dwell, 11. 403; *pres.* *pt.* Duelland, 16. 222, 19. 98; *pt. s.* Duelt, dwelt, remained, 2. 57, 15. 313, 18. 434; Duellyt, dwelt, 1. 345.
- Duelling, *s.* stopping, delay, halt, 3. 619, 4. 563, 10. 126 (E.), 12. 12, 14. 312; household, 4. 481; Duellyng, country, 13. 544.
- Duk, *s.* duke, 3. 77.
- Duk-peris, *s. pl.* Douze Pairs, or Twelve Peers of France, 3. 440. See Note.
- Dule, *s.* sorrow, grief, 19. 221, 20. 483, 496, 578, 586. F. *duel*, mourning.
- Dulfull, *adj.* doleful, 20. 246. See above.
- Dure, *s.* door, 19. 656; Dur, 2. 61; *pl.* Durys, 12. 402.
- Durst, *pt. pl.* durst, 12. 90.
- Durwarth, *gen. sing.* of the doorward, of the gatekeeper, 3. 101. See the Note.
- Dusche, *s.* a heavy fall, 17. 698; a crushing blow, 12. 55, 16. 130; *pl.* Duschis, severe blows, 13. 147. Cf. O.H.G. *diozan*, to emit a dull sound (*G. tosen*); from the same root as A.S. *þoden*, Eng. *thud*, Lat. *tundere*.
- Duschit, *pt. s.* fell heavily, 17. 693; *pp.* 16. 165. See Dusche.
- Duschit, *a reading in C. for Ruschit*, 6. 629 (footnote).
- Dushing, *pres. pt.* falling with a crash, 17. 721 (H.); striking heavily, 13. 71 (H.). See above.
- Dutchpeeres, *s. pl.* twelve peers, 3. 440 (footnote).
- Dwngoune, *s.* dungeon, 15. 211, 17. 224.
- Dwngin, *pp.* struck, 17. 832. See Dyng, Doungyn.
- Dycht, *pp.* arrayed, 11. 128 (E.H.); made ready, 3. 225; *gert he dycht*, he caused to be set in array, 2. 565. See Dicht.
- Dyd, *pt. s.* did, 1. 463. See Do.
- Dykis, *s. pl.* trenches, 17. 276, 363, 503. See Dik.
- Dyn, *s.* din, noise, 11. 555 (E.).
- Dyner, *s.* dinner, 14. 188.
- Dyng, *v.* to strike, 10. 618, 15. 480; to drive, 19. 336; to throw, 10. 410; Dyng on, to strike at, attack, 14. 439; *pres. pt.* Dyngand, striking blows, 16. 209\*; *pt. s.* Dang, dealt blows, 2. 382; 8. 330; *pt.* Dang, 8. 337; *pp.* Dongin, thrown, 17. 832 (E.); Dwngin, struck, 17. 832. Icel. *dengja*, to hammer. See also Dang, Doungyn.
- Dynit, *pt. pl.* dined, 11. 381.
- Dynnyt, *pt. s.* fell with a heavy sound, 16. 131. See Dyn.
- Dynt, *s.* a blow, 2. 139, 3. 114, 12. 53; *pl.* Dyntis, 2. 369, 8. 139, 17. 155.
- Dysherysys, *pr. pl.* disinherit, 2. 101.
- Dyspitit, *pt. pl.* spited, hated, injured, 4. 596.
- Dyted, *pt. s.* set forth (*as if* Dychtit), 1. 526 (*a misreading; see footnote*).
- E, *s.* eye, 5. 506\*, 624, 7. 191; regard, 12. 306.
- Ebbit, *pt. s.* ebbed; 17. 425; sank by the ebbing of the tide, 17. 421.
- Ec, *conj.* eke, also, and, 1. 309. (It is almost certain that the scribe really meant to write *and*, but by a mistake of the moment substituted for it the Latin *et*. Note that the same symbol “&” was used to denote both *and* and *et*.)
- Effer, *s.* behaviour, 1. 361; de-

meanour, 7. 126, 8. 382; appearance, 11. 242; equipment, 10. 196; make, stature, 20. 515; Effere, business, 10. 305; array, 7. 30; Effeir, demeanour, 5. 608; Effere, appearance, 16. 27. This difficult word is also spelt *Afeir*, q. v., probably by confusion with the F. *affaire*, business; and probably when the word means ‘business,’ it is merely French. Jamieson hesitates about the etymology, but needlessly. It is clearly Icel. *atferð*, conduct; from *at*, and *fara*, to go.

Efferis, *pr. s.* is fit, 18. 506; it behoves, is customary, 12. 413; it belongs, 11. 28, 77. A bad spelling of Afferis, q. v.

Effrait, *pp.* afraid, 13. 173.

Efray, *s.* dread, fear, terror, 11. 250, 13. 270, 16. 426, 19. 603 (E.). F. *effroi*.

Efraying, *s.* fear, 12. 571.

Efraying, *for* Fraying, i. e. noise, 10. 653 (C.).

Efrayit, *pp.* afraid, terrified, frightened, 6. 631, 7. 610, 10. 674.

Efraytly, *adv.* timidly, in a frightened manner, 5. 110, 13. 333, 17. 580; Efraytly, 7. 329.

Eft, *adv.* again, 6. 378.

Eftir, *adv.* afterwards, 1. 127, 170, 15. 186.

Eftir, *prep.* after, i. e. to find, 4. 616; after, 5. 511, 9. 405, 10. 569; according to, 1. 213, 15. 516; Eftir as, according as, 5. 74; Eftyrr, 1. 40; = to fetch, 2. 52.

Eftirwart, *adv.* afterwards, 2. 48; Eftirward, 10. 753; Eftirwartis, 1. 588.

Eftremess, *s.* after-dish, second course, 16. 457 (E.). See the note.

Eftsonis, *adv.* soon after, again, 5. 68, 17. 596, 19. 296; Eftsonys, 2. 436.

Egging, *s.* urging, incitement, 4. 539.

Eggis, *pr. s.* incites to, 8. 123 (*rubric*).

Egirly, *adv.* eagerly, quickly, 6. 421, 427, 13. 27; Egyrly, 6. 642, 16. 451, 17. 725.

Eild, *s. age*, 12. 322, 17. 928 (E.), 20. 43 (E.). *See* Elde. A.S. *yldo*, old age.

Eir, *adv.* ere, formerly, 9. 442, 13. 219, 17. 732.

Eirded, *pp.* buried, 19. 203 (*rubric in H*; *footnote*).

Eir-quhil, *adv.* erewhile, ere this, 19. 142.

Eisfull, *adj.* full of ease, favourable, pleasant, 5. 70.

Eiss, *s. ease*, 7. 302, 14. 454, 16. 332; *at eiss*, at leisure, 15. 542.

Eiss, *v.* to comfort, satisfy, 5. 291.

Ek, *v.* to eke, increase, 8. 290.

Ek, *adv.* also, 10. 652, 11. 471. A.S. *eáv*.

Elde, *s. age*, 17. 928. *See* Eild.

Eld-fadir, *s.* grandfather, 13. 694.

Eldris, *s. pl.* elders, forefathers, 1. 163, 2. 166; Eldrys, 3. 223.

Elimentis, *an error in C. for Climatis*, 4. 701 (*footnote*).

Ellis, *adv.* else, 6. 381.

Elys, *s. pl.* eels, 2. 577.

Emang, *prep.* among, 3. 371, 5. 304, 10. 709, 11. 582, 12. 567, 15. 515, 19. 377, 20. 204, &c.

Embandownyt, *pp.* abandoned, 1. 244 (*footnote*).

Embrasit, *pt. pl.* embraced, seized, 8. 295.

Empriss, *s.* enterprise, daring, 10. 507 (E.), 16. 490. *See* Enpris.

Emys, *gen. sing.* uncle’s, 3. 3, 6. 503, 9. 728. A.S. *eám*, an uncle. *See* Eym.

Enbandownyt, *pp.* subjected, made subject, 1. 244. *See* Abandoune.

Enbuschement, *s.* an ambush, 6. 209, 8. 45, 10. 163, 18. 299, 19. 472.

- Enbuschit, *pt. s. refl.* lay in ambush, 8. 42; lay in wait, 6. 396; set in ambush, 16. 387; *pt. pl.* lay in ambush, 19. 427; *pp.* Enbuschit, in ambush, 4. 378, 6. 417, 10. 31, 16. 86, 17. 63, 19. 369, &c.
- Enchapin, *for* Eschaping, 7. 75 (C.).
- Enchausyt, *an error in editions for* Enchaufyt, 2. 395 (*footnote*). See above.
- Enchawfyt, *pp.* chafed, heated, made furious, 2. 395.
- Encheif, *ger.* to achieve, 1. 305 (*footnote*); Encheuee, *r.* 3. 294 (*footnote*); *pt. s.* Encheefed, 3. 3, 180 (*footnote*).
- Enchesoun, *s.* occasion, reason, 1. 280, 4. 110; Enchesone, 1. 203; Enchesoune, reason, 1. 217; occasion, cause, 1. 487. O.F. *enchaison*, from Lat. acc. *occasioneum*. See *enchaison* in Roquefort.
- Enclosit, *pp.* enclosed, 6. 242; shut up, 4. 219; shut in, 19. 710.
- Enclynit, *pt. s.* inclined, 17. 855.
- Encrely, *adv.* especially, 10. 287 (E.); *where C. has Ythandly*; also in 2. 138, 7. 555 (*footnote*). See Enkrey.
- End, *v.* to come to an end, to die, 11. 553.
- Endentur, *s.* indenture, deed, 1. 565; *pl.* Endenturis, bonds, 1. 513.
- Ending, *s.* end, i. e. death, 2. 197.
- Endit, *pt. s.* made an end of, 17. 933.
- Endlang, *prep.* along, beside, 3. 414, 6. 75, 7. 27, 18. 140. A.S. *andlang*; cf. G. *entlang*.
- Endlang, *adv.* straight forward, 19. 356; *endlang furth*, straight onward continually, 16. 548.
- Endyt, *pt. s.* ended, 4. 35. See Endit.
- Eneuch, *adv.* enough, 4. 373, 10. 780, 17. 545, 20. 337.
- Enew, *pl. adj.* enough, 13. 496, 17. 404, 19. 310, 626. A.S. *genōh*, enough, *pl. genōge*; Grein, i. 438.
- Enforsaly, *adv.* forcibly, 5. 324, 7. 576; Enforcey, strongly, 13. 228 (E.); Enforcedly, 2. 314 (*footnote*).
- Enforsit, *pt. s.* forced, raised loudly, 5. 355.
- Enforss, *s.* force, 17. 448.
- Enfundeyng, *s.* 20. 75 (E.). See Fundying.
- Engreif, *v.* to afflict, grieve, vex, 20. 200; Engreiff, 11. 504; Engreve, 20. 200 (E.); *pres. pt.* Engrewand, 13. 210 (E.).
- Engynis, *s. pl.* engines, 17. 245.
- Engynour, *s.* engineer, 17. 434, 17. 468 (E.), 17. 663.
- Enkrey, *adv.* especially, particularly, carefully, 1. 92; 3. 529; Encrēly, especially, 1. 301; extremely, 1. 425; Enkerly, 10. 534 (E.). Cf. Icel. *einknliga*, especially; and the prefix *einkar-*, meaning specially, very; derived from *einn*, one. Jamieson derives it from F. *en cœur*!
- Enlumynynt, *pp.* illumined, 20. 229 (E.).
- Ennamylyt, *pp.* enamelled, 20. 305 (E.).
- Ennyrmar, *an error in C. for* Hendirmar, 7. 599 (*footnote*).
- Enpriss, *s.* enterprise, 3. 276, 20. 243; price, 10. 507.
- Ensample, example, 1. 119; Ensamplell, 4. 238; Ensampell, example, story, 20. 563.
- Enselyt, *pt. s.* sealed, 1. 612.
- Ensenze, *s.* war-cry, 3. 27, 13. 267 (E.); Ensenȝhe, 5. 323; *pl.* Ensenȝeis, 13. 159, 19. 788. F. *enseigne*, a token.
- Enspirit, *pp.* inspired, 4. 678.
- Enssenze, *s.* warcry, 2. 426. See Ensenȝe.
- Entencioune, *s.* intention, 10. 527.
- Entent, *s.* intent, desire, 1. 449, 3. 206; purpose, 9. 372, 10. 561, 11. 152.

- Ententif, adj.** attentive, 20. 615.  
O.F. *ententif*, attentive; from Lat. *intendere*.
- Entently, adv.** attentively, 1. 613, 6. 72. Corrupted from Ententify. See above.
- Entently, adv.** attentively, *an error in E. for Ythandly, 3. 275, 288 (footnote).*
- Enterit, pt. s.** entered, 5. 272, 7. 3, 8. 503, 9. 553; *pl.* 6. 438, 7. 26, 16. 405; *pp.* 7. 108, 8. 53, &c. See Enterit.
- Entre, s.** entrance, 11. 446, 16. 380; pass, entry, 6. 362.
- Entremass, s.** course of delicacies, 16. 457. See the note.
- Entremellys, s.** *pl.* skirmishes, combats, 10, 145 (E.).
- Entyr, v.** to enter, 1. 623, 630. See Enterit.
- Entryrit, pp.** interred, buried, 19. 224.
- Enveremyt, a poor spelling in C. of Enveronyt,** i. e. surrounded, 13. 380 (footnote); *so also in 17. 638, 19. 536, 20. 445.* See below.
- Enveronyt, pt. s.** environed, surrounded, 11. 585; *pl.* went round, 13. 380; Enweround, 13. 380 (E.), 17. 638 (E.); *pp.* Enveronyt, surrounded, 11. 567, 12. 302, 17. 390, 19. 491.
- Enwy, envy, 1. 47.**
- Eny, any, 10. 200.**
- Enymyss, s.** *pl.* enemies, 6. 372, 8. 80.
- Er, adv.** before, 9. 542, 13. 2. See Er.
- Erar, adv.** sooner, rather, 1. 458, 3. 266.
- Erd, s.** earth, ground, 2. 423, 3. 16, 4. 686, 5. 634, 6. 128, 9. 326, 12. 551, 15. 189, 19. 519; *at erd*, on the ground, 8. 301, 16. 157; *laid at erd*, overthrown, 4. 284.
- Erding, s.** burial, 4. 255, 19. 86; Erdyng, 4. 295. See below.
- Erdit, pt. pl.** buried, 20. 292; *pp.* 13. 666, 15. 242, 19. 224 (E.), 20. 574, 586. Cf. Icel. *jarða*, to bury; *jörð*, earth.
- Ere, s.** ear, 6. 627.
- Ere, adv.** formerly, 13. 84, 16. 486.
- Erlī, s.** earl, 8. 400, 9. 15, 13. 401; Erle, 1. 67; *gen. sing.* Erlis, earl's, 9. 136; *pl.* Erlis, 2. 234; Ellis, 11. 162.
- Ernystfully, adv.** earnestly, seriously, 8. 144.
- Eryness, s.** fear, timidity, 2. 295. A.S. *earg*, timid, inert. The form *ærnesse* occurs in The Ayenbite of Inwyd, p. 32.
- Eschaip, v.** to escape, 3. 618; Eschap, 10. 81; *pt. s.* Eschapit, 7. 53, 9. 628, 20. 528; *2 p. s. pt.* didst escape, 16. 238; *pt. pl.* 6. 430, 7. 86, 12. 153; *pp.* 7. 94, 8. 82, &c.; Eschapyt, 3. 634; *eschapyt was*, 2. 64.
- Eschap, s.** escape, 2. 65.
- Escheiff, v.** to achieve, succeed, 19. 778. See Encheif.
- Eschele, s.** a squadron, 8. 221; Escheill, 16. 401 (E.); Eschell, 12. 214 (E.); *pl.* Eschelis, squadrons, ranks, 8. 218. O.F. *eschele*, a squadron (Burguy).
- Escheve, v.** to eschew, shun, 18. 532; *pp.* Eschevit, shunned, 20. 454. See Eschewe.
- Escheve, v.** to achieve, 1. 305; generally Eschewe, 3. 292, 17. 43; *pt. s.* Eschewyt, achieved, 3. 283; *pp.* Eschewit, achieved, 12. 128, 13. 179; Eschewyt, 16. 494 (E.), 20. 16 (E.); Eschivet, 16. 494, &c. A corruption of achieve.
- Eschewe, v.** to shun, 12. 473, 15. 349; *pt. pl.* Eschewit, avoided, 11. 535, 16. 207. O.F. *eschiver*; O.H.G. *skiuhan*, G. *scheuen*, to avoid.
- Eschewe, s.** a sally, 14. 94 (E.). See Ischow and Ysche.
- Eschewys, s.** *pl.* achievements, feats of arms, 20. 14 (E.).

- Escheyff, *v.* to achieve, 17. 43 (E.).  
*See* Escheve.
- Esit thame, *pt. pl. refl.* took their ease, 17. 797. *See* Eyt.
- Espyne, *s.* a long-boat, 17. 719.  
 Icel. *espingr*, Swed. *esping*, a ship's boat.
- Ess, *s.* ease, 1. 228; *male ess*, disease, 20. 73.
- Esenblit, *pp.* assembled, 11. 395.
- Est end, east end, 17. 187.
- Eyt, *pt. s.* eased, comforted, relieved, 2. 555; *pt. pl. refl.* took their ease, 14. 387, 17. 483; *pp.* 3. 361. *See* Esit.
- Et, *v.* to eat, 3. 188, 7. 267, 10. 318, 14. 348; Ete, 2. 581; *pt. s.* Rte, 7. 169; *pp.* Etyn, 7. 170.
- Etlyng, *s.* endeavour, 1. 587, 3. 260; Etling, aim, 1. 583 (*where it seems as if etilling would be better for the rhythm*); intention, 11. 22. Icel. *ætla*, to intend.
- Euerilk, every, 18. 250.
- Euill, *adj.* evil, bad, 11. 485.
- Euir, *adv.* ever, 1. 198, &c.
- Euirilkane, every one, 1. 453, 5. 103, 15. 155.
- Euirmar, *adv.* evermore, 1. 155, 7. 174.
- Euyr, *adv.* ever, 2. 41, 526.
- Evin, *s.* eve, 17. 335; vyn, 10. 372. *See* Ewyn.
- Evin, *adj.* even, 6. 164.
- Evin, *adv.* evenly, just, 19. 512; in a level position, 16. 651; just opposite, 17. 673; straight, 17. 692; Evyn, evenly, 11. 559.
- Evinly, *adv.* evenly, 10. 228; Evynly, on equal terms, 7. 103.
- Evynsang-time, *s.* vespertide, 17. 450.
- Ewyn, *s.* evening, eventide, 1. 106, 19. 719; Ewin, 17. 63. *See* Evin.
- Ewyn, *adv.* evenly, directly, 1. 61; even, 3. 136. *See* Evin.
- Ewyr, *adv.* ever, 3. 160.
- Exorcizaciones, *s. pl.* exorcisations, exorcisings, 4. 750.
- Extremyteis, *s. pl.* excesses, 6. 336.
- Ey, *s.* eye; *had ey*, had regard, 6. 523. *See* E.
- Eym, *s.* uncle, 10. 305; Eyme, 13. 697. A.S. *eám*, an uncle. *See* Emys.
- Eyn, *s. pl.* eyes, 1. 547; Eyne, 3. 526. *See* E.
- Eyss, *s.* ease, 3. 362.
- Eyte, *pt. pl.* ate, 2. 495; Eyt, 3. 539. *See* Et.
- Eyth, *adj.* easy, 17. 454. A.S. *eáð*, easy.
- Fa, *s.* foe, 2. 208, 327, 462; 5. 86; Faa, 18. 228. A.S. *fäh*. *See* Fais.
- Fabill, *s.* fable, an untrue story, 1. 2.
- Fading, *for* Falding, i. e. falling, 13. 632 (E.).
- Fadir, father, 1. 314; Fadyr, 1. 347; *gen. sing.* Fadyr, father's, 1. 291.
- Fagaldis, *s. pl.* faggots, 17. 615 (E.); Fagattis, 17. 703.
- Faill, *s.* fail, 12. 274. *See* Fale.
- Failȝe, *v.* to fail, faint, give way, 2. 393; *pr. s.* Failȝeis, 1. 582; Failȝeys, 1. 371; *pr. s. subj.* Failȝe, 3. 297; Failȝhe, 1. 231; *pt. s.* Failȝeit, 3. 88; *f. fête*, lost his footing, 3. 123; *pp.* Failȝeit, 2. 539. *See* Fale.
- Failȝeid, *for* Failȝeis, i. e. fails, 4. 295 (footnote). *See* above.
- Fair, *s.* fare, manner, 11. 256; journey, 4. 627, 15. 273; welfare, 16. 21.
- Fair, *v.* to travel, go, fare, journey, 5. 486, 7. 492, 9. 179; *ger.* 20. 98. A.S. *faran*.
- Fais, *s. pl.* foes, 2. 504, 5. 42; *gen. pl.* foes', 2. 372. *See* Fa.
- Falding, *s.* falling, downfall, reverse, 13. 632; 3. 289 (footnote). *See* below.

- Faldyn, *pp.* fallen, 11. 547. Cf. Dan. *falde*, to fall. See the note.
- Fale, *s.* failing, 19. 510. *See* Faill.
- Fale, *v.* to fail, lack, 4. 255, 5. 425, 8. 460, 9. 183, 10. 818, 11. 408, 12. 204; Falze, 9. 40; *pr. s.* Falis, 4. 295; Falzeis, 11. 21; *pt. s.* Falit, 14. 365; *pt. pl.* Falit, 18. 269; Falzeit, failed, 5. 562, 7. 614; *pp.* Falit, 19. 476; Falzeit, 6. 5. *See* Failze.
- Fall, *v.* to befall, happen, 1. 123, 2. 526, 3. 649, 4. 362, 9. 376; *pr. s. subj.* Fall, may happen, 3. 297; *pr. s.* Fallis, happens, 12. 272; *pt. s.* Fell, arrived, 1. 106; *pp.* Fallyn, happened, 19. 625; fallen (said of night), 19. 705; Fallen faire, happened well, 16. 668.
- Fall-brig, *s.* fall-bridge, draw-bridge, 17. 419.
- Fallow, *s.* fellow, comrade, 6. 608, 18. 40; *pl.* Fallowis, 7. 137, 13. 580. Icel. *félagi*.
- Fallow, *v.* to follow, 7. 141; 12. 190, 192; *pp.* Fallowit, 16. 322. (*Fellow* seems better.)
- Falset, *s.* falsehood, 1. 377, 5. 622, 10. 286 (E.), 15. 122 (E. and H.); Falsat, 15. 122, 244; Falsade, 10. 286.
- Falt, *s.* lack, defect, want, default, 6. 345, 9. 318.
- Famen, *s. pl.* foemen, 6. 648, 16. 189. *See* Fa.
- Fand, *pt. s.* found, 3. 417, 5. 42, 6. 237, 11. 398, 19. 144; *pl.* 2. 19, 3. 761, 9. 580.
- Fanding, *s.* an attempt at finding out, attempt to discover, search, 4. 691. *See* Faynd.
- Fandit, *pp.* attacked fiercely, 12. 148 (E.). *See* Faynd.
- Fane, *adj.* glad, 8. 112.
- Fantiss, *s.* cowardice, faintness of heart, 12. 256; Fantasyss, deceit, 17. 51. *See* Fayntice.
- Far, *v.* to fare, go, proceed, 2. 303,
4. 100; Fare, 6. 394; *ger.* Fare, 16. 269; *pr. pl.* Far, go, journey, 3. 345; *pp.* Farn, fared, 4. 513, 19. 620; Farne, 3. 548, 17. 904 (E.); Faryne, 17. 904.
- Far, *s.* fare, business, endeavour, 17. 400; good fare, good cheer, 19. 730; pomp, 20. 100; good fare, 16. 46.
- Far, *adv.* fairly, kindly, 20. 512.
- Farand, *adj.* handsome, well-looking, 2. 514; *weill farrand*, excellent, 11. 95.
- Fardele, *s.* a bundle, 3. 432. O.F. *fardel* (not given by Burguy, but certified by mod. F. *fardeau*), a bundle; cf. Ital. *fardello*, a bundle; Port. *fardel*, a truss, pack, Port. *farda*, a soldier's dress, uniform, livery.
- Farer, *adj.* fairer, better (luck), 10. 77; better, 10. 199, 17. 837; *superl.* Farast, fairest, 11. 518.
- Faring, *s.* management (of a ship), 17. 456 (E.).
- Farlyit, *pt. pl.* wondered, 6. 323. Scot. *furly*, *ferly*, a wonder; from A.S. *fær-lic*, sudden, lit. *fear-like*.
- Farsis, *pr. pl.* stuff, 9. 398. F. *farcir*, to stuff.
- Fassoun, *s.* fashion, i.e. make, build, 10. 278; *pl.* Fassownys, fashions, ways, 17. 300.
- Fast, *adv.* diligently, 1. 42.
- Fastar, faster, 13. 129.
- Fasteryn even, Eve of the fast, i.e. Shrove Tuesday, 10. 372; Fastryn evyn, 10. 440. In Mark ix. 29, the Northumbrian version has *fæstern*, where the Wessex version has *fæstene*.
- Fastit, *pt. pl.* fasted, 11. 383; *pp.* Fastyt, 7. 167.
- Faucht, *pt. s.* fought, 10. 687, 12. 352, 15. 373; *pt. pl.* 6. 637, 15. 489, 17. 144. *And see* Fawcht.
- Faute, *s.* default, lack, 9. 318 (E.), 20. 384 (E.).

- Fawcht, *pt. s.* fought, 3. 20; *pt. pl.* 1. 468, 8. 307. *See* Faucht.
- Fawt, *s.* fault, defect, lack, 3. 298. *See* Faute.
- Fay, *s.* foe, enemy, 1. 429; *pl.* Fays, 1. 223; Fayis, 1. 453, 4. 3, 6. 169. *See* Fa.
- Fay, *s.* fealty, faith, 13. 545, 14. 104, 15. 303; subjection, 13. 404; *at a fay*, lit. at *one* faith, i.e. owing fealty to the same lord, 19. 790. O.F. *fei*, faith.
- Fayn, *adv.* gladly, eagerly, 8. 20, 9. 90; Fayne, 1. 11.
- Fayn, *adj.* glad, 1. 502; Fayne, 17. 1.
- Faynd, *v.* to try, 16. 219; to put forth (used of *force*), 6. 618; *pr. pl.* tempt, 12. 364; *pt. pl.* Fayndit, attempted, 1. 42; *pp.* Fayndit, put to a severe trial, thoroughly tested, 12. 148. A.S. *fandian*, to try, tempt, prove, seek.
- Faynding, *s.* a tempting of Providence, 3. 289. Jamieson explains it by "perhaps guile;" but cf. "ne *fanda þu þines godes*;" do not tempt thy God; Deut. vi. 16.
- Fayntice, *s.* fainting, giving way, feeling discouragement, 3. 289. Jamieson translates it by "dissimulation;" but see Piers Plowman, B. v. 5, where *feyntise* can only mean *a feeling of faintness*. *And see* Fantiss.
- Fayr, *adj.* fair, good, 1. 286.
- Fayris, *pr. s. impers.* it fares, it happens, 2. 500. *See* Far, *v.*
- Fe, *s.* cattle, 10. 110, 15. 335; a fee, a fief, 13. 725. A.S. *feoh*, cattle, goods.
- Febill, *adj.* feeble, weak, 16. 355.
- Feeble, *pr. pl.* grow feeble, faint, give way, 2. 384.
- Febliss, *v.* to enfeeble, 14. 349; *pp.* Feblist, 18. 256, 257. F. *faiblir*, to grow feeble.
- Fechand, *pres. part.* fetching, 3. 428.
- Fecht, *v.* to fight, 11. 9; *pr. s.* Fechtis, fights, 6. 155; *pres. pt.* Fechrand, fighting, 6. 287, 8. 197, 10. 666, 11. 236, 12. 107; Fechrande, 18. 437; *pp.* Faucht, q.v.
- Fechtaris, fighting men, 11. 106\*.
- Fechting, *s.* fighting, 4. 282, 9. 237; Fechtyne, 3. 241.
- Fechting-sted, *s.* place of fighting, battle-ground, 15. 378, 16. 663.
- Fee, *s.* cattle, property in cattle, 10. 215, 272; 13. 716; *of fee*, by fief, 11. 456. *See* Fe.
- Feild, *s.* field, 12. 447; *wan feild*, gained ground, 2. 374.
- Feill, *adj.* many, 4. 273, 659, 684; 5. 178; 6. 46, 167, 311, 391; 10. 106, 664; 14. 485; 16. 209; Feile, 2. 221; 3. 22, 374. A.S. *féle*, many.
- Feill, *v.* to feel, be made aware, 11. 655; to experience, 12. 588.
- Feir, *adj.* sound, unharmed, 15. 514; *haill and feir*, safe and sound, 6. 315, 17. 897, 18. 161. Icel. *færr*, safe.
- Feir, *s.* companion, 10. 385, 19. 553. A.S. *gefēra*, a companion on the road.
- Feit, *s. pl.* feet, 10. 380, 12. 553, 13. 31, 16. 185.
- Feldis, *s. pl.* fields, 10. 186.
- Fele, *adj.* many, 1. 294, 454; 2. 242, 3. 468, 7. 12, 10. 345, 11. 49, 16. 589; numerous, 1. 462. *See* Fell.
- Fele, *v.* to feel, 2. 506; *pt. s.* Feld, felt, 3. 140; perceived, 13. 13; *pl.* Feld, 16. 628.
- Fell, *pt. s.* belonged, 17. 176; be-fel, happened, 1. 170, 4. 125, 18. 564.
- Fell, *v.* to fell, quell, 5. 651; *pt. s.* Fellit, felled, 15. 185; *pp.* Fellit, felled, 10. 684, 12. 524; Fellit to fete, felled under foot, 16. 232; *pt. s.* Fellyt, overthrew, 2. 139, 3. 18, 163.
- Fell, *adj.* cruel, severe, wicked, grievous, 2. 193, 364; 15. 10, 153,

- 539\*; 19. 6, 20. 508. O.F. *fel*, cruel.  
**Fellely**, *adv.* severely, 20. 152 (E.); fiercely, cruelly, 5. 350, 12. 84. *See Felly.*  
**Fellest**, *adj. sup.* direst, severest, 15. 486.  
**Felloun**, *adj.* cruel, wicked, 5. 102, 8. 454; *Fellowne*, 4. 234, 15. 70, 16. 457. *See Feloune.*  
**Felly**, *adv.* fiercely, 18. 455; cruelly, 13. 214, 15. 489; severely, 10. 479; extremely, 16. 217.  
**Fellyly**, *adv.* a misreading in 3. 20 (*footnote*).  
**Felny**, *for Felony*, 10. 6 (E.).  
**Feloune**, *adj.* cruel, fell, 1. 47, 429; 3. 103, 4. 6; *Fellone*, 1. 194. *See Felloun.*  
**Felounly**, *adv.* cruelly, 3. 20; *Felonly*, 1. 215, 16. 631, 20. 513; *Fellownly*, 1. 315.  
**Felouny**, *s.* cruelty, 1. 440; *Felony*, cruelty, fierceness, 4. 604, 6. 460; harm, injury, 10. 65.  
**Fend**, *an error for Faynd*, i.e. tempt, 12. 364 (E.).  
**Fendis**, *s. pl.* fiends, 4. 224.  
**Fenss**, *s.* fence, defence, 20. 384.  
**Fenyhe**, *v. to feign*, 1. 344; *pt. s.* *Fenzeit*, feigned, 3. 300; *pres. pt.* *Fenzeand*, feigning, 5. 622.  
**Fenzeing**, *s.* fainting, giving way, a reading in E. for *Stinting*, 9. 255.  
**Fenzeying**, *s.* feigning, deceit, 1. 74.  
**Fer**, *adj.* far, 1. 32, 11. 422.  
**Fer**, *adv.* far, 4. 22, 11. 544; much, 2. 271; *be fer*, by far, by a great deal, 3. 301, 10. 637; *be full fer*, by very much, 12. 86; *on fer*, afar, 5. 618, 8. 73, 18. 85; *fer by*, far past, 10. 630.  
**Fer out**, far out, i.e. very much; *fer out the mair*, very much the more, 6. 666.  
**Fer**, *adj.* sound (in health), 9. 231; *haile and fer*, safe and sound, 3. 92. *See Feir.*
- Ferd**, fourth, 9. 593, 11. 330.  
**Ferd**, *pt. s.* fared, went on, 4. 287, 16. 464. *See Far.*  
**Fere**, *s.* a comrade, companion, 6. 470, 15. 63; *pl.* *Feris*, 6. 86\*, 12. 41. *See Feir.*  
**Fer-furth**, *adv.* far forward, 19. 376.  
 **Ferlfull**, *adj.* wondrous, wonderful, 12. 453, 13. 638.  
**Ferly**, *s. a* wonder, 3. 243, 7. 98, 9. 395, 11. 86, 12. 448, 15. 235, 17. 800, 19. 505. A.S. *færlic*, sudden, strange, lit. fear-like.  
**Ferly**, *adj.* wonderful, 11. 113, 14. 245; *thocht ferly*, thought it strange, 2. 20.  
**Ferly**, *adv.* wonderfully, 14. 322; very, 19. 70.  
**Ferm**, *adj.* firm, 9. 755.  
**Fermly**, *adv.* firmly, 20. 178.  
**Ferrer**, *adj.* further, 19. 530 (E.), 19. 537.  
**Ferrest**, *adj. sup.* furthest, 19. 530.  
**Ferryit**, *pp.* farrowed; *ferryit was*, had farrowed, 17. 701.  
**Fersly**, *adv.* fiercely, 15. 458.  
**Ferst**, *adv.* first, 4. 127.  
**Feryt**, *was*, i.e. had farrowed, 17. 701 (E.). *See Ferryit.*  
**Fesnyng**, *s.* fastening, security, 20. 57. *See Festnyng.*  
**Fest**, *s. a* feast, 17. 908; feasting, 19. 730.  
**Festnyng**, *s.* fastening, 20. 57 (E.); fetter, 10. 763 (E. and H.); prison, 15. 309.  
**Festnyt**, *pt. pl.* fastened, 13. 237; *pp.* 10. 402, 17. 716.  
**Fetonass**, *error in C. for Phitones*, i.e. Pythoness, female diviner, 4. 753 (*footnote*). *See Note.*  
**Fetrys**, *s. pl.* fetters, 4. 15.  
**Fetterit**, *pp.* fettered, 10. 763.  
**Few menȝhe**, a small company, 18. 13.

- Fewale, *s.* fuel, 11. 120.
- Fewar, *adj.* fewer, 9. 516, 17. 550.
- Fewell, *reading in E. for Fwaill,* fuel, 4. 170 (*footnote*).
- Fewte, *s.* fealty, service, 1. 427, 2. 459, 3. 757, 8. 19, 14. 101, 19. 67, 20. 129\*.
- Fey, *adj. pl.* dying, 15. 45. Icel. *feigr*, fated to die.
- Feyd, *v.* to feed, 6. 489.
- Feyle, *v.* to feel, experience, 1. 304.
- Feyll, *adj.* many, 8. 117. *See Feill.*
- Feynȝeyng, *s.* feigning, pretence, 1. 341.
- Feys, *s. pl.* fiefs, 1. 58.
- Feys, *pr. s.* fees, gives a fee to, suborns, 5. 485 (*heading*).
- Feyt, *s. pl.* feet, 2. 359.
- Ficht, *v.* to fight, 12. 195. *See Fecht, Fycht.*
- Fichtyne, *s.* fighting, 4. 244.
- Fichyt, *pp.* fixed, 20. 178 (E.).
- Fiff, *num.* five, 17. 198, 19. 38; Fiffe, 5. 381.
- Fiff-sum, five in all, 6. 149. *Compare Thresum.*
- Fift, fifth, 6. 650, 17. 594.
- Fill, *s. fill*, 11. 626. *Haf thair fill,* have their fill, 11. 626.
- Fillit, *pt. pl.* filled, 17. 363; *pp.* 4. 116, 7. 173, 8. 445, 13. 113, 18. 141.
- Fire-galdis, *s. pl.* 17. 247 (H.).
- Firth, *s.* frith (of Forth), 16. 542, 547.
- Fischer, *s.* fisherman, 19. 648.
- Flaggatis, *s. pl.* faggots, 17. 615, 617, 619. Written *fagaldis* in E.
- Flaikes, *s. pl.* hurdles, 19. 742 (*footnote*).
- Flaill, a flail, 5. 318.
- Flambisighand, *pres. pt.* flaunting (?), 11. 192 (H.).
- Flang, *pt. s.* flung, 16. 651; *pl.* 17. 645; kicked (said of horses), 14. 69. *See Fling.*
- Flatlyngis, *adv.* flat, 12. 59; Flatlynges, 17. 369; Flatlynys, 12. 59 (E.).
- Flaw, *pt. s.* flew, 3. 115, 10. 626, 17. 684; *pl.* 13. 41.
- Flawmand, *pres. pt.* blazing, flaming, (or perhaps) fluttering, 11. 192, 467 (E.); Flawamand, 11. 467. Cf. O.Fr. *flamer*, to flame; it seems rather to be this French word than connected with Swed. dial. *flamma*, to pour down in a stream.
- Fle, *v.* to flee, 8. 61; *pres. pt.* Fleand, fleeing, 6. 414, 7. 331, 9. 278, 18. 78; fugitives, 15. 337\*.
- Flearis, *s. pl.* fliers, fugitives, runaways, 3. 51, 6. 436; Fleieris, 3. 81.
- Flechand, *pres. part.* cajoling, flattering, smilingly deceitful, 5. 619. Cf. Du. *vleijken*, to flatter; G. *plehen*, to implore.
- Flede, *pp.* fled, 13. 436.
- Fleeching, *pres. pt.* flattering, in H., 5. 622 (*footnote*). *See Flechand.*
- Flesche, *s.* flesh, 11. 613.
- Fletand, *pres. part.* floating, 3. 630.
- Fleting, *s.* floating; hence, progress over the sea, 3. 588.
- Fleying, *s.* flight, fleeing, 19. 459.
- Fleyit, *pp.* scared, 16. 217. *See flēzen* in Stratmann.
- Flicht, *s.* flight, 15. 501.
- Fling, *v.* to kick, 8. 323. *See Flyng, Flang.*
- Florist, *pp.* flourished, decked, 16. 69.
- Flote, *s.* a fleet, 3. 601; Flot, 3. 456, 5. 15, 15, 286; *on flot*, a-float, 14. 359. Icel. *floti*, a fleet. Cf. A.S. *flota*, a ship.
- Flour, flower, chief pick, best men, choice band, 7. 562, 14. 81, 15. 473.

- Flour, *s.* flour, 8. 232.
- Floussis, *s. pl.* streams, 13. 20 (E.).  
See Fluss.
- Flure, *s.* floor, 5. 400.
- Fluss, *s.* pool, 13. 20. See the note; and see Floussis.
- Flycht, *s.* flight, 2. 267, 3. 77.  
See Flicht.
- Flycht, *a reading in editions for* Stycht, 3. 658 (footnote).
- Flyng, *v.* to kick, 6. 143. See Fling, Flang.
- Flynging, *s.* kicking, 8. 324. See above.
- Flyntis, *s. pl.* flints, 13. 36.
- Flyt, *v.* to float, swim, 3. 420.
- Folely, *adv.* foolishly, in C., 5. 350 (footnote).
- Folk, *s.* folk; *small folk*, common people, 9. 261, 569; *pl.* Folkis, people, 13. 225 (*rubric*).
- Followis, *s. pl.* fellows, companions, 5. 581. See Fallow.
- Followit, *pt. s.* followed, 6. 405, 7. 38, 8. 334, 9. 586, 13. 548, 18. 353; *pl.* 6. 597, 10. 603, 13. 561, 14. 213; *pres. pt.* Followand, 4. 258, 5. 309, 6. 292, 8. 224.
- Foly, *s.* folly, 1. 221, 344; 3. 35; Foley, 11. 12.
- For, *prep.* against, 14. 115.
- For, *conj.* because, 2. 105, 503.
- Forbare, *pt. s.* forbore, spared, 6. 152.
- Forbeid, may He forbid, 12. 255.
- Forbeft, *pp.* 17. 793. Either (1) rebuffed, from O.F. *buffer*, to puff out, to buffet; so explained by Sibbald, but very unlikely, as it makes the word a hybrid; or (2) "in a state of great trepidation" (Jamieson), from A.S. *bifian*, to tremble; or rather (3) forced to retreat; cf. Icel. *baya*, to push back, whence perhaps Sc. *bauchle*, E. *baffle*.
- Forby, *adv.* by; *pas forby*, pass by, 10. 345, 13. 739. Cf. Dan. *forbi*, past, by, over, at an end.
- Fordid, *pt. s.* 'did for,' spoilt, destroyed, 5. 412, 9. 323; *pp.* Fordone, ended, 4. 206. N.B. In the first passage, J. prints *sordid*, by mistake; in the second he has *fordyd*.
- Forfalt, *pp.* forfeited, 13. 499; spelt Forfaut in E. Apparently a corruption of O.F. *forfait*, culpable, Lat. *forisfactus*, by confusion with *default*.
- Forfayr, *v.* to perish, go to ruin, 1. 478; *pr. s. subj.* Forfure, should perish, come to naught, 10. 529. A.S. *forfaran*, to perish.
- Forgane, *prep.* opposite to, 16. 555. Cf. A.S. *gegnum*, forthwith, against.
- Forlorn, *pp.* completely lost, 10. 246. A.S. *forlēsan*, to lose utterly; *pp. forloren*.
- Forly, *v.* to violate, commit adultery with, 1. 199. A.S. *forlicgan*, to commit adultery.
- Formast, *adj.* foremost, first, 6. 337.
- Forouch, *prep.* before, 1. 163, 356, 603. See Forouth, Forow, Forouth, Forrow.
- Forout, *prep.* without, 7. 609, 8. 483, 9. 754, 11. 444, 12. 232, 19. 535; Forowt, 3. 289, 10. 641. A short form of Forouten.
- Forouten, *prep.* without, 5. 237, 9. 733, 10. 226, 11. 250, 12. 201, 14. 510, 16. 230, 18. 192; besides, 11. 110. A.S. *forútan*, without, besides. See Forout, Foroutyn.
- Forouth, *prep.* before, in front of, 10. 602; Forowth, 3. 629. See Forouth, Forow, Forrow, Forouch. This word is clearly the Swed. *förut*, before; Dan. *forud*, in advance. All the spellings of it in Barbour are more or less corrupt.
- Foronth, *adv.* forward, before, in front, 6. 202, 9. 582, 11. 511, 19. 544. See above.

- Foroutyn, *prep.* beside, 11. 238.  
*See* Forouten.
- Forow, *adv.* beforehand, 1. 120.  
*See* Forrow, Forouth, Forrouth,  
 Forouch.
- Forow, *prep.* before, 8. 201 (H.).  
*See* above.
- For-owtyn, *prep.* without, 1. 96,  
 116, 280, 622. *See* Foroutyn.
- Forray, *s.* foray, 2. 281, 16. 612.
- Forray, *v.* to ravage, forage, 15.  
 511, 18. 273; Forra, 19. 643; *pt.*  
*pl.* Forrayit, harried, 17. 527. O.F.  
*fourrer*, to forage.
- Forrayours, *s. pl.* forayers, 3. 75.  
 O.F. *fourragier*, a forager, pillager.
- Forreouris, *s. pl.* foragers, 15. 353\*.  
*See* above.
- Forrouth, *prep.* before, 10. 816,  
 11. 341, 12. 41, 13. 53, 14. 322, 16.  
 261, 17. 194, 18. 3. *See* Forouth.
- Forrouth, *adv.* before, previously,  
 16. 504, 19. 395; forward, 7. 139;  
 in the front, 14. 242, 16. 625; on-  
 ward, 16. 96. *See* Forouth.
- Forrow, *adv.* formerly, before, 4.  
 437. *See* Forouth, Forrouth.
- Forrow, *prep.* before, 5. 18. *See*  
 Forow, Forouth.
- Forsicht, *s.* foresight, 20. 314;  
 Forsicht, 1. 460.
- Forskyn, *pp.* agreed upon, 1.  
 514, 630, 20. 55; promised, 20. 288.
- Forss, *s.* force, 10. 784, 12. 524,  
 13. 254, 17. 396, 19. 633; Fors,  
 might, 4. 132; *ma na fors*, make  
 no account, 5. 85; *mast fors*, most  
 especially, for the most part, 8. 11.
- Forsuk, *pt. s.* shrank from, avoided,  
 14. 315.
- Forsuth, *adv.* verily, 9. 480, 17.  
 485.
- For-swat, *pp.* covered with sweat,  
 7. 2.
- For-swayt, *for* For-swat, 7. 2 (E.).
- Forsye, *adj.* full of force, strong,  
 2. 242; Forsy, 11. 215, 15. 410.
- For-thi, *adv. and conj.* therefore, 1.  
 464, 3. 33, 5. 530, 6. 573, 7. 554,  
 9. 486, 16. 569. A.S. *forþi*, on that  
 account.
- Forthirmar, *adv.* further, 7. 8;  
 further on, 10. 297, 12. 113, 14.  
 100.
- Forthward, *adv.* further, after-  
 wards, 5. 426; forward, 16. 264.
- Fortoun, *s.* fortune, 3. 271.
- Fortrassis, *s. pl.* fortresses, 10. 155.
- Fortravalit, *pp.* overworned by  
 toil, 3. 326, 7. 176, 368.
- Forvounderit, *pp.* greatly aston-  
 ished, 6. 10.
- Forzet, *pp.* forgotten, 1. 16.
- Fothyr, *s.* fother, load, 10. 198  
 (E.). *See* Fudyr.
- Foul, *s.* a bird, 7. 188.
- Foull, *adj.* foul, 5. 404; bad, 9.  
 272.
- Fouly, *adv.* foully, cowardly, 8.  
 110; disgracefully, 6. 156.
- Found, *v.* to go, 10. 256. A.S.  
*fundian*, to tend to, go forward.
- Foundyn, *pp.* found, 1. 60.
- Fowlly, *adv.* cowardly, 9. 275.  
*See* above.
- Fowlly, *adv.* foully, 7. 615;  
 cowardly, disgracefully, 9. 91, 15.  
 350.
- Fox, *s.* fox, 19. 648.
- Foysoun, *s.* plenty, abundance,  
 great number, 17. 308, 18. 417, 19.  
 482; Foysoun, plenty, 15. 93 (E.).  
 O.F. *faison*, plenty; from Lat. acc.  
*fusionem*. *See* Fusione.
- Fra, *prep.* from, 1. 187, 439;  
*(follows its case)*, 11. 422; *conj.*  
 from the time that, 5. 56, 8. 1, 9.  
 110, 14. 56. Icel. *frá*, from; Eng.  
*fro*.
- Frakly, *adv.* keenly, 7. 166. A.S.  
*frac*, *freec*, bold; Icel. *frekr*,  
 greedy.
- Framing, *an error for* Fraying,  
 noise, 10. 653 (H.).

- Franchiss, *s.* freedom, 11. 268.  
 Franch-men, Frenchmen, 10. 749.  
 Fra-thine, *adv.* thenceforward, 3. 353, 10. 636, 13. 671.  
 Fray, fear, terror, 15. 255. *See* Effray.  
 Fraying, *s.* clashing, 10. 653. O.Fr. *freier, froier*, Lat. *fricare*, to rub.  
 Frayit, *pp.* terrified; or rather, beset with terrors, 2. 47 (*footnote*). *See* Effray.  
 Fre, *adj.* free, 1. 246.  
 Fredome, freedom, 1. 225.  
 Frely, *adj.* noble, 3. 578. A.S. *freðlic*, liberal, noble.  
 Frer, *s.* friar, 18. 300.  
 Freris, *gen. pl.* Friars'; i.e. the Greyfriars' church, 2. 33. *See* the note.  
 Freshly, *adv.* freshly, 11. 192, 13. 126.  
 Frest, *s.* delay, 2. 277, 7. 547. Icel. *frest*, delay; A.S. *fyrst*, an interval.  
 Freyast, *adj. superl.* freest, 1. 164.  
 Freynd, *s.* a friend, 4. 11.  
 Freyndsome, *adj.* friendly, 1. 88.  
 Friendfull, *adj.* friendly, 1. 88 (*footnote*).  
 Froggis, *s. pl.* frocks, 10. 375. F. *froc*. G. Douglas also has the spelling *frog*.  
 Frontly, *adv.* face to face, 16. 174. Cf. F. *de front*, in front; said of attacking an enemy. Both MSS. have this reading; the reading *stoutlynys* in J. is wrong.  
 Frount, *s.* front, 17. 569.  
 Froytis, *s. pl.* fruits, 10. 191.  
 Frusch, *s.* rush, 17. 569 (E.); Frusche, rush, broken order, 14. 212, 542; a breaking, noise of weapons, 12. 545, 16. 160; crash, collision, 16. 626; charge, onset, 15. 478; a sudden breaking of the ranks, 13. 292. F. *froisser*.  
 Fruschand, *pres. pt.* battering, ramming with their heads noisily, 16. 161. F. *froisser*, to break.  
 Frusching, *s.* breaking, 12. 504. *See* Frusch.  
 Fruschit, *pt. s.* broke, 12. 57 (E.).  
 Fruschit, *pp. an error for* Ruschit, i.e. driven back, 12. 121 (E.).  
 Frutis, *s. pl.* fruits, 10. 191 (E.).  
 Fryst, *adv.* first, 1. 255, 542; 8. 9 (E.), 17. 53 (E.).  
 Fude, *s.* food, 10. 189.  
 Fudyr, *s.* a load, cart-load, 10. 198. Cf. A.S. *foðer*, a mass, load.  
 Fule, *s.* a fool, 4. 222; *gen. sing.* Fulis, 1. 582; Fulys, 11. 21.  
 Fule-hardyment, fool-hardiness, 6. 337, 340.  
 Fulley, *adv.* fully, 4. 264, 9. 579; Fullyly, completely, 2. 423.  
 Fullfill, *v.* to fulfil, 10. 64; *pp.* Fulfillit, filled full, 5. 46, 12. 423, 10. 294, 19. 105; performed, 5. 532; Fulfillyt, 1. 400.  
 Fulyt, *pp.* befooled, 4. 222 (*footnote*).  
 Fundying, *s.* benumbment with cold, 20. 75; *see* the note. Jamie-sou's explanation, 'asthma,' is a bad guess, and wrong. The word is perhaps Celtic. Cf. Gaelic *funn-tainn*, extreme cold, severity of weather.  
 Fundyn, *pp.* found, i.e. provided for, 1. 322; found, 9. 663, 10. 29, 16. 267, 18. 274, 20. 281, 482; Fundin, 6. 190, 7. 244, 10. 523.  
 Fur, *pt. s.* fared, 2. 507; fared, acted, did, 2. 503. *See* Fure.  
 Furd, *s.* ford, 6. 78; Furde, 8. 53, 15. 356; *gen.* Furdis, ford's, 6. 118.  
 Fure, *pt. s.* fared, 13. 653; *pl.* Fure, went on his way, 16. 288. *See* Fur, Far.  
 Furrit, *pp.* furred, 16. 421, 485.  
 Furth, *adv.* forth, 4. 121, 5. 247, 9. 362; hereafter, 1. 14; forward, 11.

- 390 ; continually, 16. 531 ; *dofurth*, continue to perform, 1. 256.
- Furthir, *imp. s. 3 p.* further, advance, 4. 627.
- Furthwardis, *adv.* forwards, 4. 488 ; Furthwarde, 16. 61, 17. 591 ; Furthward, 16. 73.
- Fusioun, *s.* plenty, abundance, 9. 439, 13. 71, 14. 228, 15. 93, 16. 167, 17. 175 ; numbers, quantity, 16. 588. *See* Foysoun.
- Fusoun, *for* Fusioun, 9. 439 (E.).
- Fut-breid, foot's breadth, 11. 365.
- Fute, foot, 1. 103, 3. 118, 6. 591 ; *on fut*, on foot, 9. 377 ; *on fute*, 3. 20 ; *pl.* Fut, foot, feet (in measuring), 10. 547, 17. 939.
- Fute, *s.* a child, 3. 578. *See* the Note.
- Fut-hate, *adv.* (lit. foot hot), with all speed, 3. 418 ; Fut-hat, 13. 454. *See* the Note to iii. 418.
- Fwaill, *s.* fuel, 4. 64, 170.
- Fwnȝeit, *pt. pl.* foined, fenced, 18. 307 ; Fwyngyt, 8. 307 (E.). *See* foine in Chaucer.
- Fycht, *s.* fight, battle, 2. 242. *See* Ficht.
- Fyffe, five, 8. 181.
- Fyft, *ord.* fifth, 2. 17 (*footnote*) ; *see* note to the line.
- Fyften, *num. ord.* fifteenth, 2. 17.
- Fynding, *s.* finding, discovery, 3. 422.
- Fyne, *adj.* fine, good, 11. 417.
- Fyre, *s.* fire, 17. 246, 429 ; *pl.* Fyres, 19. 482.
- Fyrth, *s.* firth, 18. 267, 14. 33 (F.).
- Fyschit, *pp.* fixed, 20. 178.
- Ga, *v.* to go, 1. 330, 2. 10, 11. 642 ; let him go, 1. 433 ; Ga we, let us go, 2. 49, 5. 79. *See* Gayn.
- Gabbing, *s.* lying, falsehood, deceit, 4. 301, 5. 510 ; *pl.* Gabbingis, lies, 4. 768.
- Gabbit, *pp.* lied, 4. 290. *F. gaber*, to mock.
- Gaddering, *s.* gathering, company, 6. 389 ; Gadering, 6. 462, 7. 397 ; Gaderyng, host, 9. 217.
- Gaderit, *pt. s.* gathered, assembled, 4. 187, 9. 197, 10. 370, 14. 19, 15. 429, 16. 29, 17. 10, 18. 235, 19. 274, 20. 398 ; *pt. pl.* 17. 182, 539, 821 ; Gaderit, gathered themselves, 15. 462 ; *pres. pt.* Gaderand, 14. 320. A.S. *gaderian*, to gather.
- Gadryng, *s.* gathering, assembly, 1. 595. *See* Gaddering.
- Gadwand, *s.* whip, whip-stock, 10. 232. A.S. *gād*, a goad, whip.
- Gaff, *pt. s.* gave, 2. 164, 10. 779 ; Gaf, 1. 565, 13. 198 ; *gaf the bak*, turned their backs, fled, 18. 323 ; Gaiff, 2. 131, 5. 643 ; *pl.* Gaff, 13. 147 ; Gaiff, 3. 23, 8. 314.
- Gainestand, *v.* to withstand, 15. 298 (H.) ; *pt. s.* Gainestood, resisted, 10. 287 (H.).
- Gaittes, *s. pl.* goats, 18. 451 (H.).
- Galay, *s.* galley, 3. 593, 4. 372 ; *pl.* Galays, 10. 35 ; Galais, 4. 463, 629.
- Galay, *v.* to reel, 2. 422. A.S. *gēlan*, to hinder ; also, to astonish, terrify ; cf. *gallow*, i. e. frighten, in King Lear, iii. 2. 44.
- Gammyn, *s.* game, i. e. joy, 19. 804 ; sport, play, amusement, 15. 314 ; affair, 7. 36 ; *or al the gammyn ga*, ere all the sport be over, 9. 466 ; *the gammyn ga*, the game may go, affairs may turn out, 11. 319 ; Gamyn, game, i. e. amusement, 3. 465. A.S. *gamen*, sport.
- Gan, *pt. s.* (*used as auxiliary*) did, 1. 184, 2. 10.
- Gane, *pp.* gone, 9. 111. *See* Gayn.
- Ganesay, *v.* to gainsay, 1. 210 (*footnote*).
- Gane-saying, *s.* contradiction, 1. 580.
- Gang, *v.* to go, walk ; *gang no ryd*, walk nor ride, 4. 193 ; to go, 2.

- 276, 15. 91; *ger.* 7. 596; *pres. s.*  
Gangis, goes, 10. 421; *pres. pt.*  
Gangand, going, 7. 581, 10. 465,  
18. 18; marching, 11. 343; walking,  
4. 633.
- Ganging, *s.* going, approach, 14.  
400 (E. and H.).
- Gardiss; *gardez vous de Francis,*  
take heed to yourselves of Francis,  
10. 747.
- Garnisht, *pp.* stored, 10. 311 (H.);  
provided, 17. 713 (H.). See  
Warnist.
- Garnisoun, *s.* provision, store, 17.  
294 (E.).
- Garris, *pr. s.* makes, 7. 246; *pt. s.*  
Gart, caused, 7. 267. See Ger.
- Gast, *s.* ghost; *g. he gaf,* gave up  
the ghost, 19. 214.
- Gat, *s.* a way, 6. 577, 7. 42, 8. 65,  
9. 628, 11. 443, 12. 85, 13. 646, 19.  
691; a gate, 15. 348\*; a passage,  
13. 202; Gate, a way, 6. 8; *na gat*,  
in no way, 10. 230; *pl.* Gatis, ways,  
1. 338; *gen. sing.* Gatis, of a way;  
*a gatis*, of one way, i.e. in one and  
the same way, 4. 702. A.S. *geát*,  
*gát*, a door, way.
- Gayly, *adv.* gaily, 11. 128.
- Gayn, *pp.* gone, 2. 80; Gayne, 1.  
144, 3. 473. See Gane, Ga.
- Gayne-cumnyng, *s.* against-com-  
ing, i.e. attack, 2. 450.
- Gayne-gevynge, *s.* giving again,  
restoring, 1. 115.
- Geddis, *s. pl.* pikes, jacks, 2. 576.  
Icel. *gedda*, the pike (fish).
- Geir, *s.* gear, equipment, 9. 709,  
17. 702, 859. A.S. *gearwa*, pre-  
paration. See Ger, *sb.*
- Generaly, *adv.* generally, 11. 208.
- Ger, *s.* gear, property, 18. 160;  
provisions, 8. 458; armour, 5. 110,  
18. 165. See Geir.
- Ger, *v.* to cause, 1. 299, 4. 654, 5.  
265, 17. 271; *pr. s. subj.* may  
make, 1. 16; *pr. s.* Gerris, makes,  
6. 332, 9. 94; *pr. pl.* Gerris, cause,  
11. 491; *pt. s.* Gert, caused, made,  
1. 355, 2. 13, 5. 117, 6. 187, 8. 444,  
10. 748, 12. 7, 14. 296, 17. 90;  
*gert helde*, caused to be kept, 8.  
14; *pl.* Gert, 2. 506, 4. 30. *Ger*  
*mak*, to cause to be made, 1. 491.  
Icel. *göra*, to make.
- Gess; *to gess*, to take a guess, 14.  
270.
- Gestis, *s. pl.* (perhaps) motions,  
movements, 17. 597. See the  
note.
- Get, *v.* to get, 9. 165, 11. 175; to  
keep, 15. 264.
- Gevyn, *pp.* given, 1. 317, 2. 122,  
11. 32; Gevin, 9. 445, 11. 40;  
Gevin to houss, taken home, 20.  
102. See Gif.
- Gewe, *pt. s.* gave, 16. 130 (E.).  
See Gif.
- Ghyle, *s.* guile, 1. 172.
- Gif, *v.* to incline, lit. give, 19. 107;  
*pres. s.* Giffis, give, 1. 227; in-  
clines, 19. 97; *pl.* Giffis, give, 4.  
721; *pp.* Giffin, given, disposed, 4.  
735; *pres. pt.* Gifand, 13. 160.  
A.S. *gifan*.
- Giff, *conj. if.* 1. 12; Gif, 4. 106, 8.  
131; *bot gif*, unless, 8. 64. A.S.  
*gif*, Moeso-Goth. *jabai*, compounded  
of *jah*, also, and *ibai*, where *ibai*  
corresponds to Icel. *ef*, if, from Icel.  
*ef*, doubt. Quite unconnected with  
*gire*.
- Girns, *s. pl.* traps, gins, 2. 576  
(footnote). See “*Gren*, a gin or  
snare,” in Halliwell’s Dictionary.
- Gladship, *s.* gladness, joy, 8. 253,  
12. 209, 17. 11, 19. 750. A.S.  
*glædscipe*.
- Gladsum, *adj.* glad, blithe, merry,  
11. 256, 12. 157, 16. 41, 17. 5;  
kindly, 9. 728.
- Gladsumly, *adv.* gladly, 16. 20.
- Glaid, *adj.* glad, merry, 1. 332.
- Glaidschip, *s.* gladness, in E., 5.  
298 (footnote). See Gladship.
- Gle, *s.* glee, 17. 908, 19. 804;  
game, sport, 9. 701, 15. 176; *ȝeid*

- the gle*, the game went, 1. 90. *See* Glew. A.S. *gleō*.
- Glemand, *pres. pt.* gleaming, 8. 226.
- Glen, *s. glen*, 4. 372 (*footnote*).
- Glew, *s. game*, affair (lit. glee), 6. 658; contrivance, 17. 403 (C.). *See* Gle.
- Gliffnyt, *pt. s.* looked up quickly, took a glimpse, 7. 184. Cf. Scot. *gliff*, a glance.
- Glitterand, *pres. pt.* glittering, 8. 233.
- Glowand, *pres. part.* glowing, 4. 113.
- Gluffnyt, *an error in C. for Gliffnyt*, 7. 184 (*footnote*).
- Gnaw, *v.* to gnaw, bite, eat, 19. 664.
- Gottyn, *pp.* got, 2. 3, 10. 452; arrived, 18. 454; begotten, 20. 131; Gottin, obtained, 19. 785; got, 14. 223.
- Gouernale, *s. power to govern*, 11. 161; government, 16. 358; Gouvernale, 1. 192 (*footnote*).
- Gouernit, *pt. s.* governed, 20. 603; led, 12. 499; *pl. refl.* Gouernit thame, shifted for themselves, 4. 459; Gouernyt thaim, governed themselves, contrived to exist, lived, 2. 588; *pp.* Gouernit, led, 13. 571, 19. 467; governed, 1. 486, 8. 496, 10. 156, 16. 321, 20. 311; controlled, 6. 369.
- Gown, *s. gown*, 19. 352; *pl.* Gowyns, 8. 468.
- Graith, *adj.* ready, 4. 759. Icel. *greiðr*, ready.
- Graithed, *pt. pl. a reading in H. for Redyit*, i.e. made ready, 9. 171 (*footnote*). (The sense is the same; see above, and Grathit.)
- Graithly, *adv.* directly, 19. 708. Icel. *greiðliga*, readily. *See* Grathly.
- Grant, 1 *p. s. pr.* I agree, 4. 352; *pt. pl.* Grantit, assented, 7. 133; *imp. pl.* Grantis, grant ye, 1. 420; *pt. s.* Grantit, confessed, 19. 61; *pp.* Grantit, confessed, 19. 48.
- Granting, *s. confession*, 19. 45.
- Granyng, *s. groaning*, 13. 157.
- Granys, *s. pl.* groans, 13. 35.
- Grass, *s. grace*, 14. 361.
- Grathit, *pp.* prepared, 5. 387; *pt. pl.* Grathyd, furnished (said ironically), 13. 127 (E.). *See* Graithed.
- Grathly, *adv.* speedily, 10. 205. *See* Graithly.
- Gravyn, *pp.* buried, 4. 309.
- Gray, *adj.* gray, 12. 18. (*So in H.; C. has gay.*)
- Gress, *s. grass*, 2. 361, 8. 445 (E.); *pl.* Gressys, grasses, herbs, *reading in E. for Grewis*, 5. 13 (*footnote*).
- Gret, *adj.* great; *in gret thing*, in a great measure, 17. 196; *pl. adj.* as *sb.* great men, 14. 390; Grete, 10. 73.
- Gret, *v. to weep*, 3. 347, 16. 228; *pt. s.* Gret, wept, 3. 511, 5. 285; *pt. pl.* Gret, 3. 507; 1 *p. s. pr.* Grete, I weep, 16. 231; *pres. pt.* Gretand, 5. 157. A.S. *grætan*, to weep.
- Gretar, *adj.* greater, 20. 463.
- Greeting, *s. weeping*, 3. 514, 522, 527; 20. 197, 489.
- Gretumly, *adv.* greatly, extremely, 1. 365, 2. 291, 3. 668, 8. 105, 9. 537, 10. 101, 11. 494, 12. 364, 13. 210, 17. 331, 18. 322, 19. 113. The formation of the word is obscure; perhaps *gretum* answers to A.S. *greatum*, dat. pl. of *great*.
- Greving, *s. grieving, harm*, 8. 510.
- Greving, *for* Grewing, *s. horror*, 19. 555 (C.). *See below.*
- Grevit thame, *pt. s.* it made them shudder, 15. 541; where *grevit* is written for *grewit* or *growit*. Cf. Dan. *gru*, horror. *See* Grow.
- Grevousar, more grievous, harder, 10. 636.
- Grewis, *s. pl.* groves, 5. 13. *See* the Note.

- Greyn, *adj.* green, 11. 372.
- Grow, *v.* to quake with terror, 17. 696; *pt. s.* Growyt, shuddered, was shocked, 20. 517; *pt. s. trans.* it made them shudder, 15. 541 (E.); *see* Grevit. Cf. Icel. *grúfa*, to cower; Dan. *gru*, horror.
- Growis, *pr. s.* grows, increases, 19. 638; *pres. pt.* Growand, growing, 16. 395.
- Growyng, *s.* terror, 19. 555. *See* Grow.
- Gruching, *s.* grudging, reluctance, 16. 19.
- Gruchys, *pr. s.* lit. grudges; finds fault, opposes (you), 2. 123.
- Grunches, *pr. s.* grumbles, 2. 123 (*footnote*).
- Grunching, *s.* complaint, 16. 9 (C.); *footnote*.
- Grund, *s.* ground, land, 20. 324.
- Grundyn, *pp.* ground, sharpened, 12. 520.
- Gryppyt, *pt. s.* gripped, seized, 1. 115.
- Gud, *adj.* good, 1. 4, 9. 12.
- Gude, *s.* property, 17. 105; *pl.* Gudis, goods, 17. 517.
- Gyff, *conj.* if, 1. 154, 159; 3. 38, 9. 210. *Bot gyff*, unless, 1. 159. *See* Giff.
- Gyff, *pr. s. subj.* may he give, 1. 34. *See* Gif.
- Gyit, *pp.* guided, 19. 708. O.F. *guier*, to guide.
- Gyle, *s.* guile, 6. 4.
- Gyn, *s.* stratagem, device, 15. 222; Gyne, engine, 17. 682, 691; *pl.* Gynis, engines, 17. 250; Gynnys, nets, 2. 576. Short for F. *engin*, Lat. *ingenium*.
- Gynour, *s.* engineer, 17. 468, 690, 718; 17. 681 (E.). Formed from *gyn*.
- Gyrd, *s.* stroke, blow, 5. 629. From A.S. *gyrd*, a rod, stick.
- Gyrdand, *pres. part.* striking right and left, 2. 417. *See* above.
- Gyrdit, *pp.* girt, 17. 616. A.S. *gyrðan*, to gird.
- Gyrnand, *pres. part.* grinning, 4. 322.
- Gyrnyng, *s.* grinning, 13. 157.
- Gyrss, *s.* grass, 8. 445, 11. 372, 12. 582. A.S. *gars, gær*.
- Gyrth, *s.* sanctuary, 4. 47, 51; sacred protecting power; *gare na gyrth*, respected not the sanctuary, 2. 44. Icel. *grið*, a truce; also a sanctuary, asylum.
- Haberownys, *s. pl.* habergeons, 11. 131 (E.). *See* Chaucer, Prol. 76.
- Haboundance, *s.* abundance, 14. 229 (E.).
- Haboundyt, *pt. s.* abounded, 13. 716 (E.), 744 (E.).
- Hachit, *s.* a hatchet, 10. 174.
- Had, *pt. s.* took, conveyed, 15. 240; *had nocht been*, had it not been for, 3. 216. *See* Haf.
- Haf, *v.* to have, 4. 277, 5. 392, 6. 326; *pr. s. subj.* have, 6. 334; Haff, *v.* 11. 19, 18. 70; 1 *p. pr. pl.* Haffis, we have, 3. 316; *pr. s. as fut.* Haffys, he shall have, 1. 434; *imp. pl.* Haffis, have ye, 13. 305; *pt. s.* Haid, had, 1. 38; *pl.* Haid, had, 1. 514.
- Haill, whole, all of them, 14. 490; *all haill*, entirely, 10. 793, 11. 3; *haill and feir*, safe and sound, 15. 514; *haill and fer*, 9. 231. *See* Feir. Icel. *heill*, hale.
- Hailsed, *pt. s.* saluted, 3. 500 (*footnote*): *perhaps a better reading than Haylist*. *See* below.
- Hailsyt, *pt. s.* saluted, 2. 153. (*See above*.) It occurs in Piers Plowman, B. 5. 101, 7. 160. Swed. *helsa*, to salute; cf. Swed. *helsa*, health. Not to be confused with A.S. *healsian*, to embrace round the neck. *See* Halsit.
- Halche, *s.* haugh, 16. 336 (E.). Cf. *halke*, a corner, lurking-place, in Chaucer. *See* Hawch.

- Hald, *v.* to hold, 1. 154, 410; to esteem, 2. 389; to keep, 6. 183; to keep on, 8. 65; *bargane hald*, to engage in fighting, 4. 96; *pres. pt.* Haldand, 14. 409; *pp.* Haldin, holden, kept, 5. 88, 9. 457, 13. 370; *pp.* Haldyn, holden, held, 1. 118; esteemed, 20. 364; Haldyne, kept, 13. 542; *pr. pl.* Haldis, hold, 1. 488; possess, 4. 349, 726; *imp. pl.* Haldis, continue, 7. 123. Icel. *halsa*, A.S. *healdan*.
- Haldaris, *s. pl.* holders, i. e. defenders of the castle, 4. 82.
- Halding, *s.* holding, possessions, 19. 66.
- Hale, *adj.* whole, 1. 137, 8. 425; complete, 4. 167. *See Haill.*
- Hale, *adv.* wholly, 1. 65, 185; *all hale*, entirely, 1. 497, 11. 4, 15. 202, 18. 238. *See Haill.*
- Halely, *adv.* wholly, 3. 45, 4. 598, 5. 303, 6. 293, 9. 360, 14. 551, 15. 224; exactly, 4. 772.
- Half, *s.* side, 9. 309, 11. 175, 16. 399, 17. 191; *pl.* Halfis, sides, 4. 150, 16. 676, 17. 566; Halfis, 19. 516. A.S. *healf*, half, side.
- Half-deill, *s.* half part, half, 14. 188, 497.
- Halfin dall, *for* Halfin dell, i. e. half part, 14. 497 (E.).
- Halist, *for* Halsit, 7. 116 (E.).
- Halle, *adj.* whole, 1. 274. *See Hale, Haill.*
- Hals, *s.* neck, 5. 575, 7. 114, 583; Halss, 6. 627, 20. 307. Icel. *hals*, A.S. *heals*, neck.
- Halsing, *s.* salutation, 7. 117. *See below.*
- Halsit, *pt. pl.* saluted, 4. 636, 7. 116, 13. 525. *See Hailsyt.*
- Haltand, *pres. pt.* halting, i. e. lame, 18. 275.
- Haly, *adj.* holy, 1. 139, 4. 683, 10. 737, 19. 722. A.S. *hálig*.
- Haly, *adv.* wholly, 1. 16, 2. 453, 5. 57, 6. 182, 10. 378, 14. 79, 18. 308. *See below.*
- Halyly, *adv.* wholly, entirely, 1. 316, 540. *See above, and see Halely.*
- Halyst, *an error in E. for Halsyt*, 4. 636 (*footnote*), 13. 525. *See Halsit.*
- Hamelat, *s.* hamlet, 4. 195; Hamlet, 9. 403; Hamillet, 9. 403 (E.).
- Hamly, *adj.* homely, kindly, 19. 794.
- Hamly, *adv.* in a homely manner, kindly, 11. 259 (E.), 18. 546. *See below.*
- Hamlyly, *adv.* in a homely way, heartily, 17. 4 (E.). *See above.*
- Hamvardis, *adv.* homeward, 7. 492; Hamwarde, 19. 751; Hamward, 16. 472; Hamwart, 16. 472 (E.); Hamvard, 6. 294.
- Hand; *at hand*, in hand, under guidance, i. e. well trained; said of a horse, 1. 120 (cf. Shak. Jul. Cæs, iv. 2. 23); near, 6. 604; *at thar hand*, close at their hand, 3. 54. 7. 563; *tak on hand*, undertake, 1. 268, 13. 368; *tuk on hand*, undertook, 14. 10.
- Hand-ax, *s.* hand-axe, 5. 606.
- Hand-ax-schaft, shaft of a battle-axe, 12. 57, 97.
- Handillit, *pp.* handled, 17. 416. *See Handlyt.*
- Handis, *s. pl.* hands, 9. 481, &c.
- Handles, *a misspelling of* Ayndless, 10. 609 (E.).
- Handlyt, *pp.* handled, 10. 648, 693; Handillit, 17. 416.
- Hangis, *imp. pl.* hang, 4. 322; *pp.* Hangit, hung, 4. 176, 17. 871; Hangyt, 4. 34.
- Hansell, *s.* hansel; a first portion of goods delivered to a buyer; here (ironically) first defeat, 5. 120.
- Hap, *s.* good fortune, success, 12. 554 (E.); good luck, 5. 538, 15. 392.
- Happely, *adv.* luckily, 17. 438.

- Happyn, *v.* to happen, 4. 728 ; *pr.* *s. subj.* Happin, it may happen (to him), 11. 644 ; *pr. s.* Hapnys, it happens, 5. 248 ; *pt. s.* Hapnyt, it happened, 3. 481, 4. 396 ; Hapnit, 13. 176 ; Hapnynt, 7. 400 (E.) ; *pt. s. subj.* Hapnyt, it should happen, 11. 596, 20. 137 (E.), 20. 148 ; *pp.* Hapnyt, 10. 694.
- Har, hair, 1. 384, 397.
- Hard, *pt. s.* heard, 1. 437, 503 ; 2. 113 ; 1 *p.* I heard, 1. 384 ; *pp.* Hard, 2. 93.
- Hard, *adj.* severe, 9. 36.
- Hardely, *adv.* hardly, 11. 411.
- Hardiment, *s.* hardihood, 11. 490 ; *pl.* Hardimentis, deeds of valour, 13. 179 (E.). *See* Hardyment.
- Hardiss, *s.* hards (of flax), 17. 612.
- Hardnyt, *pt. pl.* incited (lit. hardened), 12. 500.
- Hardy, *adj.* hardy, bold, 1. 28, 11. 249, 500 ; 13. 77. F. *hardi*.
- Hardyment, *s.* hardihood, courage, boldness, 6. 353, 9. 632, 15. 270, 16. 20 ; deed of valour, 12. 509. O.F. *hardement*, courage.
- Hardynes, hardship, 1. 448. Cf. *hardness*.
- Harnass, *s.* armour, 9. 360, 11. 112, 116, 239 ; Harness, 12. 465 ; Harnase, 11. 421. O.F. *harnas*, *harnois*.
- Harnast, *pp.* harnessed, equipped, 9. 710 ; Harnasyt, 9. 710 (E.).
- Harnys, *s. pl.* brains, 1. 294, 3. 128, 5. 625, 10. 236 ; Harniss, 5. 633. Icel. *hjarni*, the brain.
- Harnys, *s. pl.* brains, but here an error for Arrowes, 18. 417 (E.).
- Harrow, *s.* harrow, 19. 175.
- Hart, heart, 1. 28.
- Hartfully, *adv.* heartily, gladly, 3. 510.
- Hass, *pr. pl.* have, 11. 273 ; Has, 12. 79 ; 1 *p. s. pr.* Has, 13. 642.
- Hastely, *adv.* hastily, 11. 625.
- Hastit, *pt. s. refl.* hurried himself, 11. 549.
- Hat, *pt. s.* was named (M. E. *hight*), 4. 585, 8. 34, 9. 692, 12. 451, 14. 252, 20. 473 ; *pp.* named, 14. 106, 18. 462. A.S. *hátan*, to call, to be named.
- Hat, *adj.* hot, 4. 113, 8. 66, 12. 145 ; Hate, 6. 305. *See* Het.
- Hat, *adv.* hotly, 10. 693, 16. 648.
- Hat, *s. hat*, 12. 22, 16. 419, 481, 485.
- Hatit, *pl. s.* hated, 6. 502, 9. 465, 20. 524 (H.).
- Hattyn, *pp.* named, 10. 750, 14. 376. *See* Hat, *verb*.
- Havyn, *s. haven*, 17. 306.
- Hawbrekis, *s. pl.* hauberks, 8. 232.
- Hawbryschownys, *s. pl.* haber-geons, 11. 131.
- Hawch, *s. haugh*, 16. 336. *See* Halche.
- Hawe, *v.* to have, 1. 5, 21 ; *imp. pl.* Hawys, have ye, 13. 305 (E.).
- Hawtane, *adj.* proud, 1. 196. F. *hautain*.
- Hawyng, *s. (lit. having)*, manner, mien, 7. 135, 11. 246.
- Hay, *s. hay*, 10. 152, 169.
- Haylist, *pt. s.* greeted, 3. 500. *Sic* ; miswritten for *haylsit*. *See* Halsit, Hailsed.
- Hayme, *s. home*, 14. 278, 18. 510 ; *adv.* homeward, home, 16. 667 ; Haym, *adv.* 14. 271, 16. 472, 18. 341. Icel. *heimr*, home ; *heim*, *adv.*, homeward.
- He, *adj.* high, haughty, proud, 6. 116 ; Hee, 7. 109 ; *adv.* on high, loudly, 4. 416. *See* Hey.
- Hecht, *v.* (1) to promise, 12. 384 ; 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise, 12. 318 ; *pt. s.* promised, 10. 262, 579 ; (2) *pt. s.* was named, 10. 27, 17. 152. A.S. *hátan*, to promise, be named.

- Hed, *s.* head, 2. 589.  
 Hed, *v.* to behead, 5. 402; Hede, 4. 30; *pp.* Hedit, 19. 57.  
 Hede-soyme, *s.* the rope reaching to the heads of the oxen, the traces, 10. 180. See the note.  
 Hedis, *s. pl.* heads (of their horses), 9. 610.  
 Heid, *s.* heed, 18. 150.  
 Heid, *s.* head, 3. 138; *off thine aryne heid*, as of your own will, 2. 121; *pl.* Hedis, 9. 610.  
 Heill, *s.* heel, 16. 596.  
 Heir, *adv.* here, 4. 125, 5. 69, 11. 181; *heir and their*, everywhere, 6. 27.  
 Heirschip, *s.* the harrying, destruction, 9. 300. A.S. *herian*, to ravage with an army.  
 Heit, *s.* heat, 11. 611. See Het.  
 Held doun, *pt. pl.* continued, 15. 171.  
 Heldand, *pres. part.* holding, belonging, 5. 153.  
 Heling, *s.* covering, 5. 11, 17. 598.  
 Helit, *pt. s.* hid, 18. 308, 19. 64; *pt. pl.* hid, 4. 373; covered, 8. 469, 10. 375, 11. 185; *pp.* covered, 9. 128, 11. 107, 12. 146, 13. 431. A.S. *helan*, to cover, hide.  
 Helit, *pp.* healed, 15. 85.  
 Hell, *s.* hell, 3. 708.  
 Helmys, *s. pl.* helmets, 19. 396.  
 Helping, *s.* helping, succour, 3. 148.  
 Helpis, *pr. s.* helps, assists, 6. 17, 20. 506; *pt. s.* Helpit, 19. 611; *pt. pl.* 17. 486; *pp.* 11. 636, 12. 142.  
 Hely, *adv.* highly, aloud, 2. 315, 3. 734; haughtily, proudly, 8. 143, 18. 509; highly, 1. 577.  
 Helyng, *s.* healing; *into helyng*, in health, 5. 438; Helyne, 15. 84.  
 Helyt, *pp.* covered, 10. 169, 14. 290. See Helit.  
 Hemp, *s.* hemp, 10. 352 (H. *rubric in footnote*).  
 Hempyn, *adj.* hempen, 10. 360.  
 Hendir, *adj.* past; *this hendir day*, in days past, 10. 551. Cf. Icel. *endr*, formerly, which seems to have been confused with Icel. *hindirdags*, the day after to-morrow; which is quite a different thing.  
 Hendirmar, *adj.* more backward; lit. hinder-more, 7. 599.  
 Henmast, *adj.* hindmost, last, 8. 245, 12. 268, 13. 579, 19. 583.  
 Her, *adv.* here, 1. 419, 5. 267, 10. 554, 12. 240; in this case, 12. 366.  
 Her, *v.* to hear, 1. 445, 2. 184, 13. 34; *pr. pl. 2 p.* ye hear, 8. 489.  
 Herbery, *s.* lodging, 2. 280, 4. 466, 14. 153, 16. 439, 18. 332, 19. 388; encampment, 7. 308; Herbry, 4. 516, 7. 320, 14. 461; quarters, 17. 535. A.S. *herebeorga*, shelter for an army.  
 Herbrey, *v. reflex.* to harbour, to lodge themselves, to take lodgings, 2. 276, 300, 449; 12. 9; 19. 510; *pt. s.* Herbreyd, lodged, 1. 599; *pt. pl.* Herbreyt thame, 19. 390; Herbreyt, lodged, 14. 169; *pp.* Herbreyt, lodged, 5. 48; Herbreyit, 9. 689. See above. See also Herbreyit.  
 Herbreouris, *s. pl.* ‘herbergeours,’ men sent to find lodgings, harbingers, 16. 465, 18. 334, 344.  
 Herbreyng, *s.* lodging, 9. 703.  
 Herbry, *s.* quarters, 17. 535, &c. See Herbery.  
 Herbryit, *pt. s.* tarried, dwelt, 6. 86; Herbryd, 10. 42 (E.); *pt. pl.* Herbreyt thame, lodged, 11. 359, 12. 391, 18. 340, 19. 500; *pp.* Herbreyt, lodged, 2. 341, 17. 206. See Herbery, *verb*.  
 Herd, *adj.* hard, 12. 530, 14. 26, 19. 642.  
 Herd, *adv.* hard, 18. 482.  
 Herd, *pt. s.* heard, 1. 314.  
 Here, *v.* to hear, 5. 543.

- Herkynand, *pres. part.* hearkening, listening, 6. 107.
- Herrodis, *s. pl.* heralds, 12. 371. O.F. *heraut*.
- Hert, *s.* heart, 11. 571, 18. 229.
- Her-till (E.), hereto, to this, 13. 241.
- Hertit, *pt. s.* encouraged, 16. 662.
- Hertly, *adv.* heartily, 19. 100.
- Heryed, *pt. s.* harried, *a reading in H. for Ryotit*, 9. 500 (*footnote*). See below.
- Heryit, *pt. s.* harried, 9. 298; *pl.* 19. 280. A.S. *herian*, to ravage.
- Heryng, *s.* hearing, 1. 5, 10.
- Hes, *pr. pl.* have, 17. 904\*. See Has.
- Het, *adj.* hot, 4. 114, 154. See Hat.
- Het, *s.* heat, 11. 612. See Heit.
- Hevaly, *adv.* heavily, 7. 209.
- Hevede, *s.* head, 5. 11. A.S. *heafod*.
- Hevin, *s.* heaven, 20. 250; Hevyn, 2. 144.
- Hevy, *adj.* heavy, dull, 7. 174; *hevy will*, ill will, 17. 20.
- Hew, *v.* to cut down, 16. 476; to hew, 19. 541; *pt. s.* Hewit, cut, 10. 233.
- Hewid, *s.* head, 2. 121 (*footnote*).
- Hewinis, *gen. sing.* heaven's, 8. 234. See Hevin.
- Hewit, *pp.* hued, coloured, 8. 230.
- Hewy, *adj.* heavy, 2. 369. See Hevy.
- Hewyly, *adv.* heavily, 3. 235.
- Hewyn, *s.* heaven, 2. 341; *gen.* Hewynnis, 20. 414. See Hevin.
- Hewynes, *for* Hevynes, 7. 175 (E.).
- Hey, *adj.* high, 1. 102, 276, 378; 17. 608. See He, Heych.
- Hey, *adv.* aloud, 2. 383.
- Heych, *adj.* high, 4. 117.
- Heycht, *s.* a height, 3. 707.
- Heychty, *adv.* proudly, 12. 250 (E.).
- Heyit, *pp.* exalted, 4. 667 (*foot-note*).
- Heyr, *adv.* here, 1. 416, 623. See Her.
- Heyt, *pp.* raised on high, exalted, 4. 667.
- Hicht, 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise you, I assure you, 7. 156, 8. 268, 9. 480, 10. 514, 721; 18. 482. See Hecht.
- Hicht, *pt. s.* hight, was called, 5. 209, 8. 453, 10. 153, 17. 150. See Hecht, Hycht.
- Hicht, *s.* a promise, 14. 16, 15. 425.
- Hicht, *s.* height, 4. 667, 9. 508, 18. 419, 449; high position, 10. 52; summit of power, 5. 183; *on hicht*, on high, aloft, aloud, 5. 631, 11. 397, 13. 723, 16. 407; *into the hicht*, openly, 5. 487.
- Hiddillis, *s.* a hiding-place, 6. 382. A.S. *hydels*, a den. See Hyddillis. Wyclif has *hidils*, *hidlis*, *hiddlis*, *hudlys*, Deut. 27. 15; Josh. 2. 1; 1 Kings 13. 6; Is. 48. 16; Mat. 6. 4; John 18. 20.
- Hidwysly, *adv.* hideously, 10. 685 (E.).
- Hidwyss, *adj.* hideous, 3. 724.
- Hillis, hill's, 10. 83.
- Hing, *v.* to hang, 2. 455, 4. 30, 54. Icel. *hengja*, to hang up. See Hyng.
- Hint, *pt. s.* seized, 7. 580; *pl.* 8. 470. A.S. *hentan*, to seize. See Hynt.
- Hir, *pron. her*, 17. 407.
- His; Hannibal his used for Hannibal's, 3. 232; see also 6. 435, 446.
- His, *gen.* (signifying duration); his liftyme, in his lifetime, 4. 713.
- His, for his men, 3. 372.
- Ho, *s.* halt, ceasing, 20. 429\*. Cf. Chaucer, Kn. Tale, ll. 848, 1675.

- Hobland, *pres. part.* dancing or hovering about, rising and falling in a surge, 4. 447. Probably related to Howand, q. v.
- Hobleris, *s. pl.* men on horseback, light-armed horsemen, 11. 110, 13. 640; Hobeleris, 11. 110 (E.); Hobillers, 11. 110 (H.); Hobilleris, 16. 80 (E.). See *Hobeleris* in Jamieson; and see Hobynis.
- Hobynis, *s. pl.* horses, 14. 68, 500. They seem to have been small, nimble horses, for reconnoitring, &c. See *hobin* in Roquefort's Glossaire.
- Hoill, *s. hole*, 19. 669.
- Holl, *adj.* hollow, deep, 8. 176.
- Holl, *adj.* whole, unbroken, 6. 78.
- Holles, *s. pl.* holes, 11. 153 (H.).
- Hone, *s.* delay, 6. 564 (E.), 14. 182 (E.). See Hoyn.
- Honeste, honour, decorum, 1. 548.
- Honorabily, *adv.* honourably, 1. 357, 13. 664.
- Honorit, *pt. s.* honoured, 16. 672; *pt. pl.* 20. 359.
- Hontyne, *s.* hunting, 4. 513.
- Hoost, *s.* hoost, army, 13. 734.
- Hop, *s.* hope, 4. 104.
- Horn, *s.* horn, 6. 469.
- Horsit, *pt. pl.* horsed, put him on horseback, 4. 285; *pp.* Horsit, mounted, horsed, 8. 171, 11. 294, 12. 48, 16. 514, 19. 342, 376\*; Horsyt, 13. 56 (E.); Horssit, 11. 637.
- Horss, a horse, 1. 207; *pl.* Horss, 3. 22, 8. 446, 11. 107, 13. 589; Hors, 8. 323; *gen. pl.* Horss, 2. 359. A.S. *hors*, *pl. hors*.
- Hostage, *s.* hostage, pledge, 10. 133 (E.). Better homage, *as in C.*
- Hostes, *s.* hostess, 4. 635.
- Houed, *pt. s.* it behoved, 10. 39 (H.).
- Hount, *v.* to hunt, 7. 399.
- Houss, *s.* house, home, 5. 522, 7. 151, 303: *gen. sing.* Housis, 7. 163; *pl.* Housis, 8. 514. A.S. *hus*.
- Howand, *pres. pt.* hovering, halting, waiting in readiness, 15. 461 (E.), 18. 116, 19. 585 (E.). Written for *horand*, pres. pt. of *houe* or *hove*, to hover or wait about. See *hovin* in Stratmann, and my note to P. Plowman, C. xxi. 83. See Hufe.
- Howe, *for Hufe*, 19. 345 (E.).
- How-gatis, *adv.* how, 4. 439; How-gat, 2. 156, 5. 597, 6. 308, 8. 102.
- Howis, *s. pl.* holes, 11. 153. A.S. *hol*, a hole.
- Howis, *s. pl.* hoes, 17. 344. It is not quite clear what kind of instrument is intended, or what was its use. F. *houe*, a hoe.
- Howss, house, 1. 534; *pl.* Howsis, 12. 396. See Houss.
- Howyt, *pt. s.* waited, 18. 299 (E.). See Hufe, Howand.
- Hoyn, *s. delay*, 5. 602, 6. 564, 10. 226, 14. 182. See "hone, delay, cessation," in Stratmann. See Hone, Ho, Howand.
- Hude, *s.* a hood, 18. 308; *pl.* Hudis, hoods, 19. 332 (E.).
- Hufe, *v.* to hover, lie in wait, 19. 345; *pres. pt.* Hufand, waiting, 19. 585; *pt. s.* Hufit, waited, 18. 299. See Howand, Huvande.
- Humely, *adv.* humbly, 3. 762; Humly, 1. 578; Humilly, 18. 404.
- Hund, a hound, dog, 1. 207, 6. 469. A.S. *hund*. See Hwnd.
- Hunder, *for Hundred*, 14. 67 (E.).
- Hundreth, hundred, 14. 534, 17. 739.
- Huntand, *pres. pt.* hunting, 20. 21.
- Husband, *s.* a small farmer, 10. 151, 387; *gen. sing.* Husbandis, 7. 151; *pl.* Husbandis, husbandmen, 17. 542.
- Huvande, *pres. pt.* hovering, waiting, 15. 461. See Hufe.

- Hwdis, *s. pl.* hoods, 19. 332. *See Hude.*
- Hwmlyly, *adv.* humbly, 9. 302. *See Humely.*
- Hwnd, hound, 6. 491. *See Hund.*
- Hy, *s.* haste, hurry, 16. 585; pressing business, 15. 162; *in hy*, in haste, 1. 147, 353, 439; 5. 58, 7. 6, 17. 31, &c. *See below.*
- Hy, *v. reflex.* to hasten himself, to make haste, 3. 635. A.S. *higan*, to hie, make haste.
- Hyar, *adj.* higher, 17. 602. *See Hye.*
- Hycht, 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise (you), 13. 16; *pt. s.* promised, 2. 206. *See Hicht.*
- Hycht, *pt. pl.* were called, were named, 2. 243. *See Hicht.*
- Hycht, *s.* height, 1. 77, 452, 608; *at hycht*, aloft, in good estate, 13. 713. *See Hicht.*
- Hyd, *v.* to hide, 4. 120; *pp.* Hyd, hidden, 4. 118.
- Hyddillis, *s.* a hiding-place, 5. 306, 436. It is properly not plural, but singular, being the A.S. *hydels*, latibulum. *See hudels* in Stratmann; *and see Hiddillis.*
- Hyde, *s.* skin, 3. 584; *pl.* Hydys, hides, 2. 511.
- Hydwisly, *adv.* hideously, horribly, 7. 327. *See Hydwisly.*
- Hydwisly, *adv.* hideously, horribly, 4. 416, 10. 448, 683.
- Hydwiss, *adj.* hideous, dreadful, 5. 2, 13. 43, 19. 760; *also* 10. 594 (C.), where Hydwis will hardly rhyme. *See Hydwouss.*
- Hydwouss, *adj.* hideous, terrible, 10. 594 (E.); Hydvouss, terrific, 10. 22. *See Hydwiss.*
- Hye, *adj.* high, 2. 33, 11. 308; proud, 9. 85; *hye and law*, high and low, wholly, entirely, 10. 471; *comp.* Hyer, higher, 1. 608; Hyar, 17. 602. *See He.*
- Hye, *adv.* loudly, 14. 437.
- Hye, *v. to heighten, exalt*, 10. 264, 17. 939; *pt. s.* Hyet, exalted, 10. 288.
- Hye-gat, *s.* highway, 8. 164. *See Gat.*
- Hyllis, *s. pl.* hills, 2. 508, 11. 185. *See Hillis.*
- Hyltis, *s. pl.* hilts, 10. 682.
- Hyme, him, 9. 465; *usually* Hym.
- Hyne, *s.* hind; lit. a servant, but here a boy, 11. 217. A.S. *hīna*, a domestic servant.
- Hyne (E.), hence, 12. 460. [*So in H.; C. om.*] A.S. *heonan*, hence.
- Hyng, *ger.* to hang, 19. 69; *pp.* Hyngit, hung, 19. 57. *See Hing.*
- Hynt, *pt. s.* seized, caught, 2. 415, 3. 113, 7. 588, 8. 83, 16. 602; *pt. pl.* Hynt; *hynt of*, took off, 12. 144. A.S. *hentan*, to seize. *See Hint.*
- Hyr, *poss. pron.* her, 1. 528.
- Hyrcheoune, *s.* an urchin, i. e. hedgehog, 12. 353. O.F. *herigon*, F. *hérisson*, a hedge-hog; also applied, in war, to chevaux-de-frise.
- Ic, 1 *p. pron.* I, 1. 384, 619; 2. 20; 5. 411 (E.). A.S. *ic*. *See Ik.*
- Leopardies, *s. pl.* skirmishes, 12. 373 (H.).
- Iff, *conj.* if, 3. 96. *See Giff.*
- Ik, *pron.* I, 1. 617, 2. 46, 3. 110; 5. 506 (E.). *See Ic.*
- Ik, *adv.* eke, also, 3. 326. *See Ek.*
- Ile, *s.* isle, island, 3. 577, 681; 4. 339; *pl.* Ilis, 15. 287, 295. O.F. *isle*.
- Ilk, *adj.* same, very, 1. 512; each, 6. 575, 12. 222, 14. 396; Ilke, each, 10. 698. A.S. *ylc*, same; *ælc*, each.
- Ilka, *adj.* each, 2. 74, 16. 367, 17. 725; every, 8. 26. *See Ilkane.*
- Ilkadele, *adv.* in each part, wholly, 20. 166 (E.).
- Ilkane, *for ilk ane*, every one, 2.

- 404; each one, 15. 64; Ilkan, 2. 334; Ilkone, each one, 11. 383. Sometimes written *ilka*, q. v.
- Ill**, *adj.* evil, wicked, 3. 103. Icel. *illr*, ill, evil.
- Ill**, *s.* evil, sickness, 9. 61.
- Illumynit**, *pt. pl.* illuminated, 8. 228; *pp.* Illwmynyt, enlightened, 20. 229.
- In**, *s.* lodging, 2. 53. A.S. *inn*, a chamber. *See Innys.*
- Inbryng**, *v.* to bring in, introduce, 3. 268.
- Inew**, *adj.* enough, 1. 558. *See Enew.*
- Inewch**, *adv.* enough, 1. 286, 627; *Inew*, 17. 545 (E.).
- Infair**, *s.* “an entertainment given to friends, upon newly entering a house,” as Jamieson well explains it; 16. 340. A.S. *infær*, an entrance.
- Infermite**, *s.* infirmity, 20. 244.
- In-forcely**, *adv.* with great force or strength, 2. 310, 314.
- Inforsit**, *pt. pl.* strengthened, 4. 65.
- Ingrevand**, *pres. pt.* annoying, 13. 210. Lit. ‘engrieving.’
- In hy**, *adv.* in haste, 16. 445, 690; and very frequently elsewhere. *See Hy.*
- Iniquite**, iniquity, 1. 470.
- In-myd**, *prep.* amid, 12. 576.
- Innouth**, *prep.* within, 5. 348. Cf. A.S. *innōð*, what is within; but the word may be no more than a variation of *inwith*, q. v. Cf. also Swed. *inuti*, within.
- Innys**, *s. pl.* lodgings, quarters, tents, 2. 1, 11. 137, 12. 330, 13. 506, 14. 90, 17. 482, 20. 354. *See In.*
- Inqueir**, *v.* to enquire about, 4. 221.
- Instrumentis**, *s. pl.* instruments, implements, 17. 342.
- In-sundir**, *adv.* asunder, 17. 698.
- Interludys**, *s. pl.* interludes, episodes, 10. 145.
- Intermelle**, *adv.* confusedly, 14. 215.
- In-till**, *prep. in*, into, 1. 186, 2. 71, 2. 218, 11. 261, 15. 159, 285; during, 1. 340.
- Into**, *prep. in*, 1. 602, 2. 357, 3. 412, 16. 182; *into the se*, to sea, 20. 321; *into party*, partially, 5. 115. Very common.
- In-twyn**, *adv.* asunder, 8. 175.
- Invy**, *s.* envy, 4. 225, 15. 405, 16. 344.
- Inward**, *adv.* towards the inner part, 10. 397.
- Inweround**, *pp.* environed, 11. 607 (E.).
- Inwith**, *prep.* within, *in H.*, 5. 348 (*footnote*), 11. 601 (*footnote*). It occurs in Chaucer, C. T., B. 1794.
- Iolely**, *adv.* finely, bravely, excellently, 9. 201, 15. 328, 16. 514, 578. *See Ioly.*
- Iolite**, *s.* jollity, 16. 48 (E.).
- Ioly**, *adj.* festive, inclined to festivity, 1. 332, 8. 455; in good spirits, 4. 517; fine, good, 11. 524; handsome, 12. 180. F. *joli*.
- Iournee**, *s.* a day’s work, a feat of arms, 13. 323; a combat, battle, 20. 494; a successful day’s work, 16. 670; battle-day, 13. 721; *Iournye*, a combat, 13. 480; *pl.* *Iourneis*, day’s journeys, 14. 315; battles, 16. 22.
- Iowele**, *s.* jewel; 18. 560.
- Ire**, *s.* anger, 2. 66, 396.
- Irn**, *s.* iron, 10. 364; *Irne*, 14. 290; *adj.* iron, 10. 361 (E.). N.B. In the footnote to 10. 361, for “C.”, read “E.”
- Irne-bandis**, *s. pl.* iron bands, 17. 616.
- Irusly**, *adv.* angrily, 8. 144 (E.).
- Is**, 1 *p. pl. pr.* we are, 3. 317.
- Isch**, *v.* to issue, to come forth, 2.

- 248, 258, 278; *pt. s.* Ischyt, 2. 310, 5. 112; Ished, 10. 663 (H.); *pt. pl.* Ischit, 3. 231. O.F. *issir*, Lat. *exire*.
- Ischow**, *s.* issue, outlet, 14. 354 (E.).
- Iss**, *pr. s.* is, 16. 534.
- Ithandly**, 2. 57 (*footnote*); 14. 320 (H.). *See* Ythandly.
- Iugis**, *s. pl.* judges, 1. 223.
- Iugis**, *imp. pl.* judge ye, consider, 6. 269; *pt. pl.* Iugit, judged, 11. 18; *pp.* judged, 1. 89; adjudged, 19. 68.
- Iuntly**, *adv.* exactly, 17. 689. In Wallace, vii. 1148, a bridge is described as “weill and *junctly* maid;” and the phrase “rycht *junctly*,” i.e. in close order, occurs in the same, xi. 857. See note.
- Iuperdy**, *s.* jeopardy, hazard, danger, a hazardous plan or enterprise, a bold attempt,feat, 6. 534, 7. 364; 10. 340, 413, 524, 539; 11. 51, 14. 421; *pl.* Iuperdys, 10. 145, 19. 632; Iupertyss, 10. 788 (E.).
- Iupertyss**, *for* Iuperdyiss, 10. 788 (E.).
- Iustit**, *pt. pl.* josted, 19. 787.
- Iustyng**, *s.* jousting, 19. 520.
- Iwill**, *s.* evil, 4. 735.
- Iwiss**, *adv.* verily, certainly, 16. 654. A.S. *gewis*, certain; Du. *genis*, certainly.
- Karlis**, *s. pl.* churls, peasants, 3. 226. Icel. *karl*, a peasant.
- Keip**, heed, 1. 95. *See* Tane, Kep.
- Ken**, *v.* to acknowledge, recognise, perceive, 3. 750, 13. 50; to know, 6. 18, 11. 219; to shew, teach, direct, suggest, 10. 544, 17. 68; *pt. s.* (*or pl.*), Kend, knew, 1. 320, 327; *pp.* Kend, known, 7. 272. Icel. *kenna*, to know, teach.
- Kendlyt**, *pp.* kindled, 17. 429. Cf. Icel. *kynda*, to kindle; *kyndilt*, a candle.
- Kenly**, *adv.* keenly, bravely, 5. 365.
- Kennys**, *pr. s.* instructs, 4. 748. *See* Ken.
- Kep**, heed; *takand kep*, taking heed, 1. 212. *See* Keip.
- Kepar**, *s.* keeper, 10. 552.
- Kepit**, *pt. pl.* kept, guarded, 14. 115, 17. 177, 19. 190; watched, 14. 197; *pp.* Kepit, 18. 512; *imp. pl.* Kepys, keep yourselves, 3. 200.
- Kerss**, *s.* Carse, i.e. low land beside a river, 12. 392. Cf. *The Carse o' Gowrie*. Sw. *kärr*, a fen.
- Kest**, *pt. s.* cast, threw, 16. 653, 20. 424\*; *kest of*, cast off, doffed, 16. 601; *pt. pl.* Kest, 8. 469, 11. 593, 14. 70.
- Keyn**, *adj.* keen, bold, 8. 280.
- King**, *an error in E. for* Ying, 3. 216 (*footnote*).
- Kinrik**, *s.* kingdom, 5. 168; *pl.* Kinrykis, 1. 551.
- Kirk**, *s.* church, 13. 512. *See* Kyrk.
- Knaf**, *s.* boy (lit. knave), 8. 508; *pl.* Knafis, boys, 9. 375\*. *See* Knave.
- Knaiff** child, i.e. a male child, boy, 13. 693. So in Chaucer's Clerkes Tale, Group E, 612.
- Knave**, *s. a boy*, 1. 288; *pl.* Knavis, 15. 339.
- Knaw**, *v. to know*, 1. 130, 12. 178; 2 *p. s. pr. subj.* thou mayst know, 9. 752; 1 *p. s. pr.* I know, 7. 100. A.S. *cnáwan*. *See* Knawis.
- Knaw**, *a reading in E. for* Knaf, 8. 508 (*footnote*).
- Knawe**, *s. boy*, 3. 585.
- Knawis**, *imp. pl.* know ye, 12. 184; *pp.* Knawin, known, 4. 686, 19. 605; Knawyn, 7. 146, 11. 162; Knawin, experienced, 20. 352. *See* Knaw.
- Knawlage**, knowledge, 1. 337.
- Knawyng**, *s.* knowledge, 6. 556.
- Kne**, *s.* knee, 11. 366.

- Knelit, *pt. s.* kneeled, 20. 221; *pl.* 18. 537; Knelyt, 12. 477; *pres. pt.* Kneland, 12. 481.
- Knit, *pp.* closely joined in the rank of battle, 2. 292. *See* Knyt.
- Knoky, *pt. pl.* knocked, 2. 59.
- Knychtis, *s. pl.* knights, 2. 53, 11. 466.
- Knychtlik, *adv.* in a knightly manner, 15. 53.
- Knyff, *s.* knife, dagger, 16. 417; Knyff, 10. 416. *See* Knyvis.
- Knyt, *pt. s.* knut, fastened, closely linked, 16. 396, 611; closely arrayed, 12. 469. *See* Knit.
- Knyvis, *s. pl.* knives, daggers, 11. 591; Knyvys, 1. 356. *See* Knyf.
- Kow, *s.* a cow, 18. 275; *pl.* Ky, kine, cows, 6. 405, 10. 381, 15. 338. A.S. *cū*, pl. *cý*.
- Ky, *s. pl.* cows, 15. 338, &c. *See* Kow.
- Kyn, *s.* kindred, 2. 112; *na kyn*, of no kind, 5. 362, 6. 663, 10. 362.
- Kynde, *adj.* akin, 9. 448.
- Kyndly, *adj.* preordained by the influence of the stars, 4. 721, 726, 740; naturally, 4. 735.
- Kyne, *s.* kind; *na kyne*, of no kind, 8. 363. *See* Kyn.
- Kynrik, *s.* kingdom, 4. 553, 13. 701, 19. 10; Kyngrik, royal power, 1. 57; Kynryk, kingdom, 1. 68, 2. 104; royal power, 1. 158. A.S. *cynerice*, a kingdom.
- Kyrk, *s.* church, 2. 71, 4. 12. *See* Kirk.
- Kyrnail, *s.* a battlement, 10. 365; Kyrneill, 17. 359; Kyrnell, 10. 402. O.F. *crenelle*, F. *crenau*, a battlement.
- Kyt, *s.* a wooden pail, 18. 168, 223. Jamieson says—"a wooden vessel or pail in which dishes are washed." Cf. A.S. *eytel*, a kettle.
- Ladis, *s. pl.* loads, 8. 450, 463, 467.
- Laddis, *s. pl.* lads, 13. 341.
- Ladeis, *s. gen.* lady's; *our ladeis evin mary*, our Lady Mary's eve, 17. 335.
- Lafe, *s.* the remainder, the rest, 8. 507; Laiff, 5. 370; Laif, 17. 920. A.S. *laf*, the remainder. *See* Layff, Lave.
- Laigh, *adj.* low, 13. 651 (H.).
- Lame, *s.* loam, earth, the grave, 19. 256 (H.).
- Lamy, *pp.* lamed, 4. 284.
- Land; *land to tak*, to land, disembark, 16. 557; *tuk land*, disembarked, 16. 551.
- Landar, *s.* laundress, 16. 273. F. *lavandière*. *See* Lauender.
- Land-brist, *s.* surf, breakers on the shore, 4. 444. Cf. Icel. *brestr*, crash, clash, rattle.
- Landis, *s. pl.* lands, 11. 125.
- Lang, *adv.* long, 4. 118, 7. 109, 10. 565; a long time, 9. 749.
- Langar, *adv.* longer, 4. 43.
- Langes, *pr. s. impers.* belongs, 1. 162 (*footnote*).
- Langir, *adj. comp.* longer, 1. 598, 622; Langar, 6. 554, 7. 547.
- Lansit, *pt. s.* leapt, sprang, dashed quickly, 8. 25; Lansyt, 3. 122. Cf. F. *se lancer*, to rush upon.
- Lanss, *s.* leap, dash, 10. 414. *See* above.
- Lap, *pt. s.* leapt, 9. 566, 13. 658; *pl.* 10. 238, 242, 660; *lap on*, sing., took horse, 2. 28, 142; 5. 214; *pl.*, 2. 14, 3. 345.
- Lardenere, *s.* larder, 5. 410.
- Larg, *adj.* liberal, 1. 363; Large, 11. 148. O.F. *large*, liberal.
- Largess, *s.* bounty, 10. 288, 20. 224 (E.); liberty; *at his largess*, at large, at full liberty, 7. 378.
- Laseir, *s.* leisure, 13. 602; Lasare, 5. 390; Laser, 13. 59; Lasair, 6. 660. *See* Layser.
- Lat, *imp. s.* let, permit, 1. 78, 498;

- pt. s.* caused, directed, 11. 484  
(E.); *pt. pl.* Lete, let, 9. 184. *See*  
Let, *vb.* to let alone.
- Lat, *s.* let, hindrance, 12. 516.
- Lat, *adj.* late, 7. 236. *See* Layt.
- Late, *s.* gesture, demeanour, 7.  
127. Icel. *lát*, manners.
- Lauchand, *pres. part.* laughing, 2.  
34.
- Laucht, *adj.* low, small, 11. 19  
(E.).
- Lauchtane, *for* Lawchtane, 19. 672  
(E.). *See* Lawchtane.
- Lauender, *s.* laundress, 16. 292  
(E. and H.); 16. 273 (H.). *See*  
Landar.
- Launce, *s.* a jump, spring, leap, 10.  
414 (E.). *See* Lauss.
- Laute, *s.* loyalty, fidelity, 5. 162,  
10. 285, 13. 711, 19. 140, 20. 552.  
O.F. *leante*. *See* Lawte.
- Lave, *s.* the remnant, the rest, 2.  
306, 368; 15. 172 (E.); 15. 372.  
*See* Lafe, Laif.
- Law, *adj.* low, 13. 653\*, 17. 380,  
729. *See* Lawch.
- Law, *adj. as sb.* a low place, 3.  
707; the low part of the country,  
6. 518.
- Law, *adv.* low, in a low voice, 4.  
200; low, 8. 474; to the bottom,  
10. 124; *hye and law*, high and  
low, wholly, altogether, 4. 594, 10.  
471; *hey na law*, none of any sort,  
3. 556. *See* Cleyn, *adv.*
- Lawch, *adj.* low, 13. 651, 14. 339.  
Icel. *lágri*, low.
- Lawchtane, *adj.* made of cloth (?),  
19. 672. So explained by Jamieson;  
cf. Du. *laken*, cloth; *cloth of*  
*lake* in Chaucer's Sir Thopas; Icel.  
*lakan*, a bed-sheet.
- Lawer, *adj. comp.* lower, 1. 58.
- Lawit, *pp.* lowered, brought low,  
13. 658.
- Lawit, *an error for* Lamit, 4. 284  
(footnote).
- Lawte (*for* lawete), loyalty, i. e.
- truth, 1. 125; fidelity, loyalty, 1.  
364, 14. 10, 18. 122, 20. 147, 516,  
562; true word of honour, 12. 318.  
*See* Laute.
- Layd, *pp.* laid; *layd at erd*,  
laid upon the earth, overthrown, 3.  
16.
- Layd-men, *s. pl.* lit. load-men, i. e.  
men in charge of a pack-horse, 8.  
466. *See* Ladis.
- Layff, *s.* the remainder, the rest,  
7. 24, 10. 460, 11. 179, 12. 140 13.  
413. *See* Lafe, Laif, Lave.
- Layit, *pp.* laid, *in E.*, 5. 388 (foot-  
note).
- Layndar, *s.* laundress, 16. 273 (E.),  
16. 292. *See* Landar.
- Layser, *s.* leisure, 20. 234 (E.).  
*See* Laseir.
- Layt, *adj.* late, 14. 164. *See* Lat.
- Leawte, loyalty, fidelity, truth, 1.  
400, 576, 5. 530. *See* Lawte.
- Lechis, *s. pl.* leeches, doctors, 5.  
437, 17. 485. A.S. *læce*, a phy-  
sician.
- Lechyng, *s.* healing, 13. 46.
- Ledar, *s.* leader, i. e. governor, 3.  
660; a leader, 2. 260; the man  
who holds the hound in the leash,  
7. 20; Ledeir, leader, 11. 522; *pl.*  
Ledaris, leaders, 11. 160.
- Leddir, *s.* a ladder, 9. 384, 10. 546,  
557, 642; *pl.* Ledderis, ladders, 9.  
314, 10. 360, 17. 34.
- Lede, *v.* to carry (hay), 10. 165.  
*Lead* is still used provincially in  
this sense. *See* Leid.
- Leding, *s.* government, lit. lead-  
ing, 1. 579, 2. 90; command, 15.  
302; company, 9. 19; Ledyng,  
command, 20. 411.
- Lee, *v.* to give the lie; *a bad*  
*reading in E. in 7. 623*; see foot-  
note and Note to the line.
- Leeching, *s.* attendance by a  
medical man, 15. 84 (H.). *See*  
Lechyng.
- Leesing, *s.* a lie, untruth, *in H.*, 5.

- 510 (*footnote*). A.S. *leásung*, a falsehood.
- Leffyt**, *pt. s.* remained, became, 4. 264 (*footnote*).
- Lefit**, *pt. s.* left, i. e. ceased, 15. 126; *pp.* left, 19. 584.
- Left**, *pt. pl.* left, i. e. lost, 16. 456 (E.).
- Left**, *pt. pl.* remained, 6. 31.
- Lege**, *adj.* free, full, uncontrolled; *lege pouste*, full power, 5. 165. See F. *lige* in Brachets' Etym. Fr. Dict., where *lige* is derived from G. *ledig*, free. A *liege lord* is a free lord; see Mahn's Webster.
- Leid**, *v.* to lead, 1. 270, 11. 413; to control, govern, 1. 38; to carry hay, 10. 195. *See Leyd, Lede.*
- Leif**, *v.* to leave, 4. 608; to leave, quit, 6. 193, 17. 519, 18. 146; to leave off, 6. 157, 10. 159. A.S. *lēfan*.
- Leif**, *to, ger.* to leave (= to be left), 6. 335. *See above.*
- Leif**, *s.* leave, 4. 582, 5. 176; *Leiff*, 16. 8; *but leif*, without leave, 17. 863.
- Leiffand**, *pres. part.* living, 2. 548.
- Leill**, *adj.* leal, trusty, 4. 576, 5. 293, 10. 270, 13. 560. *See Lele, Leyle.*
- Leiss**, *v.* to lose, 12. 124, 17. 516.
- Leit**, *pt. s.* considered, 19. 680; let, 5. 623, 14. 355; *pt. pl.* Leit, let, 14. 412; *leit lightly*, pres. pl. think lightly, 12. 250; *pt. s. subj.* Leit, would let, 17. 850. A.S. *lætan*.
- Lele**, *adj.* leal, loyal, true, 1. 375, 5. 296. *See Leill, Leyle.* O.F. *loyal, leal*, loyal.
- Lelely**, *adv.* leally, faithfully, loyally, 2. 171, 13. 545, 19. 202, 20. 134; *Lely*, 1. 436, 19. 190, 20. 349; *Lelyly*, 3. 176.
- Lemand**, *pres. pt.* gleaming, 8. 226 (H.). *See below.*
- Leme**, *s.* a flame, 11. 191 (E.).
- A.S. *leóma*, a ray of light, g-leam.
- Lemman**, *s.* sweetheart, 15. 351 (E.). A.S. *leóf man*.
- Lendit**, *pt. s.* dwelt, 5. 125. Icel. *lenda*, to land, settle. *See Leynd.*
- Lenteryne**, Lent, spring-season, 10. 815; *Lentryne*, 10. 815 (E.). A.S. *lencten*, spring; and *ryne*, a course.
- Lenth**, length, 1. 531.
- Lenye**, *adj.* lean, thin; but probably with the additional notion of supple, 1. 387. Cf. "Lennoch, slender, pliable. North;" Halliwell.
- Lepe out**, i. e. come forward, be drawn from its place of concealment, 18. 502. *See Lap.*
- Lesing**, *s.* lying, falsehood, 4. 480, 19. 122; *but lesing*, without lying, truly, 13. 231; *Lesyng*, 3. 521, 7. 77, 16. 23. A.S. *leásung*, a falsehood.
- Lesit**, *pp.* lost, 13. 629; *pt. pl.* lost, 17. 166, 18. 160; *Lesyt*, lost, 16. 456. A.S. *leósan*, to lose.
- Less**, *adj. pl.* less; *less and mare*, less and greater, all of them, 5. 338, 8. 120.
- Less**, *adv.* less, 8. 121, 11. 223.
- Lessit**, *pt. pl.* lost, 12. 347. *See Lesit.*
- Lessyt**, *an error in editions for Leffyt*, i. e. remained, 4. 264 (*foot note*).
- Lest**, *v.* to last, endure, 7. 65; *ger.* to last, 19. 188 (E.); *pr. s. subj.* may lose, 1. 14; *pt. s.* Lestit, lasted, 14. 202; 17. 866, 20. 272; *pp.* Lestit, lasted, 19. 229; *pres. pt.* Lestand, lasting, 5. 520, 8. 520, 16. 531, 19. 204. A.S. *læstan*, to last.
- Lest**, *pr. s. impers.* it pleases, 7. 314. A.S. *lystan*, to please.
- Lest**, *sup. adj.* least, 6. 537; fewest in numbers, 16. 187.
- Lest**, *s.* last (?) ; a misreading for Frest, 2. 277 (*footnote*).

- Lesting, *s.* lasting, endurance, 9. 283.
- Lesyt, *an error for Sesyt*, seized, 10. 759 (E.).
- Let, *v.* to let alone, neglect, 1. 254; to relinquish, leave off, 1. 299, 5. 621; *pt. pl.* Lete, let, 9. 184; *pt. s.* Letted, ceased, left off, 15. 126 (H.). A.S. *lētan*, to release.
- Let, *v.* to hinder, delay, 11. 276, 16. 557, 19. 210; to prevent, 3. 362, 12. 302; *pr. s. subj.* Let, hinder, consign to oblivion, 1. 15; *pt. s.* Lettit, hindered, 10. 320; Lettyt, stopped, 3. 241; Letit, prevented, 13. 279; hindered, 16. 329; *pt. pl.* Lettit, prevented, 10. 64. A.S. *lettan*, to prevent, hinder.
- Let, *s.* hindrance, delay, 1. 598, 622; 2. 31, 179; 3. 690, 6. 554, 9. 408, 535; 19. 449; obstacle, 7. 172.
- Letless, *adj.* or *adv.* without let, without hindrance, 16. 568. *See Let, sb.*
- Letting, *s.* delay, hindrance, 2. 29, 3. 397, 613; 4. 489; Lettyng, 11. 278.
- Lettir, *s.* letter, i. e. written account, text, 10. 353; *pl.* Lettrys, deeds, 20. 44; *pl. as sing.* Lettres, a letter, 2. 80; Letteris, 17. 39.
- Leuand, *pres. pt.* living, 15. 183 (E.).
- Leuir, *adv.* rather, 3. 228.
- Leve, *v.* to remain, 3. 584; *pr. s.* Lewis, leaves, 6. 349; 1. *p. pl. pr. subj.* Leve, we leave (it) alone, 12. 196 (E.); *imp. pl.* Levys, leave, 3. 324; *pt. s.* Levit, left, 8. 277, 9. 423; Levyt, remained, 3. 282; Levit, gave (him) leave, 16. 9; permitted, 19. 126; *pt. pl.* Levit, left, 14. 301, 20. 480; left behind, 13. 623; *pp.* Levit, left, 5. 371, 10. 460, 13. 24, 619; 14. 309, 17. 474, 18. 501; given leave, permitted (*or* dismissed), 20. 355; *levit of*, dismissed by, 20. 577; Levyt, left, 20. 112 (E.).
- Leve, *s.* leave, 11. 649 (E.); *pl.* Levis, leave-takings, 16. 689. *See Leyf.*
- Leverè, *s.* delivery, 14. 233 (E.).
- Leve-takyng, *s.* leavetaking, 3. 347.
- Levys, *pr. s.* lives, 1. 228, 3. 378; *pt. s.* Levyt, lived, 1. 331, 2. 508; *pt. pl.* 1. 275; *pp.* Levyt, 1. 233. A.S. *leafian*, to live.
- Lewand, *for Liffand*, living, 7. 359 (E.).
- Lewe, *v.* to leave, 19. 407; to remain, 16. 275; *pt. s.* Lewyt, left, finished, 3. 568; left off, 15. 126 (E.); permitted, 19. 126 (E.); *pt. pl.* Lewyt, remained, 13. 619 (E.); *pp.* Lewit, left, 20. 112; Lewyt, 3. 593. *See Leve.*
- Lewys, *s. pl.* leave-takings, 20. 109 (E.); Lewis, leaves, 16. 67. *See Leve, sb.*
- Leyd, *pr. s. imp.* may He lead, 8. 263. *See Leid, Lede.*
- Leyf, *s.* leave, 5. 253. *See Leve.*
- Leyff, *v.* to leave, 19. 421; Leyve, to leave undone, 1. 247.
- Leyff, *v.* to live, 1. 212, 3. 265.
- Leyle, *adj.* leal, true, 2. 516. *See Leill.*
- Leyme, *s.* gleam, 11. 191. *See Leme.*
- Leynd, *v.* to remain, dwell, stay, 3. 747; *pt. s.* Leyndyt, waited, tarried, 5. 125 (E.). *See Lendit.*
- Leyt, *pt. s.* let, 10. 232. *See Leit.*
- Liand, *pres. pt.* lying, staying, 5. 571, 6. 312, 9. 105, 14. 222, 17. 491, 18. 356, 478; 19. 315, 568, 646, 801; 20. 17, 24; waiting, 15. 549. *See Ly.*
- Libbard, *s.* leopard, 14. 2; Libard, 15. 524.
- Licht, *s.* light, 6. 216.
- Licht, *adj.* light, 13. 56; idle, 7. 112; active, 10. 61.
- Lichtit, *pt. s.* alighted, 14. 121:

- pl.* 18. 407; *pp.* 13. 588, 14. 183, 18. 463.
- Lichtly, *adv.* easily, 12. 46, 459; 15. 337, 16. 616.
- Liff, *s.* life, 10. 417; *on lif*, alive, 7. 65; *pl.* Liffis, lives, 4. 137; Liffys, 2. 527.
- Liff, *a misprint in editions for Liffis*, 2. 498 (*footnote*).
- Liffand, *pres. part.* living, 4. 227, 7. 100, 13. 322, 18. 240; alive, 15. 183; *pt. s.* Liffit, lived, 5. 508, 10. 487; *pr. pl.* Liffis, live, 1. 366; *pp.* Lift, 12. 281, 17. 927.
- Lift, *s.* sky, 16. 692. A.S. *lyft*, air, sky.
- Lik, *v.* to please, 4. 389; *pr. s.* Likis, it pleases, 3. 170, 6. 655; *pt. s.* Likit, it pleased, 1. 505, 17. 272; *pres. pt.* Likand, pleasing, 1. 9. A.S. *lician*, to delight.
- Lik, *adj.* likely, probable, 16. 324.
- Liking, *s.* pleasure, joy, 1. 199, 10. 793, 19. 112, 20. 620; liberty, liberty to please oneself, 1. 226, 247; *at liking*, at their ease, 3. 560. See Lyking.
- Liklynes, *s.* (1) likeness, 3. 88; (2) likelihood, 11. 244.
- Liknyt, *pp.* likened, 1. 396, 11. 367, 14. 314.
- Lingand, *pres. pt.* forming a line, 19. 356 (E.).
- Lisnyt, *pt. s.* listened, 6. 72, 9. 685.
- List, *pr. s.* pleases, 3. 519. A.S. *lystan*, to please.
- Litill, *adj.* little, 1. 173, 9. 2; Littill, 12. 19.
- Littar, *s.* a litter, 9. 106.
- Liverye, *s.* livery, 19. 36.
- Lochit, *pp.* lodged (?); *a poor reading in C. for Lowsyt*, 6. 253 (*footnote*). See Lowss.
- Loft; *on loft*, aloft, 13. 652. See Lift.
- Loge, *s.* lodge, tent, 19. 660 (E.); *pl.* Logis, lodges, lodging, 7. 550. See Luge.
- Logyng, *s.* lodging, place of encampment, 2. 282.
- Logyt thaim, *pt. pl. reflex.* lodged, 2. 304.
- Lompnyt, *for Lownyt*, 15. 276 (E.). See Lownyt.
- Lordingis, *s. pl.* sirs, 1. 445, 4. 550 (*footnote*), 11. 271, 16. 614.
- Lorn, *pp.* lost, 7. 44; Lorne, 10. 106. A.S. *geloren*, lost, pp. of *leōsan*, to lose.
- Losengeour, *s.* a lying fellow, 4. 108. O.F. *losange*, a lie; *losangeor*, a liar.
- Losit, *pt. pl.* were lost, perished, 18. 176. See below.
- Lossit, *pt. pl.* lost, 11. 590; Lossyt, 16. 232 (E.); 18. 160 (E.).
- Louch, *s.* loch, lake, 3. 430, 14. 354; *gen. sing.* Louchhis, 3. 414.
- Louch, *for Clewch*, 16. 386 (E.).
- Louchside, *s.* loch-side, side of a lake, 3. 109.
- Loud and still, *adv.* under all circumstances, 3. 745. See Halliwell's Dict.
- Loup, *s.* a leap, 10. 414 (H.). See Lowp.
- Loving, *s.* praise, 6. 326, 16. 534; Lovyng, 4. 549, 6. 283, 12. 124.
- Lovit, *pt. s.* praised, 17. 918; *pt. pl.* 4. 515, 6. 314, 7. 294, 8. 106, 12. 152, 14. 311, 18. 564; *pres. pt.* Lovand, 8. 377; *pp.* Lovit, 5. 649, 19. 297; Lovyt, 1. 406, 476. A.S. *lofian*, to praise.
- Low, *s.* flame, 4. 124. Icel. *logi*, a flame.
- Lowand, *pres. pt.* praising, 8. 377 (E.). See Lovit.
- Lownyt, *pp.* sheltered, 15. 276. Icel. *logn*, Swed. *lugn*, calm; see *loun* in Jamieson. (J. reads *lompnyt*, as in E., and renders it "laid with trees.")
- Lowp, *v.* to leap, 13. 652. Icel. *hlaupa*, to leap.

- Lowp, *s.* a leap, 6. 638. See above.
- Lowss, *v.* to loose, 10. 765; *pp.* Lowsyt, loosened, 6. 253. Icel. *losa*, to loosen; A.S. *leósan*.
- Lowtyt, *pt. s.* made obeisance to, 2. 154; Lowtit, bowed down, 5. 253. A.S. *hlútan*, to bow.
- Lowyng, *s.* praise, 3. 543. See Loving.
- Lowyt, *pt. s.* loved, 10. 285 (E.). See below.
- Luff, *s.* love, 2. 515, 520; *gen. pl.* Luffis, of their lady-loves, 3. 349; *acc. pl.* 3. 351. A.S. *lufu*.
- Luffand, *pres. part.* loving; hence, kind, 1. 363, 4. 7, 5. 41 (E.); 1. *p.* *s. pt. t.* Lufit, I loved, 10. 554; *pt. s.* Lufit, 6. 491, 8. 492, 10. 285, 292; 13. 475, 584; 16. 672, 20. 516; Luffyt, 1. 364; Luffit, 6. 498; *pt. pl.* Lufit, 7. 136; Luffyt, 1. 360; *pr. s.* Lufis, loves, 16. 599; *gerund*, Luff, to be loved, 1. 365. A.S. *lufian*.
- Luflye, *adv.* lovingly, 17. 315 (E.).
- Lufly, *adj.* loveable, pleasing, 1. 389.
- Lufre, *s.* delivery, gift, 14. 233. Jamieson has “*lovery, lufray*, bounty; Dunbar.” The word is a mere corruption of O.F. *livree*, a present of food, or of clothes; E. *livery*.
- Luf-tenant, *s.* lieutenant, 14. 139, 255.
- Luge, *s.* lodge, tent, hut, 19. 653, 660; *a reading in C. for Lugis*, 7. 550 (*footnote*); Luggis, lodges, sort of tents, 19. 392. F. *lage*.
- Luging, *s.* lodging, 4. 494, 6. 1.
- Lugit, *pt. pl.* lodged, 9. 203, 11. 138; *refl.* 9. 206, 19. 478; *pp.* Lugit, lodged, 7. 516. F. *loger*.
- Luk, *v.* to look, see, ascertain, 1. 350, 8. 419; *imp. pl.* Luk, take care, 12. 217; *pt. s.* Lukit, 4. 321, 616; 18. 37, 19. 669; Lukyt, 6. 667; *pres. pt.* Lukand, looking, 3. 579.
- Lukyit, *pt. s.* looked at, observed, 1. 613. See Luk.
- Lump, *s.* a heap, 15. 229; crowd, 19. 377 (E.); company, 15. 342 (E.).
- Lurdane, *s.* a lazy fellow, rascal, 4. 108. O.F. *lourdein*, a blockhead, lazy fellow (Roquefort); mod. F. *lourdaud*, a blockhead; from *lourd*, dull.
- Lurkand, *pres. part.* lurking, 5. 192, 7. 71, 8. 474; Lurkande, 10. 627.
- Lusumly, *adv.* lovesomely, lovingly, 17. 315.
- Lwmp, *s.* crowd, throng, 19. 377. See Lump.
- Ly, *v.* to lie, lodge, dwell, 1. 358, 9. 59, 14. 66; to be laid upon (him), 4. 581; to lodge, 18. 291; *pr. s.* Lyis, lies, 20. 546; is lodging, 5. 77; *pres. pt.* Lyand, 5. 473, 6. 166, 9. 46, 10. 510, 13. 661; 17. 647, 19. 673; *pp.* Lyin, lain 11. 355. A.S. *liegan*.
- Lycht, *adj.* light, 2. 521. See Licht.
- Lychtly, *adv.* 6. 638. See Lightly.
- Lychtyt, *pt. pl.* lightened, 3. 624; *pp.* Lychtyt, 3. 616. (Used of lightening a ship.)
- Lyff, life, 1. 108, 270, 607; *off lyve*, alive, 1. 293; *pl.* Lyffis, lives, 10. 106. See Liff.
- Lyffand, *pres. part.* living, 2. 169. See Liffand.
- Lyff-dayis, *s. pl.* life-days, i.e. length of life, 3. 293.
- Lyking, *s.* pleasure, 14. 17. See Liking.
- Lyknyt, *pp.* likened, compared; *mycht lyknyt*, might have compared, 3. 73. See Liknyt.
- Lymmys, *s. pl.* limbs, 1. 108, 385, 398.
- Lyne be lyne, i.e. line by line, from beginning to end, 17. 84.
- Lyng, *s.* a line, direct course;

- only in phrase *in a lyng*, straight forward, 2. 417, 19. 285; and *intill a lyng*, 6. 560, 12. 49.
- Lynt**, *s. lint*, 17. 612.
- Lynyng**, *adj. linen*, 13. 422.
- Lypnyng**, *s. trust*, 12. 238; **Lyp-pynnyng** (E.). Probably from the same root as E. *believe*.
- Lyve-tyme**, life-time, 1. 308.
- Lyvis**, *s. pl. lives*, 11. 590, 12. 245. *See Liff.*
- Lyvys**, *pr. pl. live*, 1. 293; *pt. pl. Lywyt*, 1. 19. *See Liffand.*
- Ma**, *v. to make*, 1. 33, 5. 9, 7. 121, 11. 340; *pres. s. subj. Ma*, may make, 2. 6, 4. 561; *ma weill of*, to make much of, praise, 16. 592. *See also Mais.*
- Ma**, *pr. s. may*, 7. 533; *ma fall*, it may happen, perhaps, 9. 376.
- Ma**, *adj. more (in number)*, 2. 9, 7. 261, 8. 398, 11. 636, 12. 565, 14. 273, 16. 497; others, 5. 152. A.S. *mā*.
- Macyss**, *s. pl. maces*, 12. 579, 13. 17. O.F. *mace*, a mace. *See Mas.*
- Mad**, *pp. made*, 12. 122.
- Magre**, *s. ill will*, 17. 60. O.F. *mal grè*; whence also the prep. below.
- Magre**, in spite of, 1. 453, 2. 112, 3. 451, 4. 738, 8. 80, 9. 675, 12. 464, 17. 789, 18. 453; *magre his*, in spite of him, 2. 124, 3. 125, 4. 194; *magre thairis*, in spite of them, 4. 153, 10. 118, 13. 170, &c.
- Maieste**, *s. majesty*, 1. 132, 431.
- Mailȝe**, *s. mail (armour)*, 11. 107 (E.). *See Male.*
- Maill-eiss**, *s. disease*, 20. 75. *See Male-ess.*
- Mair**, *adv. more*, 7. 371; *mair and mair*, more and more, 12. 563.
- Mais**, *pr. s. makes*, 6. 234, 12. 252; *Maiss*, 2. 330, 469; *pl. Mais*, make, 11. 368; *pt. s. Maid*, made, 5. 297, 17. 5; *2 p. pt. s. subj. wouldst* have made, 1. 428; *pp. Maid*, made; *wes maid*, had become, 13. 683; *weill maid*, well shaped, 1. 385. *See Ma.*
- Maist**, *adj. superl. most, greatest*, 1. 131, 459; supreme, 1. 178.
- Maistres**, mistress, 1. 550.
- Maistri**, mastery, open violence, 1. 112.
- Maistris**, *s. pl. arts*, 19. 182.
- Makand**, *pres. pt. making*, 9. 137; *Makis*, *pr. s. makes*, 16. 276; *pp. Makyn*, made, 19. 375\*. *See Mais, Ma.*
- Malancoly**, *s. dudgeon*, 16. 128.
- Male**, *s. mail*, 11. 107. O.F. *maille*, from Lat. *macula*.
- Male-ess**, *s. disease*, 20. 73. *See Maill-eiss.* F. *mal aise*.
- Malice**, *for Mal ese*, i.e. disease, 20. 493 (E.).
- Man**, *2 p. pl. pr. ye must*, 7. 137. Icel. *munu*.
- Manance**, *an error in editions for Manauce*, 3. 608 (*footnote*); so also *Mananss* should rather be *Manauss*, 17. 664. *See Manauce.*
- Manasing**, *s. menacing*, 8. 408.
- Manauce**, *s. menacing, threatening*, 3. 608; *pl. Manauss* (*a better reading than Mananss*), threats, 17. 664. F. *menace*; O.F. *manache*, a threat.
- Manausyt**, *pt. s. menaced*, 2. 68; *Mannausit*, 11. 150.
- Mandment**, *s. commandment*, 4. 85, 332. It occurs in P. *Plowman*.
- Mane**, *s. main, strength*, 5. 454, 6. 318.
- Maner**, *s. manner*, 1. 4, 11. 501; *Maneir*, 7. 220.
- Maner**, *s. manor, mansion*, 16. 337.
- Manerlik**, *adv. mannerly, correctly, properly*, 3. 72.
- Mangery** (E.), *s. feast*, 20. 67. It occurs in P. *Plowman*, C. 13. 46.
- Manheid**, *s. manhood, valour*, 3.

- 162, 6. 122, 7. 223, 15. 151, 19. 105; Manhede, 19. 589.
- Mankyn, *s.* human nature, 4. 530.
- Manland, *s.* mainland, 3. 389.
- Manlyly, *adv.* in a manly manner, 2. 486, 14. 275, 282 (E.); Manlily, 8. 315 (E.); Manley, 3. 149.
- Mannasyng, *s.* threatening, menace, 4. 528, 6. 621.
- Mannausit, *pt. pl.* menaced, 11. 150. *See* Manausyt.
- Mannys, *gen. sing.* man's, 1. 10.
- Manrent, *s.* homage, 5. 296, 16. 303, 20. 129\*; Manredyn, 16. 303 (E.); 20. 129\* (E.). The latter is perhaps the more correct form; cf. the A.S. suffix *-ræden*.
- Manteme, *v.* to maintain, 4. 573; Manteym, 10. 779, 11. 318, 11. 231 (E.); Manteyme, 10. 184 (E.), 16. 34; *pt. s.* Mantemyt, maintained, 10. 289, 20. 605; *pl.* 13. 280, 15. 52.
- Mantill, *s.* mantle, cloak, 5. 317, 19. 672.
- Mar, *adj.* more, longer, greater (with reference to size rather than number, and frequently used after the preposition *but*, i. e. without), 1. 142, 2. 12, 12. 314; *less and mare*, all, 5. 338; *in less and mare*, in every way, 4. 568.
- Mar, *v.* to mar, spoil, 17. 930.
- Marchandiss, *s.* merchandise, 9. 440.
- Marchand-shippis, *s. pl.* merchant ships, 19. 193.
- Marcheand, *pres. part.* bordering upon, 1. 99. *See* below.
- Marchis, *s. pl.* marches, i. e. borders, 15. 403, 431, 531; 16. 334, 17. 221. Icel. *mark*, A.S. *mearec*, a mark, boundary.
- Marrass, *s.* morass, marsh, 6. 55, 11. 287; *pl.* Marrass (*or* Marrasis), morasses, marshes, 8. 35. O.F. *marois*, *mareis*, F. *marais*.
- Marschall, *s.* marshal, i. e. steward, 2. 4, 11. 456, 13. 54, 89.
- Martirdome, slaughter, 6. 289, 8. 58; massacre, 18. 326.
- Martymes, Martinmas, 9. 127.
- Mas, *s. pl.* maces, 11. 600; Mase, 13. 17 (E.); Masis, 11. 600 (E.). O.F. *mace*, *pl. maces*.
- Masonis, *s. pl.* masons, 17. 937.
- Mast, *adj. superl.* most (with reference to size or importance, not often to number), principal, chief, 5. 446, 8. 11, 9. 421; greatest, 11. 470, 17. 95, 316, 470, 818. *See* Maist, and Forss.
- Mast, *adv.* most, 11. 244, 508.
- Masteris, *s. pl.* masters, 4. 411.
- Masterit, *pt. s.* mastered, overcame, 7. 211.
- Mastrice, *s.* mastery, superiority, superior forces, 4. 524; a feat of skill, 6. 566. (A sing. sb., to be distinguished from the succeeding one.) O.F. *maistrise*, skill.
- Mastry, *s.* mastery, a difficult feat, 4. 706; force, 7. 354; *pl.* Mastriss, forces, 18. 260. O.F. *maistrie* skill.
- Mate, *adj.* dispirited, 17. 794. O.F. *mat*, feeble, dispirited.
- Mater, *s.* matter, cause, 4. 216, 11. 320; Matir, 3. 301.
- Maturite, *s.* slowness, deliberation, 11. 583.
- Maucht, *s.* might, 2. 421, 12. 534, 15. 489, 19. 588; Mawcht, 11. 439. A.S. *meaht*.
- Mawch, *s.* kinsman, 15. 274\*. Icel. *mágr*, A.S. *mæg*, a kinsman.
- Mawite, *s.* wickedness, 4. 730; malicious intent, 5. 524; Mavite, 6. 212, 19. 235; Mawyte, evil, guile, 1. 126, 19. 235 (E.). O.F. *mauté*.
- Mawyte, Mauitie, *errors in* 6. 252 (*footnote*).
- May, *adj. pl.* more in number, 1. 458, 2. 229. *See* Ma.
- May, *pr. s.* is able; *see* Mychtis; 3. 366.

- Mayn, *s.* main, strength, 1. 444, 2. 38, 6. 261, 9. 152, 19. 452; Mayne, 10. 634. *See* Main.
- Mayn, *s.* moan, lament, 5. 175, 15. 235; Mayne, 20. 277.
- Maynteym, *v.* to maintain, 2. 189, 11. 263; Maynteme, 8. 252, 10. 184; *pr. pl. subj.* Maynteyme, may maintain, 13. 709; *pt. s.* Mayntemyt him, maintained himself, 2. 486. *See* Manteme.
- Mayr, *adj.* more, 1. 39.
- Mayr, *adv.* more, 7. 555. *See* Mar.
- Mayss, *pr. s.* makes, causes, 1. 226, 510; *pl.* make, 1. 249. *See* Mais.
- Mayst, *adv.* most, 1. 46. *See* Maist.
- Meased, *pp.* moderated, 16. 134 (H.).
- Meekle, *adj.* great, 2. 245\*. *See* Mekill.
- Meill, *s.* meal, 5. 398, 505.
- Meit, *v.* to meet, 5. 59, 6. 203; Meite, 3. 395; *ger.* Meit, 16. 40; *imp. pl.* Meit, meet ye, 12. 226.
- Meite, *s.* meat, 3. 393. *See* Met.
- Mekill, *adj.* much, 1. 170, 246; great, 1. 402, 17. 183, 18. 308; big, 16. 625. A.S. *micel*.
- Mekly, *adv.* meekly, 11. 258.
- Melland, *pres. pt.* mixing, mingling, 16. 65. O.F. *mesler*, *meller*, to mix.
- Mellè, *s.* an affray, fight, battle, contest, combat, 6. 361, 635; 7. 360, 622, 630; 10. 184, 433; 11. 379, 497; 13. 401, 14. 63, 232; 15. 367; 16. 188, 515; 18. 185; originally a mixture, medley, 5. 404; *pl.* Melleis, conflicts, 17. 120. O.F. *meslee*, *medlee*, *mellee*, from the verb *mesler*, which from Low Lat. *misculare*, a frequentative of Lat. *miscere*, to mix, mingle. Our medley answers to the O.F. form *medlee*; whilst the O.F. *mellee* has clearly given rise to the modern 'mill' in the sense of fight.
- Mellit, *pp.* mixed together, 5. 409, 6. 356, 10. 517, 15. 68, 17. 614. *See* Melle.
- Mellyne, *s.* medley, 5. 406. *See* Melle.
- Menand, *pres. part.* moaning over, lamenting, 3. 186, 7. 232, 8. 358. A.S. *mænan*, to moan.
- Mencione, mention, 6. 494, 17. 469.
- Mengit, *pt. s.* mingled, mixed, 6. 360. A.S. *mengian*, to mix.
- Mengze, *s.* company, 2. 75, 227, 475; 3. 39; Mengne, host, 3. 105. *See* Menze.
- Menit, *pt. s.* bemoaned, lamented, 5. 451. *See* Menyt.
- Mennys, *gen. pl.* men's, 1. 583, 2. 218.
- Menovnys, *s. pl.* minnows, 2. 577.
- Mensk, *s.* honour, 4. 549, 13. 264, 16. 621. Icel. *mennsha*, humanity; *mennskr*, human; cf. A.S. *mennise*, mannish, human.
- Menskfully, *adv.* honourably, 19. 86. *See* above.
- Menskly, *for* Menskfully, 19. 86 (E.).
- Menyng, *s.* remembrance, 4. 326. *See* Menys.
- Menyng, *s.* lamentation, lit. moaning, 13. 483, 15. 238.
- Menys on, *imp. pl.* remember, think upon, 12. 269. *See* Meyn. A.S. *mænan*, to think of, mean.
- Menyt, *pt. s.* lamented, bemoaned, 7. 33, 9. 300, 12. 97, 15. 232; *pl.* 18. 207, 19. 219, 20. 568; *pp.* 11. 579, 18. 210. A.S. *mænan*, to moan.
- Menze, *s.* a company of followers, train, band, host, 2. 509; *a few menze*, a small band, 5. 15; Menhe, 2. 177, 4. 390, 6. 388, 11. 427, 16. 375. O.F. *maisnee*, *meisnee*, *meignee*, a band, troop.
- Mercy, *an error in E. for* Mastry, 13. 412 (*footnote*).
- Merdale, *s.* pack of camp-followers,

- lit. a dirty crew, 9. 249. See the note.
- Meritis**, *s. pl.* merits, deserts, 15. 516.
- Merk**, *adj.* dark, 10. 383. Icel. *myrkr*, E. *murky*. See *Myrk*.
- Merk-schot**, *s.* a mark-shot, i. e. the distance between the marks or butts in practising archery, 12. 33.
- Merring**, *s.* marring, injury, 19. 155. See below.
- Merrys**, *pr. s.* mars, spoils, wears away, 1. 271. See *Mar*.
- Merye**, *adv.* merry; *mak merye*, 10. 390.
- Mesour**, *s.* moderation, 16. 323. F. *mesure*.
- Mess**, *s.* mass, 11. 376, 384.
- Mess**, *s.* (-mas); *Seint Iohnnis mess*, St John's mas, St John's day, 10. 816. See above.
- Messingeris**, *s. pl.* messengers, 1. 138.
- Mesur**, *s.* measure, 1. 570; moderation, 9. 661; *our mesur*, beyond measure, 17. 810; *at all mesure*, in every proportion, 10. 281.
- Mesurabill**, *adj.* moderate, middle-sized, 10. 280.
- Mesurit**, *pp.* measured, 17. 617.
- Met**, *s.* meat, food, 3. 316, 4. 64, 7. 153, 9. 333; dinner, 7. 268.
- Metyng**, *s.* meeting, 3. 15, 8. 242.
- Meyk**, *adj.* meek, 1. 390.
- Meyn**, *v.* to remember, be mindful of, 16. 525; *Meyne*, 15. 351; 1 *p. s. pr.* *Meyn*, I think of, remember, 12. 291; *Meyne*, I make mention of, 10. 736. See *Menys*. A.S. *mænan*, to think of.
- Meyne**, *v.* to moan, lament, 15. 237. See *Menyt*.
- Meyt**, *v.* to meet, 3. 413, 15. 359. See *Meit*.
- Meyt**, *s.* meat, 3. 361. See *Met*.
- Misfure**, *pt. s. subj.* should go amiss, should fail, 10. 529 (E., H.).
- Mislykand**, *adj.* displeasing, 17. 830 (H.).
- Misteir**, *s.* trade, craft, 17. 938; *Mister*, 17. 435. See *Mister*.
- Mister**, *s.* trade, 17. 435; *Misteir*, 17. 938. O.F. *mestier*, F. *métier*; Lat. *ministerium*.
- Mister**, *s.* need, 11. 452, 17. 743, 753. Cf. Swed. *mista*, Dan. *miste*, to miss, to lose.
- Mistraisted**, *pt. pl.* mistrusted, suspected, 10. 327 (H.).
- Moble**, *s.* moveable property, *in E.*, 5. 275 (*footnote*)
- Mocht**, *pt. s.* might, could, 1. 298, 7. 120.
- Moder**, *s.* mother, 4. 241.
- Mody**, *adj.* proud, brave, 9. 659; 20. 394 (E.). See *Mwdy*.
- Mole**, *s.* the 'mull' of Cantire, 3. 696. Gaelic *maol*, a promontory.
- Mon**, 1 *p. s. pr.* I must, 3. 323; *pr. s.* must, 13. 652, 16. 275; *pr. pl.* 19. 174; 1 *p. pr. pl.* we must, 9. 31, 19. 644. Icel. *munu*.
- Mone**, *ger.* to have remembrance, 19. 526. Icel. *muna*, to remember.
- Mone**, *adj.* many, 1. 523.
- Monest**, *pt. pl.* admonished, 12. 379 (E.).
- Monesting**, *s.* admonishing, exhortation, 20. 412 (E.); *pl.* *Monestingis*, 4. 533 (*footnote*).
- Moneth**, *s.* month, 15. 78.
- Montane**, mountain, 10. 24.
- Monteyle**, for *Montane*, 11. 601 (E.).
- Mony**, *adj.* many, 1. 336.
- Monymentis**, *s. pl.* documents, 20. 44 (E.).
- Monys**, *gen. moon's*, 6. 216. See *Moyn*.
- Monyss**, *v.* to admonish, 12. 383 (E.; *monast*, C.); *pt. pl.* *Monyst*, admonished, 12. 379.
- Mor**, *adj.* greater, 10. 199. See *Mar*.

- Morn, *s.* morrow, 1. 601; *to-morn*, to-morrow, 1. 621.
- Morsellis, *s. pl.* morsels, 9. 398.
- Moss, *s.* a moss, moor, bog, 8. 167, 19. 738; *pl.* Mossis, mosses, 8. 173.
- Mot, *imp. s.* 3 *p.* may he, 4. 26.
- Moucht, *pt. pl.* might, 17. 118, 19. 406; 1 *p. s. pt.* I might, 6. 666. *See Mocht.*
- Mounth, the Grampians, 8. 393 (E.).
- Mow, *s.* a heap of corn, 4. 117.
- Mowcht, *pt. s.* might, could, 16. 371 (E.); *pl.* 19. 439. *See Moucht.*
- Mowence, *s.* mutation, change, 1. 134. O.Fr. *muance*. (Jamieson's explanation is quite wrong.)
- Moyn, *s.* the moon, 4. 617, 6. 100; Moyne, 4. 127.
- Mude, *s.* courage, 19. 622. A.S. *mód*.
- Murnyn, *s.* mourning, lament, 2. 469; Murnyng, 3. 350, 13. 648.
- Mute, *for Mwt*, q. v., 13. 60 (E.).
- Mwbill, *s.* moveable goods, chattels, property, 5. 275. F. *meubles*.
- Mwde, *s.* mood, 20. 203. *See Mude.*
- Mwdy, *adj.* proud, courageous, 20. 394. *See Mody.*
- Mwr, *s.* moor, 13. 552; Mwre, 7. 108. A.S. *mór*.
- Mwryt, *pp.* walled, blocked (up), 4. 164. F. *mur*, a wall.
- Mwt, 1 *p. s. pr.* I treat of, tell, 13. 60. Originally a law term; A.S. *mótian*, to plead; *mót*, an assembly.
- Mycht, *s.* might, 1. 12, 402, 607; 5. 174; *at thar mychtis*, to the best of their power, 3. 190; *all mychtis may*, can do all things, 3. 366.
- Mychty, *adj.* mighty, 1. 474.
- Myd-cawse, middle of the causey or causeway, 18. 132.
- Myddis, *s.* midst, 15. 167.
- Mydlike, *adj.* moderate, rather insignificant, 3. 71. Cf. A.S. *medlic*, little, *medeme*, moderate.
- Mydmorne, *s.* mid-morn, mid-morrow, 9. 587, 14. 206.
- Mydsummer, Midsummer, 10. 821.
- Mydwart, *s.* middle; *in mydwart*, in the middle, 3. 682.
- Mydwatter, Mid wattir, *errors in editions for Mydwart*, 3. 682 (foot-note). See above.
- Myldly, *adv.* mildly, 11. 259.
- Myle, *s.* mile, 7. 525.
- Myn, *poss. pron.* my, 1. 163.
- Myne, *v.* to mine; *myne down*, undermine, 10. 771; *ger.* to undermine, 17. 600.
- Myrakill, a miracle; *to myrakill*, as a miracle, 17. 825; *pl.* Myraclis, 17. 875.
- Myrk, *adj.* dark, 5. 21, 9. 373, 10. 588, 620. Icel. *myrkr*, dark.
- Myrknes, *s.* darkness, 5. 106.
- Myrthis, *s. pl.* (*as sing.*), mirth, joy, 16. 237.
- Myschance, mishap, misfortune, 1. 221; Myschans, 9. 272, 15. 251.
- Myscheiff, *s.* misfortune, 2. 45; mishap, 1. 310, 3. 254, 4. 159, 11. 502; evil case, 12. 400, 13. 627; peril, 11. 605; ill fate, sad end, 10. 105, 19. 71. O.F. *meschief*.
- Mys-dyd, *pt. s.* did amiss, 2. 43.
- Mysfall, *v.* to mishap, to come to evil, 12. 365.
- Mysliking, *s.* displeasure, vexation, 3. 516. *See Liking.*
- Myssit, *pt. s.* missed, 12. 50, 19. 504, 597.
- Myst, *s.* mist, 9. 577.
- Mysteir, *v.* to be necessary, 17. 215. Formed from the sb. *myster*.
- Myster, *s.* need, want, 3. 357, 7. 142, 8. 398, 10. 305 (E.), 14. 530, 17. 386, 19. 616; Mystir, 11. 346. *See Mister.*

- Mysteris, *s. pl.* crafts, arts, trades, 'misteries,' 12. 414, 17. 542. *See* Mister.
- Mystir, *adj.* lacking, needful, 4. 631. *See* Myster.
- Mystrowing, *s.* suspicion, 10. 329.
- Mystrowit, *pt. s.* mistrusted, suspected, 10. 327
- Myt, *s.* a mite, a wee bit, 3. 198, 12. 188.
- Na, *adj.* no, 1. 15, 59, 371.
- Na, *conj.* nor, 1. 16, 233, 318; 3. 496, 4. 119; than, 3. 229, 6. 538; *na thay war*, but they were, 5. 372.
- Na war, had it not been for, but for, 7. 218; were it not for, 6. 342; Na war it, had it not been, 3. 642; Na war, except that, 8. 83.
- Nacioun, *s.* nation, 10. 331.
- Nakit, *adj.* naked, 13. 459; Nakyt, unarmed, 7. 330, 10. 431, 13. 98, 19. 568. (It generally means 'unprovided with defensive armour'.)
- Nakyn, of no kind, 2. 168, 4. 146, 9. 143; *nakyn wiss*, way of no kind, no way, 5. 268; *na kyn thing*, lit. a thing of no kind, in no degree, 5. 362; Nakin, 10. 703 (E.).
- Namly, *adv.* especially, 4. 763, 5. 393.
- Nane, *adj.* none, 1. 129, 173; no, 12. 205.
- Nanys, for the, *adv.* for the nonce, 10. 58. The old form was *for then anes*, for the once, where *then* is the dat. case of the article.
- Narrow, *adj.* narrow, 10. 18.
- Narrowit, *pt. s.* grew narrow, 16. 381.
- Nave, *s.* fist, 16. 129. *See* Nevis.
- Na-viss, *adv.* in no wise, 6. 594.
- Nawyn, *s.* shipping, 3. 393.
- Naylis, *s. pl.* nails, 3. 459.
- Nayme, *s.* name, 10. 153.
- Ne, not (*with verbs*), 1. 293.
- Ne war, *conj.* had it not been that, but for that, 2. 424. *See* Na war.
- Ned, *s.* need, extremity of peril, great danger, 2. 231.
- Nedill, *s.* needle, i. e. magnetic needle, compass, 5. 23.
- Nedlyngis, *adv.* necessarily, of necessity, 9. 725. The suffix *-lyngis* is adverbial, and not uncommon in Middle English.
- Nedyt, *pt. s.* was needful, needed, 3. 692, 19. 213; *pl.* Nedit, were necessary, 17. 352.
- Neefe, *s.* fist, 16. 129 (H.). *See* Nevis.
- Neid, *s.* need, necessary business, 1. 254.
- Neid, *adj.* needful, 10. 576.
- Neid, *adj.* of necessity, 10. 39, 11. 361, 19. 174.
- Neid, *v.* to need, 13. 46.
- Neid-way, *adv.* of necessity, 19. 156; Neidwais, necessarily, 5. 242, 11. 285 (C.).
- Neir, *adv.* nearly, 5. 44, 12. 105.
- Neir, *adv. comp.* nearer, 16. 258.
- Neirhand, *adv.* near, 6. 381, 16. 538; nearly, close, 9. 129; *prep.* close to, 9. 685.
- Neist, *adj. superl.* next, nearest, 1. 55; Neyst, 1. 63; Neist, next, following, 10. 821 (E.).
- Nekbane, neck-bone, 1. 218. (Read *nekkebane*, in three syllables.)
- Nemmyt, *pp.* named, appointed, 8. 215, 10. 387. A.S. *nemnan*, to name, call.
- Ner, *adj.* near, 1. 380.
- Ner, *adv.* nearly, 1. 345, 2. 199, 7. 568.
- Ner, *adv. comp.* nearer; *ner and ner*, nearer and nearer, 3. 606, 6. 88, 91.
- Ner, *prep.* near; *ner hand*, near at hand, 3. 716, 12. 108 (E.). *See* Neirhand.
- Nethir, *adj.* lower, 10. 21.

- Nethring, *s.* abasement, 19. 155 (E.). A.S. *niðerian*, to abase.
- Neuir, *adv.* never, 1. 166.
- Neuth, *prep.* beneath, 11. 538 ; Newth, 11. 537 (E.). A.S. *neoðan*, below.
- Nevis, *s. pl.* fists, 20. 257 ; Newys, 3. 581 ; Newffys, 20. 257 (E.). *The sing. appears as Nave, 16. 129 ; New, 16. 129 (E.) ; Neefe, 16. 129 (H.). Icel. *hnefi*, the fist.*
- Nevo, *s.* nephew, 9. 738, 11. 440, 16. 44, 17. 55 ; Newo, 11. 440 (E.).
- New, *s.* nief, fist, 16. 129 (E.). *See* Nevis.
- Newffys, *s. pl.* fists, 20. 257 (E.). *See* Nevis.
- Newlingis, *adv.* newly, soon, *in* E., 5. 122 (*footnote*) ; Newlyngis, 14. 86, 19. 375\*. Cf. Nedlyngis.
- Newo, *for* Nevo, 11. 440 (E.).
- Newth, *prep.* beneath, 11. 537 (E.), 538 (E.). *See* Neuth.
- Newys, *s. pl.* fists, hands, 3. 581. *See* Nevis.
- Neych, *v.* to approach, 17. 419 (E.).
- Neyd, *adv.* of necessity, 14. 108. *See* Neid.
- Neyst, *adj. superl.* next, 14. 21 (E.). *See* Neist.
- Nigramansy, *s.* necromancy, 4. 747. Lat. *nigromantia*, now called ‘the black art’ ; an odd corruption of the Greek.
- No, *conj.* nor, 4. 212, 653 ; 7. 363, 8. 481, 9. 375.
- Nobill, *adj.* noble, 11. 218.
- Noblay, *s.* nobility, noble rank, 8. 211, 15. 271 (E.) ; Nobillary, 8. 211 (C.) ; 9. 95, 17. 225. O.F. *nobilite*, *noblete*.
- Nobleis, *gen. pl.* nobles’, 2. 182.
- Nocht, *adv.* not, 1. 58, &c. ; *nacht bot*, only, merely, 1. 2.
- Nocht-for-thi, *adv.* nevertheless, notwithstanding, 2. 39, 3. 124, 4. 282, 5. 563, 7. 220, &c. (Very common.) A.S. *ná* for *þt*, not on that account.
- None, *s.* noon (*but probably an error for mone = moon*), 4. 617 (*footnote*).
- Norist, *pp.* nourished, exercised, 19. 164. *See* Nwrist.
- North, *adj.* northern, 19. 121 ; *north half*, the north side (of), 19. 316, 20. 325.
- Northir, *adj.* northern, 17. 846.
- Not, *s.* employment, 13. 173. A.S. *notu*, use.
- No-thing, *s.* nothing, 9. 164.
- Nothir, *conj.* neither, 1. 500.
- Nothir, *an error in J. for Noy*, 6. 666 (*footnote*).
- Nouthir, *conj.* neither, 9. 41, 11. 412, 18. 534.
- Nouthir, *adv.* not at all, 6. 522.
- Novelreis, *s. pl.* novelties, 19. 394. (Occurs in Chaucer's Squieres Tale.)
- Noy, *v.* to vex, annoy, harm, 6. 666 ; *pr. s.* Noyis, grieves, 20. 506 (E.) ; *pres. pt.* Noyand, vexing, 18. 554. O.F. *nuire*, to injure.
- Noy, *s.* annoyance, trouble, 3. 554, 10. 155\*. O.F. *nuire*, to injure, Lat. *nocere*.
- Noyis, *s.* noise, 5. 116, 6. 102, 7. 338, 13. 34, 19. 535, 564 ; Noys, 10. 411. *See* Noy.
- Noyne, *s.* noon, 17. 130, 397, 659.
- Noyus, *adj.* noisome, difficult, 19. 742. *See* Noy.
- Nuk, *s.* nook, 17. 93 (E.) ; Nwk, point, headland, 4. 556 ; Nwke, nook, corner, 17. 93.
- Nwrist, *pp.* nourished, 6. 487. *See* Norist.
- Nwrtour, *s.* nurture, artificial control or teaching, 4. 732.
- Nycete, *s.* folly, a piece of folly, 7. 379 (E.). *See* Nyssste.
- Nycht, *s.* night, 2. 552 ; *on nychtis*, by nights, by night, 7. 506.

- Nychtbur, neighbour, 1. 87; Nychtbur, 16. 478; *pl.* Nyctbowris, 20. 273 (E.).
- Nychtingale, a nightingale, 5. 4.
- Nychtyrtale (E.), *s.* night-time, 19. 495. Used by Chaucer, Prol. 97. Cf. Icel. *náttartal*, a tale or number of nights.
- Nygramansour, *s.* necromancer, 4. 242. *See* Nigramansy.
- Nynt, *ord.* ninth, 19. 527.
- Nysste, *s.* a nicety, i. e. a folly, 7. 379.
- Nyt, *pt. pl.* denied, 1. 52. F. *nier*, to deny.
- Obeiss, *ger.* to obey, 16. 312, 20. 147; *pt. s.* Obeisit, obeyed, 9. 304; *pl.* 9. 461, 20. 302. O.F. *obeir*, to obey.
- Obeysand, *pres. part.* as *adj.* obedient, 4. 603, 8. 10, 10. 132, 258.
- Oblesteris, *s. pl.* (a bad spelling for *arblasteris*), men armed with arblasts or crossbows, 17. 236. See note on p. 601.
- Obstakill, *s.* obstacle, 16. 260 (E.).
- Occisioune, *s.* slaughter, 14. 220.
- Occupy, *v.* to possess, 1. 98, 111, 152; 9. 698; *pr. pl.* 4. 524; *pt. s.* Occupit, 9. 675.
- Ocht, *s.* aught, 3. 282.
- Of, *prep.* with, 4. 319, 345; 8. 228, 16. 634; out of, 16. 352, 17. 765; for (after *pray*), 19. 100; some of, 14. 362, 16. 145; as *of*, as amongst, 5. 493; *of befor*, formerly, 19. 260.
- Of, *adv.* off, 19. 332.
- Off, *prep.* of, 1. 27, &c.; with, 11. 47. A.S. *of*. *See* Of.
- Off lyve, alive, 1. 293.
- Of-new, *adv.* anew, lately, 14. 92. (Used by Chaucer.)
- Oitsiss, *adv.* often, 4. 389, 5. 265, 7. 17, 9. 634, 10. 152, 561, 811; 11. 487, 15. 334, 19. 131; Oftsyss, 3. 316, 427, 564. Lit. oft-times; A.S. *sið*, a time.
- Oftymis, *adv.* oft-times, 4. 230.
- Oist, Oyst, *s.* a host, body of men, 7. 337, 338 (E.).
- On, *prep.* in, 1. 4; *maid on*, made up, 5. 54; *quhy maid thou on*, why didst thou make up, 5. 52; *on liff*, alive, 18. 154; *on raw*, in a row, 17. 348; *on stray*, astray, 13. 195; *on wry*, awry, 4. 705.
- On-ane, *adv.* anon, immediately, 4. 86, 364.
- On-bak, *adv.* aback, 15. 484. A.S. *onbæc*, backward.
- Onpayit, *pp.* unpaid, 1. 257.
- On-till, *prep.* until, to, 4. 303.
- Ony, *adj.* any, 1. 60.
- Oost, *s.* host, army, 13. 263. *See* Ost.
- Oppinly, *adv.* openly, 9. 361, 17. 881; Oppynly, 10. 511, 11. 633.
- Oppyn, *adj.* open, 5. 382, 9. 350, 17. 926.
- Oppyn, *v.* to open, 7. 274, 15. 212; *pt. s.* Opnyt, 10. 225; *pp.* Opnyt, 10. 176, 17. 136; Opynnyt, 10. 176 (E.).
- Opynly, *adv.* openly, 20. 498. *See* Oppinly.
- Opynnyng, *s.* opening, 3. 532.
- Or, *conj.* ere, 1. 297, 535; 2. 484, &c.; *or euir*, before ever 16. 429.
- Ordanit, *pt. s.* ordained, 11. 172; proposed, 15. 34; appointed, 13. 53, 17. 505; prepared, made preparations, 16. 288, 17. 259; arranged, 11. 351, 17. 298, 20. 65; *refl.* arrayed himself, 8. 195; *pt. pl.* Ordanit, made ready, prepared, 17. 400, 626; arranged, 5. 305, 11. 304, 17. 95, &c.; *pp.* Ordanit, ordained, 11. 166, 181; arranged, 17. 563; arrayed, 8. 218, &c. (Of very frequent occurrence.) *See* Ordain.
- Ordanyng, *s.* intent, preparation, 19. 26.
- Ordain, *v.* to provide, 1. 358. *See* Ordanit.

- Ordinanss, *s.* ordinance, 11. 30; *v.* Ordinans, order, arrangement, 17. 101; Ordynance, arrangement, 1. 79.
- Ost, *s.* host, army, 2. 559, 3. 15.
- Othir, *adj.* different, 1. 392; *othir sum*, some others, 1. 52.
- Otow, *prep.* out from, 8. 90; beyond, 8. 448; *written* Otowth, 8. 90 (E.). Cf. Swed. *utåt*, outwards.
- Oucht, *adv.* at all, 2. 123, 7. 252, 9. 749; *ought lang*, rather long, 15. 428.
- Oucht, *for* Owth, *prep.* above, 10. 746 (E.).
- Ouerstrowed, *pp.* overstrewn, 14. 443 (H.).
- Ouirmair, *adv.* lit. more upward; hence, more backward, somewhat backwards, 6. 632. *See* Owyr-mar.
- Oulk, *s.* week, 14. 132 (H.); *pl.* Oulkes, weeks, 9. 359 (H.). (Here *ul* is a misprinting for *w*, due to a misreading; *oulk* stands for *ork*, q. v.)
- Our, *prep.* over, above, 1. 232, 2. 78, 3. 409, 420, 428, &c. *Our tkar hand*, through their hands, 18. 502.
- Our, *adv.* very, 18. 510; *our few*, very few, too few, 13. 566; over, across, 9. 405; *set our*, put off, 11. 31 (*rubric*).
- Our-cum, *v.* to overcome, 6. 372; *pt. s.* Ourcome, subdued, 1. 110; recovered, 18. 134; *pp.* Our-cum-myn, overcome, 3. 438.
- Our-drawyn, *pp.* drawn across, 15. 286.
- Ourdriff, *v.* survive, overcome, 4. 661; *pp.* Ourdriffin, overpast, 5. 3; Ourdrivyn, brought to an end, 19. 481.
- Our-ga, *v.* to overcome, become conquerors; *our-ga apon*, to conquer, 6. 364.
- Our-hy, *v.* to overtake, 3. 737, 6. 598. (Lit. to hasten over.) *See* Hy.
- Ouris, *poss. pron.* ours, 4. 523, 12. 309.
- Our-raid, *pt. s.* over-rode, rode over, 9. 513, 13. 736.
- Our-saile, *v.* to sail across, 3. 686.
- Ourstrak, *pt. s.* struck at, 5. 630.
- Ourta, *v.* to overtake, 3. 97, 6. 593, 10. 80, 18. 325; to advance, 8. 190; Ourtak, 4. 138; to overspread, 11. 125; *pp.* Ourtane, overtaken, 3. 612, 12. 80; condemned, 19. 55.
- Ourthwort, *adv.* overthwart, across, 8. 172. (Chaucer has *ouerthwartz* in the Knights Tale.)
- Our-tuk, *pt. s.* overtook, reached, 2. 381; *pl.* spread over, occupied, 12. 439; overtook, 6. 440.
- Ourtummyllit, *pt. pl.* upset, 16. 643.
- Outane, *prep.* except, besides, 5. 340, 9. 462, 10. 504, 18. 9, 19. 38; Outaken, 13. 482, 17. 15; Outakin, 5. 397; Outakyn, 5. 413, 6. 407, 9. 664, 10. 705, 733.
- Out-cummyng, *s.* coming out, sallying out, 4. 361.
- Outhir, *conj.* either, 6. 504, 9. 235, 15. 218.
- Out-our, *prep.* across, beyond, 8. 393, 10. 157, 19. 314, 744; above, 9. 489; over, 9. 316, 10. 700.
- Outrage, *s.* great injury, 4. 647; disgrace, 19. 304; absurdity, 19. 408.
- Outrageous, *adj.* excessive, extreme, 6. 126, 8. 270, 11. 32.
- Outrageouss, *adv.* extremely, 6. 19.
- Outraying, *s.* great misfortune, 18. 182.
- Outtak, *prep.* except, 5. 104. *See* Outane.
- Outyng, *s.* outing, expedition, 19. 620.
- Ovir, *adj.* upper, 10. 452.
- Owcht, *s.* aught, anything, 1. 251. *See* Oucht.
- Owk, *s.* a week, 14. 132; *pl.* Owkis, 9. 359. Cf. Dan. *uge*, a week.

- Owt, *prep.* out, 2. 199, 352.  
 Owtakyn, *prep.* except, 3. 614; Owtane, 2. 185, 473. *See* Outane.
- Owth, *prep.* from, 11. 614; above, 10. 746; outside, 17. 598. Cf. A.S. *ut*, out; also A.S. prefix *oð-*, from, out of = G. *ent-*.
- Owth, *adv.* above, 18. 418; beyond, 14. 352.
- Owthir, *adj.* other, 10. 24. *See* Outhir.
- Owtouth, *prep.* beyond, 8. 448 (E.). *See* Otow.
- Owtrageouss, *adj.* extreme, 3. 132. *See* Outrageous.
- Owyrr-mar, *adv.* backwards, in retreat, 2. 440. *See* Ouirmair.
- Oxin, *s. pl.* oxen, 10. 381; Oxyne, 388.
- Oysis, *pr. pl.* use, are used, 11. 227; use, 12. 414; 1 *p. s. pt.* Oysit, I used, 10. 565; *pp.* Oysit, used, 11. 222. F. *user.*
- Oyss, *s. use*, benefit, 17. 252, 19. 196. O.F. *us*, use, Lat. *usus*.
- Page, *s. a page*, 3. 755; 19. 693; a boy, youth, 1. 289.
- Pailȝownys, *s. pl.* pavilions, 3. 239, 19. 542. *See* Palȝeonis. Gaelic and Irish *paillinn*, a tent, contracted from O.Fr. *pavillon*, a tent.
- Palfray, a horse, 2. 118.
- Pallious, *s. pl.* tents, 3. 239 (*joot note*). *See* Palȝeonis.
- Palmesonday, *s. Palm Sunday*, 5. 335 (H.), (*footnote*); 15. 100.
- Palmyrs, *s. pl.* palms, palm-branches (really branches of willow), 5. 312. *See* Castle Dangerous, cap. xix.
- Palȝeonis, *s. pl.* tents, pavilions, 17. 299; Palȝeony, 11. 117, 17. 480; Palȝownys, 11. 139, 12. 461, 19. 386, 391, 514, 561, 566; Pailȝownys, 12. 215. *See* Pailȝownys.
- Panch, *s. paunch*, belly, 9. 398. O.F. *panche, pance*, Lat. acc. *pantieem*, from nom. *pantex*.
- Pane, *s. pain, trouble*, 7. 626, 8. 177, 18. 192; pains, 8. 350. F. *peine*. *See* Payn.
- Pantener, *an error in other editions for* Pautener, q. v.
- Par, *for*; *par cheryte*, for charity, 1. 418, 3. 324. O.F. *par*, for.
- Parage, *s. lineage*, 1. 102, 276. O.F. *parage, paraige*, rank, noble lineage, noble birth; from O.F. *par*, a peer.
- Paramouris, *adv.* in the way of love, as a paramour, 13. 485. F. *par amours*.
- Parc, *s. park*, 13. 230. *See* Park.
- Paris, *s. pl.* pairs, 13. 463.
- Park, *s. park*, 11. 422. *See* Parc.
- Parlement, parliament, 1. 602.
- Part, *s. pl.* parts, *in phr.* twa part = two parts, 5. 47; Parteis, *pl.* parts, parties, 6. 545, 557, 565. *See* Party.
- Partenerys, *s. pl.* partners, 2. 517.
- Partenit, *pt. s. pertained*, 20. 313.
- Partis, *s. pl.* sides; *drew to partis*, took sides, 7. 624; Parteis, parts, sides, 10. 75. *See* Party.
- Party, *s. part*, 2. 215, 3. 461, 4. 640, 6. 537; *mast party*, chief part, 15. 65; *in party*, in part, partly, 3. 292; side, 13. 470; *pl.* Parteis, parts, sides, 10. 75; parties, 6. 557, 565; *drew to partis*, took sides, 7. 624. *See* Part, Partis.
- Pasche-ewyn, Paschal eve, 15. 105 (E.).
- Pasche-oulk, Paschal week, 15. 101 (H.). *See* Oulk.
- Paske-day, Easter-day, 15. 248.
- Paske-evin, Easter eve, 15. 105.
- Pask-owk, *s. Passover-week*, 15. 101. *See* Owk.
- Pass, *v. to pass, to go*, 6. 594, 8. 178; Pas, 11. 287; *pt. s. passed*, crossed, 3. 455; surpassed, 5. 465, 9. 504; *pl.* passed, went, 16. 294, 18. 369; passed, crossed over, 9.

408, 10. 95; *pp.* Passit, passed, crossed, 7. 110, 10. 629, 14. 372, 19. 314, 20. 432; *passit ar*, have passed, 7. 39; *passit was*, had passed, 6. 80, 584; Passit, past, gone, 13. 563, 16. 319, 19. 230; gone by, 9. 109; *pt. s.* Past, went, 10. 114; 2 *p. s.* *pr.* Passis, thou goest, 2. 127; *pres.* *pt.* Passand, surpassing, 5. 198.

Pass, *s.* a pace, rate of going, 7. 203\*.

Pautener, *adj.* rascally, ribald, 1. 462, 2. 194. “*Pautonnier*, a lewd, stubborn, or saucy knave;” Cotgrave. “*Paltonier, pantonier*, homme sans profession ni demeure fixe; homme de mauvaise vie, méchant, hautain, misérable, gueux, coquin;” Burguy. Jamieson explains it rightly, but misprints it *pantener*.

Payit, *pt. pl.* paid, 20. 26; *pp.* pleased, 14. 234, 20. 211.

Payment, payment, i. e. delivery of blows, 6. 148.

Payn, pain, hardship, 1. 309; trouble, 10. 638; *but payn*, without trouble, 10. 243; Payne, trouble, 10. 604, 635; *pl.* Paynys, pains, griefs, 2. 517. *See Pane.*

Payn, *v. refl.* to take pains, endeavour, 10. 211; Payne, 12. 526, 17. 145, 395; to toil, struggle, 15. 483.

Payss-wouk, the Paschal week, 15. 101 (E.).

Pearlly, *adv.* openly, 10. 315 (H.). *See Appertly.*

Pedaill, *s.* rabble, 13. 229 (H.). *See Pitaill.*

Peill, *s.* a peel, a fort, small castle, 10. 137, 152, 193, 207, 223, 252, 797; *pl.* Pelis, 10. 147. Perhaps Gael. *peillie*, a hut made of earth and branches, and covered with skins (?).

Peir, *v.* to make equal, 9. 666. O.F. *par*, equal.

Penans, *s.* penance, punishment, 19. 51.

Pennownys, *s. pl.* pennons, 8. 227, 11. 132\*, 11. 465, 12. 461. O.F. *pennon*, a standard, ensign; from Lat. *penna*.

Pennystane, *s.* a flat stone, used as a quoit, 13. 581 (E. and H.); Pennystane cast, the distance to which such a stone can be thrown, 16. 383.

Pensalis, *s. pl.* small pennons, 11. 193; Pensalls, 11. 465 (H.). O.F. *pennoncel*, dim. of *pennon*, an ensign.

Peralis, *s. pl.* perils, 4. 146.

Peralous, *adj.* perilous, 3. 685.

Percass, *adv.* perchance, accidentally, 2. 530, 3. 481, 7. 307. O.F. *per cas*, by chance.

Perde, F. *par dieu* (an oath); used merely to signify verily, indeed, of a sooth, 5. 545, 6. 357, 9. 84, 19. 689.

Perell, *s. peril*, 7. 193, 10. 590, 12. 529; *pl.* Perellis, 9. 96; Perellys, 3. 559.

Perelouss, *adj.* perilous, 5. 420, 10. 21, 13. 51; Pereluss, 10. 595, 18. 461.

Perfay, *for per fay*, by my faith, verily, 1. 39, 2. 212, 5. 279, 6. 614, 10. 81, 11. 38, 19. 557. O.F. *per fei*, by my faith.

Perfit, *adj.* perfect, 17. 928.

Perforyst, *pp.* performed, 12. 61. O.F. *parfornir*, to achieve (Roquafort).

Peris, *s. pl.* peers, equals, 9. 489.

Perplexitè, *s.* danger, 11. 619.

Perquer, *adv.* by heart, thoroughly, 1. 238. O.F. *per quer*, *per cuer*, by heart.

Persauit, *pt. s.* perceived, 6. 387, 7. 135, 9. 687, 10. 38, 16. 480, 18. 134; *pl.* 5. 92, 10. 51, 19. 208; *pp.* 18. 378.

Persavyng, *s.* perception, 4. 358, 12. 367; perceiving, sight, 5. 289; being seen, 10. 571, 641; know-

- ledge, 6. 572; Persawyng, perception, 1. 596; being seen, 2. 15.
- Persawe, *v.* to perceive, 1. 82; 1. *p. s. pr.* I perceive, 2. 326.
- Persecucioun, *s.* persecution, 4. 5.
- Perssit, *pt. pl.* pierced, 14. 292. F. *percer.*
- Pert, *adj.* brisk, 10. 531.
- Pert, *for Apert*, 10. 73 (C.).
- Pesabilly, *adv.* peaceably, 5. 231.
- Pess, peace, 1. 80, 8. 125, 9. 184, 10. 257; subjection, 13. 558, 14. 98; Pes, peace, 2. 499; *cum till his pess*, become subject to him, 8. 11; *resavit till his pess*, received under his protection, 10. 127.
- Petè, *s.* pity, 3. 523.
- Peth, *s.* path, pass, 18. 366, 421, 441.
- Pettaill, *s.* rabble, 11. 238 (E.). *See Pitail.*
- Petuishly, *an error in E.* 3. 562 (*footnote*).
- Petwysly, *adv.* piteously, sadly, 3. 553.
- Pik, *s.* pitch, 17. 611.
- Pikkis, *s. pl.* picks, i. e. pick-axes, 2. 540. See quotation from Lydgate in the Note to l. 528, p. 554.
- Pitail, *s.* rabble, 13. 229 (E.); Pitall, 11. 420 (E.). O.F. *pietaille*, infantry, men of arms on foot, rabble; from O.F. *piet*, the foot.
- Pitè, pity, 1. 481, 10. 155\*, 451; 17. 528; Pittè, 1. 480.
- Pith, *s.* strength, might, 3. 599.
- Pithones, Pythoness, i. e. witch of Endor, 4. 753. (The reading should be *Phitones*; see the Note, p. 563.)
- Pittyt, *pp.* full of pits, 11. 388 (E.).
- Pitwysly, *adv.* piteously, 3. 549, 14. 413.
- Place; *left place*, lost ground, 13. 271. *See Plass.*
- Plane, *adj.* plain, open, 19. 49; *plane melle*, open fight, 18. 79.
- Plane, *s.* plain, 7. 613; *pl.* Planys, 8. 5, &c. *See Planys.*
- Planer, *adj.* full, plenary, 1. 624.
- Planetis, *s. pl.* planets, 4. 695.
- Planly, *adv.* openly, plainly, 9. 512, 10. 520, 11. 17, 12. 199, 16. 259, 19. 54.
- Planys, *s. pl.* plains, 2. 496, 8. 5, 132. *See Plane.*
- Plass, *s.* place, 8. 76, 19. 485; *wan plass*, gained ground, advanced, 12. 563; *left place*, lost ground, retreated, 13. 271.
- Play, *s.* pleasure, 5. 73; *pl.* Playis, games, tricks, 19. 364.
- Playn, *adj.* plain, flat, 9. 57; open, 11. 551, 630; 19. 45, 410; Playne, flat, 11. 360; open, 2. 254.
- Playn, *s.* plain, open country, 6. 518, 8. 138, 19. 493; Playne, open ground, 11. 540, 12. 349.
- Playne-land, *s.* plain country lowlands, 11. 337.
- Plenze, *v.* to complain, 11. 320; *pt. s.* Plenzeit, 4. 215. O.F. *plaindre.*
- Plenzeing, *s.* complaining, 3. 647.
- Plesance, pleasure, power to please, 1. 5, 6. O.F. *plaisance.*
- Plesand, *pres. part.* pleasing, pleasant, 1. 10, 208; 10. 282; Plesande, 5. 8. *See Pleyss.*
- Plewch, *s.* plough, 19. 175.
- Pleyss, *v.* to please, 1. 198. F. *plaisir.*
- Plungyt, *pt. pl.* plunged, 2. 355; Plungit, 12. 568.
- Pollis, *s. pl.* pools, 12. 395, 404.
- Portray, *v.* to draw, paint, picture, 10. 743 (E. H.); *pp.* Portrait, painted, 10. 743; moulded, made, proportioned, 10. 281.
- Porturat, *pp.* pourtrayed, formed, *a reading in E. for Portrait*, 10. 281.
- Possessownnis, *s. pl.* (*as sing.*) possession, 16. 216.

- Potacioune, *s.* potion, drink, 20. 535.
- Pottis, *s. pl.* pots, i. e. round deep holes, 11. 364, 371; Pottys, 11. 385. Deep, round holes, not very large, are still called *pots* in Craven, Yorkshire.
- Pottit, *pp.* filled with ‘pots’ or pits, pitted, 11. 388. See above.
- Pouer, *adj.* poor, 9. 442. See Pouir.
- Poueraill, *s.* rabble, *a reading in H. for Merdale*, 9. 249 (*footnote*). See above.
- Pouerale, *s.* rabble of camp-followers, 8. 275, 11. 238, 420; Poveraill, 13. 229; Poueralze, rabble, 8. 368. O.F. *pouraille*, poor people (Roquefort).
- Pouerly, *adv.* poorly, 7. 536.
- Pouir, *adj.* poor, 4. 343, 16. 292; Pouer, 9. 442. O.F. *povre*, F. *pauvre*. (The *u* is here probably a *v*.)
- Poustè, *s.* power, 5. 165, 8. 236, 9. 4, 757; dominion, 16. 358. O.F. *poeste*, *poestet*, from Lat. acc. *potestatem*, power. See Lege.
- Poustè, *s.* power, *an error in E. for Sauftè*, safety, 10. 442 (*footnote*). See above.
- Powdir, *s.* dust, 11. 616. F. *poudre*, Lat. *pulvis*.
- Powertè, *s.* poverty, 3. 551.
- Powstè, *s.* power, 1. 110, 2. 100, 126; 4. 4, 5. 650, 7. 519; Powestè, 1. 131. See Poustè.
- Poynt, *s.* right point of time, right moment, 4. 383, 7. 388, 396, 500; adventure, 8. 517; opportunity, 13. 598; time of peril, 16. 278;feat of arms, 9. 631; *pl.* Poyntis, points, 11. 565; feats, achievements, 10. 341, 16. 499; *at poynt*, in the right direction, 3. 702 (cf. the *points of a compass*); *at poynt*, at all points, fully, 6. 406, 10. 283; *in sic poynt*, in such good array, 12. 93; *into sic poynt*, at such a point (of death), 4. 331.
- Poynȝè, *s.* puny matter, skirmish, 16. 307 (E.). See Punȝè.
- Pray, *v.* to pray, 12. 477; Prayit, *pt. s.* prayed, 14. 332, 20. 201; *pl.* 11. 380.
- Pray, *s.* prey, booty, 2. 445, 9. 530, 534; *pl.* Prayis, booty, plunder, spoils, 15. 382, 17. 891. O.F. *pracie*, *proie*; Lat. *praeda*, prey.
- Pray, *v.* to spoil, ravage, 17. 226; *pt. s.* Prayit, despoiled, 15. 330. O.F. *praer*, *preier*, *proier*, to spoil.
- Prayer, prayer, 12. 478.
- Prechyt, *pt. s.* preached to, 3. 299.
- Preif, *pr. pl.* prove, test, shew, 9. 29. See Preuit.
- Prek, *v.* to spur, hasten (lit. prick), 19. 423; *pt. s.* Prekit, spurred, 11. 574; *pt. pl.* Prekit, 16. 623, 19. 370; Prek we, let us spur, 16. 615; *pres. pt.* Prekand, spurring, 19. 360. See Prik.
- Presand, *s.* present; *in presand*, as a present, 18. 542; *intill presand*, as a present, 18. 170.
- Presens, *s.* presence, 5. 497.
- Presentit, *pp.* presented, 15. 301.
- Presit, *pt. s.* harassed, 7. 287; Presyt, beset, 10. 316; *pt. pl.* Presit, pressed upon, pressed hard, 6. 533, 13. 192, 213; *pp.* Presit, hard pressed, 13. 128, 18. 414. See Press.
- Presit, *pp.* prized, valued, esteemed, 6. 270. See Priss.
- Prisoners, *s. pl.* prisoners, 4. 314; Prisoneris, 9. 456, 17. 891.
- Presoune, prison, 1. 279, 4. 15, 5. 155; Presoun, 1. 282; Preson, 6. 259.
- Press, *v.* to throng, 19. 79; Press thame, press themselves together, 6. 83; *pt. s.* Pressit, pressed upon, 12. 133; advanced, 18. 105; pressed, 20. 427; *pt. pl.* Pressit, pressed, 9. 715; pressed hard on, 18. 421; drove, 17. 641; advanced, 17. 466, 566; charged, 12. 573; *refl.* hurried, endeavoured, 17. 408; hastened,

15. 469; *pp.* Pressit, hard pressed, 17. 165; *pres. pt.* Pressand, 17. 373. *See Presit.*
- Press, *s.* distress, 3. 129.
- Presumyt, *pt. s.* presumed, 1. 572, 11. 143.
- Preualy, *adv.* privily, 15. 113. *See Preuely.*
- Preuatè, *s.* privacy, retirement, 5. 306, 6. 547; secrecy, 11. 478; secret plot, 10. 161; private needs, 5. 572. *See Priuatè.*
- Preuè, *adj.* still, quiet, 4. 382, 498; private, 5. 62; confidential, 9. 227; Prevè, privy, still, quiet, 10. 582, 12. 388; *folk preve*, privy counsel, 13. 722; *preue consell*, 11. 270; *preue nedis*, privy needs, 5. 566. *See Prewè, Priuè.*
- Prewè, *s.* privy, 5. 556.
- Preuely, *adv.* secretly, 9. 314.
- Preuit, *pt. s.* proved, attempted, 10. 342. *See Preif.*
- Prewè, *adj.* privy, secretly attached, 5. 494; (men) nearly related, 20. 568; secret, 17. 64; closely hid, 8. 51. *See Preuè.*
- Price, praise, 1. 25. *See Priss.*
- Prid, pride, 1. 408.
- Prik, *v.* to prick, wound, 13. 634; to spur, 13. 57; Prikit, *pt. s.* spurred, rode hard, 13. 314, 16. 122; *pl.* 6. 412, 9. 617, 12. 501; Prikyt, 2. 430; Prik we, let us spur, 12. 467; *pres. pt.* Prikand, spurring, riding hard, 6. 421, 11. 570, 12. 548, 19. 347. *See Prek.*
- Priss, *v.* to prize, esteem, 6. 505; *ger.* to be prized, or esteemed, 7. 99, 16. 224, 17. 924; *pt. s.* Prisit, praised, 16. 672, 18. 403; Prisynt, praised, esteemed, 3. 156; *pl.* Prisit, praised, 8. 105; *pp.* Prisit, prized, 6. 325, 10. 776, 11. 316; praised, 10. 299, 16. 502\*, 525, 686; 18. 436; 20. 243, 366, 375.
- Priss, *s.* praise, fame, renown, 6. 328, 12. 125, 20. 564; price, value, 8. 79. *See Pryss.*
- Priuatè, *s.* privacy, 2. 8. *See Preuate.*
- Priuè, *adj.* privy, secret, intimate, 1. 544. *See Preuè.*
- Proffer, *s.* offer, 20. 538.
- Profferit, *pt. s.* proffered, offered, 20. 340; *pp.* offered, 20. 533.
- Prophesye, *s.* prophecy, 10. 740.
- Propir, *adj.* own, 15. 209.
- Proplexitè, *s.* perplexity, trouble, 12. 530. [A false form; due to confusion between the contractions for *pro* and *per.*] *See Perplexitè.*
- Propyrté, peculiarity, peculiar state (of service), 1. 234.
- Provit, *pt. pl.* tried, 17. 666; *pp.* Prowit, proved, i. e. achieved, 13. 741. O.F. *prover*, Lat. *probare*.
- Prowd, *adj.* proud, 19. 561.
- Prowe, *v.* to prove, display, 3. 57.
- Prowes, *s.* prowess, 9. 503.
- Prowyt, *pt. s.* proved, tested, *in E.*, 5. 363 (*footnote*).
- Pruf, *imp. pl.* let us prove, let us try, 7. 22; *pt. s.* Prufit, 5. 363; *pp.* Prufit, shewn, exhibited, 5. 174.
- Pruwe, *v.* to prove, test, essay, 9. 29 (E.).
- Pryd, *s* pride, 12. 223.
- Pryd, *v. refl.* pride ourselves, 19. 695.
- Pryme, *s.* prime (nine o'clock?), 15. 55.
- Prysit, *pt. s.* prized, 11. 58. *See Priss.*
- Pryss, praise, 1. 21, 3. 175.
- Pryss, *v.* to praise; *gerund*, to prysse = to be praised, 1. 239. *See Priss.*
- Pulaile, *s.* poultry, 11. 120 (E.). F. *poulaille*, poultry.
- Pulis, *s. pl.* pools, 12. 395, 404 (E.). *See Pollis.*
- Pund, *s. pl.* pounds (of money), 18. 521; *a thousand pund*, 18. 285.

Pundelan, *s.* warrior, hero, 3. 159.

The sense is clear, but the etymology doubtful. I can hardly suppose, with Jamieson, that it is the same word with *pantaloons*! If a mere guess may be made, it seems to me just possible that the word may have been an epithet of a hero, like Fierabras; *pundelan* would, in O. French, be *puin-de-leine*, i. e. fist of wood; cf. Goetz with the iron hand.

Punsoune, a dagger, 1. 545. See the note.

Punȝè, *s.* a small matter, a skirmish, 12. 373 (E.); *pl.* Punȝeis, skirmishes (lit. puny matters), 12. 373. See Pwnȝhè.

Pupill, *s.* people, 2. 543.

Pur, *adj.* poor, the poor, 1. 276.

Puraill, *s.* rabble, 11. 420 (H.); Purall, 11. 238 (H.). See Pouerale.

Purchas, *v.* to acquire, 10. 321, 355; Purchase, to procure, 7. 496; Purchess, to get, 2. 581, 17. 62; to procure, 6. 29; Purches, to acquire, obtain, 1. 433, 2. 572; to find out, 10. 515; *pt. s.* Purchast, procured, 9. 543. O.F. *purchacier*, to procure, obtain.

Purchass, *s.* endeavour, 5. 534, 10. 513; attempt, 19. 12; contrivance, 19. 32; Purchess, contrivance, 19. 30.

Purchesand, *pres. part.* acquiring, 2. 188.

Purchesyng, *s.* acquisition, getting of food, 2. 579.

Pure, *adj.* poor, 20. 604. See Pur.

Purpos, *s.* intent, result of a design, 3. 263; Purposs, purpose, 5. 542.

Purvay, *v.* to provide, provide for, 4. 64, 5. 74; to provide for oneself, 11. 10, 75; 12. 220; to send, ordain, 18. 58; *pr. pl.* let them provide for themselves, 11. 64; *pt. s.* Purvait, provided, 17. 249; *refl.* Purvayit, provided for himself, 10. 586, 19. 531; *pl.* provided, 11. 76; Purvait, purveyed, 17. 246;

*pp.* Purvait, provided, equipped, 4. 168, 11. 14, 12. 326; Purvayit, 14. 193; Purwait, 2. 269; Purwayt, 2. 259; Purwayit, 9. 424 (E.). O.F. *pourveoir*, Lat. *prouidere* (Roquefort).

Purvians, *s.* provisions, 4. 397.

Pusonyt, *pp.* poisoned, 20. 609 (E.).

Pusoune, *s.* poison, 20. 536 (E.); Pwsoune, 1. 533.

Pusoune, a reading for Punsoune in E.; 1. 545 (footnote).

Put againe, *v.* to repulse, drive back, 16. 147, 17. 396; *put agane*, driven back, repulsed, 12. 355.

Pwnȝhè, *adj. as sb.* a small skirmish, 16. 307. See Punȝè.

Pwnyst, *pp.* punished, 20. 520.

Pwsoune, poison, 1. 533. See Pusoune.

Pykis, *s. pl.* pikes, 17. 344.

Pyne, *s.* pining, pain, suffering, punishment, 1. 212; pain, misery, 2. 494, 5. 73. A.S. *pin*, pining, suffering.

Quadruplit, *pp.* quadrupled, 18. 30.

Quantitè, a great number, a quantity, 6. 235, 11. 206, 473; 12. 101; distance, 6. 76.

Quatribill, *adj.* quadruple, 18. 30 (E.).

Quentiss, *s. pl.* devices, 11. 194 (E.). See Quyntis.

Quer, *s.* choir, 20. 293 (E.); numbered 20. 287 in P; Queyr, 19. 293.

Questionyng, a reading in E., 6. 87, 94 (footnotes). See also the note. *Questionyng* is a misreading; the scribe was thinking of *questing*; see Quhestlyng.

Quethirand, for Quhedirand, 17. 684 (E.).

Queyn, *s.* queen, 20. 99; Queyne, 20. 85.

Queyr, *s.* a choir, 19. 293. See Quer.

- Quuh-, *answers to E. wh-, and A.S. hw-*.
- Quaha, *pron.* whosoever, whoever, 1. 391, 445; 2. 388; 6. 171; 16. 599. (Not used as a simple relative in the nom. case.) *Gen.* Quahais, whose, 17. 28; *abl. or dat.* Quaham, 4. 111.
- Quhar, *adv.* where, 1. 354; *neuir-quhar*, nowhere else, 11. 39. A.S. *hwær*.
- Quharfor, wherefore, 1. 308.
- Quhar-throuch, whereby, 1. 170; Quhar-throu, 7. 89.
- Quhat, *pron.* what, 1. 93, 141; *adv.* how, 1. 215; Quhat for, what with, 13. 211, 214.
- Quhat-kyn, of what kind, 2. 226, 3. 675, 4. 649, 8. 407, 10. 638.
- Quhat-sa-euyr, whatsoever, 2. 41.
- Quhat-to, to what, 11. 28.
- Quhedirand, *pres. pt.* whizzing, making a booming sound, 17. 684. Cf. A.S. *hwōðeran*, to murmur, to rumble (Somner).
- Quheill, *s.* a wheel, 13. 637; Quhelis, *gen.* wheel's, 13. 647; *pl.* Quhelis, 17. 609. A.S. *hweol*.
- Quhen, *adv.* when, 1. 250, 15. 315.
- Quhenar, *adj.* fewer, 11. 605. See Quheyne.
- Quhestlyng, *s.* baying (of a dog), 6. 94; Quhistlyng, 6. 87. Apparently merely a form of *whistling*. MS. E. has *questioning*, an inferior form of *questing*, lit. searching, especially used, however, of the baying of a hound. See *quest* in Halliwell. Cf. O.Fr. *querre*, to search.
- Quhet, *s.* wheat, 5. 398.
- Quhethir, *conj.* whether, 1. 177.
- Quhethir; *the quhethir*, nevertheless, 1. 332, 2. 231, 3. 14, 4. 160, 10. 384, 13. 357.
- Quheyne, *adj.* few, 2. 244, 3. 249, 9. 488, 11. 49, 14. 505, 15. 17, 336; Quheyne, few, small, 13. 595, 15. 549; *as sb.* Quheyn, a small member, 8. 368, 17. 67. See Quhoyn.
- Quhile, *s.* a while, time, 1. 171, 326; 4. 3, 7. 194. A.S. *hwil*.
- Quhile, *adv.* sometimes, at times, 1. 338, 2. 574, 3. 262. See Quhill.
- Quhilis; *the quhilis*, whilst, 7. 540.
- Quhilk, which (of the two), 1. 77. A.S. *hwylc*.
- Quhill, *conj.* until, 1. 407, 2. 17, 176; 11. 538, 15. 239, 18. 518; *adv.* whilst, 1. 60, 270; sometimes; *quhill to, quhill fra*, sometimes on one side, sometimes on the other, to and fro, 10. 604.
- Quhilum, *adv.* formerly, once, whilom, 3. 207; Quhilom, once, 4. 753; Quhilum, sometimes, 3. 705. A.S. *hwilum*, at times.
- Quhistlyng, *s.* baying (of a dog), 6. 87. See Quhestlyng.
- Quhit, *adj.* white, 8. 232. A.S. *hwit*.
- Quhom, *dat.* to whom, 4. 21. See Quha.
- Quhone, *adj.* few, 9. 163 (E.). See Quhoyn.
- Quhone, *s.* a few, 8. 368 (E.). See Quhoyn.
- Quhonnar, *adj.* fewer, 11. 605 (E.). See Quhoyn.
- Quhow, *adv.* how, *rubric*, p. 3. A.S. *hru*, *hú*.
- Quhoyn, *adj.* few, 9. 163, 15. 363, 17. 135. Cf. A.S. *hwón*, a little; *hwónlic*, small; *hwéne*, *hwéne*, a little.
- Quhyne, *adv.* whence, 7. 240.
- Quhytyss, *s. pl.* an error for *quhytyss*, or rather *quyntyss*, i. e. devices, 13. 183 (E.). See Quyntis.
- Quit, *adj.* free, 18. 543.
- Quouk, *pt. s.* quoke, quaked, shook, 2. 365.
- Quyntis, *s.* cognisances, armorial devices, 13. 183; Qwyntiss, 11. 194. O.Fr. *cointise*. See the note.

- Quytwy, *adv.* freely, securely, 10. 548; freely, 10. 824; wholly, 9. 651, 18. 484.
- Qwyrbollè, *s.* boiled leather, i. e. hardened leather, 12. 22. Fr. *cuir bouilli*. See the note.
- Qwyt, *v.* to quit, i. e. requite, repay, 2. 30; to requite, 2. 438.
- Qwyt, *an error in E. for Quytwy*, 9. 651 (*footnote*).
- Rabutyt, *pp.* defeated, repulsed, 12. 168 (E.). O.F. *rebouter*, to repulse; from O.F. *boter*, to push. See Rebutyt.
- Rad, *pp.* rode, 4. 28; *pt. s.* 3. 29. See Raid.
- Rad, *adj.* afraid, frightened, 12. 431, 14. 439, 15. 76. Icel. *hræddr*, afraid, timid; Swed. *rädd*, fearful.
- Radnes, *s.* fear, 9. 104. See above.
- Raid, *pt. s.* rode, 1. 413, 6. 133, 215, 519, &c.; *pl.* 2. 17, 9. 582, 12. 13, 14. 407, 16. 154, 18. 10; *pt. s. subj.* would ride, 17. 851.
- Rair, *v.* to roar, 4. 418, 5. 97; Rar, 10. 685.
- Raiiss, *s.* race, current, 3. 687; swift course, rush, 5. 638; Rase, 3. 697. A.S. *rās*, a race, a stream.
- Raiiss, *pt. s.* rose, 4. 130, 416; 6. 233, 9. 430, 20. 254; *pl.* 3. 580, 7. 198, 9. 708. See Riss.
- Raith, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 45. See Rath.
- Rakit, *pt. s.* went (lit. wandered), 13. 524. Icel. *reika*, to wander, to take a walk.
- Randoun, *s.* swift course, rush, only in phr. *in a randoun*, i.e. in a furious course, 6. 139, 17. 694, 18. 130; *intill a randoune*, 19. 596; *in randoun richt*, with downright force, 5. 632. O.F. *random*, force, impetuosity; *à random*, with force and violence, impetuously.
- Rangale, *s.* rabble, camp-followers, 8. 198 (E.), 11. 111, 12. 474; Ran-
- gald, 8. 198; Rangall, 13. 341. Cf. Icel. *hrang*, din, tumult, as of a crowd.
- Range; *on range*, in a rank, in a row, in "Indian file," 10. 379.
- Rangit, *pp.* ranged, ranked, 11. 431.
- Ranowne, renown, 8. 520.
- Ransoune, *s.* ransom, 4. 83, 11. 577, 13. 72.
- Ransomnyt, *pt. pl.* ransomed, 2. 466; *pp.* Ransomyt, 18. 520.
- Ranyt, *pt. s.* it rained, 3. 235.
- Rapis, *s. pl.* ropes, 10. 360, 557; 15. 280; Rapys, 3. 691, 19. 541.
- Rar, *v.* to roar, 7. 327, 10. 685. See Rair. A.S. *rárian*, to roar.
- Rase, *s.* race, current, 3. 697. See Raiss.
- Rass, *v.* to raise, 3. 134; *pt. s.* Rasit, 4. 243, 756; *pt. pl.* 6. 419, 10. 56, 17. 110; hoisted sail, 16. 692; *pp.* 6. 276, 20. 64. Icel. *reisa*, to raise.
- Rass, *pt. s.* rose, 10. 657. See Raiss.
- Rath, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 285, 5. 417, 8. 322. A.S. *hræð*, swift, quick.
- Ratret, *s.* retreat, 17. 471; Retret, 17. 460.
- Raucht, *pt. s.* reached, extended, 10. 23; dealt (a blow), gen. *raucht a rout*, 2. 420, 3. 114, 5. 632, 7. 623, 10. 235, 19. 587; *pl.* 8. 298.
- Raw, *s.* row, rank, 11. 431; *on raw*, in a row, 5. 590, 8. 450, 12. 36, 17. 348, 19. 393.
- Rawnge, *for Range*, i. e. row, 10. 379 (E.).
- Rayde, *pt. pl.* rode, 14. 329. See Raid.
- Rayne, *s.* rain, 3. 241.
- Raynge, *v. refl.* rank themselves, 17. 348. See Rangit.
- Raysyt, *pt. pl.* raised, hoisted (sail), 3. 695. See Rass.

- Reale, *adj.* royal, 13. 30 (E.). O.F. *real*, Lat. *regalis*.
- Realtè, *s.* royalty, royal state, 2. 183. See below.
- Reawtè, royalty, royal blood, 1. 45; royalty, 1. 164; kingdom, 1. 593; royalty, 20. 87 (E.). O.F. *reiaute*, *reialte*, royalty. See Rialtè.
- Rebaldaill, the rabble, common fellows, 1. 103. See below.
- Rebaldis, *s. pl.* ribalds, wretches, 16. 137. O.F. *ribald*.
- Rebelland, *pres. pt. as adj.* rebellious, 9. 649, 10. 129 (E.).
- Rebouris, at, i.e. in great dislike, 13. 486 (E.). See the note, p. 586.
- Reboyting, *s.* repulse, 12. 339.
- Reboytit, *pp.* repulsed, 12. 84, 168, 176, 183, 336; 16. 658, 17. 25, 461; 18. 335. See below.
- Rebuting, *s.* defeat, 12. 339 (E. and H.). See below.
- Rebutyt, *pp.* repulsed, 2. 468, 16. 658 (E.); Rebutit, 7. 617, 13. 77, 14. 318. O.F. *rebouter*, to repulse; from *boter*, to push.
- Reconfort, *v.* to encourage, 9. 97.
- Recomforting, *s.* comfort, encouragement, 11. 499, 14. 190.
- Reconsalit, *pp.* reconciled, 9. 740.
- Récooled, *pt. pl.* recoiled, drew back, 13. 217 (H.).
- Recordyt, *pp.* recorded, told, 1. 72.
- Recour, *s.* recovery, 2. 543.
- Recoveryng, *s.* recovery, 3. 16.
- Recryand, *adj.* recreant, acknowledging oneself to be a coward, cowardly, 6. 258, 13. 108.
- Red, *s.* rede, counsel, 1. 348, 3. 494. See Rede, *s. and Will*.
- Red, 1 *p. s. pr. I advise*, 12. 325, 18. 32. See Rede, *v.*
- Red, *pt. s. read*, 3. 436; *pp. read*, 2. 93. See Redys.
- Red, *v. to save*, 4. 132, 19. 677. A.S. *hreddan*, to rid, deliver; cf. G. *retten*, to save.
- Reddy, *adj.* ready, 9. 182, 11. 432, 19. 453. 718; near, short (of a way), 17. 555.
- Rede, *s.* counsel, 1. 546, 568; *tane to rede*, adopted the advice, 12. 389, 17. 267. A.S. *ræd*, counsel, advice.
- Rede, *v. to advise*, 19. 148; 1 *p. s. pr. I advise*, 7. 534, 15. 19. A.S. *rædan*, to read, to advise.
- Rede, *adj.* red, 2. 361. A.S. *reád*, red.
- Redyit, *pt. pl. refl.* got themselves ready, 9. 171.
- Redys, *pr. pl. read*, 1. 17, 2. 528.
- Refe, *v. to reave, take away*, 3. 720. See Reft.
- Reff, *for Reif*, 5. 118 (*footnote*).
- Refrenze, *v. to refrain*, 4. 731.
- Refresche, *v. to refresh*, 13. 614; *pp.* Refreschit, refreshed, 14. 132.
- Reft, *pt. s. reft, took away*, 16. 418; *him reft*, deprived him of, 2. 36; bereft, 15. 192; *pt. pl. Reft, took away*, 3. 715.
- Refuss, *v. to shrink from*, 12. 528; *pp.* Refusit, shrunk from, 12. 205.
- Regnyt, *pt. s.* reigned, 13. 698.
- Regratit, *pt. s.* regretted, 15. 233; *pres. pt.* Regratand, lamenting, 20. 259.
- Rehers, *v. to rehearse, tell*, 10. 346; Reherss, 8. 518.
- Reid, *s.* counsel, advice, 2. 122. See Rede.
- Reid, *v. to read*, 2. 84; to speak, 10. 276; *pr. s. subj.* may he advise, 11. 53.
- Reif, *s.* what can be reft, i.e. plunder, 5. 118. A.S. *reaf*, plunder.
- Reif, *v. to plunder*, 16. 551. A.S. *reafian*, to plunder.
- Reiffar, *s.* robber, 19. 667 (E.).
- Reik, *v. to reach*, 17. 419.

- Reik, *s.* smoke, 4. 130. A.S. *reác*, *réc*, reek, smoke. *See Reyk.*
- Reiosyng, *s.* rejoicing, 11. 415.
- Reiosyt, *pt. s.* rejoiced, made glad, 2. 551; *pp.* Reiosit, rejoiced, joyful, 11. 269.
- Reirward, *s.* rearguard, 8. 71, 342; 16. 58.
- Rek, 1 *p. s. pr.* I reck, I care, 7. 24 (H.).
- Releif, *s.* a sum of money paid to a lord on entrance to an inheritance, 12. 320. *See Releif* in Blount's Law Dictionary.
- Releif, *v.* to relieve, 11. 505, 15. 257; Relief, 11. 347; Releiff, 18. 268; *pt. pl.* Relevit, relieved, 19. 799; *pp.* Relevit, relieved, supplied, 19. 803; Relewyt, relieved, supplied, 4. 456 (*footnote*).
- Releyit, *pp.* provided with relays or extra stores, 4. 456. *See Relay* in Richardson.
- Relit, *pt. pl.* reeled, 12. 513; Relyt, 14. 69 (E.); *pres. pt.* Reland, reeling, giving way, 8. 328.
- Rely, *v.* to rally, call back, 3. 34, 4. 156, 426; 7. 491, 19. 580; *imp. s.* Relye, rally, 13. 371; *pt. s.* Releyt, rallied, 2. 401, 427; 7. 51; *pt. pl.* Releyt, rallied, 20. 500; Relyit, 20. 440 (E.); *pp.* Releit, *pp.* rallied, 7. 91. O.F. *ralier*, to rally; from *lier*, to bind.
- Relyng, *s.* reeling, wavering, 13. 265; lack of steadiness, 12. 110; Relying (*for* Relyng), recoiling, 12. 110 (E.).
- Remanand, *s.* remnant, rest, 4. 408, 6. 604, 7. 337, 8. 49, 340; 9. 278, 10. 690, 17. 98, 18. 106, 19. 373.
- Rengze, *s.* rein, 2. 415. *See Renȝe.*
- Renk, *s.* rank (of fighting men), 2. 365. *See Note*, p. 553.
- Renommè, *s.* renown, 4. 774, 9. 489 (E.). O.F. *renumee*, *renom*, renown.
- Renommyt, *pp.* renowned, 9. 503 (E.).
- Renowmè, *s.* renown, 9. 550 (E.). *See Renommè.*
- Renownee, *s.* renown, 8. 290. *See Renommè.*
- Renowning, *s.* renown (*a bad reading*), 11. 182 (H.).
- Renownyt, *pp.* renowned, 1. 32, 10. 787, 11. 162, 18. 429; Renownit, 8. 370, 9. 503, 19. 103.
- Renyit, *pp.* denied, 9. 739. O.F. *renier*, to deny, refuse.
- Renȝe, *s.* rein, 11. 175, 13. 297.
- Repair, *s.* dwelling, resort, haunt, 4. 479; place of meeting, 6. 548; return, 18. 557; one's own home, 18. 563; Repare, place of shelter, 16. 667; Repar, dwelling, abode, 16. 310. (From the verb *to repair*.) *See Reparis.*
- Reparis, *pr. s.* repair, dwell, 4. 477; *pres. pt.* Reparand, returning, 20. 442; Reparande, repairing, making a stay, 15. 404; *pp.* Reparit, returned, 6. 112, 7. 82, 12. 86, 20. 2, 436. O.F. *repairier*, to return to one's home; Lat. *repatrare*.
- Reparyg, *s.* repair, haunt, 4. 495.
- Repentand, *pres. pt.* repenting, 19. 211.
- Repentans, *s.* repentance, 20. 249.
- Repreif, *s.* reproach, blame, 4. 581.
- Reprim, *v.* to reprove, 5. 84; *pp.* Repreuit, reproved, 16. 605.
- Reproxyt, *pp.* reproved, blamed, 2. 116, 16. 605 (E.).
- Repugned, *pt. pl.* repulsed, 4. 93 (H.; *footnote*).
- Requeir, 1 *p. s. pr.* I require, I charge, 12. 263.
- Rerit, *pt. pl.* reared, 14. 69.
- Rerward, *s.* rearguard, 11. 340. *See Reirward.*
- Resaiff, *pr. s. 1 p.* I receive, 13. 530; *pt. s.* Resauit, 10. 127, 16. 20,

17. 4, 18. 225; Resavit, 20. 339; Resavyt, 1. 355; 2 *p. pl. pr. suhj.* Resave, ye receive, 1. 419; *pt. pl.* Resauit, 4. 273, 13. 16; *pp.* Resauit, 9. 523, 13. 611, 18. 535, 20. 104.
- Resawyt, *pt. s.* received, 2. 163, 3. 661. *See* Resaiff.
- Rescours, *s.* rescue, 3. 76, 13. 369, 583; 17. 901 (E.); Rescourss, 13. 368, 19. 642. O.F. *rescousse*, succour; see *escorre* in Burguy.
- Reserwyt, *pt. s.* reserved, kept secret, 1. 132.
- Reset, *s.* place of refuge, 5. 415, 6. 447, 10. 139. O.Fr. *recet*, a place of refuge; Burguy. Derived from Lat. *recipere*.
- Reset, *an error in E. for Resettit*, 9. 282 (*footnote*).
- Resettit, *pp.* received, harboured, 9. 282. From *reset*, q.v.
- Resisteris, *s. pl.* resisters, foes, 18. 214.
- Reskew, *v.* to rescue, 3. 81, 11. 6, 33, 67; *pt. s.* Reskewyt, 3. 51; *pl.* Reskewit, 10. 731; *pp.* Reskewit, 10. 728, 823, 11. 532.
- Reskewing, *s.* rescue, 5. 419.
- Reskowrss, *s.* rescue, succour, 17. 901. *See* Rescours.
- Respit, *s.* delay, 8. 344.
- Ressawe, *v.* to receive, 18. 546; *pp.* Ressawyt, 3. 360. *See* Resaiff.
- Retennew, *s.* retinue, 15. 429.
- Reuersit, *pt. s.* reversed, turned over, 16. 417; Reversit, 15. 191.
- Revar, *s.* river, 14. 337.
- Revard, *v.* to reward, 4. 480; *pp.* Rewardit, 4. 666.
- Revarding, *s.* remuneration, 9. 321.
- Revede, *pp.* reft, 5. 12. (The more usual form is *reft*; *reved* is older.)
- Reveling, *s.* revelation, 10. 738.
- Revit, *pt. pl.* robbed, took away, 13. 23. *See* Refe.
- Rew, *v.* to have pity, 16. 280; to cause (him) to repent, 2. 327; *pt. s.* Rewit, rued, 4. 593.
- Rewardit, *pt. s.* rewarded, 10. 254.
- Rewate, *s.* kingdom, 3. 60. *See* Reaute.
- Rewis, *s. pl.* streets, 14. 221; Rewys, 15. 71. F. *rue*, a street.
- Rewlit, *pt. s.* ruled, 8. 127.
- Rewth, *s.* pity, compassion, ruth, 3. 534. *See* Rew.
- Rewyn, *pp.* riven, i.e. had their clothes torn, 2. 510.
- Reyk, *s.* smoke, vapour, 4. 124. *See* Reik.
- Reynze, *s.* rein, 11. 175 (E.). *See* Renze.
- Riall, *adj.* royal, i.e. great, 12. 557. *See* Reale.
- Rialtè, *s.* royal power, state, pomp, 16. 48, 20. 87, 132. *See* Reawtè.
- Ribalds, *s. pl.* ribalds, 1. 103 (*footnote*).
- Riche, *v.* to enrich, 13. 743.
- Richess, *s.* riches, wealth, 13. 450\*, 449.
- Richt, *s.* justice; *richt vald*, justice would require, 16. 598; *at all richt*, in every suitable way, 10. 312; *all at richt*, in good order, 14. 171.
- Richt, *adv.* very, right, 15. 82; downright, 5. 632.
- Richtwisness, *s.* righteousness, 20. 555; Richtwisnes, 10. 289. A.S. *rihtwīsnes*.
- Rid (*see* Ryde), 12. 557 (E.).
- Ridand, *pres. part.* riding, 1. 484, 2. 343, 9. 213, 16. 572, 17. 204; *pp.* Ridin, ridden, 4. 45. *See* Ryd.
- Rif, *v.* to rive, 20. 255, 258.
- Rif, *an error in C. for Drif*, 7. 66 (*footnote*).
- Rik, *s.* kingdom, 8. 234. A.S. *rice*, power, a kingdom.
- Ring, *v.* to reign, 20 (*colophon*). *See* Ryng.

- Rinke, *a misreading*; 2. 365 (*footnote*). See note, p. 553.
- Rinnand, *pres. pt.* running, 2. 120 (*footnote*). See Ryn.
- Riss, *v.* to rise, 11. 487, 12. 554. See Raiss.
- Rocht, *pt. s.* caught, dealt (a blow), 6. 626. See Raucht.
- Rod, *s.* road, path, 6. 237, 10. 379, 559; Roid, 10. 559 (E.).
- Roid, *s.* road, cross, 12. 256 (E.).
- Roid, *adj.* severe, 15. 54 (E.). See Ryde, *adj.*
- Roid, *for Vyde*, 6. 288 (E.).
- Romanys, *s.* romance, 1. 446, 2. 46, 3. 437; *pl.* 9. 492.
- Romble, *s.* (*for Rymmyll*), 12. 557 (E.). See Rymmyll.
- Rose, *s.* a rose, 11. 546.
- Rost, *v.* to roast, 7. 153; *pt. pl.* Rostit, wasted, 7. 165.
- Rottyn, *pp.* rotten, 19. 178.
- Roucht, *pt. s.* dealt (lit. reached), 12. 53, 15. 188; *pp.* 11. 608, 12. 521. See Raucht.
- Roucht, 1 *p. s. pr. subj.* I should not reck, 7. 24. A.S. *rēcan*, to reck; *pt. t. ic rōhte*.
- Roucht, *pt. s.* recked; *a bad reading in E. in 7. 623.*
- Rounnyngis, *s. pl.* runnings, skirmishes, 18. 68 (E.).
- Rouschit, *pt. s.* rushed, fell quickly, 3. 139. See Ruschit.
- Rout, *s.* a company, troop, host, band, 2. 149, 6. 517, 568, 570; 9. 329, 342, 581; 11. 218, 538; the ordinary people, 9. 504. O.F. *rote, route*, a band. See Rowt.
- Rout, *s.* a blow, 5. 632. See Rowt.
- Routand, *an error for Rownand*, 12. 360 (E.).
- Routit, *pt. s.* snored, 7. 192. A.S. *hrutan*, to snore.
- Rowit, *pt. pl.* rowed, 4. 368, 5. 19;
- Rowyt, 3. 425, 577; *pres. pt.* Rowand, rowing, 3. 580.
- Rowm, *s.* room, space, 6. 234; Rowme, 11. 123, 469; 13. 92, 14. 69, 20. 460; wide space, 16. 196. A.S. *rūm*, space.
- Rown and, *misprint for rownand, pres. pt.* whispering, 12. 360. A.S. *rúnian*, to whisper.
- Rownyng, *s.* whispering, 12. 368.
- Rowt, *s.* a company, band, troop, 4. 190, 6. 109, 9. 567, 12. 336, 16. 467; *pl.* Rowtis, 12. 424, 18. 10, 20. 358.
- Rowt, *s.* a blow, 6. 626; *pl.* Rowtis, blows, 2. 356, 9. 587, 13. 212, 15. 490. See Rout. Cf. Icel. *rōta*, to stir, upset, put into commotion.
- Roydly, *adv.* fiercely, 11. 599, 13. 69; severely, 12. 513; rudely, roughly, 11. 545, 13. 31, 18. 331. See Ruyd.
- Ruce, *s.* praise, 20 (*colophon*). Icel. *hrōs*, praise.
- Rude-evyn, *s.* eve of the Rood, i.e. of the Exaltation of the Cross, 17. 634.
- Rudly, *adv.* rudely, 9. 750 (E.).
- Ruflyt, *an error in E. for Ruschit*, 4. 145 (*footnote*).
- Rusche, *v.* to drive back, defeat, overthrow, 14. 200, 17. 146, 18. 456; Russ, 12. 527; *pres. pt.* Russchand, rushing, dashing, 15. 38; *pt. s.* Ruschit, overthrew, 2. 404, 3. 29; rushed, 6. 227, 10. 427, 19. 560; fell quickly, 5. 645, 6. 629; charged, 13. 69; burst, 12. 57; Rushed, drove, 16. 198\*; *pt. pl.* Ruschit, fell down, 12. 513; rushed, 10. 71, 91; overthrew, 13. 193; repulsed, 4. 93, 145. (This word is very characteristic of Barbour.) A.S. *hreōsan*, to fall down, rush; Swed. *rusa*, to rush.
- Russ, *v.* to overthrow, 12. 527. See Rusche.

- Ruyd, *adj.* rude, severe, 2. 356. F. *rude*, rough, harsh.
- Ruydly, *adv.* rudely, boisterously, 2. 349.
- Ruys, *s. pl.* streets, 15. 71 (E.). *See* Rewis.
- Rybbaldaii, *s.* low company, 1. 335.
- Rybbaldy, low dissipation, 1. 341.
- Rycht, *s.* right, 1. 78, 159.
- Rycht, *adv.* right, exactly, 1. 8; very, 10. 84.
- Rychtwisly, *adv.* righteously, 1. 366.
- Rychtwiss, *adj.* right, true, proper, 2. 159. A.S. *rihtwīs*.
- Ryd, *v.* to ride, 2. 73, 12. 224; *pres. pt.* Rydand, riding, 4. 190, 8. 75, 11. 589, 12. 27, 16. 401, 19. 288, 308; *pp.* Ryddin, ridden, 17. 256; Ryddyn, 14. 326; Rydyn, 19. 596.
- Ryde, *adj.* severe, 12. 557. See the note, p. 584. It is difficult to tell whether this is connected with Icel. *reiðr*, angry, or with *roydly* and *rude*.
- Ryg, *s.* ridge, 19. 308, 314. A.S. *hryeg*, the back.
- Rygorously, *adv.* strictly, 4. 88; severely, 6. 136.
- Ryme, *s.* rime (*generally misspelt rhyme*), verse, 3. 178. A.S. *rīm*.
- Rymmyll, *s.* a blow, 12. 557. Jamieson gives “*remyllis*, blows,” as occurring in the *Houlate*, iii. 16. Cf. Dan. *ramme*, to hit, strike.
- Ryn, *v.* to run, 1. 103, 6. 593; *pres. s.* Rynnys, runs, 2. 434; Rynnys, 20. 558; *pres. pt.* Rynand, 5. 648, 6. 56, 17. 609; Rynnand, 3. 684. Icel. *renna*, to run.
- Ryng, *v.* to reign, 1. 78, 6. 192, 19. 28; *ger.* 19. 10 (E.); *pres. pt.* Ryngand, reigning, 6. 191. O.F. *regnier*, to reign.
- Ryngis, *s. pl.* rings, 3. 209.
- Ryoll, *adj.* royal, 13. 30. *See* Reale.
- Ryot, *s.* riot, depredation, 17. 510.
- Ryot, *pt. s.* in phr. *ryot to*, made riot in, harried, 5. 181.
- Ryotit, *pt. s.* harried, spoiled, 9. 500; 8. 127 (E.).
- Ryss, *v.* to rise, 1. 573, 3. 310, 718; 10. 678; *pp.* Rysyn, risen, 8. 216, 14. 177; Ryssyn, 4. 166.
- Ryth, *adv.* right, wholly, 1. 194.
- Sa, *adv. so*, 1. 30, 5. 53, 11. 641, &c.
- Sa, *2 p. pl. pr.* say ye, 7. 258.
- Sad, *adj.* heavy, 12. 134.
- Sad, *am, an error in E. for Set*, 3. 319 (*footnote*).
- Sadly, *adv.* in a settled manner, resolutely, 13. 494; firmly, closely, 13. 374; in good order, 17. 567.
- Sadylt, *pt. s.* saddled, 2. 141.
- Saff, *pr. s. subj.* may save, 20. 210; *pt. s.* Saffit, saved, 4. 137. *See* Sauf.
- Sagat, *adv.* in such wise, in E., 7. 368 (*footnote*). From *sa*, so, and *gat*, way.
- Saik, *s.* sake, 7. 244.
- Sair, *adv.* sorely, 9. 469; *by sair*, dearly pay for, 18. 514.
- Sais, *pr. pl. say*, 12. 398; *imp. pl. say ye*, 12. 199.
- Sak, *s.* sake, 6. 503, 9. 22.
- Sakless, *adj.* innocent, 20. 175. From A.S. *sacn*, strife; hence, crime, or a criminal charge.
- Saland, *pres. pt.* sailing, 19. 193. *See* Salit.
- Sald, *pp. sold*, 5. 610, 19. 178.
- Salit, *pt. s.* sailed, 16. 17; Salyt, 14. 378 (E.), 20. 322; *pl.* Salit, 16. 556, 657; 18. 203.
- Sall, 1 *p. s. pr.* I shall, 1. 156; 2 *p. s. pr.* Sall, 1. 156; *pr. pl.* Sall, shall, will, 1. 129; 2 *p. pl. pr.* ȝhe sall, ye shall, 4. 659.

- Salmond, *s.* a salmon, 19. 664; *pl.* Salmonys, 2. 576.
- Salss, *s.* sauce, 3. 540.
- Salt, *s.* assault, 17. 356 (E.); *pl.* Saltis, 18. 68. *See* Sawt.
- Salusit, *pt. pl.* saluted, 4. 509.
- Salys, *s.* *pl.* sails, 15. 282, 289; 16. 692.
- Sammyn, *adv.* together, 5. 72, 212, 251, 400; 6. 82, 370, 454, 580; 7. 513, 8. 278, 9. 270, 10. 19, 12. 164, 16. 567, 19. 498, 20. 257; Samyn, 2. 349, 3. 47. Cf. Mœso-Goth. *samana*, together; A.S. *samod*, together; Mœso-Goth. *sama*, the same. See below.
- Samyn, *adj.* same, 1. 252, 2. 25, 3. 589, 4. 420; Samine, 10. 563 (H.); Sammyn, 7. 140, 10. 192, 11. 492. Cf. Mœso-Goth. *sama*, the same.
- Sanct, saint, 1. 353, 5. 336, 17. 875 (E.). Lat. *sanctus*.
- Sanctit, *pp.* sainted, 17. 286, 875.
- Sang, *s.* song, 3. 178.
- Sanyt, *pt. s.* crossed himself, blest himself, 7. 98, 9. 395. O.Fr. *seigner*, Lat. *signare*, to mark with the *sign* of the cross. *See* Sayn.
- Sar, *adv.* sorely, 2. 351, 450; 19. 598. *See* Sayr.
- Sarryaly, *adv.* closely, in close order, 8. 222, 9. 140, 176; 13. 569, 16. 114, 608; 17. 96, 18. 157, 195. Cf. “with *serried* shields in thick array;” Paradise Lost, i. 548. F. *serrer*, to close fast. Jamieson explains it by “artfully,” as if from A.S. *searolice*, artificially.
- Sarray, *adj.* close; *used as adv.* closely, 8. 296. See note to the line, and see above.
- Sary, *adj.* sorry, 2. 65, 5. 450, 9. 44, 12. 141, 19. 42.
- Sat, *pt. s.* became, suited, 1. 394. Cf. *sittande*, becoming, suitable; Morte Arthure, ed. Brock, 953, 1501.
- Sancht, *pp.* reconciled, 10. 300. Cf. A.S. *saht*, peace; *sahtlian*, to make peace.
- Sauf, *v.* to save, 4. 147, 10. 698; *pr. s. imper.* may he save, 6. 672, 8. 263; *ger.* to sauff, to save, i.e. saving (your presence), 3. 173.
- Saufly, *adv.* safely, 10. 484, 14. 34.
- Sauftè, *s.* safety, 3. 183, 4. 559. *See* Savitè.
- Saull, *s.* soul, 20. 163, 346; *pl.* Saulys, 20. 476; Saule hele, soul’s health (salvation), 20. 346 (E.). A.S. *sárwl*.
- Savit, *pp.* preserved, saved, 4. 537, 12. 317, 20. 180. *See* Sauf, Sawyt.
- Savitè, *s.* safety, 4. 536, 9. 523, 10. 441. *See* Sauftè.
- Savourit, *pp.* scented, 16. 70.
- Saw, *s.* saying, 4. 260, 638; 11. 302; *pl.* Sawis, sayings, words, speeches, 4. 323, 9. 686. A.S. *sagu*, a saying, saw.
- Saw, *pt. pl.* saw, perceived, 7. 131.
- Sawerand, *pres. pt.* giving out a (sweet) savour, 16. 70 (E.). *See* Savourit.
- Sawff, *imp. s. 3 p.* may he save. save, 2. 145. *See* Sauf.
- Sawfly, *adv.* safely, 3. 359.
- Sawftè, *s.* safety, 4. 536 (*footnote*). *See* Sauftè.
- Sawin, *pp.* sown, 4. 685. *See* Note, p. 563.
- Sawt, *s.* assault, 9. 350 (E.), 17. 356. *See* Salt.
- Sawyt, *pp.* saved, 2. 338; *pr. s.* Sawys, saves, 10. 571 (E.).
- Sayand, *pres. pt.* saying, 11. 412, 12. 361.
- Sayn, *pr. s. subj.* may he bless, 9. 24; *pt. s.* Sanyt hym, blessed himself, 7. 98, 9. 395. O.Fr. *seigner*, Lat. *signare*, to make the sign of the cross. *See* Sanyt.
- Saynd, *s.* message, 5. 196. A.S. *sand*, a sending.

- Sayr, *adv.* sorely, 1. 440. *See Sar.*
- Scaffaldis, *s. pl.* scaffolds, 17. 343 (E.); Scaffatis, 17. 343, 601.
- Scail, *s.* a dispersed company, a body of men in loose order, 15. 341, 353. But see the note, p. 596.
- Scail, *v.* to disperse (*neuter*), to fly in different directions, 15. 337\*, 17. 99. See below.
- Scale, *v.* to disperse (*neuter*), 6. 575; Scale thame, to disperse themselves, 12. 465; Scaill, 15. 337\*, 17. 99; *pt. s.* Sealit, dispersed, 6. 428, 7. 299; *pl.* 5. 93, 9. 429, 13. 73; *pp.* Sealit, dispersed, scattered, 5. 447, 6. 28, 9. 264, 12. 466, 13. 84, 14. 300, 15. 546, 16. 211, 17. 104, 19. 806. Icel. *skilja*, to separate.
- Scarsly, *adv.* scarcely, hardly, 20. 38.
- Scath, *s.* harm, 8. 358, 9. 541, 10. 5; Scaith, 1. 202; *pl.* Scathess, damages, 20. 50. *See Skaith.*
- Scath, *v.* to scathe, harm, injure, 4. 363, 7. 304, 13. 110; *pt. pl.* Seathit, harmed, 10. 59.
- Scathfull, *adj.* harmful, 5. 249.
- Scathless, *adj.* unharmed, 18. 200, 19. 683.
- Schair, *pt. s.* shore, cut, 15. 82. *See Schar.*
- Schap, *v.* to shape, intend, 19. 389; to prepare, 17. 606; Schap hym, to get himself ready, 5. 219; Schape thame, to dispose themselves, 13. 301; *pr. pl.* Schapis thaim, address themselves, endeavour, 2. 324; *imp. pl.* Schapis, contrive, 12. 211; 1 *p.* Schap we vs, let us prepare ourselves, 11. 61; *pp.* Schapen, fitted, 20. 206.
- Schar, *pt. s.* shore, cut, carved (the meat), 2. 92; cut, 8. 172; Schare, 6. 137, 628; *pl.* Schar, cut, 12. 575, 16. 450; Schare, 8. 55. *See Scher.*
- Schavaldwris, *s. pl.* wanderers, 5. 205. The readings *sodionwrys* (E.), and *souldiers* (H.), mean ‘soldiers.’ Innes guesses it to mean ‘chevaliers’ (!), which is most unlikely. Jamieson notes a form *schawaldouris*, said to mean ‘wanderers in the woods, subsisting by hunting,’ with a reference to Wyntown, viii. 29. 217. But the right form seems to be *shareldour*, a vagrant. See Prompt. Parv. p. 444, note 2.
- Schaw, *v.* to shew, 4. 261; 1 *p. s. pr.* I shew, 4. 486; *pr. s.* Schawys, shews, 1. 8; *pt. s.* Schawit, shewed, 17. 47; Schawyt, 1. 605, 2. 367, 10. 161 (E.).
- Schaw, *s.* thicket, shaw, 5. 589; *pl.* Schawys, shaws, thick groves, 3. 479. Dan. *skov*, a wood, Icel. *shógr*.
- Schawdest, *adj. sup.* the shallowest (part), 9. 354. See *Schald*, shallow, in Jamieson.
- Schawing, *s.* shewing, outward exhibition, external sign, 16. 95.
- Schawyt, *a poor reading for Blenknyt, in E.*, 8. 217.
- Schaym, *s.* shame, 7. 632.
- Sched, *pt. s.* cleft, parted, 1. 294.
- Scheld, *imp. s. 3 p.* may he shield, 2. 145.
- Scheldis, *s. pl.* shields, 6. 217, 8. 227, 11. 461.
- Schent, *pp.* disgraced, 4. 280; put to shame, 7. 615. A.S. *scendan*, to destroy.
- Scher, *v.* to shear, i.e. to carve the meat at dinner, 1. 356; to cut, 10. 174, 12. 519; to cut up, 20. 571 (E.); *pres. pt.* Scherand, shearing, cutting, 16. 455. *See Schar.*
- Schetis, *s. pl.* sheets, 13. 225 (*rubric*).
- Schew, *pt. s.* shewed, 10. 161. *See Schaw.*
- Scheyne, *adj.* shining, bright, glorious, 11. 461, 12. 443, 18. 172.
- Schiltrum (E.), *s.* a squadron, 12. 429, 433, 444; 13. 175. So spelt

- in E.; C. has *childrome*. A.S. *scyldtruma*, an armed company, lit. a troop-shield; from A.S. *scyld*, a shield, and *truma*, a troop. See note to xii. 429, p. 583.
- Schipfar, *s.* journeying in a ship, a sea voyage, 3. 692; Schipfair, 3. 686.
- Schipping, *s.* shipping, 16. 16 (E.); Schippyne, 3. 400.
- Schippis, *s. pl.* ships, 10. 98.
- Schippit, *pp.* shipped, embarked, 14. 20, 16. 37; Schippytt, took ship, 3. 575.
- Schir, sir, 11. 632, &c.
- Schire, *adj.* bright, 5. 26. A.S. *scir*, bright, sheer; Mæso-Goth. *skeirs*, clear. *See Schyre*.
- Schirreff, *s.* sheriff, 16. 583.
- Scho, *pron. fem.* she, 3. 626, 4. 274, 7. 239, 10. 741, 13. 637, 16. 276, 17. 672 (where it refers to the 'sow'); spelt Sche, 13. 635. A.S. *seō*.
- Schoir, *adj.* sheer, steep, 10. 22; Schore, 10. 600. *See Schore*.
- Schonand, *pres. part.* shunning, 5. 201.
- Schop, *v.* to make, prepare, 16. 573. *See Schap*.
- Schor, *s.* menace, clamour, 6. 621 (E.), 11. 562. *See Schoyr*.
- Schore, *adj.* steep, sheer, 10. 600; Schoir, 10. 22. Cf. Icel. *skör*, a rim, edge; *skara*, to jut out.
- Schort, *adj.* short, 7. 268.
- Schot, *s.* shot, stone shot for war-engines, 11. 119; shot, shooting, 13. 48, 52, 75.
- Schot, *s. pl.* shot, 17. 351.
- Schot, *pt. pl.* rushed, dashed, 8. 54, 14. 210; jumped, 9. 387; *pl.* rushed, 9. 591, 10. 654, 16. 406, 17. 111. A.S. *sceótan*, to shoot; also, to rush, dash.
- Schot, *s.* rush, dash, onset, 12. 77. See above.
- Schour, *s.* shower, 13. 43.
- Schout, *s.* shout, cry, 6. 158, 16. 406; Schowt, 6. 145, 12. 77 (E.).
- Schout, *v.* to shoot, rush, 15. 458 (E.). *See Schute*.
- Schowtit, *pt. pl.* hooted at, 9. 366.
- Schoyne, *s. pl.* shoes, 2. 510.
- Schoyr, menace, threatening, noisy clamour, 6. 621. Cf. Old Swed. *skorra*, to make a grating sound; Icel. *shara*, to poke the fire; G. *schüren*, to stir, poke, rake; Dan. *skurre*, to grate. Jamieson explains it by "a threatening," and cites passages where such is clearly the right sense. *See Schor*.
- Schraiff, *pt. pl.* shrove (themselves), 11. 377 (E.).
- Schrevyn, *pp.* shriven, 19. 211.
- Schuk, *pt. s.* shook, reeled, 2. 380.
- Schuldir, *s.* shoulder, 6. 628; *pl.* Schulderis, shoulders, 9. 356; Schuldrys, 1. 386.
- Schupe, *pt. s.* intended, lit. shaped, 9. 704, 16. 76; Schup him, prepared, 6. 394; *pl.* Schup, arranged, 19. 415; endeavoured, attempted, 10. 450, 19. 339 (E.); intended, 9. 150; Schupe, planned, plotted, 5. 539; prepared, 14. 39; purposed, intended, 18. 291; Schupe thame, proposed, intended, 6. 41, 12. 344, 16. 438, 17. 311, 333; Schupe we vs, if we attempted, 11. 292. *See Schap*.
- Schute, *v.* to shoot, launch, 4. 629; to shoot (arrows), 13. 59, 65; to push, 3. 117; to dash, rush, 7. 390; Schut, to dash, rush, 11. 596; *pres. pt.* Schutand, shooting, 16. 121. *See Schot*.
- Schynand, *pres. part.* shining, 4. 166, 6. 100, 8. 46, 11. 188, 14. 177.
- Schynyng, *s.* sheen, brightness, 6. 217.
- Schyr, Sir, 1. 73, 157, &c.
- Schyre, *adv.* brightly, 4. 619, 19. 662. *See Schire*.
- Schyrreffys, *s. pl.* sheriffs, 1. 190.

- Scottis, *adj.* Scotch, 11. 8, &c.  
 Scounryt, *pt. pl.* gave way, felt fear, retreated, 17. 651 (E.). Cf. Lowland Sc. *scunner*, to loathe, which see in Jamieson; A.S. *scunian*, to shun. *See Skownrand.*
- Scowking, *s.* skulking, cowardice, 8. 140; *into scowkyng*, in a treacherous manner, traitorously, 7. 130. Cf. Dan. *skulke*, to slink, Du. *schuilen*, to lurk, Swed. *skyta*, to hide.
- Scowmar, *for Scummar*, 14. 375 (E.).
- Scowryt, *pp.* scoured, 3. 542.
- Scrymmyng, *s.* skirmishing, 19. 521. O.F. *escrimer*, to fence; cf. Eng. *scrimmage*.
- Sculking, *for Scowkyng*, 7. 130 (E.).
- Scummar, *s.* a rover, 14. 375. Cf. Du. *zeeschuimer*, a pirate, corsair; *zeeschuimen*, to rove the seas.
- Scurreours, *s. pl.* scouts, 14. 487 (*footnote*; *rubric* in H.). The full form is *discourrours*, q.v.
- Se, *s.* the sea, 1. 325, 346, 6. 211, &c.; lake, 10. 23, 34; *Scottis se*, the firth of Forth, 9. 329; *by se*, by sea, 13. 615; *pl.* Seis, lakes, 15. 275.
- Se, *v.* to see, 5. 503, 8. 132, 11. 472; *imp.* 3 *p.* may he watch over, may he preserve, 3. 172, 5. 653, 9. 234. See note to Chaucer, Pard. Tale, Group C, l. 715 (Clarendon Press).
- Secreis, *s. pl.* secrets, 4. 577 (*footnote*).
- Seculer, *s.* secular men, laymen, 4. 12.
- See, *s.* lake, sea, 10. 130. *See Se.*
- Sege, *s.* a siege, 4. 45, 9. 332, 10. 114 (E.); *pl.* Segis, 20. 64 (E.). See below.
- Sege, *s.* seat, throne, 4. 228 (*footnote*); *pl.* Segis, seats, thrones, 4. 228; mansions (in astrology), 4. 697. F. *siege*, a seat.
- Segit, *pt. s.* besieged, 11. 114; *pres. pt.* Segande, besieging, 17. 511.
- Seid, *s.* seed, kindred, 1. 63.
- Seik, *adj.* sick, 9. 112.
- Seik, *v.* to seek, 5. 557, 6. 461.
- Seiknes, *s.* sickness, 4. 191, 9. 35.
- Seile, *s.* seal, 1. 611; Seyle, 1. 613.
- Seir, *adj.* various, several, separate, 4. 752, 5. 432, 8. 230, 13. 723; many, 19. 358. Cf. Icel. *sér*, for oneself; also, separately, one by one.
- Seis, *s. pl.* lakes, 15. 275. *See Se.*
- Seis, *pr. pl.* see, 9. 89; 2 *p. s. pr.* seest, 4. 301. *See Se, verb.*
- Sek, *ger.* to seek, 19. 602.
- Sekir, *adj.* secure, 9. 381; safe, 2. 238, 17. 170; sure, 5. 515, 14. 26; firm, 11. 399; steadfast, 10. 284; Sekyr, firm, 11. 249. Du. *zeker*, G. *sicher*, safe.
- Sekirly, *adv.* certainly, of a surety, 4. 216, 662; 18. 31, 51, 60; 20. 278; Sekyrlly, 1. 426, 2. 472, 3. 673, 4. 32. See above.
- Sekirnes, *s.* security, 4. 178; Sekirness, confirmation, 20. 150; Sekyrness, security, 3. 665. *See Sekir.*
- Sekkis, *s. pl.* sacks, 8. 444.
- Selwyn, *a reading in E. for Self*, 8. 484.
- Selys, *s. pl.* seals, 20. 56, 136; *gen. sing.* seal's, 20. 26. *See Seile.*
- Sembland, *s.* semblance, appearance, show, 8. 238, 9. 250.
- Semble, *s.* assembly, troop, throng, 2. 380.
- Semys, *pr. s.* it seems, 3. 168, 170; *pt. s.* Semyt, it seemed, 11. 133, 12. 186, 13. 572; *thame semyt*, it seemed to them, i.e. they seemed to themselves, 12. 147.
- Sen, *conj.* since, 1. 261, 507; 6. 120, 7. 15, 9. 744, 12. 48. Cf. A.S. *stðan*, afterwards.
- Send, *pt. s.* sent, 1. 145, 2. 176,

13. 677, 14. 8, 15. 137; *pl.* 7. 164; *pp.* Send, sent, 4. 52, 18. 380.
- Sensyne, *adv.* afterwards, 1. 451 (*footnote*).
- Sent, *s.* scent, 6. 500. (The spelling *sent* is right; from F. *sentir*.)
- Sentens, *s.* meaning, 4. 260.
- Senzory, *s.* dominion, lordship, sovereignty, 5. 232, 8. 14, 9. 303, 11. 45, 19. 4; Senzhory, 1. 97, 12. 298; Senjeroys, 15. 324; Senzhowry, 1. 151.
- Ser, *adj.* various, separate, 3. 270, 11. 171, 12. 511, 13. 427, 17. 636, 19. 176, 20. 50. *See* Seir.
- Sergeandis, *s. pl.* servants, *in E.*, 6. 68 (*footnote*).
- Sermonyng, *s.* explanation, discourse, 4. 278. Used by Chaucer, Kn. Tale, 2233.
- Seruit, *pt. s.* served, served at meat (*ironically*), 16. 451. *See* Serwe.
- Serwandis, *s. pl.* servants, slaves, 3. 220.
- Serwe, *v.* to serve, 16. 595; *pt. s.* Serwyt, 2. 171; *pl.* 3. 762; *pp.* Serwyt, 1. 436.
- Serwyt, *pt. s.* served, performed, 10. 342 (E.). *A poor reading for Preuit.*
- Sesand, *pres. pt.* seizing, 10. 774; *pt. s.* Sesit, 6. 447, 9. 439, 10. 490; *pt. pl.* Sesit, seized, 14. 130, 17. 107; Sesyt in, seized upon, 15. 338\*; *pp.* Sesit, 5. 370, 13. 606, 17. 174; confiscated, 13. 499.
- Sesing, *s.* possession, 6. 496. Cf. the phr. to be *seised* of a thing.
- Sesoune, *s.* season, 4. 105; Sesoun, 7. 497.
- Sess, *v.* to seize, 10. 108; *pt. s.* Sessit, 15. 512; *pp.* 10. 759. *See* Sesand.
- Set, *v.* to set, place, employ, 1. 11; to set, put, 7. 172; to attribute, 17. 826; *set help thartill*, give help in the matter, 10. 100; 1 *p. s. pr.* I account, 3. 319; *pt. s.* Set, 9. 51; ferried, 14. 382; Set in, *pt. pl.* turned (their horses' heads) inwards, 9. 610 (see the note); *pp.* Set, set in one's place, seated, 1. 621; set, put, 10. 228, 16. 427; *pres. pt.* Settand, setting, 10. 257; *pr. s.* Settis, puts, 4. 696; *imp. pl.* Settis, 11. 563.
- Seth, *v.* to seethe, boil, 20. 571.
- Setis, *s. pl.* traps, snares for game, 3. 479. From the verb *to set*.
- Settirday, Saturday, 11. 352.
- Sevintene, *num.* seventeen, 13. 645.
- Sex-sum, six in all, 6. 231.
- Sexty, sixty, 6. 31; Sextè, 19. 35.
- Seying, *s.* sight, 17. 88.
- Seyk, *v.* to seek, 10. 453.
- Seyle, *s.* good, 1. 303. A.S. *scél*, a good time.
- Seyn, *pp.* seen, 6. 21, 569; 7. 553, 11. 264; Seyne, 10. 591, 16. 179.
- Seynd, *v.* to send, 3. 748.
- Seyss, *v.* to seize, 9. 530. *See* Sess.
- Shaldest, *a reading in E. and H. for Schawdest*, 9. 354 (*footnote*).
- Shawis, *pr. s.* shews, 4. 121. *See* Schaw.
- Shraf, *pt. pl. refl.* shrived themselves, 11. 377.
- Sib, *adj.* akin, related; *sib men*, kinsmen, 17. 318 (see below). A.S. *sib*, related, akin.
- Sib-man, *s.* relation, kinsman, 5. 495; *pl.* Sibmen, relatives, 3. 403, 17. 318. *See above.*
- Sic, *dem. pron.* such, 1. 77, 7. 633, 8. 180. *See* Sik.
- Sich, *v.* to sigh, 3. 350.
- Sid, *s.* side, 2. 74.
- Sik, such, 3. 62. *Sik* stands for *slik* or *silk*, more likely for the former; cf. Icel. *slikr*, such; A.S. *snycle*, such.
- Siss, *s. pl.* times, 5. 178, 15. 393, 20. 225. *Siss* stands for *sithis*, pl. of *sith*, a time. *See below.*

- Sith, *s. pl.* times; *feill sith*, 9. 737.  
 A.S. *sitθ*, a time.
- Sittand, *pres. pt.* sitting, 10. 763;  
*pr. s.* Sittis, sits, 12. 172; *pp.*  
 Sittyn, sat, 7. 269.
- Sittel, *an error for Rebell*, 10. 129  
 (H.).
- Skaith, scath, harm, evil, injury,  
 1. 82, 9. 211; damage, 5. 418 (H.).  
*See Scath.*
- Skalyt, *pp.* dispersed; *or pt. pl.*  
 dispersed themselves, 2. 307; *pp.*  
 dispersed, 2. 394, 8. 326 (E.). *See*  
*Scale.*
- Skant, *adv.* scarcely, 20. 434 (H.).
- Skill, reason, 1. 214, 7. 362, 12.  
 260; *glossed by reason in H.*, 9.  
 751; choice, in phr. *of skill*, i.e.  
 by choice, 8. 436. Icel. *skil*, dis-  
 cernment.
- Skownrand, *pres. pt.* loathing, *in*  
 E., 5. 201 (*footnote*). *See Scounryt,*  
*Skunnyrrit.*
- Skry, *for Cry*, 19. 564 (H.).
- Skulking, *s.* lurking about, 8. 140  
 (E.).
- Skunnyrrit, *pt. pl.* shunned, re-  
 treated, gave way, 17. 651. *See*  
*Skownrand, Scounryt.*
- Sla, *v. to slay*, 2. 207, 3. 98, 6. 441,  
 14. 442; *pr. pl.* Sla, slay, 1. 489;  
*pres. pt.* Slaand, slaying, 19. 574;  
 Slayand, 17. 592, 19. 567; *pp.*  
 Slane, 4. 94.
- Slaid, *pt. pl.* slid, 10. 700; 1 *p. s.*  
*pt.* I slid, 10. 558; Slayd, *pt.*  
*pl.* passed swiftly, 3. 701. *See*  
*Slyd.*
- Slak, *s.* hollow place, depression,  
 14. 536.
- Slane, *pp.* slain, 4. 94. *See* Sla.
- Slang, *pt. s.* threw, 17. 645 (H.);  
*see also* 16. 651.
- Slauchtir, *s.* slaughter, 19. 567.
- Slayand, *pres. pt.* slaying, 17. 592,  
 18. 553. *See* Sla.
- Slayd, *pt. pl.* slid, passed swiftly,  
 3. 701. *See* Slaid.
- Sle, *adj.* sly, crafty, skilful, 5. 513,  
 16. 335; knowing, 4. 212; ex-  
 periented, 19. 179.
- Slear, *adj.* (lit. slyer), more skil-  
 ful, 17. 244. *See above.*
- Sleast, *adj.* most skilful, 17. 435,  
 938. *See above.*
- Slely, *adv.* slyly, 1. 150, 8. 442, 9.  
 353; cautiously, 19. 538.
- Slepan, *pres. part.* sleeping, 5. 83,  
 7. 204, 290, 326.
- Slepe; *on slepe*, asleep, 7. 192.
- Slepit, *pt. s.* slept, 7. 188; *pl.* 9.  
 377.
- Sleuch, *pt. pl.* slew, 1. 285. *See*  
*Slew.*
- Sleuth, *s.* slot, track, 7. 21, 44.  
 Icel. *slōð*, a track.
- Sleuthlund, a sleuth-hound, slot-  
 hound, 6. 484, 669. *See above.*
- Slew, *pt. pl.* struck; *slew fyre*,  
 struck fire, 13. 36. *See* Sla, and  
*Strake.*
- Slewth-hund, Slooth-hound, 6. 36  
 (E. and H.). *See* Sleuthlund.
- Slicht, *s.* sleight, guile, craft, 5.  
 105, 488; 8. 505, 10. 334, 18. 198;  
 stratagem, 16. 84. *See* Slycht.
- Slidand, *pres. part.* gliding, 3. 627.
- Slike, *adv.* 'slick,' quickly, rapidly  
 and smoothly, 6. 78.
- Slop, *s.* a gap, 8. 274; *pl.* Sloppis,  
 breaches, gaps, 8. 179, 182. Cf.  
 Dan. *slap*, relaxed, slack, Burns  
 has *slaps* in Tam o' Shanter, 1. 8.
- Sloppes, *a reading in H. for Soppis*,  
 8. 326 (*footnote*).
- Slow, *pt. s.* slew, 15. 221. *See* Sla.
- Sluth-hwnd, sleuth-hound, 6. 36.  
*See* Sleuthlund.
- Slycht, sleight, 1. 112, 2. 324, 3.  
 262; deceit, 1. 528. *See* Slicht.
- Slyd, *v. to slide*, slide down, de-  
 scend, 3. 707; Slyde, 10. 596; *pp.*  
 Slyddin, slidden, slid, 17. 126. *See*  
*Slaid, Slayd.*
- Slyk, *s.* slime, wet mud, 13. 352.

- Cf. Du. *slijk*, dirt, mud, mire ; E. *sludge*.
- Smat, *pt. s.* smote, 6. 136, 639.
- Smertly, *adv.* quickly, soon, 5. 596, 6. 21, 12. 71, 13. 106, 16. 600, 17. 174.
- Snaw, *s.* snow, 9. 128.
- Snell, *adj.* sharp, biting, severe, 3. 377. A.S. *snell*, quick, sharp; G. *schnell*, quick.
- Snored, *pt. s.* snored, *a gloss in H. upon Routit*, 7. 192 (*footnote*).
- Snuke, *for Nwk* (nook), 4. 556 (*footnote*). And see below.
- Snwk, *s.* a promontory, 1. 188. Jamieson has “*snuk*,” a small promontory, with a reference to Wallace, vii. 1044.
- Sobit, or Sovit, *an error in C. for Salit*, 14. 378 (*footnote*).
- Socht, *pt. pl.* sought, i. e. went, 6. 625 ; *pp.* attacked, 12. 390, 15. 544. *See Soucht.*
- Sodanly, *adv.* suddenly, 1. 324.
- Sodiourys, *s. pl.* soldiers, *in E.*, 5. 205 (*footnote*).
- Soft, *adj.* kindly, benign, 4. 697.
- Soiorne, *s.* sojourn, dwelling, 9. 369 ; Soiorn, 7. 385.
- Soiournyng, *s.* sojourning, sojourn, 9. 189. *See Soiournyng.*
- Soiourne, *v.* to dwell, stay, remain, 3. 323.
- Soiournyng, *s.* dwelling, delay, delaying, 1. 96, 2. 16 ; Soiowryng, dwelling, 3. 386. *See Sudiornyng, Soiornyng.*
- Solace, *s.* consolation ; hence, amusement, diversion, entertainment, 3. 465 ; Solass, 13. 718, 20. 95.
- Solacius, *adj.* agreeable, 10. 290.
- Somdeill, *adv.* to some extent, in some measure, 13. 510.
- Somownys, *pr. s.* summons, 1. 592.
- Sonday, Sunday, 11. 374.
- Sone, *adv.* soon, 1. 181, 203 ; 2. 452. *See Soyn.*
- Sone-in-law, *s.* son-in-law, 17. 219.
- Sonkyn, *pp.* sunken, 3. 417.
- Sonnys, sun's, 11. 190, 612.
- Sononday, Sunday, 5. 335.
- Sop, *s.* a sup, a slight meal ; esp. of spoon-meat, 12. 409.
- Sop, *s.* a round, compact body, a compact troop of men, 3. 47, 7. 567. Cf. Icel. *soppr*, a ball, *svöppr*, (1) a sponge, (2) a ball. In Danish, *sop* means a toadstool.
- Soppis, *s. pl.* heaps, 8. 326. See above.
- Sordid, *an error in J. for Fordid*, 5. 412.
- Sorowit, *pt. s.* sorrowed, 20. 284 ; *pl.* 484.
- Soucht, *pp.* sought, 2. 23 ; *pt. s.* pursued, 15. 214 ; *pt. pl.* sought, examined closely, 3. 479 ; searched, 10. 760 ; attacked, 16. 356. *See Socht.*
- Soueranly, *adv.* supremely, 10. 299, 16. 502\*.
- Sounе, *adv.* soon, 1. 566.
- South cuntre, south country, 16. 77.
- Southren, *adj.* southern, 17. 843.
- Sow, *s.* a ‘*sow*,’ an implement of warfare so called, 17. 597, 621. See note on p. 603.
- Sower, *an error for Summer*, i. e. great beam, 17. 696 (E. and H.).
- Sowing, *s.* pricking, stinging, galling (with spear-points), 16. 628. Cf. Scot. *sow*, to smart, feel stinging pain.
- Sowme, *s.* a sum, number, 17. 67 (E.).
- Sowne, *s.* sound, loud cry, 10. 411, 12. 328.
- Sowrchargis, *for Surcharge*, 16. 458 (E.).
- Sowth, *adv.* southwards, 16. 265.
- Soym, *s.* trace of a cart, 10. 233. Cf. Icel. *saumr*, Swedish *söm*, a seam. See note to 10. 180, p. 577.

- Soyme, 10. 180 (E.). *See Hedesoyme*; and see above.
- Soyn, *adv.* soon, 4. 126, 179; 5. 90; Soyne, 5. 38, 15. 306. *See Sone.*
- Space, *s.* length of time, 11. 9. *See Spass.*
- Spar, *v.* to fasten, 10. 230; Spare, 5. 389; *pt. s.* Sparit, fastened, barred, 10. 459; Sparryt, barred, 10. 459 (E.); Sparit, *pt. pl.* barred, 6. 444, 17. 168. A.S. *sparran*, to fasten; Dan. *spær*, a rafter, spar.
- Sparit, *pt. s.* spared, 5. 362, 9. 297; *pl.* Sparyt, 4. 10.
- Spass, *s.* space, short time, 15. 285. *See Space.*
- Spayn, *v.* to span, take in hand, 3. 582; *pt. pl.* Spaynyt, spanned, took in hand, 3. 583. A.S. *spannan*, Icel. *spenna*, to span, grasp.
- Speciall, *adj.* specially attached, intimate (with), 5. 501.
- Specialtè, *s.* special liking, partitivity, 7. 246.
- Sped, *pt. pl.* prospered, 17. 898.
- Spedaly, *adv.* speedily, 6. 301.
- Spedfull, *adj.* useful, necessary, 3. 574; advantageous, 4. 551, 12. 194. *See Speidfull.*
- Spediast, speediest, 6. 591.
- Speid him, *v.* to hasten, 15. 337; Speid ws, speed ourselves, make haste, 2. 293; *imp. s.* 3 *p.* Speid, may (God) prosper you, 18. 389.
- Speid, *s.* speed, haste; *bettir speid*, with all haste, 4. 507; *gude speid*, very fast, 6. 409.
- Speidfull, *adj.* advantageous, 5. 486, 9. 56, 11. 289. *See Spedfull.*
- Speir, *s.* spear, 5. 607, 9. 387. *See Sper.*
- Speir, 2 *p. s.* *pr. ask.*, 4. 494. *See Sperit.*
- Spek, *v.* to speak, 4. 200; *imp. pl.* 1 *p.* let us speak, 4. 3; *pres. pt.* Spekand, 11. 257, 19. 307, 613.
- Spek, *s.* speech, 1. 393, 4. 252, 5. 61, 9. 33, 18. 523, 20. 96; conversation, 17. 71; discussion, consultation, 1. 72, 5. 333; Speke, 10. 4, 396; proposal, 7. 157.
- Speking, *s.* speech, 1. 428, 7. 125; discourse, 3. 181.
- Sper, *s.* spear, 3. 459, 5. 640, 9. 506, 16. 602, 17. 380; *pl.* Speris, 11. 465, 587.
- Spering, *s.* enquiry, information, 5. 490; asking, 16. 24; Spering, enquiry, 3. 568. *See below.*
- Sperit, *pt. s.* enquired, asked, 4. 467, 6. 306, 10. 522, 16. 21, 19. 599; asked about, 5. 301; Sperit at, asked of, 5. 39, 14. 472; Sperit at, 3. 547; *pp.* Sperit, 17. 903. A.S. *spirian*, to enquire, track.
- Sperit, *pp.* found out, *a reading in E. for Spyit*, 10. 559 (*footnote*).
- Sperit, *s.* spirit, 4. 757.
- Sperlynth, *s. pl.* spear-lengths, 17. 572.
- Sper-men, *s. pl.* spearmen, 15. 220.
- Speryt, *pt. pl.* sparred up, fastened up, 4. 14. *See Spar.*
- Spilling, *s.* spilling, 13. 19.
- Spokin, *pp.* spoken, 17. 50; Spokyn, 20. 220.
- Spoulzeing, *s.* spoiling, stripping the slain, 13. 457. *See Spulzeit.*
- Sraith, *s.* spoil (*but the text may stand*), 13. 457 (H.); *perhaps the right reading in 5. 118 (see footnote)*. Jamieson has—“Spreith, Spreth, Sraith, Spreath, prey, booty;” with references to Wyntoun and Douglas. Cf. Gaelic *spreidh*, cattle.
- Spredis, *pr. pl.* spread, 16. 67.
- Sprent, *pt. pl.* sprang, 12. 49; see the note. Cf. Icel. *sprettia* (for *sprenta*), to start, spring. See *sprenten* in Stratmann.
- Spryng, *v.* to spread abroad, 2. 78. A.S. *springan*, to scatter; cf. E. *sprink-le*.

- Spryngaldis, *s. pl.* catapults, engines for shooting heavy missiles, 17. 247. O.F. *espringale*, (1) a kind of dance; (2) a catapult; from G. *springen*, to spring.
- Spulȝeit, *pp.* spoiled, stripped, 13. 459, 16. 666. From Lat. *spoliare*, to despoil.
- Spuris, *a misprint in J. for Speris*, 13. 315 (*footnote*).
- Spuris, *s. pl.* spurs, 6. 226, 11. 558; Spurys, 8. 79.
- Spy, *v.* to spy, see, 15. 114; *pt. s.* Spyit, spied about, 9. 353; *pp.* Spyit, spied, 10. 559, 19. 485, 528.
- Spyis, *s. pl.* spies, 7. 386.
- Spyryt, *pt. s.* enquired, 3. 486. See Sperit.
- Squyaris, *s. pl.* squires, 16. 80.
- Squary, *s.* a company of esquires, 20. 320.
- Stab, *v.* to stab, 19. 545; *pt. pl.* Stabbit, 19. 565.
- Stabill, *v.* to establish, secure, 19. 138.
- Stabilly, *adv.* stably, firmly, 13. 635, 19. 201.
- Stabing, *s.* stabbing, 17. 785 (E.).
- Stablist, *pt. s.* secured (lit. established), 10. 303.
- Stad, *pp.* beset, hard pressed, placed in peril, 3. 363, 4. 169, 198; 6. 664, 11. 610, 13. 604; situated, placed in difficulty, 9. 163, 13. 654, 14. 378; &c. (Common.) Cf. E. *bestead*.
- Staffing, *s.* thrusting, 17. 785. Jamieson gives—"Staff-suerd, a sword for thrusting;" with references to Wallace, iii. 178, vi. 737. The Edinb. MS. has *stabbing*.
- Staff-slyngis, *s. pl.* staff-slings, slings furnished with a stout staff, 17. 344.
- Staill, *s.* a fixed position, 17. 97. See the note, p. 601, and see *Stale* in Jamieson.
- Stakker, *v.* to stagger, 2. 422 (*footnote*).
- Stale, *for Scale, so printed in J., perhaps rightly*, 15. 341 (E.).
- Stalwart, *adj.* stalwart, stout, sturdy, valiant, 1. 19, 11. 362; strong, vehement, 1. 468, 3. 732; Stallwart, stout, 9. 699; Stalward, strong, 4. 80, 10. 491, 20. 52; severe, 11. 401; great, 18. 310; Stalwarde, hard, 9. 518; Stalvard, strong, 16. 356. A.S. *stælweorð*, lit. worth stealing, excellent.
- Stalwartly, *adv.* vehemently, 2. 66; Stalwardly, stoutly, sturdily, strongly, 8. 86, 11. 157, 234, 429; Stallwardly, valiantly, 4. 186.
- Stampyng, *s.* a stamping, noise of feet, 7. 269.
- Standard, *pres. pt.* standing, 6. 77, 9. 454, 10. 744, 17. 135.
- Standaris, *for Standartis*, 11. 465 (E.).
- Standartis, *s. pl.* standards, 11. 465.
- Standyn, *pp.* stood, 7. 572.
- Stane, *s.* stone, 15. 49. But see the note, p. 594.
- Stane-cast, *s.* stone's throw, 13. 581, 20. 425\*.
- Stanis, *s. pl.* stones, 18. 419; Stanys, 10. 57, 17. 351.
- Stark, *adj.* strong, 1. 398, 4. 72, 6. 126, 10. 112, 16. 625, 17. 280, 623. A.S. *stearc*, Icel. *sterkr*, strong.
- Starkar, *comp. adj.* stronger, 6. 538, 15. 491 (E.). See Sterkar.
- Starkest, *adj. superl.* strongest, 4. 74; Starkast, 17. 697.
- Starkly, *adv.* strongly, 13. 372 (E.).
- Stat, *s.* position, estate, 10. 264; condition, state, 7. 128; State, a good condition, successful position, 1. 297; *pl.* Statis, estates, 20. 162; conditions of life, 1. 337.
- Stature, *s.* stature, 10. 280.
- Stay, *adj.* steep, 10. 25, 19. 319. Cf. Icel. *stigi*, a steep ascent; A.S. *stigan*, to climb.
- Sted, *s.* stead, place, 2. 36, 4. 420,

6. 312, 7. 336, 15. 240, 16. 438, 19. 722, 20. 254; Stede, 6. 548, 7. 600, 17. 311. A.S. *stede*.
- Sted, *s.* steed, horse, 2. 424, 3. 111, 128; *pl.* Stedy, 2. 13.
- Sted, *pp.* bestead, beset; *hard* sted, hardly beset, 2. 47. *See Stad.*
- Fteid, *s.* stead, place, 1. 610. *See Sted.*
- Steid, *s.* steed, horse, 8. 79. *See Sted.*
- Steill, steel, 13. 14, 17. 714.
- Steir, *v.* to steer, i.e. direct, 20. 401; to govern, manage, control, 6. 334, 20. 142. A.S. *gestíran*.
- Steir, *v.* to stir, 9. 382. A.S. *styrian*.
- Steir, *s.* rudder, 4. 630. A.S. *steór*, government.
- Steir, on, i.e. a-stir, 7. 344, 19. 577.
- Stekand, *pres. pt.* sticking, stabbing, 13. 70 (E.). *See below.*
- Stekis, *pr. pl.* fasten, shut up, bar up, 19. 687. Cf. Du. *steken*, to stick; also, to put, place. *See below.*
- Stekit, *pt. s.* stuck, pierced, stabbed, 6. 143, 10. 416; *pt. pl.* 8. 321, 14. 293, 19. 563; *pp.* 10. 684, 12. 507, 14. 68. A.S. *stician*, to stab.
- Stemmand, *pres. part.* steering in one direction, holding a straight course, 5. 25. Cf. Dan. *stemme*, to attune; *stemme een for*, to dispose one towards.
- Stent, *for* Stentit, 19. 391 (E.). *See below.*
- Stent, *v.* to extend, spread, 19. 514; *pt. pl.* Stentit, pitched, 19. 391; *pp.* Stentit, 16. 282, 17. 300, 19. 386, 516. Used of pitching a tent; merely a peculiar spelling of *extend*.
- Steppis, *s. pl.* steps, 10. 361.
- Ster, *v.* to govern, 1. 43. *See Steir.*
- Ster, *s.* the rudder, 3. 576; Stere, 4. 374. *See Steir.*
- Sterand, *pres. pt.* steering, reading in E., 5. 25 (*footnote*).
- Sterand, *pres. pt.* stirring, active, 11. 129. *See Stere.*
- Sterap, *s.* stirrup, 3. 118, 125, 143; *pl.* Sterapys, 3. 120; Sterapis, 12. 51. A.S. *stí-ráp*.
- Stere, *v.* to stir, 10. 628. *See Steir.*
- Stering, *s.* stirring, 10. 209, 652.
- Stering, *s.* direction, 11. 182; government, 9. 510, 17. 456.
- Steris, *pr. s.* steers, i.e. governs, 11. 27; directs, 12. 42.
- Steris, *s. pl.* stars, 4. 675.
- Sterkar, *adj. comp.* stronger, 15. 491. *See Stark.*
- Stern, *s.* a star, 4. 127; *pl.* Sternis, 4. 711. Cf. Icel. *stjarna*, Dan. *stjerne*. (Here from the Scandinavian; not from High German.)
- Start, *v.* to start, mount up quickly, 3. 709; *pt. s.* jumped, 3. 128; *pl.* started, 7. 271; rushed, 8. 471; quickly retreated, 6. 632.
- Stertling, *s.* restless motion, 3. 704. *See Startle* in Jamieson.
- Stew, *s.* mist, 11. 614. Properly 'dust'; Dan. *stör*, dust, G. *staub*. The waterfall named the *Staubbach* (dustfall) is so called because it is dispersed into light spray.
- Steward, *s.* steward, 11. 449.
- Steyr, *v.* to govern, *lit.* to steer, 1. 38. *See Steir, Ster.*
- Stikis, *s. pl.* sticks, 11. 372.
- Stint, *v.* to stop, 10. 716.
- Stinting, *s.* stopping, delay, 9. 255.
- Stith, *adj.* stiff, hardy, 8. 384; strong, 4. 101, 5. 458, 9. 343, 11. 558, 12. 92, 13. 151. A.S. *stíð*, strong; now corrupted to *stiff*.
- Stithly, *adv.* severely, 10. 326; firmly, 12. 381. *See above.*
- Stoking, *s.* thrusting, 17. 785. F. *estoyer*, to thrust.

- Stole, *s.* throne, lit. stool, 2. 151, 180. A.S. *stól*.
- Stomakys, *s. pl.* stomachs, 3. 542.
- Stonay, *v.* to astonish, confound, amaze, dismay, 3. 82, 6. 123, 11. 226, 18. 547 (E.), 19. 630, 20. 514; *pt. s.* Stonait, astonished, 6. 257; Stonayit, defeated, 16. 495; dismayed, 3. 165, 10. 783; *pp.* Stonayit, dismayed, 9. 603, 13. 287; made afraid, 9. 537. O.F. *estonner*.
- Stoppit, *pp.* stopped, 8. 60, 17. 306.
- Stot, *v.* to stop, 3. 66. Cf. Du. *stuiven*, to stop, rebound; M. Eng. *stoten*, to stutter, stammer (Prompt. Parv., p. 477).
- Stound, *s.* time, 3. 140, 9. 270, 10. 501; short space of time, 17. 370; Stounde, while, time, 15. 186. A.S. *stund*, a period.
- Stour, *s.* a conflict, combat, battle, 1. 24, 468; 2. 355, 379; 8. 269, 11. 401, 12. 577, 13. 189, 14. 198. O.F. *estour*, conflict; from Icel. *styrr*, stir, commotion.
- Stoutar, *adj.* stouter, bolder, 15. 524.
- Stoutest, *adj.* boldest, 11. 470.
- Stoutly, *adv.* boldly, 11. 158.
- Stoutlynys, *a misprint in J. for* Frontlynys, 16. 174 (E.). See Frontly.
- Stoutnes, *s.* stubbornness, 7. 356.
- Stowpand, *pres. pt.* stooping, 8. 297.
- Stowtar, *adj. comp.* stouter, sturdier, 14. 2.
- Stra, *s.* a straw, 3. 320, 6. 505.
- Straif, *pt. pl.* strove, 6. 185.
- Strait, *adj.* narrow, 3. 110. See Strat.
- Strait, *s.* straits, narrow channel, 3. 688. See Strat, Strate.
- Strak, *s.* stroke, 5. 643 (C.), 10. 432, 12. 60, 17. 697; *pl.* Strakis, 6. 645, 12. 134; Strakys, 2. 364.
- Strak, *for* Straucht, *adv.* straight, 8. 4 (E.), 6. 587 (E.).
- Strake, *pt. s.* struck, 17. 870; *pl.* Strak, struck, 11. 558; spurred, 20. 458.
- Strake, *pt. pl.* struck, 7. 153. (Such is the reading in Hart; but the reading *slew* of the MSS. should have been retained. See Slew.)
- Strat, *adj.* narrow, 6. 362, 10. 18; Strate, 6. 58, 7. 529, 8. 32, 10. 559. O.F. *estroit*, F. *étroit*, narrow; Lat. *strictus*.
- Strate, *s.* narrow pass, 4. 458, 9. 570. See Strait.
- Strater, *adj. comp.* narrower, 14. 114.
- Stratest, *superl. adj.* narrowest, 6. 463.
- Stratly, *adv.* closely, straitly, hardly, 7. 216, 11. 609, 17. 737; tightly, 10. 366; strictly, 18. 512.
- Stratnes, *s.* narrowness, 12. 430.
- Straucht, *adj.* straight, 11. 438; Strawcht, 2. 312.
- Straucht, *adv.* straight, 6. 43, 587; 9. 34, 192; 12. 13, 499, 14. 22, 16. 443.
- Straucht, *pt. pl.* stretched out, 2. 348; *pp.* 8. 297. A.S. *streccan*, to stretch; *pp. gestreht*.
- Stray; *on stray*, astray, 13. 195.
- Strecour, *s.* a dog for the chase; lit. a runner, 6. 487. Perhaps related to the A.S. *strican*, to continue a course, rather than to *streccan*, to stretch. See Strikand.
- Strekit, *pt. s.* stretched, 18. 130; *pp.* Strekit, stretched, extended, long, 4. 704, 10. 367, 17. 929, 18. 365, 19. 317. A.S. *streccan*.
- Strekyt, *pp.* stricken, i. e. fought, a reading in E. for Strikyn, 13. 152, footnote.
- Stremand, *pres. pt.* streaming, 12. 560.
- Stremys, *s. pl.* streams, i. e. currents, 3. 684.

- Strenth, strength, 1. 524; strong place, 4. 458 (*footnote*).  
 Strenthly, *adv.* strongly, forcibly, 4. 541 (*footnote*).  
 Strengthhi, *adj.* strong, 4. 653 (*footnote*).  
 Strengthis, *s. pl.* strengths, forces, powers, 2. 523. *See* Strenth.  
 Strenȝeit, *pp.* constrained, 12. 248. O.F. *straindre*, Lat. *stringere*.  
 Strewit, *pp.* strewn, 14. 304.  
 Strikand, *pres. part.* leading, going, 6. 238. A.S. *strican*, to go, continue a course; Bosworth.  
 Strikand, *pres. pt.* striking, 6. 234; *pp.* Strikin, fought (said of a battle), 13. 152, 227.  
 Strinth, *s.* strength, force, 8. 505, 9. 40, 10. 334, 17. 779, 19. 136; a stronghold, 3. 44.  
 Stro, *s.* a straw, 3. 320 (*footnote*). *See* Stra.  
 Strowit, *pp.* strewn, 14. 443, 16. 633; Strowyt, 16. 69 (E.).  
 Stroy, *v.* to destroy, 9. 455.  
 Stryff, *s.* strife, 7. 628.  
 Stryk, *v.* to strike, 10. 179, 11. 598; *pp.* Strykyne, stricken, fought, 11. 348 (*rubric*).  
 Strynth, *s.* strength, force, 5. 224, 9. 658, 13. 221; feat of strength, 16. 646; *pl.* Strynthis, forts, 5. 469, 16. 223, 18. 251.  
 Strynthit, *pp.* strengthened, 17. 331.  
 Stude, *pt. s.* stood, 6. 244, 14. 157; *pl.* 9. 140, 14. 174, 19. 325.  
 Stuff, *s.* provision, 17. 176; equipment, 5. 258.  
 Stuff, *v.* to fill, 17. 213; filled, stored, provisioned, 8. 100, 11. 47, 14. 91, 17. 232, 254, 263, 350; Stuffyt, 1. 189; *pt. pl.* Stuffit, provisioned, 16. 223.  
 Stunay, *v.* to astound, stun, dismay, 1. 299. *See* Stonay.  
 Sturdy, *adj.* strong, violent, 3. 698.  
 Sturdly, *adv.* sturdily, 2. 363; Sturdely, boldly, 8. 471.  
 Sture, *adj.* sturdy, strong, 10. 158, 12. 92. A.S. *stór*, Icel. *stórr*, great, vast.  
 Sturting, *an error in editions for* Stinting, 7. 545 (*footnote*).  
 Stycht, *s.* fixed position, firm place, 3. 658. *See* the Note.  
 Stynt, *v.* to stop, stem, 2. 372; to stop, stay, arrest, 5. 184, 6. 178, 10. 432, 12. 54, 13. 95, 17. 697; *pt. s.* Styntytt, stopped, 3. 52; *pl.* Styntit, stayed, 17. 657.  
 Stynt, *s.* stoppage, delay, 2. 140.  
 Stynting, *s.* a stop, stoppage, delay, 7. 40, 12. 14, 16. 618; resistance, 7. 545.  
 Styth, *adj.* strong, 10. 84, 364. *See* Stith.  
 Stythly, *adv.* strongly, firmly, 3. 120, 4. 14; stoutly, 11. 158 (E.).  
 Sua, *adv.* so, 1. 291, &c. *See* Swa.  
 Suagat, *adv.* so, in such wise, 4. 307, 602; 6. 603.  
 Subtilite, *s.* crafty work, fine workmanship, 20. 306.  
 Succourss, *s.* succour, 19. 641.  
 Succudry, *s.* presumption, pride, 11. 11, 12. 297, 16. 327, 18. 183; Sucquedry, 16. 327 (E.); Surequidry, 11. 11 (H.). O.F. *sorcuiderie*, presumption, usually in the form *sorcuidance*; from O.F. *sor*, Lat. *super*, and *cuidar*, Lat. *cogitare*.  
 Suddantly, *adv.* suddenly, 6. 11, 7. 184; Suddanly, 7. 505; Suddanely, 15. 119.  
 SudIorne, *s.* sojourn, 20. 356.  
 Sudiornyng, *s.* staying, resting, 6. 26.  
 SudIornyt, *pt. pl.* sojourned, 16. 47; *pp.* 16. 52.  
 Suelt, *pt. s.* died, 4. 311. A.S. *sweltan*, to die, perish. The *pt. pl.* *swelte*, died, occurs in P. Plowman, C. Pass. xxiii. 105.

- Suerdis, *s. pl.* swords, 12. 574; *gen. sing.* Suerdys, sword's, 2. 139.
- Suet, *s.* life-blood (lit. sweat), 13. 32, 16. 232 (E.). See the note to the former passage; *and see* Swat.
- Sufficyand, *pres. part.* sufficient, sufficiently good, 1. 368.
- Sukudry, *s.* presumption, 11. 11 (E.). See Succudry.
- Suld, *pt. pl.* should, 1. 3, &c. See Sal.
- Sum, *adj.* some, 1. 49, 4. 677; *used indefinitely*, some people, 2. 295; othir sum = some others, 1. 52.
- Sum, *suffix*, in all, altogether; *fif sum*, five in all, 6. 149; *sex sum*, six in all, 6. 231. Cf. Icel. *saman*, together, as in *þrír saman*, three together. See Thresum.
- Sumdeill, *adv.* somewhat, 1. 383; partially, to some extent, 4. 670, 5. 358, 6. 382, 11. 237; Sumdele, 2. 273; *as sb.* Sumdeill, somewhat, 13. 326.
- Sumkyn, of some kind, 10. 519. Cf. Alkyn, Nakyn.
- Summer, *s.* principal beam, 17. 696. See the note.
- Summer, 19. 746 (E.). See Swmmer.
- Summitè, *s.* summit, top, 3. 706. Pronounced as a trisyllable—*sum-mit-ē*.
- Summond, *pp.* summoned; *gert summond*, cause to be summoned, 13. 734; *gert be summond*, 11. 208.
- Supleyng, *s.* supply, 13. 595 (E.). See Supple.
- Supple, *v.* to supply, i. e. assist, 11. 627 (*rubric*).
- Supple, *s.* support, reinforcement, 13. 225 (*rubric*).
- Supposs, *conj.* although, 1. 2, 3. 467, 19. 692.
- Suppowale, *s.* a reinforcement, 16. 139; Suppowall, 16. 111, 139 (E.). Cf. O.F. *apui*, support; which apparently contains the same root.
- Suppriss, *v.* to surprise, 6. 37, 42; 11. 647, 15. 119; *pp.* Supprisit, taken unawares, 18. 426.
- Surcharge, *s.* additional load (of provisions; *but ironical*), 16. 458.
- Sur-noune, *s.* surname, 17. 152. Cf. E. *re-noun*, also from Lat. *nomen*.
- Surquedry, *s.* presumption, 18. 183 (E.). See Succudry.
- Sutell, *adj.* subtle, 19. 32.
- Suteltè, *s.* subtle device, subtlety, wile, 1. 172, 3. 611, 4. 267, 10. 535, 17. 666.
- Suth, *adj.* true, 1. 9, 5. 609. A.S. *sóðs*.
- Suth, *s.* truth, 10. 293.
- Suthfast, *adj.* true, 1. 3, 13, 36, 504. A.S. *sóðfæst*.
- Suthfastly, *adv.* truly, 4. 328.
- Suthfastnes, truth, 1. 7, 457. A.S. *sóðfæstnes*.
- Suthly, *adv.* truly, verily, surely, 6. 32, 7. 258, 16. 483.
- Swa, *conj. so*, 1. 15. See Sua, Sway.
- Swagat, *adv.* so, in such wise, 2. 293, 3. 52, 5. 300, 7. 508, 9. 317, 11. 566, 12. 262, 17. 25, 18. 402. From *swa*, so, and *gat*, a way.
- Swagatis, *adv.* so, in such wise, 19. 253. See above.
- Swak, *s.* a blow, 5. 643. Another form of *swap*. See Swakked, Swappit.
- Swakked, *pt. s.* threw quickly and violently, 10. 623 (H.), 17. 691 (H.). See Swappit.
- Swane, a swain, hind, peasant, 5. 235; *pl.* Swanys, 13. 229, 341; 15. 339.
- Swappit, *pt. s.* drew quickly, whipped out, 6. 229, 7. 591 (*pl.* Swappyt, 2. 363); hurled, threw, 10. 623, 17. 691, 18. 136; shot, flew, 17. 675, 683. Cf. Icel. *sveipa*, to sweep, to swoop. Jamieson quotes from Palsgrave—"I swappe, I stryke, *Ie frappe*."

- Swar, *pt. s.* swore, 1. 165, 13. 560.  
 Swat, *s.* sweat, 11. 613, 12. 146.  
 Swavnand, *pres. pt.* swooning, 17. 648.  
 Sway, *adv.* so, 4. 571. *See* Swa.  
 Sweit, *adj.* sweet, 16. 66; Sweyt, 1. 390; Swet, 9. 482.  
 Swerdis, *s. pl.* swords, 11. 600. *See* Suerd.  
 Swilk, *pron.* such, 1. 109, 7. 364, 9. 641 (E.). A.S. *snylec*.  
 Swith, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 275, 5. 136, 7. 348, 10. 399, 11. 559, 14. 451, 16. 40, 17. 806, 19. 605, 792. *Als swith*, as quickly as possible, 14. 451. A.S. *swiðe*, very, quickly.  
 Swm, some, 16. 111. *See* Sum.  
 Swmmer, *s.* sumpter-horse, 19. 746. O.F. *sommier*; from *somme*, a load, Low Lat. *sagma*, Gk. *σάγμα*.  
 Swoir, *pt. pl.* swore, 17. 665. *See* Swour, Swar.  
 Swome, *v.* to swim, 3. 431.  
 Swonand, *pres. pt.* swooning, 17. 648 (E.).  
 Sworn, *pp.* sworn; *thocht he had sworn*, though he had sworn to the contrary; a phrase implying—in spite of all his efforts, 3. 135.  
 Swour, *pt. s.* swore, 1. 571, 2. 66, *pl.* 3. 757, 17. 665 (E.). *See* Swoir, Swar.  
*Swycht, an error for Wycht in E., 2. 120 (footnote).*  
 Swylk, *dem. pron.* such, 1. 85, 101, 333. *See* Swilk.  
 Swyng, *s.* a swinging blow, 15. 188; a swing, a hasty turn, 17. 574.  
 Swyr, *s.* a 'neck' or depression between two hills, 17. 13; see note, p. 600.  
 Swyth, *adv.* quickly, 2. 1, 316. *See* Swith.  
*Swyth, an error for Schut, i.e. shoot, 13. 565 (E.).*  
 Syb, *adj.* akin, 13. 511. *See* Sib.  
 Sychand, *pres. part.* sighing, 5. 147.  
*Sycht, an error in editions for Fyght, 2. 388 (footnote).*  
 Syd, *s. side*, 2. 346, 348; Syde, 10. 13, 13. 68; *on syde*, aside, 11. 344.  
 Sykes, *s. pl.* trenches, 19. 742 (*footnote*). *See* below.  
 Sykis, *s. pl.* rills, 11. 300. Icel. *sík*, a ditch, trench, furrow.  
 Symonct, *a blunder in E. for Symon het*, 9. 10 (*footnote*).  
 Sympill, *adj.* simple, inoffensive, 1. 463; trustful, 1. 126; small, weak, 5. 258, 10. 307, 11. 202; silly, forgetful, 1. 615.  
 Sympyll, *adv.* in a simple manner, inexpensively, 1. 331; Sympilly, weakly defended, 17. 134.  
 Syn, *adv.* afterwards, 1. 601; then, 1. 443. *See* Syne.  
 Syndir, *adj.* sundry, various, 5. 506. *See* Syndri.  
 Syndrely, *adv.* asunder, separately, 12. 138.  
 Syndri, *adj.* sundry, separate, 9. 441, 10. 188, 17. 297; Syndry, 5. 7; Syndir, 5. 506.  
 Syne, *adv.* afterwards, soon afterwards, 1. 145, 174; 3. 342, 4. 127, 8. 401, 15. 138; next, 6. 229, 17. 332; then, 11. 216, 437; 12. 170; at last, 1. 450. (Short for *Sythyn*.)  
 Synnys, *s. pl.* sins, 20. 180.  
 Syr, sire, lord, 1. 283, 3. 659.  
 Systir, sister, 1. 51; *gen. sing.* sister's, 1. 557.  
 Syt, *v.* to sit, 7. 267, 10. 608; *pres. pt.* Sytand, 6. 203, 7. 238; Syttand, 10. 611.  
 Syth, *s. pl.* times, 3. 470; Sythis, times, 3. 58. A.S. *sið*, a time.  
 Sythyn, *adv.* afterwards, 2. 85. A.S. *sið ðan*, for *sið ðam*, after that.  
 Ta, *v.* to take, 1. 496, 498; 4. 104.

5. 328, 8. 444; *imp. s.* take, 4. 638; *gerund*, to ta = to be taken, 6. 335; *subj. pr. 1 p.* that we (may) take, 5. 72. *And see Tan, Tais.*

Ta; *the ta* = *thet a*, the one, 3. 239, 4. 306, 16. 386. (*Ta* never occurs in this sense unless the word *the* precedes it.) *See Tothir.*

Taile (?), *v. refl.* 18. 238 (E.). This reading is perhaps wrong. Jamieson makes *taile* = Mid. Eng. *tolle*, to allure, and compares Icel. *tæla*, to entice. This gives—"he determined that he would entice himself to destroy Scotland." But it is hardly possible that this can be right, as it makes very poor sense. It is more probable that *him taile* = bind himself; and that it is allied to *tailze* = covenant, agreement, used in the same MS. *See Tailze.*

Taill, *s. tale*, 9. 576, 17. 835; *with thair taill*, according to their tale, 15. 539\*.

Taill, *s.* payment of a due by an heir on his succession, 12. 320. *See Tail, Tails, and Tallage* in Blount's Law Dict.

Tailze, *s.* covenant, agreement, 20. 134 (E.). MS. C. has *tale*, as if the connection were, not with F. *tailler*, to cut, to tax, but with E. *tale*; cf. Icel. *tal*, a talk, parley, speech, account.

Tailzeit, *pp.* agreed upon, 19. 188 (E.). MS. C. has *talit*, q. v.

Tailyie, *s.* tallage, tax, 12. 320 (H.). *See taille* in Cotgrave.

Tais, *pr. s.* takes, 2. 146, 6. 222, 8. 406, 11. 460, 12. 1; Taiss, 3. 287.

Taisyt, *for Tasyt*, 5. 623 (E.).

Takand, *pres. part.* (in plr. *takand kep* = taking heed), 1. 214; *and see* 6. 288, 13. 160.

Takill, *s.* tackle (of ships), gear, 3. 713, 4. 374.

Takinning, *s.* token, 9. 507 (E.). *See below.*

Taknyng, *s.* a token, sign, 4. 558,

10. 471 (E.), 12. 23, 16. 421; evidence, 6. 93, 13. 45. A.S. *tácn*, a token; *tácnian*, to betoken; *tácnung*, a sign.

Tak on hand, 1 *p. s. pr.* I assert, 2. 20, 15. 213; Tak kep, take heed, 17. 61; *pr. s.* Takys, seizes, 3. 541; *pp.* Takyn, taken, 4. 652, 15. 253, 17. 171.

Takyn, *s.* token, sign, signal, 9. 507, 10. 741, 19. 368. A.S. *tácn*, a token.

Takynnyng, *s.* token, evidence, 19. 29; a sign, 6. 93 (E.). *See Taknyng.*

Tald, *pt. s.* told, 1. 563, 5. 40; 1 *p.* I told, 15. 178; *pp.* 7. 522.

Tale, *s.* number, computation, 11. 5; *be tale*, by number, i.e. as ascertained by counting, 16. 507. A.S. *tal*, number.

Talent, *s.* purpose, will, 3. 694.

Talit, *pp.* reckoned, 19. 188. A.S. *talian*, to reckon, compute. *But see Tailzeit.*

Tan, *pp.* taken, 9. 317; Tane, 1. 113, 324, 521; 8. 375, 18. 135; tane keip = taken heed, 1. 95, 113. *See Ta.*

Tane, the, the one, 16. 123. *See Ta.*

Taney, *an error in E. for Tane*, 3. 210 (footnote).

Tary, *v.* to tarry, make to stop, 6. 602; *pres. pt.* Taryand, tarrying, 6. 603.

Tasit, *pt. s.* put ready for shooting, placed in readiness, 5. 623. The expression *tasit the ryre* is, literally, drew back (or bent) the bolt of the cross-bow; which is a contradiction. It means that he bent back, not the *bolt*, but the *bow*. O.Fr. *teser, toiser*, from Lat. *tensus*.

Taskar, a thresher, 5. 318. The word here is not *tasker*, one who undertakes a task (see J.), but a misspelling for *tarshar* or *thersker*, i.e. a thresher, from the A.S. *þersc-*

- an (cf. Du. *dörschen*), to thresh. “*Triturator, a tasker*”; Nominale MS. xv. cent.; quoted by Halliwell, s. v. Jamieson himself quotes: “The *taskers* are those who are employed in threshing out the corn.”
- Tastit, *pt. s.* tested, tried, 9. 388. Mid. E. *taste, tasten*, to test.
- Taucht, *pt. s.* gave, 2. 130; committed, 10. 43; delivered, 10. 253. Chaucer has *take* in the sense of *to give*; so also in Piers Plowman. But here A.S. *tacan*, to give, is confused with A.S. *tæcan*, to teach, shew.
- Tauld, 1 *p. s. pt.* I told, 1. 76; *pt. s.* 2. 83. See Tald.
- Tayne, *pp.* taken, 4. 51. See Tan.
- Te, *v.* to tie, 15. 282. A.S. *tigan, tigian*.
- Tell, *v.* to count, enumerate, 1. 295. A.S. *tellan*.
- Templis, *s. pl.* temples, 3. 222.
- Tend, *ord.* tenth, 4. 460, 9. 495.
- Tendirly, *adv.* tenderly, 16. 228.
- Tene, *s.* vexation, 2. 377. A.S. *teóna*, injury. See Teyne.
- Tent, *s.* attention, heed, 10. 395, 13. 196, 16. 98, 20. 380. Cf. E. *tend*.
- Tentinely, *adv.* attentively, 1. 613 (*footnote*), 7. 555 (*footnote*).
- Ter, *s. tar*, 17. 611.
- Teris, *s. pl.* tears, 3. 348.
- Testament, *s.* will, 20. 160.
- Tey, *v.* to tie, 15. 282 (E.). See Te.
- Teyne, *s.* harm, 18. 233. See Tene.
- Tha, *pron. pl.* those, 2. 463, 11. 336, 18. 350. See Thai.
- Thai, (1) *pron.* they, 1. 2, &c.; *dat. and acc.* Thaim, 1. 33, 42; (2) those, 7. 185, 11. 371, 12. 414; *dat. of those*, 7. 212 (the prep. *of* governs a dative). See Tha.
- Thaim-selwyn, themselves, 1. 502.
- Thair, their, 7. 165. See below.
- Thairis, (1) *poss. pron.* theirs, 1. 471, 3. 745; of thairis = some of their own property, 18. 199; *thai and thairis*, 13. 201; (2) *gen. pl.* of them; *magre thairis*, in spite of them, 10. 118, 4. 153.
- Thak, *s.* thatch, roofing of a house, 12. 396.
- Thame, *dat.* to them, 7. 528.
- Than, *conj.* except that, 1. 501.
- Than, *adv.* then; or than, or even, 1. 217.
- Thankit, *pt. s.* thanked, 5. 142, 9. 737, 19. 113, 20. 235; Thankyt, 3. 668; *pl.* Thankit, 18. 537.
- Thar, *pron. poss.* their, 1. 22, 14. 498, &c. A.S. *þára*, of them.
- Thar, *adv.* there, 1. 59, &c. A.S. *þær*.
- Thar, *pr. s. impers.* it needs, it is necessary, 8. 257, 12. 300. Misprinted *char* in J. in both places; misprinted *char* in P. in the first instance only. Icel. *þarf*, impers. verb, it needs. See Thurt.
- Tharby, *adv.* thereby, near that place, 2. 536.
- Thareftir, *adv.* thereafter, 1. 591.
- Tharfor, *conj.* on that account, 17. 586.
- Thar-fra, *adv.* away, afar, 16. 244; therefrom, from it, 10. 366.
- Thar-through, thereby, 2. 42, 527.
- Thartill, thereto, 1. 12, 506, 625. See Till.
- Tharup, *adv.* up there, 10. 433.
- The morn, on the morrow, 14. 478. Cf. A.S. *þý*, instrumental and ablative case of the def. article.
- The quhethir, however, and yet, nevertheless, 1. 332. See Quhethir.
- Theif, a thief, 6. 470; *voc.* thief! 10. 231; *gen.* Thefis, 6. 470; *pl.* Thevis, thieves, 7. 289.
- Them-selwyne, themselves, 13. 234.
- Then, *conj.* than, 1. 458.
- Thiddir, *adv.* thither, 1. 592; Thiddyr, 1. 413.

- Thiddirwart, *adv.* thitherwards, thither, 1. 411; Thiddirward, 10. 404.
- Thik, *adj.* thick, close together, 9. 336, 11. 367. See below.
- Thik, *adj.* thick, 4. 126. (Perhaps *thak-burd* = thatching-board (E.) is better.)
- Thikast, *adj.* thickest, 17. 156.
- Thine, thence; *fra thine*, from thence, thence, 5. 190.
- Thine-furth, *adv.* thenceforth, 17. 722.
- Thing; *a gret thing*, a great deal, very much, 13. 134.
- Thing, *s. pl.* things, property, 3. 620; Thingis, property, 3. 630.
- Think, *pr. s. impers.* it seems; *me think*, it seems to me, 3. 67.
- Thinkand, *pres. pt.* thinking, 9. 554.
- Thir, *pron. dem.* those, 1. 76, 3. 249, 13. 653, 17. 589; these, 4. 248, 7. 303\*, 10. 788, 16. 523; these men, 10. 48; *thir menȝe*, that host, 15. 142, 19. 47. Icel. *þeir*, they.
- Thirl, *v.* to enthrall, 1. 263 (*footnote*); *pp.* Thirlit, 1. 222 (*footnote*). Probably a misreading in Hart's edition. Of no authority.
- Thiskyn, of this kind, such, 16. 49 (E.).
- Thocht, though, 1. 518, 2. 390.
- Thocht, *pt. s.* thought, 1. 65; *impers.* it seemed, as in *thaim thocht*, it seemed to them, 1. 79.
- Thole, *v.* to suffer, endure, 4. 207, 10. 104, 14. 213, 20. 170; Thoill, to permit, suffer, 4. 659, 18. 532; to endure, wait, 9. 28; *pres. pt.* Tholand, enduring, 13. 200; *pt. s.* Tholyt, suffered, 1. 567; Tholde, 6. 179 (*heading*); *pl.* Tholyt, 3. 372; *pp.* Tholyt, suffered, 3. 555; Tholit, endured, 17. 472. A.S. *pólian*, to suffer, endure, tolerate.
- Tholyt, *pt. s. an error in E. for Trewyt*, 17. 228.
- Thouch, *conj.* though, 3. 201, 6. 472, 9. 87, 12. 296. A.S. *þeáh*.
- Thought, though, although, 1. 264. See Thocht.
- Thought hym, *pt. s.* it seemed to him, 4. 618. See Thocht.
- Thow, *adv.* when, 11. 31 (*rubric*). A.S. *þá*, when.
- Thowlesnes, heedlessness of conduct, 1. 333. Formed not from A.S. *þeorian*, to serve, but from A.S. *þeán*, manner, behaviour; whence *thenles*, devoid of good manners, ill-behaved, which may be compared with Scot. *thewless*, inactive, which see in Jamieson.
- Thra, *adj.* eager, 18. 71. Icel. *þrár*, stubborn, obstinate; Mid. Eng. *thro*.
- Thrang, *s.* throng, press, 2. 357, 11. 224; crowd (of ships), 3. 713; press, 13. 156 (E.); throng, 17. 156; stress, distress, hardship, peril, 10. 117, 15. 353; *in thrang*, in a state of persecution, 7. 251. A.S. *þringan*, to crowd.
- Thraw, *s.* a throw; i.e. a little while, a short space of time, 4. 140, 5. 159, 7. 34, 572; 9. 407, 11. 303, 17. 40. A.S. *þrag*, *þrah*, a space of time.
- Thraw, *an error in H. for Draw*, 8. 59 (*footnote*).
- Thraw, *pr. s. sulj.* may turn, 13. 654\*. A.S. *þráwan*, to throw, to turn round.
- Thrawing, *s.* throwing, 13. 156.
- Threldome, thraldom, 1. 265, 2. 506. See below.
- Threllis, *s. pl.* slaves, thralls, 3. 220. A.S. *þræl*, a slave, thrall. See Thryll.
- Thresscher, *s.* thresher, *in E.*, 5. 318 (*footnote*).
- Thresum, *adj.* with three at a time, 3. 420. See Sum.
- Thret, *pt. pl.* threatened, 6. 536. A.S. *þreatian*, to threaten, is a weak verb.

- Thretty, thirty, 4. 405. A.S. *þrētig*.
- Thrid, *adj.* third, 2. 305. A.S. *þridda*.
- Thrilde, *pt. pl.* pierced, 2. 540 (*footnote*). *See Thrillit.*
- Thrildome, *s.* thraldom, 12. 281.
- Thrillage, thraldom, servitude, slavery, 1. 101, 275, 471; Thrillag, 1. 471. *See Threllis.*
- Thrillit, *pt. pl.* pierced through, charged through, 16. 430; *pp.* pierced through, 9. 609. A.S. *þrīlian*, to pierce through, to thrill.
- Thring, *v.* to throng, press, 19. 70; *pres. pt.* Thringand, thronging, 17. 758. A.S. *þringan*, to press.
- Thristill, *s.* a throstle, thrush, 5. 4. A.S. *þrostle*, a throstle.
- Thristing, *s.* thrusting, 13. 156. Icel. *þrýsta*, to thrust.
- Throppill, *s.* the windpipe, 7. 584. Cf. A.S. *þrot-bolla*, the throat-pipe.
- Throt, *s.* throat, 9. 389.
- Through, *prep.* through, by, 1. 177.
- Through, *an error in J. for Throuth*, better Trouth (truth), 4. 223 (*foot-note*).
- Throu-out, throughout, 11. 392.
- Throw, *prep.* through, 2. 538, 11. 363; by means of, 1. 152.
- Throwand, *pres. pt.* writhing, 15. 230. A.S. *þráwan*, to throw, twist; cf. Lat. *torquere*, to twist.
- Thryldome, thraldom, 1. 269.
- Thryll, *s.* a thrall, slave, 1. 243, 251, 270. *See Threllis.*
- Thryllage, *s.* thraldom, 1. 352.
- Thryng, *v.* to press, go closely, 6. 82; *pres. pt.* Thryngand, thronging, pressing, 6. 133. *See Thring.*
- Thurch, Thurth, *errors for Thurt*, 6. 121 (*footnote*).
- Thurst, *pt. pl.* might, could, 20. 107 (E.). Probably miswritten for *Thurft*, which is the proper form. Thus *thurfte* occurs in the *Ancren*
- Riwle, p. 336; Ormulum, 1. 16164; in the sense of needed, behoved. Cf. A.S. *þorfte*, pt. t. of *þearfan* or *þurfan*; Goth. *þaursta*, pt. t. of *þaurban*, to need.
- Thurt, *pt. s.* needed, 6. 121. This is the pt. t. of *Thar*, q. v.; it is contracted from *thurft* (see above). See *þurte* in Will. of Palerne, 3788; and see *þurfen* in Stratmann.
- Thusgat, *adv.* in this manner, thus, in this way, 1. 275, 2. 167, 3. 267, 4. 304, 6. 157, 9. 228, 15. 525, 17. 878.
- Thusgatis, *adv.* thus, 19. 613. *See above.*
- Thws, *adv.* thus, 2. 508.
- Thyn, *adv.* thinly, 4. 685.
- Thynk, 1 *p. s. pr.* I purpose, 1. 33.
- Thyrland, *pres. part.* piercing, making holes in, 2. 540. *See Thrillit.*
- Thyrdome, thraldom, 1. 236. *See Thryldome.*
- Thyrllyt, *pp.* pierced through, 9. 608 (E.), 16. 430. *See Thrillit.*
- Tid, *s.* time, 1. 407, 2. 25. A.S. *tíd*, time.
- Till, *prep.* to, 1. 35, &c.; for, 3. 761, 14. 5, 19. 637; to (as sign of gerund), 11. 254. Icel. *til*, to.
- Till-hewyn, *pp.* (*a false form for to-hewyn*), hewn about, severely scarred, 20. 367. (N.B. The A.S. prefix *tō* represents two prefixes that are really distinct, and are distinguished in German as *zu* and *zer*. To hew in twain = A.S. *tō-heawan* = G. *zerhauen*; but we have here the A.S. *tō* replaced by the Icel. prefix *til*, which answers rather to G. *zu*.)
- Till-hewyt, *pt. s.* (*a false form for to-hewyt*), hewed in twain, cut in half, 2. 381. (N.B. Even *to-hewyt* is a late and corrupted form, as the verb to *hew* was originally a strong one. *See above.*)
- Timmeris, *for Tymbrys*, q. v., 19. 396 (E.).

- Tit, *adv.*** soon ; *als tit*, very soon, as soon as possible, 4. 289, 757. Icel. *titt*, soon, neuter of adj. *tiðr*, frequent ; cf. Dan. *tidt*, often.
- Tit, *pt. s.*** drew, drew quickly, snatched, 5. 603. Cf. A.S. *tiht*, a movement ; *teón*, to draw, pull, tug.
- Titar, *adv. comp.*** sooner, 4. 269, 5. 529. *See Tit, adv.*
- Tithand, *s.*** tidings, news, 4. 468, 6. 376, 9. 219, 17. 903 ; *pl.* Tithandis, tidings, 5. 143, 17. 829. Icel. *tiðindi*, Dan. *tidende*, news.
- Tithing, *s.*** tidings, news, 2. 454, 3. 452, 6. 466, 12. 358, 19. 121. *See above.*
- To, *adv.*** too, 16. 458.
- To, *conj.*** till, 5. 193.
- To-fruchyt, *for* To-fruschit, 13. 146 (E.).**
- To-fruscht, *pp.*** broken to pieces, 2. 350 ; dashed in pieces, 8. 303, 10. 597 ; bruised severely, 20. 385 ; *pt. pl.* To-fruschit, crushed, 13. 146 ; *pt. s. subj.* To-fruscht, might crush, 17. 667. A hybrid word. The prefix is the A.S. *tó-*, in twain ; the verb is the F. *froisser*, to dash.
- To-ga, *pt. s.*** fled (*misprinted to ga*), 8. 351 ; *pt. pl.* fled, dispersed, departed, 9. 263, 269 ; 17. 104, 575. An anomalous form ; the sense requires the past tense, but the form is that of a present, or rather of the infinitive. Cf. A.S. *tó-gán*, to depart.
- Togidder, *adv.*** together, 15. 69. A.S. *tógædere*.
- To-hewen, *pp.*** hewn in many places, 20. 367 (*footnote*) ; To-hewyn, hewn in pieces, 17. 755 (E.). *See Till-hewyn.*
- Toilȝit, *reading in E. for* Tulȝit, 4. 152 (*footnote*).**
- To-morn, to-morrow, 1. 124, 12. 202.**
- Top-castellis, *s. pl.*** top-castles, small castles made in the main-top of a war-ship, 17. 713.
- Torn, *s. a*** turn ; *quy়t thaim torn*, requite them a turn, repay them, 2. 438.
- Torne, *v. to*** turn, 3. 106.
- To-stonay (til-stonay, C., stonay, E.), *v. to*** astound thoroughly, 18. 547. *See Till-hewyn.*
- Tothir, *the tothir = thet othir*** = the other, 1. 7, 165, 11. 569, 16. 399 ; the second, 9. 412. *Tothir* only occurs when the word *the* precedes. *Thet = that*, A.S. *pæt*, neuter of def. article. *See Ta.*
- Toun ; off toun, out of the town, away, 2. 132 ; of toun, from home, 7. 632.**
- Toung, *s.*** tongue, 17. 7.
- Tour, *s.*** tower, 1. 530, 9. 454, 533, 10. 436, 473 ; the Tower of London, 20. 39 ; *pl.* Touris, 9. 451.
- Tournys, *pr. s.*** turns, 3. 167.
- To-vauerand, *pres. pt.*** wandering in different directions, 7. 302\*, 331. *See Vauerand.*
- Tow, *v. to*** tow, 17. 408.
- Toward, *prep.*** towards, 1. 83, 5. 376, 11. 477.
- Towme, *s.*** tomb, 20. 293, 589.
- Townnys, *s. pl.*** tuns, *in E.*, 5. 403 (*footnote*). *See Tunnys.*
- Townys, *s. pl.*** towns, 11. 138. *See Toun.*
- Townys, *gen.*** tun's, 17. 618 (E.). *See Tunnys, Townnys.*
- Towris, *s. pl.*** towers, 9. 451. *See Tour.*
- Towting, *s.*** tooting, noise of a horn, 19. 604 (H.). *See Tutling.*
- Toym, *s.*** leisure, 5. 642. Icel. *tóm*, emptiness, leisure ; *tómr*, empty ; Dan. *tom*, empty ; Scot. *toom*, empty (Burns).
- Trace, *for* Traiss, 6. 553 (E.).**
- Traine, *s.*** train, i.e. enticement into an ambush, 19. 360. *See Trane.*
- Traiss, trace, track, 6. 553, 9. 580.**

- Traist, *adj.* trusty, worthy of trust, 1. 627.
- Traist, *v.* to trust, 4. 327 (*footnote*) ; *pt. s.* Traistit, 5. 527 (E.) ; Traisty, 2. 250, 3. 673, 8. 396 (E.) ; 2 *p. s. pt.* ye trusted, 1. 125. Icel. *treysta*, to rely on.
- Traistly, *adv.* verily, 3. 515.
- Trammys, *s. pl.* (written ‘trāmys’ in MS. C., and certainly an error for ‘trānys’ or ‘tranys’), cranes, i.e. machines for lifting heavy weights, 17. 245. Observe the readings *cransys* (may be read as *tranys*), E. ; and *traines*, H. The *t* is correct, being the Scandinavian spelling. The English *crane* = Icel. *trani*, Swed. *trana*.
- Trane, *s.* a plot, stratagem, lit. a train, 8. 440, 10. 513, 17. 49. *See* Traine.
- Tranonting, *s.* a stratagem of war, a wile, especially used of a forced march so as to take an enemy by surprise, 7. 508, 608.
- Tranontit, *pt. s.* surprised by a forced march, 18. 360; *see also* 7. 306 (*footnote*). Apparently the F. pres. pt. *trainant* (i.e. drawing, hence, beguiling) used as a verb. *See* Trane.
- Tranontyne, *s.* 19. 694. The same as the above.
- Trappit, *pp.* armed (said of horses), furnished with trappings, equipped, 14. 289, 16. 185, 18. 17.
- Trass, *s.* trace, track, 6. 583, 7. 67, 19. 758. *See* Trace.
- Trast, *adj.* trusty, confident, 9. 381, 10. 270; secure, 14. 466. Icel. *traustr*, trusty.
- Trast, *s. tryst*, 17. 36.
- Trast, 1 *p. s. pr.* I trust, 7. 179 ; *pt. s.* Trastit, 5. 530. *See* Traist.
- Trast, *imp. pl.* trust ye ; or perhaps *assouerans trast* = the trust of assurance, 11. 309. *See* above.
- Trastar, *adj.* more secure, 17. 273.
- Trastly, *adv.* securely, 7. 300, 15. 120, 19. 486, 573; trustfully, 4. 327; surely, confidently, 5. 81, 15. 126. *See* Trast, *adj.*
- Trastlyar, *adv.* with more confidence, 18. 36.
- Tratour, *s.* a traitor, 4. 19.
- Tratoury, *s.* treachery, 4. 22 ; Tratory, 10. 327.
- Travail, *s.* trouble, 18. 233. *See* Trawaill, Trawell.
- Traualand, *pres. pt.* toiling, wandering, 6. 380, 7. 243 ; Travaland, toiling, 11. 369, 17. 734 ; fighting, 9. 673 ; Traualande, travelling, 6. 375 ; Travalland, toiling, 5. 223 ; wandering, 7. 241 ; Travalit, toiled, 6. 27 ; beset, troubled, vexed, 4. 149, 9. 55 ; *pt. pl.* harassed, 10. 157 ; toiled, 9. 165 ; travelled, 18. 552 ; *pp.* Traualit, toiled, 7. 376 ; troubled, distressed, 20. 328 ; harassed, 7. 298.
- Trauersit, *pt. pl.* traversed, went, 17. 532. *See* Trawersit.
- Trawaill, *v.* to travel, journey, 1. 325 ; *pr. pl.* Trawaill, travail, work hard, 4. 147 ; *pt. s.* Trawayllyt, travailed, endeavoured, 1. 97 ; *pp.* Trawayllyt, vexed, sorely oppressed, 20. 328, 329 (E.). *See* Traualand.
- Trawail, *s.* travel, journey, 4. 48 ; Trawailje, labour, effort, 3. 298 ; hardship, 1. 23 ; *pl.* Trawalys, travails, toils, 1. 306. *See* Travail, Trawell.
- Trawailland, *pres. part.* travailing, taking trouble, 2. 571. *See* Traualand.
- Traualand, *pres. pt.* travelling, or toiling, 9. 673 (E.). *See* Traualand.
- Trawale, *v.* to harass, trouble, 6. 602. *See* above.
- Traweillyt, *pt. s.* travailed, worked hard, 2. 580, 3. 278. *See* Trawaill.
- Trawell, *s.* travail, labour, toil, 4. 664, 6. 23. *See* Trawaill.
- Trawelling, *s.* travelling, journeying about, 2. 283.

- Trawersit, *pt. s.* crossed over, went in a zigzag direction, 19. 353. *See Trauersit.*
- Tray, *s.* vexation, 18. 233. A.S. *trega*, vexation.
- Trayn, *s.* train, plot, 6. 397. *See Traine, Trane.*
- Trayne, *ger.* to draw, entice, 19. 354. F. *trainer*, to drag.
- Tre, *s.* wood (lit. tree), 3. 584; *pl.* Treis, trees, 11. 298; branches, pieces of wood, 13. 238.
- Tresonabill, *adj.* treasonable, 5. 550.
- Trespass, *s.* sin, 12. 485.
- Trespassit, *pp.* done amiss, 11. 553.
- Tret, *v.* to treat, handle, manage, 1. 35; *ger.* to treat, 19. 129; *pt. s.* Tretit, treated, made terms, arranged, 3. 741, 5. 514, 10. 261, 481, 820, 13. 543, 674, 15. 520; 17. 19, 315; *pt. pl.* made a treaty, 4. 172; *pp.* Tretit, treated of, 20. 149; assured by treaty, 4. 177; Tretyt, treated, 1. 222.
- Treating, *s.* treating, i. e. negotiations, 14. 8.
- Tretis, *s.* treaty, 11. 35; proposals of treaty, 10. 125; Tretiss, treaty, 19. 145; Tretyss, 20. 47.
- Treuth, *s.* troth, trust; *gaf treuth*, believed, 4. 223.
- Trew, *v.* to trow, trust, believe, 2. 326; *pt. s.* Trewit, 17. 228.
- Trew, *for* Trewis, truce, 19. 180 (E.). *See below.*
- Trewis, *s. pl.* lit. truces, *as sing.* a truce, 14. 96, 15. 126, 19. 186, 200; *used as a plural*, 19. 200 (*see l. 202*). O.F. *truve*, *triuve*, *trive* (*see trive in Burguy*); whence *pl. trèves* in mod. French.
- Trewys, *s.* truce, 15. 102 (E.). *See above.*
- Treyn, *adj.* wooden, 10. 361. *See Tre.*
- Treyteris, *an error for* Tretis, 10. 125 (E.).
- Tribill, *adj.* treble, 18. 30 (E.).
- Tribulit, *pp.* troubled, 4. 58.
- Trist, *s.* assigned place of meeting, 7. 230, 8. 212, 17. 74; *set trist*, appointed, 7. 235.
- Tropellis, *s. pl.* troops, small companies, 13. 275. Cf. F. *troupeau*, a troop; O.F. *tropel*, dimin. of O.F. *trope*, a troop; which see in Burguy.
- Troplys, *for* Tropellis, q. v., 13. 275 (E.).
- Trow, *v.* to believe, 2. 257, 4. 237, 7. 143; 1 *pt. s. pr.* I trow, believe, 2. 111, 11. 429; Trowis, I believe, 12. 294; *pr. s.* Trowis, believes, 5. 530; *pt. s.* Trowit, believed, 4. 308, 671; trusted, 2. 472; *pt. pl.* Trowit, believed, 4. 11, 11. 168, 19. 420; expected, 2. 560; Trowyt, 1. 87; *pp.* Trowit, trusted, 19. 301. A.S. *treƿian*, to trust.
- Trowis, *s.* a truce, 15. 102. *See Trewis.*
- Trowtis, *s. pl.* trout, 2. 577.
- Trumpe, *v.* to sound the trumpet, 8. 293; *pres. pt.* Trumpand, 9. 137; *pt. pl.* Trumpit, 17. 356, 19. 429.
- Trunsioune, *s.* truncheon, short staff, 16. 129. O.F. *tronchon*, a short piece; from Lat. *truncus*.
- Trwmp, *v.* to sound the charge on the trumpets, 12. 491. *See Trumpe.*
- Trwmpit, *pp.* deceived, 19. 712. F. *tromper*, to deceive.
- Trymbill, *v.* to tremble, 2. 295; Trymmyll, *pr. pl. subj.* may tremble, 12. 268.
- Tryplit, *pp.* trebled, 18. 30.
- Tuelf, twelve, 10. 547, 640.
- Tuk, *pt. s.* took, 1. 528; *pl.* Tuk, 14. 96; Tuk land, landed, 16. 551.
- Tulȝeit, *pt. pl.* harassed, 4. 152. Apparently related to F. *touiller*, to mingle together confusedly, to shuffle together (Cotgrave); cf. Scot. *tuilȝie*, a broil, a struggle, tussle.

- Tumb, *s.* tomb, 20. 293 (E.).  
*Numbered* 20, 287 in P.
- Tume, *s.* leisure, 17. 735. *See* Toym.
- Tummyll, *v.* to tumble, overthrow, 9. 452; to fall, 13. 29; *pt. s.* Tumlit, tumbled, 8. 513; *pt. pl.* Tumlit, caused to tumble, 4. 182; threw down, 10. 57; *pp.* Tumlit, tumbled, 4. 229; overthrown, 9. 325, 10. 501; Tummyllyt, 4. 182 (E.).
- Tunnys, *s. gen.* tun's; *tunnys quantity*, contents of a tun, 17. 618; *pl.* tuns, 5. 403.
- Turnit, *pt. s.* turned, 7. 631, 8. 351; Turnyt, 16. 125, 18. 494; *pl.* Turnit, 7. 601, 9. 263, 19. 367; Turnyt, 15. 382, 16. 604, 18. 290, 20. 439; *pp.* Turnit, turned, 8. 137, 19. 447; returned, 7. 351; Turnyt, returned, 18. 343; turned, 20. 555.
- Turss, *v.* to truss, pack up, 17. 859; *pt. pl.* Tursit, 5. 391, 9. 360; *pp.* Tursit, 5. 395, 17. 884. O.F. *torser, trosser*, to pack up.
- Turturis (*or, better, Turture*), *s.* a turtle-dove, reading in E. for Thris-till, 5. 4 (footnote).
- Tutlyng, *s.* tooting, blowing of a horn, 19. 604. Swed. *tuta*, to blow a horn.
- Twa, *num.* two, 1. 76; Tway, 14. 369.
- Twapart, *or* Twa part, lit. two parts, i.e. two-thirds, 5. 47, 369, 17. 103.
- Twasum, *for* Twa men, 10. 19 (E.).
- Twiss, *adv.* twice, 12. 176. *See* Twyss.
- Twist, *s.* a bough, a twig, small branch, 7. 188.
- Twimmyl, *v.* to tumble, hurl, overthrow, 10. 496, 18. 418. *See* Tum-myll.
- Twyn, *adj.* twain, two, 4. 691.
- Twyss, *adv.* twice, 3. 242. *See* Twiss.
- Tyd, *v.* to betide, happen, 1. 127, 12. 272, 366; Tyde, 4. 543.
- Tyd, *s.* time, 3. 24, 19. 636; Tyde, 10. 185, 16. 252. A.S. *tid*, time.
- Tyll, *prep. to*, 1. 10; *to, for*, 3. 36. (Common as sign of the gerund, and as prep.) Icel. *til*, Dan. *til*, Swed. *till*.
- Tym, *s.* time, 6. 370; *mony tym*, often, 9. 99.
- Tymbrys, *s. pl.* timbers, i.e. crests of wood, 19. 396. *See* the note, p. 607.
- Tymmyred, *pt. pl.* barricaded with wood, 4. 164 (footnote).
- Tyne, *v.* to lose, 1. 108, 211, 607; 3. 33, 39; 7. 21, 9. 77, 12. 374, 17. 847, 19. 693. Icel. *týna*, to lose. *See* Tynt.
- Tynsale, *s.* loss, damage, harm, 5. 450, 503; 12. 95, 17. 900, 19. 811; Tynsell, 11. 488, 12. 141; Tynsell, loss, 3. 647; Tynsele, loss, 19. 499. From Icel. *týna*, to lose; the suffix is probably the A.S. *scél*, opportunity, used abstractedly.
- Tynt, *pt. s.* lost, 3. 248, 8. 350; *pl.* 13. 22; *pp.* 7. 45, 10. 471, 12. 567, 17. 458, 19. 681.
- Tyre, *a badly written word, meant for, and may be read as Cyre, s. leather*, 12. 22 (E.).
- Tysday, Tuesday, 15. 101.
- Tyt, *adv.* quickly, 2. 4. *See* Tit.
- Tyt, *v.* to pull, snatch, *bad tyt hym doun*, bade (men) pull him down from his horse, 16. 132. *See* Tit.
- Tyhandis, *s. pl.* tidings, 1. 346. *See* Tithandis.
- Tytar, *adv.* sooner, rather, 2. 518; Tytar, more quickly, 11. 225. *See* Tyt, Tit.
- V. Note the use of this letter for *w*, both at the beginning of words (as in *wan* = *wan* = *won*), and in the middle (as in *arravis* = *arra-wis* = arrows). So also *w* is constantly written both for *v* and *u*.

Vach, *s.* watch, guard, 9. 318, 17. 38; *pl.* Vachis, watches, guards, 6. 44, 9. 375, 10. 403, 19. 550; sentinels, 7. 302.

Vach, *v.* to watch, guard, 6. 62, 87; *pr. s.* Vachis, watches, 17. 930; *pp.* Vachit, guarded, 19. 573.

Vading, *s.* wading, 7. 56.

Vafand, *pres. pt.* waving, 9. 245; Vaffand, 11. 193, 513.

Vageowris, *s. pl.* hired soldiers, mercenaries, 11. 48. So named from their *wages*.

Vaid, *v.* to wade, 9. 356.

Vailȝeand, *adj.* valiant, 17. 218 (H.).

Valayis, *s. pl.* vallies, 11. 185.

Vald, *pt. s.* would, 5. 126. (Common.)

Valè, *s.* valley, 7. 4. (A disyllabic word.)

Valk, *v. (transitive)*, to wake, cause to waken, 7. 179. (Note.—I believe the *l* in this word to be due to the fact that scribes wrote *kk* in such a manner that it looks like *lk*. Thus *valk* = *vakk*, riming with *tak*. In the same way, *valknyt* (see below) should rather be *vaknyt*. Similarly, in Bernardus, &c., ed. Lumby, E. E. T. S., p. 19, l. 38, the word printed as *spelk*, is really *spekh*, i.e. speak. This imperfect *kk* (written, as I said, like *lk*) is also used by some scribes to represent a capital *h* at the beginning of a word, in which case no editor would be so hardy as to print *lk*. Other examples of *lk* written for *kk* occur in the word *Anawlk* = awake, in Dunbar's *Thrissill* and *Rois*, stanza 2; and in *Lancelot* of the *Laik*, ed. Skeat, l. 1049. In course of time, the scribes certainly regarded the symbol *lk* as standing for *uk*, so that we even find the extraordinary form *wolx*, for *woux*, i.e. waxed, grew, in G. Douglas, *Prol.* to xii. *Æneid*, ll. 136, 187; whence came also the still stranger

form *walxis* (!), id. 151. I wish to record my belief that the words *valk*, *valknyt* (in the Bruce) should rather have been printed *vakk*, *vakknyt*, but I have allowed the familiar forms to stand, in case I should be wrong. At any rate, the *l* is surely not to be sounded like the *ll* in *call*.) See Walk.

Valknyt, *pt. s.* awoke, 7. 210, 291; *pl.* 6. 296. (This form is intransitive, as shewn by the insertion of *n*; cf. the suffix *-nan* in Mæso-Gothic verbs.) And see note to Valk.

Vall, *s.* wall, 10. 491; *pl.* Vallis, 6. 445.

Valȝe. See Avalȝe.

Van, *pt. s.* won, 7. 88. See Wan.

Vangard, *s.* vanguard, 11. 164. See Vaward.

Vantis, *pr. s.* lacks, lit. wants, 5. 422.

Vanys, *s. pl.* veins, 7. 173.

Vappyn, *s.* weapon, 5. 594; *pl.* Vapnys, 5. 393, 8. 55, 9. 711, 10. 675, 11. 592, 12. 103.

Var, *pt. pl.* were, 5. 433, 12. 390. (Common.)

Vard, *s.* ward, 9. 339.

Vardane, *s.* warden, 4. 474, 5. 474, 6. 507, 18. 215; *pl.* Vardanis, 9. 432; regents, 16. 33; Vardanys, guardians, 20. 146.

Vardany, *s.* wardenship, 8. 362.

Varisoun, *s.* reward, 10. 526. See Warysoun.

Varn, *v.* to warn, 6. 65; *pp.* Varnit, warned, 7. 533. A.S. *warnian*, *wearnian*, to warn.

Varnasyng, *s.* garniture, provision, store, 6. 350. See Varnysit, Varnysing.

Varnist, *pp.* stored, furnished, 4. 102; Varnyst, 10. 311; *pt. s.* Varnyst, stored, 9. 287; *pl.* filled with stores, 16. 215. A short form of *varnysit*, q.v.

- Varnyng, *s.* (1) warning, 5. 537, 11. 39; (2) refusal, opposition, 16. 260. *See Varn, Varnyt.*
- Varnysing, *s.* provision, 17. 294. *See Varnasyng.*
- Varnysit, *pp.* provided, furnished, 6. 120. O.Fr. *warnir*, to provide; *F. garnir*. *See Varnist.*
- Varnysoun, *s.* garrison, 10. 325. *See Warnisoun.*
- Varnyt, *pt. pl.* refused, 18. 332. A.S. *wyrnan*, to refuse.
- Varpit, *pp.* thrown, 11. 602. A.S. *wærpan*, to throw.
- Varrand, *s.* place of refuge, place of safety, shelter, 6. 422, 7. 347, 8. 485, 9. 624, 10. 453, 15. 214, 17. 581. The same word as E. *warrant*, sb. O.F. *warant*, a protector; *warir*, to guard.
- Varrar, *adj. comp.* more aware, more cautious, more on the watch, 5. 546. A.S. *wær*, aware, wary.
- Varray, *v.* to war against, 8. 24; Varra, 8. 365, 9. 27; *pr. s.* Varrayis, wars, 12. 363. *See werreye* in Chaucer, Kn. Tale, 626, 686.
- Varyit, *pt. s.* cursed, 7. 227. A.S. *wergian*, to curse.
- Vassalage, *s.* prowess, 16. 4. O.F. *vassalage*, prowess; *vassal*, a fighting man.
- Vassand, *s.* weazand, 7. 584.
- Vat, 1 *p. s. pr.* I know, 5. 537; 2 *p. s. pr.* thou knowest, 5. 241. A.S. *ic wát*, I know.
- Vath, *s.* danger, peril, 5. 418, 7. 305. Icel. *váði*, danger, peril; Dan. *raade*, danger; Swed. *våda*, an unlucky accident.
- Vatit, *pt. s.* waited for, 5. 36, 640; waited, 5. 523.
- Vattir, *s.* water, river, a stream, 6. 56, 7. 5, 18, 288; 19. 319.
- Vauerand, *pres. pt.* wavering, i. e. wandering about, idle, loitering, straggling, 7. 112; Vaverand, wavering, 12. 185.
- Vaueryng, *s.* swerving, going astray, 6. 584. Lit. 'wavering.'
- Vaueryt, *pt. s.* wavered, wandered about, 7. 41.
- Vaward, *s.* vanguard, 8. 48, 11. 306, 342; 12. 11, 337, 435; Vawarde, 8. 343.
- Vax, *s.* wax (for candles?), 11. 119.
- Vax-cayme, *s.* wax-comb, honey-comb, 11. 368.
- Vay, *s. way*, 7. 392; *pl.* Vayis, 18. 114.
- Vayd, *v.* to wade, 7. 19.
- Vaykar, *adj. comp.* weaker, 8. 340.
- Vayn, *s.* wain, waggon, 10. 164, 166, 181, 203.
- Vayn, *s.* weening, intention, purpose, 7. 2, 225. *See note to ii. 471, p. 554. See Veyn.*
- Vayndist, *pt. pl.* recoiled, gave way, retreated, 12. 109, 13. 217, 16. 629. O.F. *wandir*, to turn aside, escape; of Teutonic origin; cf. G. *wenden*, to turn. *See note to xiii. 217, p. 585.*
- Veddir, *s.* wether, sheep, 7. 152, 164.
- Veid, *s.* weeds, clothing, i. e. armour, 16. 580. A.S. *wéð*, clothing.
- Veill, *adv.* well, 11. 643; very, 9. 498.
- Veillfair, *s.* welfare, 8. 377.
- Veir, *pt. pl.* were, 18. 296. *See Var.*
- Veirdis, *s. pl.* wierds, i. e. destinies, fates, 18. 46.
- Velany, *s.* disgrace (lit. villainy), 9. 545.
- Velcom, *adj.* welcome, 7. 244.
- Velcummyng, *s.* welcome, 18. 329.
- Velcummyt, *pt. s.* welcomed, 16. 41.
- Velde, *v.* to wield, 11. 97.
- Vem, *s.* spot, stain, 15. 250. A.S. *wam*, a stain.
- Vench, *s.* a wench, a girl, 10. 554.

- Vencuss, *v.* to vanquish, 11. 134 ; *ger.* 20. 541 ; *pp.* Vencust, 7. 373, 8. 359, 9. 83.
- Vend, *v.* to wend, go, 4. 609, 5. 561, 7. 399.
- Vend, 1 *p. s. pt.* weened, supposed, expected, 7. 361 ; *pt. pl.* 6. 24, 9. 606.
- Venesoun, *s.* venison, 2. 574, 3. 472 ; Venysoun, 7. 496.
- Vengeans, vengeance, 6. 506.
- Vengit, *pp.* avenged, 19. 151.
- Venyng, *s.* weening, supposition, uncertain expectation, 4. 765.
- Venysoun, venison, 7. 496. *See* Venesoun.
- Veriour, a warrior, 5. 85.
- Verray, *adj.* true, 2. 87.
- Vertwis, *s. pl.* vertues, 10. 295.
- Verty, *adj.* prudent, 18. 439. *Short for Averty*, q. v.
- Very, *adj.* weary, 12. 143, 17. 459, 475, 483.
- Ves, was, 4. 94. *See* Wes.
- Veschall, *s.* vessels (collectively), 11. 117 ; Vessell, 11. 117 (H.). F. *vaisselle*, plate ; see Chaucer, C. T. Group B, 3338.
- Vest, *adj.* western, 16. 550.
- Veyle, *adv.* well, 1. 118. *See* Veill.
- Veyn, *s.* doubt, 6. 162. *See* Vayn.
- Veyr, *s.* war, 9. 292. *See* Weir, Wer.
- Viage, *s.* voyage, 5. 207, 14. 117.
- Vicht, *adj.* vigorous, nimble, valiant, 4. 534, 5. 491, 6. 482, 8. 267, 9. 327, 10. 45, 17. 34, 18. 125. *See* Wicht.
- Victor, *s.* victory, 4. 277, 8. 288, 12. 295, 313 ; 18. 549 ; Victour, 8. 255, 380 ; Victory, 15. 89.
- Vif, *s.* woman, 4. 302 ; *pl.* Vifis, wives, 12. 246.
- Vikkid, *adj.* sorry, poor, unskilful, 9. 76 ; Vikkit, cruel, 5. 12.
- Vikkidness, *s.* poorness of spirit, fear, weakness, 12. 280.
- Vilfull, *adj.* willing, anxious, 9. 625.
- Vilfully, *adv.* willingly, 8. 462, 11. 209.
- Vill, *adj.* wild, at a loss, 7. 2. Icel. *villr*, wild, bewildered, astray.
- Vilonisly, *adv.* villainously, wickedly, 5. 164 ; Vilonyly, 5. 150.
- Virk, *v.* to work, 4. 744 ; to act, 11. 328 ; to influence, 4. 700.
- Visage, *s.* face, 12. 576.
- Viss, *s.* wise, way, 4. 363, 5. 429, 6. 492, 7. 262, 9. 29, 11. 180, 17. 874 ; *mony viss*, in many a way, 5. 78.
- Viss, *adj.* wise, 5. 267, 513 ; 9. 327, 10. 333.
- Viss, *adv.* wisely, 17. 52.
- Viss, *s.* a vice, defect, 6. 355.
- Vissill, *v.* to exchange, 12. 580. Icel. *vixla*, to cross ; cognate with A.S. *wrixlian*, to exchange, G. *wechseln*.
- Vist, *pt. s.* knew, 4. 771, 7. 66, 17. 41. *See* Vit.
- Vit, *pr. pl. subj.* may know, 7. 544 ; *pt. s.* Vist, knew, 4. 771, 7. 66, 17. 41. A.S. *witan*, to know.
- Vit, *s.* wit, wisdom, 4. 742, 6. 350, 9. 668, 10. 334.
- Vitalis, *s. pl.* victuals, 15. 92.
- Vittalit, *pt. pl.* victualled, stored, 4. 63.
- Vittandly, *adv.* knowingly, 11. 594. Lit. ‘wittingly.’
- Vittelleris, *s. pl.* foragers, 14. 407 ; Vittelouris, 14. 429.
- Vittely, *adv.* wisely (lit. wittily), 5. 264, 18. 158.
- Vittering, *s.* information; notice, especially correct information, sure knowledge, 4. 562, 5. 342, 509, 534 ; 6. 46, 9. 564, 10. 12, Icel. *vitra*, to reveal ; from *vitr*, wise.
- Vitterly, *adv.* certainly, 4. 771 ;

- Vittirly, 10. 350. Cf. Icel. *vitrliga*, wisely ; from *vitr*, wise.
- Vitting, *s.* knowledge, 4. 766, 5. 540. A.S. *witan*, to know.
- Vitty, *adj.* wise, 4. 694, 9. 345 ; prudent, 7. 134.
- Vittyng, *s.* knowledge, 14. 417 (C.), *footnote* ; information, 14. 261.
- Vmbecast, *v.* to consider, ponder upon the fact, 5. 552. Icel. *um*, around, about; *kasta*, to cast ; cf. E. to *cast about*.
- Vmbeset, *p. s.* beset round, beset, 9. 331, 706 ; Umbeset, laid in wait for, 14. 107 (H.) ; *pp.* beset round, 6. 535.
- Vmbestount, *adv.* sometimes, 7. 398. From A.S. *ymbe*, about, and *stund*, a time.
- Vmbethinkis ȝow, *imp. pl. refl.* bethink you, 5. 613 ; *pt. s. refl.* Vmbethought, bethought him, 5. 551, 6. 110, 7. 383, 16. 84, 17. 40, 771 ; *pl.* 19. 405. A.S. *ymp̄encan*, to think about.
- Umbeweround, *pp.* environed, 11. 640 (E.). See Enweroun.
- Vmquhile, *adv.* sometimes, 5. 441. A.S. *ymb*, about, and *hwil*, time.
- Vnabasitly, *adv.* boldly, undauntedly, 6. 20, 9. 394.
- Vnarmyt, *pp.* unarmed, 7. 552, 18. 506.
- Vnbondyn, *pp.* unbound, unfastened, 10. 382.
- Vncouth, *adj.* strange, with a strange appearance, 7. 554.
- Vndir ; *at vndir*, in subjection, 7. 365.
- Vndir-ta, till, *ger.* to be undertaken, 6. 348 ; Vndir-ta, 1 *p. s. pr.* I undertake to say, 11. 221 ; 1 *p. s. pr.* Vndirtak, I undertake to say, 15. 139 ; *pp.* Vndirtane, 6. 319.
- Vndirtane, *pp.* undertaken, 5. 331. See Vnderta.
- Vndirwardane, *s.* under-warden, 4. 400.
- Vnfair, *adj.* foul ; or perhaps *s.* ill success, 15. 123.
- Vnlkly, *adj.* unlikely, improbable, 12. 128.
- Vnmaid, *pp.* unmade, not made, 4. 608.
- Vnseill, *s.* misfortune, 10. 218, 17. 376 (H. ; see *footnote*). A.S. *unsél*, misfortune ; from *séл*, opportunity, luck.
- Vnslane, *pp.* unkilled, 10. 617.
- Vnspokyn of, *pp.* unmentioned, 15. 268.
- Vnvittandly, *adv.* unwisely, 6. 523 ; ignorantly, stupidly, 16. 248. See Vittandly.
- Vnwemmyt, *pp.* unscarred, 20. 372, 376. See Vem.
- Vnwisly, *adv.* unwisely, 11. 38.
- Vnworthy, *adj.* unworthy, 4. 196.
- Voce, *s.* voice, 11. 407, 12. 200.
- Vod, *s.* a wood, 5. 561, 6. 670, 7. 1, 541.
- Volageouss, *adj.* giddy, light of conduct, 8. 455, 10. 533. Cf. O.F. *volage*, changeable ; from Lat. *uolare*, to fly.
- Volf, a wolf, 6. 470.
- Vonand, *pres. part.* dwelling, 5. 499 ; Vonnand, 9. 501, 10. 160 ; *pt. s.* Vonnyt, dwelt, 10. 150. A.S. *wunian*, to dwell.
- Vonyng, *pp.* won, 11. 348 (*rubric*) ; Vonnyn, won, i. e. mown, ready for carrying, 10. 193.
- Vorde, *s.* word, speech, 15. 145 ; *pl.* Vordis, 11. 151.
- Vorthis, *pr. s.* becomes, 7. 174 ; *pt. s.* Vorthit, it became ; *vorthit him slep*, it became (necessary for him) to sleep, 7. 177 ; *pp.* Vorthyn, become, 4. 737. A.S. *weorðan*, to become, G. *werden*.
- Voude, *adj.* mad, 17. 106. A.S. *wód*, mad.

- Vounder, *s.* wonder, 4. 323; *as adr.* wondrously, extremely, 4. 130, 5. 135, 7. 225; Voundir, 9. 724.
- Voundis, *s. pl.* wounds, 11. 587, 15. 54.
- Voundit, *pp.* wounded, 4. 94, 5. 435, 9. 719, 10. 69, 17. 476, 809, 824.
- Vourdis, *s. pl.* words, 9. 752. *See Vorde.*
- Vox, *pt. s.* waxed, grew, 8. 391. A.S. *weaxan*, to grow; *pt. t. ic weōx.* *See Wox.*
- Vpcom, *s.* way up, lit. up-coming, 6. 167.
- Vpgang, *s.* way up, passage upwards, 6. 141, 8. 38.
- Vrang, *s.* wrong; *hass vrang*, hast wrong, i.e. art in the wrong, 16. 236.
- Vrangwisly, *adv.* wrongfully, 12. 363.
- Vrathar, *adj.* angrier, more wrathful, 16. 245.
- Vre, *s.* destiny, fate, luck, especially good luck, 1. 312, 2. 434, 6. 17, 377; 9. 68, 11. 405, 15. 376, 19. 611. O.F. *eur*, *aur*, chance, luck, from Lat. *augurium*, not from Lat. *hora*; whence F. *bonheur*, miswritten for *boneur*, good fortune. The note to 15. 376, p. 596, is wrong; the word *vre* has the same meaning in that passage as in all the rest, and the line means—‘had not good luck treated them so,’ i.e. assisted them. [The sense of ‘practice’ is not an uncommon meaning of *ure* in Middle English, but does not occur in Barbour. In that sense, *ure* is a different word, viz. the O.F. *eure* (*Roquefort*), a form of O.F. *oevre* (*Burguy*); from Lat. *opera*.]
- Vreichidly, *adv.* wretchedly, 7. 339.
- Vreichidnes, *s.* cowardice, unskilfulness, 9. 76.
- Vrechit, *adj.* poor, 9. 403.
- Vrichtis, *s. pl.* wrights, workmen, 16. 335.
- Vrit, *v.* to write, 10. 748; *pp.* Vritin, 9. 656, 11. 5.
- Vrought, *pt. s.* wrought, did, 6. 523, 8. 423; *pl.* 17. 526; *pp.* Vrocht, done, 5. 101.
- Vsage, usage, custom, habit, 1. 114.
- Vtreyl, *adv.* utterly, 10. 92, 15. 291.
- Vycht, *adj.* vigorous, 10. 430. *See Vicht.*
- Vyde, *adj.* wide, 7. 47.
- Vyn, *v.* to win, acquire, get, 5. 11, 6. 329, 332; to defeat, conquer, 7. 532, 12. 47, 15. 295; to get in (a harvest), 10. 219; Vyn to, to attain to, reach, 15. 221.
- Vynde, *s.* wind, 4. 443; Vynd, 15. 278, 284.
- Vyndland, *pres. pt.* whirling round, turning over and over, 17. 721. Cf. prov. Eng. *windle*, a wheel for winding yarn, Halliwell; Icel. *vinla*, to wind wool; G. *wendelbaum*, an axle-tree, Dan. *vindelbugt*, a spiral twist; all from the root to *wind*.
- Vyndowis, *s. pl.* windows, 12. 402.
- Vyne, *s.* wine, 4. 407, 11. 119, 14. 229.
- Vyne-sellar, *s.* wine-cellars, 5. 399.
- Vynkit, *pt. s.* slept lightly (lit. winked), 7. 182.
- Vyntir, *s.* winter, 4. 338; *vyntir-tide*, the winter-season, 5. 1.
- Vyre, *s.* a crossbow-bolt, 5. 595, 623. “*Vire*, the arrow called a *quarrell*, used only for the crossbow;” Cotgrave. From F. *virer*, to turn.
- Wa, *s. wa*; *wa worth*, wo worth, wo be to, 1. 515.
- Wa, *adj.* woful, sorry, sad, 1. 348, 3. 410, 9. 42, 724; 10. 464, 11. 543, 12. 141, 13. 478, 15. 3, 19. 42;

- loath, 16. 650. This adjectival use of *wa* or *wo* is not uncommon in Middle English. Ex. "Hys clerk was *wo* to do that dede;" Rob. of Brunne, Hand. Synne, 5771.
- Wach**, *v.* to watch, guard, 15. 128; *pr. pl.* Wachis, 10. 572; *pt. pl.* Wachit, kept watch, 19. 402; *pp.* Wachit, kept, guarded, 14. 455, 17. 324.
- Wachis**, *s. pl.* guards, watches, sentinels, 3. 187, 15. 127, 17. 481, 796; scouts, 19. 442.
- Waer**, *adj. comp.* more sad, 16. 245 (E.). *See Wa*, adj.
- Wageouris**, *s. pl.* mercenary soldiers, 11. 48 (E.). *See Vageowris*.
- Waid**, *ger.* to wade over, 19. 760.
- Waik**, *ger.* to wake, 7. 179 (E.).
- Waik**, *adj.* weak; *waik and worthy*, weak and strong alike, 17. 931.
- Wailȝe que wailȝe** (*misprinted wailȝe quod wailȝe in J.*), avail what may, 9. 147 (E.). *See Avalȝe.*
- Wair**, *pt. pl.* were, 5. 148, 9. 689, &c.
- Wais**, *s. pl.* ways, 6. 436.
- Waist**, *adj.* waste, empty, 7. 151 (E.).
- Waith**, *s.* danger, peril, 5. 418 (E.), 7. 305 (E.). *See Vath.*
- Waknyt**, *pt. s.* awoke, 7. 210 (E.), 291 (E.). *See Valknyt.*
- Walageouss**, *a reading in E. for Volageouss*, 8. 455, 10. 553.
- Wald**, 1 *p. s. pt.* would, 1. 11; *Wald fayne*, would gladly, 1. 11; *pt. pl.* Wald, 16. 202. (Common.)
- Wale** (disyllable—*wa-lē*), *s.* a valley, 19. 414. *See Vale.*
- Walk**, *s.* watch, guard, 17. 38 (E.). [*Should rather be wakk; see Valk.*]
- Walk**, *v. trans.* to watch, 15. 128 (E.); *pres. s.* watches, 17. 930 (E.); *pt. pl.* Walkyt, watched, 17. 324 (E.); *pp.* Walkyt, watched, guarded, 14. 455 (E.); Walkit,
- watched (with due ceremonies), 13. 513. (*Should rather be wakk, wakkyl, and walkit; see Valk.*)
- Walkyn**, *v.* to awake, 6. 95, 604. Properly intransitive, in which sense it means to awake from sleep; here it means, to cause to awake from sleep. (It should rather be *wakkyn*; see Valk.)
- Wallis**, *s. pl.* walls, 9. 335.
- Wallyt**, *pp.* walled, 1. 107, 2. 220.
- Walopyt**, *pt. pl.* galloped, 2. 440. *See Romans of Partenay*, ed. Skeat, note to l. 4827.
- Walour**, valour, 1. 451, 467.
- Waltering**, *pres. pt.* weltering, rolling, 3. 700, 719 (*footnote*).
- Wan**, *pt. s.* conquered, 1. 537, 551; won, 9. 651; *pl.* won, 1. 25; **Wane**, defeated, 3. 250. Used like mod. Eng. *get*, as in *wan avay* = got away, 16. 555; *wan our* = got over, 9. 405.
- Wandyst**, *pt. pl.* recoiled, retreated, gave way, 12. 109 (E.), 13. 217 (E.), 16. 629 (E.). *See Vayndist.*
- Wane**, *s.* weening, thought, 7. 2 (E.). *See Vayn.* A.S. *wén*.
- Wane**, *s.* wain, waggon, 11. 25. A.S. *wágn*.
- Wane**, *s.* quantity, 17. 249; **Wayne**, 16. 454. It occurs in Chevy Chase, 1. 74; and see other examples in Stratmann, s.v. *wán*.
- Wantag**, *s.* advantage, 8. 151 (*rubric*).
- Wapnys**, *s. pl.* weapons, 10. 679, 11. 76; **Wapynnys**, 11. 592 (E.).
- Wapped**, *an error in H. for Warped*, i.e. threw, 3. 642 (*footnote*).
- Wappyt**, *pt. s.* shot quickly, threw quickly, 17. 691 (E.). MS. C. has *swappit*.
- War**, *s.* war. *See Wer.*
- War**, *adj.* aware, 3. 12; wary, 10. 333. A.S. *wær*.
- War**, *s.* ware, merchandise, 19. 194.

- War, worse, 13. 219.
- War, *pt. pl.* were, 4. 353; *pt. s. subj.* would be, 3. 341; *war* him weill or *war* him wa, whether it were well or ill for him, 16. 650. *See Na war, Ne war.*
- Warand, *v.* to protect, 2. 504. O.F. *garantir, warantir*, to warrant, protect.
- Warand, *s.* warrant, security, protection, 2. 502; safety, 20. 604; place of safety, 19. 679. *See Warrand.*
- Ward, *s.* guardianship of a minor, 12. 320.
- Ward, *s.* guard, post, 17. 627, *pl.* Wardis, wards, places to be guarded, 17. 349.
- Wardane, *s.* warden, regent, 14. 512, 17. 738, 18. 215 (E.); *pl.* Wardanys, regents, 16. 33 (E.).
- Wardanry, *s.* wardenship, office, 8. 362 (E.).
- Warisoun, *s.* reward, 20. 544. *See Warysoun.*
- WORLD, world, 1. 240; *pl.* Warldys, 1. 404. In the latter place I prefer the reading *warlid* (H.); to be pronounced nearly as a disyllable, with trilled *r*.
- Warn, *v.* to refuse, 4. 392; *pt. s.* Warnyt, opposed, 2. 137; gave notice to, 10. 202; warned, 3. 451; *pp.* forewarned, 17. 114. A.S. *wyrnan*, to warn, refuse.
- Warnisoun, *s.* garrison, 10. 325 (H.).
- Warnist, *pp.* provided, 17. 713; Warnyst, stored, 10. 311 (E.); provisioned, 4. 102 (*footnote*); Warnysyt, stored, 16. 215 (E.).
- Warnysing, *s.* store, *in E.*, 6. 350 (*footnote*).
- Warnysone, *s.* provision, store, 17. 294 (E.).
- Warpyt, *pt. s.* threw, cast, 3. 642. A.S. *weorpan*, to throw.
- Warrand, *s.* shelter, place of safety, refuge, 10. 247, 10. 691 (E.); Warrande, 13. 434; *to warrand*, in safety, 13. 710.
- Warrant, *pres. pt.* warring upon, 9. 649. *See Warray.*
- Warray, *v.* to war against, 5. 220, 14. 39; to make war, 20. 522; Warra, to war upon, 9. 646; *pt. s.* Warrant, warred, 9. 650; *2 p. pl. pt.* Warrait, ye warred upon, 9. 744; *pres. pt.* Warrayand, making war, 1. 140. *See Varray.*
- Warrying, *s.* warring, struggle, 4. 650; Warrayng, warfare, 5. 140.
- Warrer, *adj.* worse, *in E.*, 5. 546 (*footnote*).
- Waryit, *pt. s.* cursed, 7. 228 (E.). A.S. *wergian*, to curse.
- Warysoun, *s.* reward, 2. 206, 10. 526 (E.); Warisoune, 20. 544. The O.Fr. *warison* or *garison* is properly security, from *warir* or *garir*, to secure; cf. A.S. *werian*, to fortify, protect. Sir W. Scott uses *warisson* to signify “a note of assault(!);” Lay of the Last Minstrel, iv. 24, which is, I suspect, a mere blunder. *Warysoun* is the same word as our *garrison*.
- Waslage, prowess, 1. 290. *See Wassalage.*
- Wass, *pt. s.* was, 3. 133, 7. 82, 8. 164.
- Wassalage, *s.* prowess, valour, hardihood, 6. 22, 12. 233, 13. 137; Wasselage, 1. 472, 3. 57. *See Vassalage.*
- Wat, *adj.* wet, 19. 692; Wate, 4. 380.
- Wat, 1 *p. s. pr.* I wot, I know, 1. 509, 2. 42, 4. 61, 12. 433, 17. 114; badly spelt Wate, 1. 509, 3. 521; *pr. s.* he knows, 1. 178, 4. 645, 10. 739, 11. 28; Wate, 1. 586, 3. 255; *2 p. pl. pr.* Wate, ye know, 2. 336.
- Wattir, *s.* water, 9. 683; *wattir to ma*, to make water, 13. 603.
- Watyt, *pt. pl.* watched, laid wait

- for, 1. 202. Lit. *waited for*; observe the context in the two following lines. O.Fr. *waiter*, *gaiter*, to watch, observe; *agaiter*, to set traps for; from O.H.G. *wahtan*, to guard.
- Wauch him, *v.* to watch, be on one's guard, 1. 520.
- Waverand, *pres. part.* wandering about, 13. 517; Wauerand, 7. 112 (E.). See Vauerand, and note to vii. 302\*, p. 570.
- Waw, *s.* wave, 3. 709; *pl.* Wawys, 3. 699; Wawis, 3. 714.
- Wawand, *pres. pt.* waving, 9. 245 (E.), 11. 193 (E.), 11. 513 (E.).
- Waward, *s.* vanguard, 8. 48 (E.), 12. 340. See Vaward.
- Wawerand, *pres. pt.* wavering, 12. 185 (E.).
- Waweryng, *s.* wavering, swerving, *in E.*, 6. 584 (*footnote*).
- Waweryt, *pt. s.* wavered, 7. 41 (E.).
- Wax, *s.* wax, 15. 94.
- Way, *adj.* woful, sorry, 8. 347. See Wa.
- Wayis, *s. pl.* ways; or *gen. sing.* way's, 7. 36.
- Wayn, *s.* wain, waggon, 10. 221, 223; 10. 164 (E.). See Vayn.
- Wayn, *in E.*, 7. 225 (*footnote*). See Vayn.
- Wayne, *s.* quantity, 16. 454. See Wane.
- Wayne, in, in vain, 4. 48.
- Waytand, *pres. pt.* watching, 13. 598; *pt. s.* Waytit, waited, 13. 520. See Vatit.
- We, *s.* a little wee bit, 13. 217; a short while, 7. 182; a small space, 17. 677.
- Wecht, *s.* weight, 17. 693.
- Weddir, *s.* a wether, sheep, 7. 115; 7. 152 (H.).
- Weddir, *s.* weather, 3. 387.
- Weddit, *pp.* wedded, 17. 29, 20. 69.
- Wedis, *s. pl.* weeds, i. e. garments, 11. 467, 13. 30.
- Weid, *s.* weed, i. e. clothing, 11. 130; *pl.* Wedis, garments, 11. 467, 13. 30.
- Weild, *v.* to possess, have full possession of, 12. 321.
- Weill, *adv.* well, 1. 21, 4. 61, 11. 50; quite, 1. 455; very, 1. 359, 4. 200, 11. 572, 16. 646; Weile, well, 1. 149. See Ma, *verb*.
- Weill, *adj.* a great number; *weill ost*, a great number of men, a large troop, 3. 15. The reading should rather be *feill*; cf. A.S. *fela*, many.
- Weill-fair, welfare, 12. 156; Weil-far, 8. 377 (E.).
- Weir, *pt. pl.* were, 6. 184, &c.; *pt. s. subj.* might be, 10. 208.
- Weir, *s.* war, 16. 178, 492, 19. 167.
- Weir, *s.* doubt, 4. 222, 9. 637, 13. 592, 730; 16. 110, 500; *but weir*, without doubt, 17. 496. Cf. Icel. *ravi*, caution.
- Welansy, *adj.* villainous, 19. 106 (E.).
- Welcummyne, *s.* welcome, 19. 794.
- Welcummyt, *pt. s.* welcomed, 11. 256.
- Weld, *v.* lit. to wield; *weld the se*, command the sea, get out to sea, 4. 445; *pres. pt.* Weldand, ruling, 5. 445.
- Wele, *adv.* well, 1. 202; nearly, about, 9. 520. See Weill.
- Weltir, *v.* to totter, be overturned, 11. 25; *pres. pt.* Weltrand, rolling (lit. *weltering*), 3. 719; Weltryt, rolled about, 3. 700. A frequentative formed from A.S. *wealtian*, to roll, totter (Lye).
- Wem, *s.* stain, spot, 15. 250 (E.). A.S. *wam*, a spot.
- Wemen, *s. pl.* women, 3. 734.
- Wemmyt, *pp.* blemished, scarred, 20. 368, 370. See above.
- Wench, *s.* a girl, 10. 554 (E.).

- Wencussing, *s.* defeat, 18. 206 (E.).
- Wencusyt, *pt. s.* vanquished, 1. 554; Wencust, 8. 117; *pp.* Wencusyt, 2. 332, 3. 196, 7. 373 (E.); Wencust, 18. 112. *See* Vencuss.
- Wend, *v.* to go, 2. 280, 4. 79, 17. 520; Went (*better spelt Wend*), 4. 257; *pt. pl.* Went, went, 4. 183; *pp.* Went, gone, 1. 589, 18. 495; *is went*, 9. 420.
- Wend, 1 *p. s. pt. t.* I supposed, weened, thought, 4. 210, 18. 50; *pt. s.* Wend, supposed, 1. 504, 15. 336; weened, 3. 453; thought, 3. 493; *pl.* Wend, 6. 664, 10. 749, 17. 463; Wende, supposed, 10. 392, 14. 428. *See* Wenys.
- Wene, *s.* supposition; *but wene*, without supposition, without doubt, 17. 251. A.S. *wén*, weening. *See* Vayn, Weyne.
- Weng, *c.* to avenge, 1. 461; *ger.* 18. 232 (E.); Wenge, 5. 79, 7. 35; *pt. s.* Wengyt, avenged, 1. 291; *pp.* Wengit, 8. 20.
- Wengeans, *s.* revenge, 19. 239.
- Wenys, *pr. pl.* ween, expect, 2. 288; suppose, think, 19. 695; *pt. s.* Wenit, imagined, 4. 771. *See* Wend. A.S. *wénan*, to imagine.
- Wep, *v.* to weep, 3. 350; *pt. s.* Wepit, wept, 20. 237.
- Wer, *v.* to wear, carry about, 1. 355.
- Wer, *v.* to defend, 16. 594. A.S. *werian*, to defend.
- Wer, *pt. pl. subj.* should be, 1. 3; War, 1. 4. *See* Be.
- Wer, *s.* war, 8. 495, 13. 405, 17. 243; *of wer*, in a warlike manner, 19. 787; *apon wer*, for war, 15. 420, 16. 346.
- Wer, *s.* doubt, 14. 187, 16. 181; *but wer*, without doubt, 2. 43. *See* Weir, Weyr.
- Wer, *adj. comp.* worse, 1. 269, 3. 302, 4. 22. *See* War.
- Werd, *s.* fate, destiny, 4. 148; *pl.* Werdis, fates, destinies, 2. 329, 3. 390, 11. 50, 18. 46 (E.). A.S. *wyrd*, fate.
- Were, *ger.* to defend, 20. 379. *See* Wer, to defend.
- Were, *v.* to wear, 16. 485. *See* Wer, to wear.
- Were, *s. war*, 4. 239, 16. 28. *See* Wer, war.
- Were, *s. spring*, 5. 1. This word for 'spring' is probably merely the Lat. *avr*; but the Scandinavian languages also have the word; cf. Icel. *vár*, Swed. *vår*, spring.
- Werraly, *adv.* verily, 15. 442. *See* below.
- Werray, *adj.* very, true, 19. 29, 20. 249.
- Werray, *v.* to make war on, fight against, 2. 462; *ger.* 8. 24 (E.); *pr. s.* Werrayis, makes war, 12. 363 (E.); *pt. s.* Werrayit, warred against, 3. 375, 9. 650 (E.); *pres. pt.* Werrayand, carrying on war, 3. 259; warring against, 9. 649 (E.). *See* Warray.
- Werrayour, *s. a warrior, reading in E. for Veriour*, 5. 85 (*footnote*).
- Werriours, *s. pl.* warriors, 20. 416.
- Wertu, *s.* virtue, 1. 367, 371.
- Wery, *adj.* weary, 2. 441, 10. 609.
- Weryfyd, *pp.* verified, 2. 87 (*footnote*).
- Wes, *pt. s.* was, 1. 8; Wess, 14. 145. *See* Be.
- Wesand, *s.* weasand, 7. 584 (E.). C. has Vassand, q.v.
- Wethir, *s.* a wether, 7. 152 (E.). *See* Weddir.
- Wey, *s.* a wee bit, 17. 677 (E.). *See* We.
- Weyn, *pr. pl.* ween, suppose, 11. 23; Weyne, 19. 688; 2 *p.* Weyn, ye suppose, 15. 413, 16. 137. *See* Wenys.
- Weyne, *s.* supposition, doubt; *but weyne*, without doubt, 19. 292; *withouten weyne*, without doubt, 13. 260, 17. 928. *See* Wene.

- Weyr, *s. doubt*, 7. 219. *See Weir, Wer.*
- Wheene, *adj. pl. few*, 3. 249 (H.), 9. 163 (H.). *See Quhoyn.*
- Whiddering, *for Quhedirand*, q. v., 17. 684 (H.).
- Whissilling, *for Quhistlyng or Quhestlyng*, 6. 87, 94 (H.).
- Wiage, *s. voyage, journey*, 3. 212, 4. 464, 8. 406. *See Viage.*
- Wicht, *adj. nimble, vigorous*, 7. 263, 9. 391, 10. 531, 11. 95, 12. 422, 14. 402, 15. 328, 16. 101, 17. 740. Cf. Icel. *vigr*, skilled in war, from *vig*, war; cf. Swed. *vig*, active.
- Wictaill, *s. victual, provisions*, 10. 319, 19. 639 (E.); *pl. Wictalis*, 3. 401; *Wictailis*, 9. 169 (E.); *Wictalis*, 3. 749.
- Wictaillit, *pp. victualled, furnished with provisions*, 3. 339.
- Wictory, *victory*, 1. 473, 3. 224. (Note.—In the former place, it is accented on the penultimate.)
- Wictour, *s. victory*, 4. 544 (*foot-note*), 8. 288 (E.), 15. 393 (E.); *pl. Wictours*, 16. 180 (E.).
- Wid, *adj. wide, great*, 3. 23.
- Wiffis, *s. pl. women*, 15. 536.
- Wigorously, *adv. vigorously*, 3. 142, 4. 88 (E.).
- Wikidly, *adv. severely*, 17. 809.
- Wikkitnes, *wickedness*, 1. 559; *Wikytnes*, 3. 566.
- Wilfull, *adj. willing*, 11. 266; *anxious*, 2. 354; *Willful*, 2. 345.
- Wilfully, *adv. with good will, heartily*, 2. 386, 3. 404; *willingly*, 2. 172.
- Wilkyt, *written for Wikkyt*, 9. 75 (E.). *See note on Valk*, s. v.
- Will, *s. desire*, 15. 79; *will*, 13. 515; *in will*, desirous, 12. 229; *pl. (but in sing. sense)*, *Willis*, 1. 618, 13. 515 (*footnote*), 19. 158. (The examples in 1. 618 and 19. 158 shew that the reading *willis* is probably the right one in 13. 515.)
- Will of red (lit. wild of rede or counsel), at a loss what to do, 1. 348, 3. 494, 13. 477; *Will off wane* (wild of weening or thought), at a loss, 1. 323, 2. 471, 7. 225. The Icel. *villr* (E. *wild*) properly means at a loss, astray, bewildered; cf. Icel. *fara villt*, to go astray. *See note to ii. 471*, p. 554.
- Willand, *pres. part. willing*; *weill willand*, well affected, 5. 41; 1. *p. s. pr. Will*, I desire, 7. 144.
- Wirk, *v. to work, act, contrive*, 12. 312, 17. 58. *See Wyrk.*
- Wisage, *s. visage, face*, 3. 58.
- Wiss, *adj. wise*, 8. 162. *See Wyss.*
- Wiss, *s. wise, way*, 2. 549, 8. 195, 14. 447. A.S. *wis*. *See Wyss.*
- Wist, *pt. s. knew*, 14. 56, 16. 75, 243, 487; *pl. 4. 102, 8. 481, 11. 536, 14. 359, 17. 2. 479*. *See Wyst. A.S. wiste*, pt. t. of *nitan*, to know.
- Wit, *v. to know*, 4. 673, 20. 507. *See Wyt.*
- Wit; *out of wit*, deprived of reason, 13. 143.
- With, *prep. against*, 1. 520; by means of, 1. 521; by, 2. 419, 18. 128.
- Withdrawin, *pp. withdrawn*, 13. 101.
- Withletting, *an error for Withsetting*, i. e. setting ambush, 14. 107 (*rubric in H. ; footnote*).
- Withsay, *v. to gainsay, oppose*, 1. 210.
- With-set, *pt. pl. beset*, 14. 107, 16. 512.
- Withstude, *pt. s. withstood, resisted*, 15. 298.
- With that, therewith, by that time, 15. 168.
- With-thi, *conj. on the condition that, provided that*, 1. 493, 2. 526, 270; 3. 290, 6. 354, 506; 9. 647, 14. 12. Cf. A.S. *mid ȝý*, on the condition that, where ȝý is the instrumental case of the demonstrative *se*.

- Wittaill, *s.* victuals, 4. 170, 17. 175; Wittale, 10. 312; Wittal, 14. 447; Wittalis, 4. 451. *See Wictail.*
- Wittalit, *pt. s.* victualled, 15. 263.
- Wittely, *adv.* wisely, 13. 571, 18. 196, 19. 467.
- Witteryng, *s.* information, news, 9. 702, 19. 770; Wittering, 16. 441, 18. 205, 358; intimation, notice, 4. 642, 10. 12 (E.), 14. 417. Cf. Icel. *vitran*, revelation; *vitra*, to reveal; *vitri*, wise.
- Witting, *s.* knowledge, 4. 359, 5. 534 (E.), 16. 350, 368.
- Wittirly, *adv.* certainly, 4. 226. *See Vitterly.*
- Wlispyt, *pt. s.* lisped, 1. 393, 399.
- Wmbeset, *pt. s.* beset, 9. 706 (E.). The prefix is the A.S. *ymbe*, around.
- Wmbethocht, *pp.* bethought; *wm-bethocht ȝow*, bethought yourselves, considered, 1. 92; *pt. s.* Wmbethocht him, bethought himself, 3. 352; *pres. pt.* Wmbethinkand, be-thinking, 5. 551 (E.); *imp. pl.* Wmbethinkis, *for* Vmbethinkis, 5. 613 (E.). The prefix is A.S. *ymbe*, about; the verb is A.S. *ymbe-hen-can*, to bethink oneself; Grein, ii. 771. *See Vmbethinkis.*
- Wmquhile, *adv.* at some time, 3. 256; sometimes, 3. 262; Wmquhill, 1. 335. *See Vmquhile.*
- Wnarmyt, *pp.* unarmed, 2. 284.
- Wndirta, 1 *p. s. pr.* I undertake, I take upon me to say, I affirm, I assert, 1. 292, 3. 110, 13. 44; *pt. s.* Wndertuk, agreed, 3. 662; *pp.* Wndertane, undertaken; *him wn-dertane*, undertaken for him, i.e. on his account, 3. 744.
- Wndiscumfyt, *pp.* undiscomfited, undismayed, fearless, 3. 274.
- Wndyr, *prep.* under, 2. 359.
- Wnfayr, *adj.* evil, disastrous, 1. 123.
- Wnhappy, *adj.* unlucky, 3. 291.
- Wnsele, *for* Vnscill, 10. 218 (E.).
- Wnsemlly, *adj.* unseemly, 5. 407.
- Woce, *s.* a voice, 11. 407 (E.). *See Voce.*
- Wod, *s.* wood, 7. 61. *See Vod.*
- Woddy, *adj.* woody, 4. 492.
- Wode-axis, *s. pl.* axes for cutting down wood, 16. 361.
- Wodsye, *s.* wood-side, 9. 139.
- Woidre, *s.* stratagem, 9. 747. See note to x. 516, p. 579; where the remark ‘lit. power to avoid’ is wrong. The word is clearly a corruption of the curious O.F. *voisdie*, *veisdie*, *vaidie*, treason, deceit, perfidy, explained by Burguy, s.v. *vice*. Roquefort also gives *voisdie*, *voedie*, *voidie*, *voisie*, *voisié*, with the same senses; also the verb *voisier*, *vesier*, *voidier*, to deceive. Burguy takes the root of the word to be Lat. *uitium*, vice.
- Wonand, *pres. pt.* dwelling, 17. 184, 190. *See Wonnaud.*
- Wonder, *s.* a wonder, 17. 383. *See Wondir.*
- Wonderit, *pt. pl.* wondered, 19. 755; Wounderit, 20. 504.
- Wondir, *adv.* wonderfully, extremely, 1. 323, 10. 620; Wondre, 1. 394. *See Wounder.*
- Wondirly, *adv.* wondrously, 1. 296, 17. 6; Wonderly, 3. 562.
- Wone, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 3. 68.
- Wonnand, *pres. part.* dwelling, 3. 728, 14. 14, 15. 320, 532 (E.), 16. 342; *pt. s.* Wonnyt, dwelt, 3. 1, 15. 402, 17. 16; Wonnit, (who) dwelt, 5. 273; *pl.* Wonnyt, 3. 403, 8. 388. A.S. *wunian*, to dwell.
- Wonnyn, *pp.* won, 2. 190, 7. 609, 10. 793, 11. 145, 12. 129, 17. 12, 19. 135; Wonnyne, 17. 839; *won-ny-n̄e* *rp.* gotten up, 10. 435. *See Vyn.*
- Wonnyng, *s.* dwelling, 5. 177. *See Wonnaud.*
- Wood, *adj.* mad, 20. 483; Voude, 17. 106. A.S. *wōd*, mad.

- Worschip, *s.* valour, 3. 50, 15. 154.  
 Worth, *v.* to become, 4. 244, 19. 177; *pr. s.* Worthys, it becomes, it behoves, 13. 354 (E.); *pr. pl.* Worthis, become, 16. 71; *pt. s.* Worthit, it behaved, 3. 222, 4. 194, 13. 354, 15. 274; *hym worthit neid*, it became necessary for him, 19. 209; *pp.* Worthyn, become, 4. 606, 13. 285, 19. 162; *wa worth*, wo be, 1. 515. A.S. *weorðan*, to become.  
 Worthyhede, *s.* honour, reputation, 6. 333.  
 Woud, *s.* wood, 2. 304, 7. 613.  
 Woude, *pt. s.* waded, 9. 388. A.S. *wadan*, to wade, go through; *pt. t. ic wód*. See Waid.  
 Wouk, *pt. s.* kept watch, 2. 552. A.S. *wacan*, to arise, *pt. t. ic wóc*; *wacian*, to watch, *pt. t. ic wacode*. The strong form is used here.  
 Wouk, *s.* week, 14. 132 (E.); *pl.* Woukis, 9. 359 (E.). See Owk.  
 Wounder, *s. as adj.* wonderful, 19. 398. See Wondir.  
 Wounderit, *pt. pl.* wondered, 20. 504; Wonderit, 19. 755.  
 Woundit, *pp.* wounded, 10. 479, 17. 452, 459, 484.  
 Wount, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 1. 220, 16. 485, 18. 509, 19. 754.  
 Wouss (for French *vous*), you, 10. 747.  
 Woux, *pt. s.* waxed, grew, became, 2. 170, 361; 8. 391 (E.). See Wox.  
 Wox, *pt. s.* increased, 19. 207; grew, 9. 588, 15. 131, 20. 245; became, 5. 21; *pl.* grew, 8. 476, 9. 162, 13. 77; Woxe, 10. 189. A.S. *weaxan*, to grow; *pt. t. weóx*. See Woux.  
 Woxt, for Wox, became, 13. 715 (H.).  
 Woyd, *v.* to make void, to leave empty, 8. 59; *pp.* Woydyt, freed from, free from, 1. 26. See below.  
 Woyd, *adj.* void, empty, 19. 755.  
 Wp, *adv.* up, 10. 569, 574.  
 Wracke, *v.* avenge, wreak, 19. 424 (H.).  
 Wrang, *s.* wrong, 1. 177.  
 Wrate, *pt. s.* wrote, 1. 525; Wrat, 10. 746, 752; *pl.* Wrayt, 1. 148.  
 Wrath, *adj.* wroth, angry, 1. 201.  
 Wrayt, *pt. pl.* wrote, 1. 148. See Wrate.  
 Wrechtnes, misery, 1. 224; cowardice, 9. 76 (E.).  
 Wrek, *v.* to wreak, avenge, 13. 144\*; *imp. pl.* Wreik, avenge ye, 12. 227. A.S. *wrecan*, to avenge.  
 Wreth, *s.* wrath, 1. 167, 18. 534.  
 Wreth him, *pt. s. refl.* became enraged, 2. 138; Wreyth him, became wrath, 1. 165; *we also find* Wrethyt him, became enraged, 1. 423; Wrethit him, 15. 412; *pp.* Wrethit, made angry, 17. 45. (The forms *wreth*, *wreyth*, only found in MS. E., are plainly incorrect; the right form is *wrethit*.)  
 Wreyth. See Wreth above.  
 Wrocht, *pt. pl.* wrought, worked, toiled, 1. 471; Wrought, *s.* acted, did, 18. 158; *pp.* Wrocht, wrought, done, acted, 1. 94. See Wyrk.  
 Wry, *adj.* uneven; *on wry*, awry, 4. 705.  
 Wryt, *s.* writing, 1. 13; book, 1. 343.  
 Wrythed, *for* Wrethed, *pt. s. refl.* was wrath, 1. 425 (footnote). See Wreth, verb.  
 Ws, *dat. to us*, 1. 343; (after prep. *of*), 12. 250.  
 Wschyng, *s.* issuing, exit, *an error for* Yschyng, 6. 363 (footnote).  
 Wsis, *pr. pl.* are wont, are used, 11. 227 (E.); 1 *p. s. pt.* Wsyt, I was accustomed, 10. 563 (E.); *pp.* Wsit, used, 11. 222 (E.).  
 Wss, *s.* use, 17. 252 (E.).  
 Wtelauys, *s. pl.* outlaws, 2. 493.  
 Wthyr, *adj.* other, 16. 320 (E.).  
 Wtirly, *adv.* utterly, 14. 154.

- Wtouth, *adv.* outwards, forwards, 2. 299; on the outside, 4. 152 (E.). Cf. Swed. *utåt*, outward; the Swed. *åt*, to, seems to be A.S. *ðs*, Goth. *und*, unto.
- Wtraly, *adv.* utterly, wholly, 3. 196; very well, 3. 674.
- Wycht, *adj.* wight, vigorous, 1. 22, 370, 518; 2. 173, 489; nimble, swift, 2. 120. *See* Wicht.
- Wycht, *an error in* 3. 699 (*footnote*).
- Wychtis, *s. pl.* wights, persons, 2. 522. A.S. *wiht*, a creature.
- Wyffis, *s. pl.* wives, 1. 199. *See* Wiffis.
- Wygorusly, *adv.* vigorously, *a reading in* E. *for* Rigorusly, 7. 449 (*footnote*).
- Wykkyt, *adj.* wicked, 1. 195.
- Wykkytly, *adv.* wickedly, 1. 222.
- Wyn, *v.* to win, 1. 97, 351; 2. 111; to defeat, conquer, 12. 487, 15. 338; to reap, 10. 189; *pr. s.* Wynnis, wins, 3. 175; *pr. pl. subj.* Wyn, conquer, 12. 257. A.S. *winan*.
- Wynland, 17. 721 (E.). *See* Vyndland.
- Wynnyt, *an error in* E. *for* Wonnyt, 8. 388 (*footnote*).
- Wyppit, *pt. s.* wiped, 5. 647.
- Wyre, *v.* to turn, cast, 17. 704. “*Virer*, to veer, turne round, wheele or whirle about;” Cotgrave.
- Wyre, *a reading for* Vyre in H., 5. 595.
- Wyrk, *v.* to work, act, 2. 117; *imp. pl.* work ye, 2. 337. *See* Wrocht, Wirk.
- Wysage, visage, 1. 383. *See* Wisage.
- Wysk, *s.* a whisk, a swift stroke, 5. 641. Cf. Swed. *viska*, to wag.
- Wyss, *adj.* wise, 1. 22, 121; 2. 489, 561. *See* Wiss.
- Wyss, *s.* wise, way, 1. 574. *See* Wiss.
- Wyssmennys, *s. gen. pl.* wise men’s, 11. 22 (E.).
- Wyst, *pt. s.* knew, 1. 141, 318; 2. 225, 562; 3. 6, 7. 187, 20. 501; *pl.* 1. 127. *See* Wist.
- Wysyllt, *pt. pl.*, *a reading in* E. *for* Vissill, q.v., 12. 580.
- Wyt, *v.* to know, 1. 238; *imp. pl.* know ye, 2. 2. *See* Wit.
- Wyt, *s.* wit, wisdom, 1. 344; *owt off his wyt*, out of his wits, 2. 199.
- Wyth, *prep.* against, 3. 714.
- Wytnes, *s.* witness, 1. 560.
- Wytt, *an error in* E. *for* Wyth = against, 7. 621 (*footnote*).
- Wytteryt, *pp.* informed, *a reading in* E. *for* Varnit, 7. 533 (*footnote*).
- Wyttryng, *s.* notice, 9. 564 (E.). *See* Wittering.
- Wyttyt, *pt. s.* enquired, or learnt by enquiry, 12. 156 (E.). (Probably an incorrect form; perhaps it should be *wyst*.)
- Yar, *an error in* J. *for* Thar, 16. 45.
- Yare, *adj.* ready, 19. 497 (H.). A.S. *gearo*, ready. *See* Yhar, ðar.
- Ydill, *adj.* idle, 8. 434.
- Ydilly, *adv.* idly, 10. 171.
- Yemanry, *s.* yeomanry, 16. 80.
- Yhar, *adj.* yare, ready, 2. 346. A.S. *gearo*, ready. *See* Yare, ðar.
- Yharnit, *pp.* yearned for, desired, 7. 370. A.S. *geornian*, to desire. *See* ðarn.
- Yhe, *pron. pl.* ye, 2. 337.
- Yhed, *pt. s.* went, 2. 425. *See* ðeid.
- Yheit, *adv.* yet, 2. 217. *See* Yheyt, ðeit.
- Yhemen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 13. 225 (*heading*). *See* ðeman.
- Yher, *s. pl.* years, 1. 532. *See* ðer.

- Yhet, *adv.* yet, 1. 106; *na yhet*, nor yet, nor even, 1. 106.
- Yheyt, yet, 1. 246, 2. 241; Yheyte, 3. 448. *See* zeit.
- Ying, *adj.* young, 3. 216.
- Ymyddis, *prep.* in the midst of, 12. 576 (E.); Ymyddys, 5. 325 (E.).
- Yneuch, *adj.* as *sb.* enough, sufficient, 14. 235, 364; *pl.* Ynew, enough, 19. 626 (E.).
- Ynkirly, *adv.* particularly, 7. 555; specially, 10. 534, 13. 139; in particular, 15. 66; Ynkurly, quite, 7. 183. *See* Eukrely.
- Yone, *adj.* yon, 15. 142 (H.); *pl.* yonder men, 14. 280. *See* 3<sup>mn</sup>.
- Ysche, *v.* to issue, go or come out, sally, sally forth, 4. 95, 5. 189, 8. 457, 15. 12, 118; 18. 492; *pt. s.* Yschit, 6. 404, 450, 18. 319; *pl.* Yschit, issued, sallied, 6. 418, 8. 459, 17. 137; *pp.* Yschit, 5. 388, 6. 452, 10. 218. *See* Isch.
- Ysche, *s.* outlet, issue, exit, way out, 6. 363, 14. 354, 19. 670; sally, 19. 94. *See* above.
- Yscheill, *s.* squadron, 12. 214. *See* Escheile.
- Yschling, *s.* sallying out, sally, 15. 158, 246. *See* Ysche.
- Ythand, *adj.* assiduous, busy, 3. 255. Icel. *iðinn*, assiduous, busy; *iðja*, to be busy. A better form would be *ythen*, but the form is assimilated to that of present participles. *See* Ythen.
- Ythandly, *adv.* assiduously, 3. 275, 288; 6. 327, 10. 287, 13. 598, 14. 320; Ythanly, continually, 2. 57. *See* above.
- Ythen, *for* Ythand, 3. 285 (*foot-note*). *See* Ythand.
- Ythenly, *for* Ythandly, 6. 327 (E.), 14. 320 (E.).
- Ytwyn, *adv.* apart, 8. 175 (E.). *See* Intwyn.
- 3aa, *adv.* yea (*in assent*), 12. 450; *zai*, 4. 470. *See* 3is.
- 3air, *adj.* ready, 4. 626. *See* Yare, 3ar.
- 3ald, *pt. s.* yielded, 7. 117, 10. 482, 13. 541; *pl.* 4. 172, 317; 17. 199; *zalde*, 15. 259. *See* 3eld.
- 3ar, *adj.* yare, ready, 2. 316, 3. 679, 8. 409, 12. 409, 15. 6, 17. 702. *See* Yare, 3air.
- 3ar, *adv.* readily, quickly, 3. 696. *See* above.
- 3arne, *v.* to yearn for, desire, 2. 507; *pres. pt.* 3arnand, yearning, 7. 11, 11. 525; *pr. s.* 3arnis, desires, yearns, 9. 20; *pt. s.* 3arnit, desired, 20. 209; *pl.* 3arnit, yearned, desired, 12. 282; 3arnyt, 6. 323; desired (to go), 18. 541; 2 *p. pl. pt.* 3arnit, ye desired, 12. 282. A.S. *geornian*, to desire.
- 3arne, *adv.* diligently, 3. 547. A.S. *georne*, eagerly.
- 3arnyng, *s.* desire, wish, 3. 742, 4. 575, 5. 246, 9. 583, 17. 220, 20. 213. A.S. *geornung*, wish, desire. *See* above.
- 3ate, *s.* gate, 4. 431; 3at, 10. 225. A.S. *geat*. *See* 3et.
- 3auld, *an error for* 3eld, yield, 10. 824 (E.).
- 3ed, *pt. s.* went, 19. 660; *pl.* 3ede, 3. 112. *See* 3eid.
- 3eemsell, *s.* care, 20. 231. *See* 3emsall.
- 3eid, *pt. s.* went, 3. 127, 302; 5. 574, 6. 490, 7. 552, 9. 701, 13. 517, 18. 390; gave himself up to, 1. 333; *pl.* 4. 410, 7. 28, 584; 9. 176, 13. 193, 16. 471, 20. 483. A.S. *eode*, Goth. *iddja*, I went. *See* 3ude.
- 3eir, year, 6. 183, 10. 821. *See* 3ere.
- 3eit, *adv.* yet, 1. 368, 556; still, moreover, 5. 463, &c.; besides, 15. 534.
- 3eld, *v.* to yield, 10. 824, 11. 33; 1. *p. s. pr.* I yield, 13. 529. *See* 3ald.

- ȝeman, *s.* yeoman, 19. 165.  
 ȝemany, *s.* yeomanry, body of yeomen, 15. 476.  
 ȝemsall, *s.* keeping, 20. 231 (E.) ; to ȝemsall, under his care, 17. 222 ; ȝemseill, 11. 329 (E.). Icel. *geimsla*, guardianship. See below.  
 ȝemyt, *pt. pl.* took care of, guarded, 11. 112, 239 ; 13. 230 (E.) ; *pp.* guarded, kept, 8. 494, 13. 678. Icel. *gyma*, A.S. *gýman*, to watch over.  
 ȝere, year, 6. 188, 10. 200 ; *pl.* ȝer, years, 1. 39, 345. So, in 1. 522, it is probable that ȝeris should be ȝer.  
 ȝet, *s.* gate, 4. 153, 164 ; 10. 229, 317 ; *pl.* ȝettis, 5. 389, 6. 444, 18. 489. See ȝate.  
 ȝeymseill, *s.* tutoring, supervision, protecting care, 11. 329. See ȝemsall.  
 ȝeyt, yet, 2. 437. See ȝeit.  
 ȝha, *adv.* yea, 6. 613, 7. 181. See ȝaa, ȝis.  
 ȝharn, 1 *p. s. pr.* I yearn, I desire, 1. 158 ; *pp.* ȝharnyt, desired, 1. 232. See ȝarne.  
 ȝhe, *pron.* ye, 8. 489, 12. 265.  
 ȝheid, *pt. s.* went, 1. 90. See ȝeid.  
 ȝheir, *s. pl.* years, 9. 299. See ȝere.  
 ȝheman, a yeoman, 5. 235, 10. 172 ; *pl.* ȝhemens, 13. 229. See ȝeman.  
 ȝhemany, *s.* yeomanry, 4. 386, 19. 171.  
 ȝhemar, *s.* keeper, groom, 2. 123. See ȝemyt.  
 ȝhemsell, *s.* keeping, charge, 2. 136. See ȝemsall.  
 ȝhet, *s.* gate, 17. 444. See ȝet.  
 ȝheyme, *v.* to keep, take care of, 13. 230. See ȝemyt.  
 ȝhis, *adv.* yes (*wrongly used here, as the question is a simple one, and the right reading is ȝai, as given*), 4. 470 ; *footnote.* See ȝis.  
 ȝhesterday, yesterday, 1. 124.  
 ȝhomen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 5. 257, 16. 101, 120. See ȝheman.
- ȝhone, *adj.* yonder, 5. 593. See ȝon.  
 ȝhoung, *adj.* young, 12. 322.  
 ȝhule, *s.* Yule, Christmas, <sup>a</sup> 204 (E.).  
 ȝhumanry, *s.* yeomanry, 17. 944 (E.) ; ȝhwmanry, 15. 476 (E.).  
 ȝhumen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 16. 120 (E.).  
 ȝhus, *adv.* yes, 9. 84. See ȝis.  
 ȝhystirday, yesterday, 2. 56.  
 ȝing, *adj.* young, 20. 41 (E.).  
 ȝis, *adv.* yes, 4. 484 ; ȝhus (ȝis, E.), 9. 84. Note.—ȝis is the emphatic form ; mere assent is expressed by ȝaa, q. v. See ȝhus, ȝhis.  
 ȝoill-evyn, Yule-even, Christmas eve, 9. 204.  
 ȝok, *v.* to yoke, 10. 215.  
 ȝolden, *pp.* yielded, 13. 539 ; yielded up, 10. 804. See ȝeld, ȝald.  
 ȝomen, *s. pl.* yeomen, 13. 229 (E.), 16. 101 (E.).  
 ȝon, *adj.* yon, that, 2. 105, 11. 274, 15. 476, 19. 627 ; ȝone, 2. 323, 19. 459 ; ȝond, 9. 218, 17. 191. See Yone, ȝhone.  
 ȝondir, *adv.* yonder, 19. 629.  
 ȝongat, *for* ȝon gat, i. e. in such a way, in such wise, 3. 171.  
 ȝoung, *adj.* young, 8. 454. See ȝing.  
 ȝouris, *poss. pron.* yours, 1. 497.  
 ȝoutheid, *s.* youth, 5. 277, 17. 933 ; ȝouthede, 10. 532.  
 ȝow, *acc. pl.* you, yourselves, 1. 92, 10. 422 ; *dat.* 1. 93. The nom. is ȝe, 1. 92.  
 ȝowr, your, 2. 129.  
 ȝowtheid, youth, 1. 334. See ȝoutheid.  
 ȝude, *pt. s.* went, 7. 36, 12. 560 ; *pl.* 15. 72, 17. 530. A.S. *ic eode*, I went. See ȝeid.  
 ȝuman, *s.* a yeoman, 10. 172 (E.), 12. 151 (E.). See ȝeman.

## INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN THE BRUCE.

---



---

Many of these proper names are explained and discussed in the Notes, so that it is unnecessary to explain them here at length. In order to find the place in the Notes where a name is discussed, consult Index I., pp. 616—624.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>Abyrdyne, Aberdeen, 2. 512.</p> <p>Abynethy, Schir Lowrens of, 13. 553.</p> <p>Adam of Gordoune, 15. 333.</p> <p>Adammis, Adam's, 15. 250.</p> <p>Adeill, Athol (earl of), 4. 62 ; erll Adell, earl of Athol, 5. 151 ; earl Davy of Athol, 9. 288, 13. 490. <i>See</i> Atholl.</p> <p>Adrastus, king, 2. 529.</p> <p>Affryk, Africa, 1. 539.</p> <p>Air, Ayr, 5. 190, 14. 20. <i>See</i> Ar, Are.</p> <p>Airth, 13. 495 (H.). <i>See</i> Herth.</p> <p>Alan Catcart, Sir, 9. 575.</p> <p>Alexander (the great), 1. 529, 10. 706 ; Alysander, 3. 83 ; <i>cf.</i> p. 612.</p> <p>Alexander (III), 1. 37.</p> <p>Alexander of Argyle, 10. 123.</p> <p>Almanze, Germany, 11. 93.</p> <p>Alphous, Alfonso, 20. 338 (H.).</p> <p>Amecout, 11. 573 (E.). <i>See</i> Den-cort.</p> <p>Amer, the Wallang, Sir Aymer de Valence, 2. 200 ; is defied by Robert Bruce, 2. 248 ; attacks Bruce at Methven, 2. 308 ; defeats Bruce, 2. 398 ; spares his prisoners, 2. 457 ; praises Bruce, 6. 8—24 ; seeks Bruce in Cumnock, 6. 457—508 ; chases Bruce, 6. 532 ; re-</p> | <p>turns, 7. 81 ; praises Bruce, 7. 93—104 ; again praises Bruce, 7. 352—373 ; retreats, 7. 382, 8. 1 ; parts Clifford and Vaux, 7. 625 ; hears bad news, 8. 112 ; flees from the battle of Bannockburn, 13. 328. <i>See also</i> Vallanch, Wallang.</p> <p>Amery ; <i>the same as</i> Amer, 2. 209, 223, 248, 457 ; <i>gen.</i> Ameryis, 6. 517.</p> <p>Anandyrdale, Annandale, 1. 66.</p> <p>Androu, Andrew, i. e. Sir Andrew Gray, 10. 644 ; Sir Andrew Harcla, 16. 511, 518.</p> <p>Androws, St Andrew's, 1. 353 ; bishop of, 2. 81.</p> <p>Anguss, Angus, 3. 659, 9. 307, 11. 336 ; Angouss, 19. 776.</p> <p>Anwyk, Alnwick, 20. 10 (E.). <i>See</i> Awnyk.</p> <p>Aquytane, Aquitaine, 11. 101 ; Aquitayngne, 11. 44 (E.).</p> <p>Ar, Ayr, 4. 38 ; Are, 5. 482. <i>See</i> Air.</p> <p>Arane, Arran, 4. 346, 370, 464 ; 5. 17.</p> <p>Archbald Douglas, 19. 350, 20. 587.</p> <p>Ardrossan, 8. 96 ; Sir Fergus of, 14. 31, 15. 193.</p> <p>Are, Ayr, 5. 482. <i>See</i> Ar, Air.</p> <p>Arestee, Aristæus, 10. 718, 728 ; Ariste, 10. 718 (E.).</p> <p>Arestill, Aristotle, 4. 739.</p> |
|---|---|

- Argente, Gelis de, Sir Giles of Argentine, 11. 174, 13. 299, 467; his warry, 13. 314.
- Argyle, 3. 9, 18. 445; Argile, 9. 463, 11. 334; Alexander of, 10. 123.
- Arrabe, Arabia, 1. 539.
- Artayis, Artois (Earl of), 1. 339.
- Arthur, king, 1. 549.
- Arthyn, Thomas, 18. 409, 424, 434.
- Aryk-stane, Arrick-stone, 2. 148. See the Note.
- Atholl, Athol, 2. 235; earl of, 2. 480; Iohn of Athole, 3. 308; Davy of Adell, 13. 490. See Adeill.
- Awnwyk, Alnwick, 20. 10.
- Babilony, Babylon's, 1. 530, 10. 707.
- Balleoll, Sir Ihon the, 1. 168; Ihone the, 1. 181; the Balleoll, 1. 49.
- Balmeburch, Bamborough, 13. 616.
- Balmyrne, king of, 20. 393. See note.
- Ban, Bane; the river Bann in Ulster, 14. 371, 382.
- Bannokburn, 12. 407, 13. 337, 351.
- Bathket, Bathgate, 19. 206.
- Bawmburgh, Bamborough, 13. 616 (E.). See Balmeburch.
- Bayon, Bayonne, 11. 101.
- Beauvare, the vale of Beverley, 18. 558.
- Bell (Sir Ingraham), 5. 483, 513.
- Berclay, Sir David, 2. 238; Sir Moriss de Berclay, 13. 417. Breklay (Sir David), 2. 408.
- Berwik, Berwick, 11. 136, 184; 13. 621, 625; 15. 325, 332, 343\*, 402, 435; taken by the Scotch, 17. 15—260; besieged by the English, 17. 261—490; siege raised, 17. 519; 19. 39, 20. 60, 83, 114, 318.
- Besat, Bisset, 14. 47 (E.); Besatis, the Bissets, 14. 520.
- Betwng, Sir Marmaduke, 13. 523; see note. However, the right name is no doubt "de Thweng." See the description of Danby Castle in Murray's Guide to Yorkshire, where we find—"The Bruce held it until 1271, when their great Yorkshire estates fell to four heiresses, one of whom married *Marmaduke de Thweng*." Doubtless, the Marmaduke who, after Bannockburn, surrendered to Bruce, and whom Bruce apparently recognised at once, was of this family, and surrendered to Bruce in particular because they were kinsmen.
- Betyss, Bety, 3. 74, 77. See note to 3. 73.
- Biland, 18. 363, 368, 478, 497, 501; Byland, 18. 355; Bilandis abbey, 18. 368.
- Binny, *the same as* Bunnok, 10. 153 (H.).
- Bisset, 14. 47 (H.). See Besat.
- Blak Dowglass, 15. 538.
- Blar, Blair (Sir Brice), 4. 37.
- Bonkill, Bonkle, 9. 691.
- Borroundoun, Wilȝam the, 2. 479.
- Borowbrig, Boroughbridge, 17. 535 (E.); Borrowbrig, 17. 831.
- Bosbek, *for* Rosbek (Roubaix), 4. 249 (*rubric*).
- Bothwell, 8. 111, 357; 13. 403, 669; *read* Buttil (Butel) in 9. 522, 533; see note to 9. 522, p. 576.
- Bouchane, Buchan, 8. 400, 9. 15, 110, 186, 296, 280, 300.
- Bouchquane, Buchan, 8. 400 (E.). See Bouchane.
- Boune, Bohun, 12. 29 (E.). See Bowme.
- Bourch, Burgh-in-Sands, 4. 310; Bowrch-in-the-sand, 4. 203.
- Bowme, i. e. Sir Henry de Bohun, 12. 29.
- Boyde, Sir Robert, 2. 244\*, 4. 342, 505; 8. 415; Sir Gilbert, 14. 406.
- Brathwek, Brodick, 4. 388.

- Brechin, Brechin (a place), 9. 286; Sir David of, 8. 402, 9. 18, 120, 198, 208, 285, 19. 19, 59, 104.
- Breklay, Barclay (Sir David), 2. 408. *See* Berclay.
- Bremayne, i. e. Birmingham, 14. 143; Brwman, 14. 515.
- Bretane, Britain, 1. 538, 550, 10. 28.
- Bretane, Sir Iohne of, 18. 462, 469, 507; the marschall Bretane, 18. 473.
- Bretangȝe, Brittany, 3. 687; Bret-anȝe, 11. 94; Bretanȝe, 20. 323.
- Broite, the story of the Brut, 1. 560.
- Broune, Sir Richard, 19. 18, 54.
- Bruce; *variously spelt* Bruce, 1. 604, &c.; Bruss, 12. 345; Brwyss, 1. 67, 153; Brwiss, 1. 503; Brwee, 1. 581; Broiss, 10. 791; Broyss, 9. 187; Bryss, 13. 165; *gen.* Brysis, 13. 311.
- Bruce (the elder), 1. 67—167; confused with the younger Bruce, 1. 477 (see note to this line, p. 547).
- Bruce, *miswritten* for Bryce, 4. 37.
- Bruce, king Robert, 1. 477—20. 298; his heart carried to Spain by Douglas, 20. 423\*.
- Bruce, Sir Edward, brother to Robert, 7. 276, &c.; his expedition to Ireland, 14. 1—16. 330; his defeat and death, 18. 1—210.
- Bruce, Sir Nigel, brother of king Robert, 4. 61; put to death, 4. 316—332.
- Brwman, Birmingham, 14. 515. *See* Bremayne.
- Bryde, saint, 19. 300, 635; *gen.* Brydis, 5. 336.
- Bryname, Birmingham, 14. 515 (E.).
- Bryse, Sir Blair Brice, *the right reading in* 4. 37.
- Bryss, Bruce (Nigel), 4. 61. *See* Bruce, Nigel.
- Buchane, Buchan, 9. 110 (E.). *See* Bouchane.
- Bunnok, William, 10. 153, 194, 211, 234; Bwnnok, 10. 220, 226, 251.
- Burch, Burgh, 4. 205. *See* Bourch.
- Burrow-brig, Boroughbridge, 17. 535; Borrowbrig, 381.
- But, Bute, 3. 577, 11. 336.
- Butler, 14. 145, 513.
- Buttill, 9. 533 (C.). *See* the note.
- Byland, 18. 355. *See* Biland.
- Byset, Bisset, 14. 47. *See* Besat.
- Calion, Ewmonde de, 15. 321; Calyeoun, 15. 528; Cailow, 15. 321, 377 (E.); and see 15. 394.
- Cambell, Schir Nele, 2. 491, 3. 392, 396, 571; Cammell, schir Colyne, 16. 119, 130.
- Cambuskynneth, 13. 493; Camyskynnel (E.).
- Campaneus, king, i. e. Capaneus, 2. 534.
- Cardross, 20. 79, 151.
- Carleill, Carlisle, 7. 384, 394, 500, 506; Carlele, 17. 890.
- Carnavirnane, Carnarvon, 4. 73. Carnauarane, Eduard of, 19. 255.
- Carrik, Carrick, 4. 552, 567; 5. 125, 220, 223, 463, 478, 491, 6. 27, 373, 7. 398, 18. 118; Carryk, 1. 67, 2. 103, 11. 333; erll of Carrik, 14. 1.
- Cartage, Carthage, 3. 211.
- Catcart, Sir Alan, 9. 575.
- Catone, (Dionysius) Cato, 1. 343; and see note on p. 612.
- Cesar, Julius, 1. 537, 3. 277.
- Clar, Gilbert of, 13. 466, 508.
- Clare, Sir Richard of, 14. 138, 159, 254, 317, 389, 16. 2, 18. 12; and see Richard of Clare.
- Clyffurd, Clifford (Lord), 1. 287, 317, 435; 2. 112, 157; 5. 231, 7. 622, 11. 521, 12. 335; *spelt* Cliffurd, 7. 561, 623; 12. 348; Cliffurde, 8. 511; *gen.* Cliffurdis, 5. 449.

- Cobham, schir Rauf of, 18. 410, 422, 431.
- Coignoris, Connor, 14. 394, 408, 460; 15. 24, 35.
- Cokdaill, Cock dale, 19. 279; see note.
- Colyne, Sir Colin (Campbell), 16. 119, 130.
- Comyn, 3. 4. *See* Cumyn.
- Conage, Connaught, 16. 295.
- Coneus, i. e. Caulus, 3. 85.
- Conyngame, Cunningham, 8. 13 (E.).
- Cornwale, 20. 323.
- Crab, Iohn, 17. 239, 702; *gen.* Crabbis, 607.
- Cragfergus, Carrickfergus, 14. 45, 89; 15. 97, 459; 16. 6, 38, 51, 299, 305, 680; 18. 161, 187, 191, 201.
- Crauford, Schyr Ranald of, 4. 36.
- Cre, Cree (river), 9. 517, 547.
- Crechanben, Ben Cruachan, 10. 27.
- Cristal of Setoun, 5. 171; Cristole, 5. 156; Crystall, 2. 418; Crystoll, 4. 16; *and see* Setoun.
- Cristyn, Christian, 20. 420.
- Culross, 18. 254.
- Cumnok, Cumnock, 6. 463, 511.
- Cumyn (Sir John), 1. 483, 575, 2. 27, 32, 79; Comyn, 3. 4; Cwmyn, 1. 562, 6. 503; *gen.* Cwmynis, 9. 22.
- Cumyn, Sir Edmund, 2. 37.
- Cuthbert, 4. 585, 604; 5. 31.
- Cwmyne, Comyn, earl of Buchan, 8. 400, 9. 15.
- Cwnyngame, Cunningham, 8. 13, 17.
- Dancort, Sir William, 12. 351. *See* Dencort.
- Dares, 1. 525.
- Dauid, David (king of Israel), 4. 681.
- Dauid the brechyne; *see* Brechine.
- Dauklyne, i. e. Daunclene, 3. 86; *or rather* Danclene; *see* p. 612.
- Davy, David (son of Robert Bruce), 20. 37, 68, 84, 117, 127; David II., 13. 687.
- De sawagiss, the Savages, or De Savages, 14. 49.
- Dencort, Daincourt, 11. 573. *See* Dancort.
- Desmownt, Desmond, earl of, 14. 141; Desmwnd, 14. 514.
- Devilling, Dublin, 15. 107, 16. 213, 262; Dewilling, 16. 295.
- Dicson, Thom, 5. 279; Dicsone, 5. 346.
- Donald, Erll of mar, 19. 241, 349.
- Donavardyne, Dunaverty, 3. 666, 677.
- Douglas, 1. 29, &c.; *also* spelt Douglass, Dowglas, Dowglass, *and even* Dougless (13. 4); schir Wiljam off Dowglass, 1. 282; Sir James Douglas is described, 1. 288–406; his death, 20. 410–476; *gen.* Douglassis, 20. 481; Douglas his, 6. 435; Douglass (*as a warcry*), 16. 407; Dowglass (*as a warcry*), 18. 305; the blak Dowglass, 19. 556.
- Douglas, Douglasdale, 5. 256, 456; Douglasaill, 5. 271, 6. 380, 8. 439; Douglasdale, 8. 426.
- Dowglass, Archbald, 19. 350, 20. 587.
- Downe, Down, 14. 376 (E.).
- Driburgh, Dryburgh, 18. 339.
- Drouchyndra, Drogheda, 16. 261.
- Drumfreiss, Dumfries, 9. 23.
- Duche, Dutch(land), 11. 94.
- Duk-peris, i. e. Douze Pairs, the Twelve Peers of France, 3. 440.
- Dumbertane, Dumbarton, 15. 306, 19. 51.
- Dumfress, Dumfries, 2. 26.
- Dunbar, 13. 609.
- Dundawk, Dundalk, 14. 135, 240; 18. 11, 217.
- Dunde, Dundee, 10. 800.

- Dunfermlyne, 16. 550, 20. 291.  
 Dunkelden, Dunkeld, 16. 574.  
 Dunse park. *See* Dwnss.  
 Dunstaffynch, Dunstaffnage, 10. 113.  
 Dwn, Down, 14. 376.  
 Dwnss park, Dunse park, 17. 64, 76.  
 Dytis, Dycetes, 1. 526.
- Ector, Hector, 1. 395.  
 Edinburgh, 5. 473; 10. 141—756; 11. 200, 355, 18. 262.  
 Edmound, Edmund, 15. 321, 377 (*E. and H.*).  
 Edry-furd, 8. 34. *See* note.  
 Eduard of Carnavirnane (Carnarvon), 4. 73, 19. 255; (Edward II.), 10. 322, 18. 170; *gen.* Eduardis, 13. 657. *See* Bannockburn.  
 Eduard (III.), 19. 257.  
 Eduard, i. e. Sir Edward Bruce; *see* Bruce. *Gen.* Eduardis, 18. 98, 206.  
 Eduuard (Edward I.), 1. 73, 408; Eduard, 4. 184; Edward, 1. 179.  
 Egift, Egypt, 1. 539.  
 Egrymor, Egrimour, 3. 441.  
 Eliss, Ellis, 16. 447; Elyss, 16. 441.  
 Endwillane, 14. 113; *perhaps the same as* Inderwillane, 16. 62.  
 Ennirkyp, Innerkip, 8. 98.  
 Enuerkethyne, Inverkeithing, 16. 549.  
 Enuerrowry, Inverury, 9. 34, 192, 212; Enrowry, 9. 34 (*E.*). *See* Inuerrowry.  
 Erische, Irish, 14. 123, 330, 16. 309, 18. 115, 120; Erysche, 14. 448.  
 Erischry, Irishry, Irish people, 14. 9, 16. 682, 18. 9, 59, 194; Erischrye, 18. 219; Eryschr, 16. 317; Eryschr, 16. 301.
- Erll of murreff, *also called* Erll thomas; *see* Murreff.  
 Erll richmonde, 16. 331 (*rubric*).  
 Erskyn, Sir William of, 19. 374.  
 Eske-dale, Eskdale, 16. 508.  
 Esobell, Isabel, 13. 487.  
 Ethiocles, Eteocles, 6. 179, 200, 265.  
 Evrope, Europe, 1. 540.  
 Ewmond de Calion, 15. 321, 377, 394.
- Fabricius, 20. 521—553.  
 Fawkirk, Falkirk, 11. 437.  
 Felystynys, *s. pl.* Philistines, 4. 755 (*footnote*).  
 Feniss, Gylmyne de, 10. 456; Fyniss, 10. 470.  
 Ferambrace, Fierabras, 3. 437.  
 Ferguss of Ardrossane, 14. 31, 15. 193.  
 Ferrand, 4. 256; *gen.* Ferrandis, 4. 241, 286.  
 Ferrand, the name of a horse, 2. 118. *See* the Note.  
 Fiff, Fife, 16. 552; Fyfe, 2. 206.  
 Fizwaryne, Fitzwarren, 15. 75; *and see* 14. 515.  
 Flagot (the river), 3. 455.  
 Flandriss, Flanders, 19. 194.  
 Flemyne, a Fleming, 17. 239; *pl.* Flemynnis, Flemings, 4. 240.  
 Flemyng, Neyll, 15. 129, 136, 226.  
 Florentyn, *adj.* man of Florence, 14. 516.  
 Forfar, 9. 324; Forfer, 9. 310.  
 Forster, Philip the, 9. 312.  
 Forth, wattir of, the river Forth, 13. 335.  
 Francass, William, 10. 530; Francouss, 10. 601, 643; Francoiss, 10. 750.  
 France, 4. 240, 19. 260; Fraunce, 1. 553; Franss, 11. 89, 18. 471;

- king of, 18. 542; a knight of, 9. 391.
- Franch, French, 4. 245; Franche, 18. 524.
- Fraseyr, Frasir (Sir Alexander), 2. 407; Fresale, 2. 239; Freser, 9. 9, 10. 45; Fresir, 8. 395; Freser, Simon, 9. 10.
- Fyfe, Fife, 2. 206: Fiff, 16. 552.
- Fyngall, Fingal, 3. 69.
- Fyniss, Gylmyne de, 10. 470; Feniss, 10. 456.
- Fyss-thomas, Sir Maurice Fitz-thomas, 14. 146.
- Gadyrris, Gaderis, 3. 75.
- Gallistoun, Galston, 17. 151 (E.).  
See Gawlistoun.
- Gallowais, s. *pl.* men of Galloway, 6. 32; Gallowayis, 6. 25 (*rubric*).
- Galloway, 5. 467, 6. 298, 9. 498, 10. 792, 16. 36, 503; Gallaway, 1. 188; Gallovay, 9. 476, 501, 537; Gallowa, 16. 693.
- Gascon, Gascony, 11. 93; Gascone, 15. 321.
- Gascoun, a Gascon, 10. 324; Gascone, 15. 321.
- Gaudifer, 3. 73, 79. See Note.
- Gawlistoun, Galston, 8. 123, 17. 151.
- Gawter the lile, Sir Walter de Lisle, 5. 203.
- Gedword, Jedworth, 8. 427. *And see Iedworth.*
- Geiles the Argentine, 11. 174 (H.).
- Gelis, Giles, 13. 299; Gylys, 11. 174.
- Gib harper, 18. 95, 165; *gen.* Harperis, 18. 223. (The sense is Gilbert the harper.)
- Gilbert Boyde, sir, 14. 406.
- Gilbert de la Hay, 2. 490, 3. 25, 6. 69, 8. 412.
- Gilbert of Clar, Sir, 13. 466, 508.
- Gilbert Mayle-Erll, 19. 16, 53. *See* Male-herbe.
- Gilbertstoun, Walter, 13. 406.
- Glaskow, Glasgow, 2. 175, 4. 13.
- Glentrwell, Glentrool, 7. 494, 502, 516.
- Glowcister, Gloucester, Earl of, 4. 78, 11. 163, 12. 25, 13. 465.
- Golmakmorn, Goll Mac Morna, 3. 68. See the Note.
- Gordoun, Adame of, 9. 695, 720.
- Graunt sebell, i. e. Great Seville, 20. 326.
- Gray, Sir Andrew, 10. 47, 644.
- Greece, Greece, 6. 214.
- Gylmyne, 10. 456, 470.
- Hanibal, 3. 243; Hannibal, 3. 208.
- Harcia, Sir Andrew, 16. 511, 518; 17. 866.
- Harfurd, Hereford, 4. 78 (E.); *see* Herfurd.
- Harpar, Gib, 15. 181; *see* Gib.
- Hastyngis, Schir Ihone the, 4. 384.
- Hay, Gilbert de la, 2. 490, 3. 25, 6. 69, 8. 412.
- Hay, de la, Sir Hugh de la Hay, 2. 237, 409.
- Hennaut, Hainault, 11. 91, 19. 265; Iohne of, 19. 267, 458.
- Henry, Sir (de Bohun), 12. 29, 43, 50.
- Herdclay, Sir Andrew, 16. 511, 17. 866.
- Herfurd, Hereford, Earl of, 4. 78, 11. 163 (E.), 12. 25, 31; 13. 401, 408, 672.
- Hersildoune, Ercildoun, 2. 87.
- Herth (*perhaps for Airth*), William of, 13. 495.
- Hiltoun, Baroun of, 15. 504.
- Hulyster, Ulster, 14. 97 (E.), 14. 373 (E.).
- Hummyr, the river Humber, 16. 538.

- Hyrsery, *for* Erischry, q. v., 14. 9 (E.).
- Iames, James of Douglas, 1. 317, &c. (*James* is generally a disylable, as in 1. 29, 317; 5. 255; &c.)
- Iames Steward, 19. 243.
- Iedburgh, 8. 427 (H.), 10. 344 (H.), 10. 504 (H.).
- Iedworth, 10. 344, 504; Iedward forest, 16. 363; Gedword, 8. 427; gen. Iedworthis, 8. 427 (E.).
- Iereby, 16. 296 (E.).
- Ieromy, Jeremiah, 4. 681.
- Ierusalem, 4. 209, 308.
- Ihonystoun, St John's Town, i. e. Perth, 2. 247. *See* Iohnstoun.
- Ilis, the Isles, 18. 445; Ylis, 11. 335.
- Inchmertyn, Inchmartin, 2. 239; Inchmertyne, 2. 409.
- Inderwillane, 16. 62; *perhaps the same as* Endwillane, 14. 113; see note to 14. 113.
- Ingland, England, 1. 81; Yngland, 1. 73, &c. (The usual spelling is *Ingland*, which is very common; see 17. 502, 513, 525, &c.)
- Ingland, kyng of, 17. 261, 18. 565, 19. 143, 20. 28; Yngland, king of, 12. 445; gen. king of Inglandis, 18. 500.
- Ingliss, English, 1. 189, 193; 16. 634, 18. 260, 370, 406, &c.; Ingliss-men, 17. 329.
- Ingram the wmfrawill, Sir Ingram de Umfraville, 2. 212; Ingerame, 19. 152; Ingerame Vmphrewell, 19. 73. *See* Vmphravell.
- Innermallane, 14. 113 (E.).
- Innerrowry (*better* Inuerrowry), Inverury, 9. 192 (E.).
- Inuerrowry, 9. 209. *See* Enuerrowry.
- Ioele, Joel, 4. 682.
- Iohane of the tour (princess), 20. 39, 118.
- John of Logy, 19. 16, 53.
- Iohne of Bretane; *see* Bretane.
- Ioline, Schir Amery of saint, 16. 506.
- Iohnnis nycht, St John's night, 13. 491.
- Iohnstoun, Sainct, i. e. Perth, 9. 323 (*footnote*).
- Irchery, Irishry, 16. 301 (E.). *See* Erischry.
- Irell, Uriel, 16. 296.
- Irland, Ireland, 3. 683; 14. 7, 9, 11, 114, 189, 256, 298, 390; 16. 3—679; 18. 15; Ireland, 1. 100.
- Irsche, Irish, 16. 309 (E.). *See* Erische.
- Isabell, wife of Edw. II., 19. 261. *See also* Esobell.
- Iudas, Judas, 4. 18.
- Kentyre, Cantire, 4. 367, 11. 334; Kyntyr, 3. 385, 391, 637, 660.
- Keth, Robert, Sir Robert Keith, 11. 455, 13. 61.
- Keth, Sir William Keith, 17. 151, 20. 491; Keyth, 20. 592.
- Keyth, Sir William, 20. 592. *See* Keth.
- Kildar, Kildare, earl of, 14. 514; Kyldare, earl of, 14. 142.
- Kildromy, Kildrummy, 3. 337, 367. *See* Kyndrummy and Kyldromy.
- Killwynnyn, Kilwinning, 8. 95.
- Kilross, 14. 252.
- Kilsaggart, 14. 133.
- Kirk of dowglass, 20. 585.
- Kow-yet, Cow-gate, Cowport, 17. 35.
- Kyldare, earl of, 14. 142; Kildar, 14. 514.
- Kyldromy, Kildrummy, 4. 44, 59, 81 (E.); Kildromy, 3. 337, 367. *See* Kyndrummy.
- Kyle, 8. 9, 17, 24.
- Kylkenane, 14. 522 (E.).

- Kyllvanane, 14. 522.  
 Kylmernok, Kilmarnock, 8. 95.  
 Kyndrummy, Kildrummy, 4. 185,  
 313; 5. 149; Kyndrumy, 4. 59;  
 Kyndrony, 9. 289; Kyndrwmy, 4.  
 81. *See* Kyldromy.  
 Kynrike, *an error for* Lynrike,  
*Limerick*, 16. 265 (E.).  
 Kyntyr, Cantire, 3. 385, 391, 637,  
 660; Kentyre, 4. 367, 11. 334.  
 Lainenser, Leinster, 16. 297.  
 Lambyrtoun, Lamberton (William  
 of), 1. 412.  
 Lanark, 8. 447 (E.).  
 Lancister (Earl Thomas of Lan-  
 cester), 17. 285; *spelt* Longcastell,  
 17. 285 (E.); Loncastell, 17. 852.  
 Laurik, Lanark, 8. 447.  
 Largyss, Largs, 8. 97.  
 Laryss, (perhaps) Larissa, 3. 73.  
 Latyne, Latin, 4. 261.  
 Lawyne, king Laban, 3. 442, 456.  
 Ledowss, Sym of the, 10. 358,  
 425; Ledouss, 405, 492.  
 Lenester, Lenister, 16. 297 (E.).  
 Lennax, Lennox, 8. 413. *See*  
*Leuenax*.  
 Leuenax, Erle of the, i. e. earl of  
 Lennox, 2. 482, 3. 482, 591;  
 Leuynax, 2. 235; Lennax, 8. 413.  
 Lile, de Lisle, 5. 203.  
 Lithkew, Linlithgow, 13. 381. *See*  
*Lythkow*.  
 Lochriane, 16. 36 (E.).  
 Logane, Logan, 14. 47; Loganys,  
 the Logans, 14. 520; Walter Lo-  
 gane, 20. 474.  
 Logy, Iohn of, 19. 16, 53.  
 London, *for* Loudon, 4. 17 (*foot-  
 note*).  
 Longcastell, Lancaster, 17. 285  
 (E.); Loncastell, 17. 852.  
 Lorne, lord off, 3. 1—185; Lorn,  
 John of, 6. 481—585, 7. 30, 43, 92;  
 10. 7, 15. 299, 305; lord of Lorne,  
 9. 462; Lorn (district of), 10. 9.  
 Louchelevin, Lochleven, 15. 308.  
 Louchmaban, Lochmaben, 2. 18,  
 72, 147.  
 Loudon, 4. 17 (*see the Note*);  
 Lowdoun, Loudoun, 8. 124, 134,  
 150; Litill Lowdoun, 8. 201.  
 Lowchlonond, Loch Lomond, 3.  
 406.  
 Lowchryan, Loch Ryan, 16. 36.  
 Lowdiane, Lothian, 6. 7, 479; 17.  
 187, 256; 18. 250, 261, 273; Low-  
 dyan, 10. 136; Lowdyane, 17. 73,  
 941.  
 Lowrens, Lawrence; *see* Abyr-  
 nethy.  
 Lumbard, Sir Piers, 10. 324; Sir  
 Peris, 761.  
 Lombardy, Lombardy, 14. 517.  
 Lundon, London, 1. 599.  
 Lwnyk, i. e. Limerick, 16. 265.  
 Lyne (river), 9. 683.  
 Lyntoun-le, 16. 336, 349, 443;  
 Lyntaile, 16. 336 (E.).  
 Lythkow, Linlithgow, 10. 137, 148;  
 Lythkew, 13. 563; Lithkew, 13.  
 381.  
 Machabeus, Judas, 14. 313.  
 Machabey, Maccabees, 1. 465.  
 Maij, May, 14. 21.  
 Makartane, 14. 106 (E.).  
 Makdowall, 5. 104.  
 Makfulchiane, 14. 105; Makgul-  
 lane (E.).  
 Makgullane, 14. 105 (E.); Mak-  
 fulchiane (C.).  
 Makmartane, 14. 106.  
 Maknab, Macnab, 4. 19.  
 Maknakill, 15. 219, 222.  
 Maknauchtan, Macnaughtan, 3.  
 153.  
 Makus, Makis; *better* Marcus; *see*  
 4. 14 (*footnote*).

- Makyne-drosser, Mac Indrosser, 3. 99.  
 Makyrnokis, 8. 28, 33. See note.  
 Maleherbe, 19. 16, 53 (E.). See Mayle-erll.  
 Maliss, Malise, 9. 433.  
 Man (isle of), 4. 14.  
 Mantrybill, Mantrible, 3. 455.  
 Mar, Donald of, 19. 349; earl of Mar, 19. 241.  
 Marche, March, 19. 776.  
 Marcus, bishop of Man, 4. 12.  
 Mariory, Marjory, 4. 39, 13. 686, 20. 133.  
 Marrok, Morocco, 3. 688.  
 Marschall bretane, 18. 473. See Bretane.  
 Marthokys, 3. 67. Marthokys sonne = Maemurdoch; see the Note.  
 Mary, the Virgin, 17. 335; Mary-ȝet, St Mary's gate, 17. 755, 769.  
 Mawndwell, Mandeville, 15. 111, 170, 187, 208; Mawndwele, 15. 243; Mavndwell, 14. 47.  
 Mawndwilis, the Maundevilles, 14. 519.  
 Mawpass, Johne, 18. 224.  
 Mayle-erll, Gilbert, 19. 16; Male-erll, 53. See Maleherbe.  
 Meffayn, Methven, 2. 303; Meffen, 2. 312; Meffan, 3. 497.  
 Meldrom, Old Meldrum, 9. 202; Meldrome, 9. 242.  
 Melross, Melrose, 18. 291, 298; 20. 600.  
 Menesteus, Menestheus, 2. 535.  
 Margaret, Margaret, 10. 737.  
 Mermadak, Marmaduke, 13. 523, 526, 538. See Betwng.  
 Merss, Merse, 15. 331, 17. 185, 19. 776 (E.).  
 Methy, Meath, 16. 296 (E.).  
 Modreyt, Mordred, 1. 557.  
 Moffat, 9. 337.  
 Mole, Mull (of Cantire), 3. 696.  
 Monester, Munster, 16. 297 (E.).  
 Month, the Mounth, a part of the Grampians, 2. 494, 8. 393, 9. 7, 304. See note to 8. 393.  
 Mont-peleris, Montpelier, 15. 83.  
 Mortymer, Mortimer, 20. 29, 85, 111.  
 Mowbray, Sir John, 8. 401, 9. 118.  
 Mowbray, Sir Philip, 2. 211, 413, 420; 8. 21, 74; 9. 17, 198, 281; 10. 806; 13. 363, 540; 14. 266, 403; 18. 24, 41, 133.  
 Mullyr-snwk, the Mull of Galloway (see *Snwk* in Glossary), 1. 188.  
 Murreff, Earl of Murray, also called the earl Thomas, or, at first, Sir Thomas Randolph, described, 10. 260—299; takes Edinburgh, 10. 507—755; mentioned, 11. 228, 441; 12. 160, 531, 561, 13. 197, 14. 59, 82, 119; 16. 7, 44, 353; 17. 55, 65, 79, 138; 18. 394; 19. 69, 240, 618; 20. 1, 139, 300.  
 Mwnser, Munster, 16. 297.  
 Mynerff, Minerva, 4. 256; Mynerfe, 4. 262.  
 Myth, Meath, 16. 296.  
 Mytoun, Mitton, 17. 536, 555, 831.  
 Nele Cambell, Sir, 2. 491, 3. 392, 396, 571.  
 Nele the Bruce, Nigel Bruce, 2. 513, 3. 337; Neyle, 4. 185; Neill, 12. 290.  
 Nethirford, 8. 34 (E.).  
 Nevell, schir Robert de, 15. 401, 442, 467, 485, 496, 527.  
 Nevell, schir Ralf the, 15. 503.  
 New park, 11. 284, 357.  
 Neyll Flemyngh, 15. 129, 136.  
 Norham, Norham, 20. 7.  
 Northumbirland, 4. 189, 7. 562, 13. 736, 20. 23; Northumberland, 5. 193.  
 Nyddis-dail, Nithsdale, 10. 792.

- Odymsy, O Dempsey, 14. 329.  
 Ogill, Ogle, 19. 359.  
 Olifert, Olifard, 9. 338.  
 Olywer, Oliver, 3. 439.  
 Orknay, Orkney Islands, 1. 187; Orkynnay, 17. 13.  
 Osbarn, 4. 109.  
 Ouchtirhouss, Ramsay of, 14. 29.  
 Ouchtre, 18. 409 (E.).  
 Palmesunday, Palmsunday, 5. 307.  
 Paryss, Paris, 1. 326, 330; Pariss, 4. 257.  
 Pascalle, Sir, 14. 516.  
 Paslay, Paisley, 19. 222.  
 Patrik, Erll, 13. 612, 19. 797.  
 Persy, Sir Henry, 4. 599; 5. 43, 75, 107, 185, 213, 217; *gen.* Persyis, Percy's, 5. 479.  
 Perth, 2. 219, 9. 330, 10. 134.  
 Philistianis, Philistians', 4. 755.  
 Phitonies, *the usual misspelling of Pithones (Pythoness) in old MSS.*, 4. 753 (*footnote and Note*).  
 Pirrus, Pyrrhus, 20. 525—560.  
 Platan, 9. 312. See note.  
 Polynices, 6. 180, 199.  
 Pomfret, Pontefract, 17. 868, 878.  
 Pouty, Poitou, 11. 101; Poytow (H.).  
 Ramsay of Ouchtirhouss, 14. 29.  
 Ranald Crauford, 4. 36.  
 Randell, Randolph (i. e. Sir Thomas Randolph, afterwards Earl of Murray), 2. 237, 405, 463; 6. 510, 7. 87, 9. 694, 717; 10. 1, 260; 12. 349. See Murreff.  
 Rauchryne, Rathlin, 3. 680, 721, 725, 755; 4. 1, 337.  
 Rauf, schir (of Cobham), 18. 410; Raulf, 422, 431.  
 Rawff, Ralph, 15. 503 (E.).  
 Redis swyr, source of the Reid, 17. 13. See the note.  
 Repoune, Ripon, 17. 533.  
 Richard Broune, 19. 18, 54. See Broune.  
 Richard; *see also* Rychard.  
 Richard of Clare, 16. 74, 99, 212, 218, 239; 18. 215. See Clare.  
 Richmond. See Rychmond.  
 Riweus, Rievaulx, 18. 498.  
 Robert, i. e. Robert II., 13. 695, 20. 131.  
 Robert, bishop of Glasgow, 4. 13, 13. 683.  
 Robert Boyde; *see* Boyde.  
 Robert Bruce; *see* Bruce.  
 Robert (Earl of Artois), 1. 340.  
 Robert Logan, Sir, 20. 473.  
 Robert of Ogill, Robert Ogle, 19. 359.  
 Robert Stiward, Robert Stewart, afterwards king Robert II., 20. 131.  
 Roger of Sanct Iohne, 5. 209.  
 Rome, 1. 542, 555; 3. 207, 212; 20. 522, 539; empire of, 19. 470.  
 Ross, Ross, 4. 47, 49.  
 Ross, Walter, 13. 473.  
 Rownde tabill, Round Table, 13. 379. See the note.  
 Roxburgh, castle of, taken, 10. 344—512.  
 Ruglyne, Rutherglen (?), 10. 797.  
 Rychard (of Normandy), 3. 450.  
 Rychmond, in Yorkshire, 16. 342; Thomas, earl of, 16. 400—535.  
 Ryfuowis, Rievaulx, 18. 498 (E.).  
 Saint Iak, Santiago, 20. 403.  
 Saint Iohne, Schir Amery of, 16. 506.  
 Saint John, Roger de, 5. 209.  
 St John, vigil of, 11. 382.  
 Samuele, Samuel, 4. 682, 757. (In 1. 757 read *Samuellis*.)  
 Sancler, Sir William Sinclair, 20. 444, 471. See Syncler.

- Sandylandis, 6. 395.  
 Saracenys, *s. pl.* Saracens, 1. 140; Sarisenis, 18. 324, 326; Saracenys, 20. 459; Sarasenys, 20. 422, 427, 478; Sarasynys, 20. 468; Sarazenis, 20. 348; Sarazynys, 20. 500.  
 Sarasyne, Saracen, 20. 394.  
 Sathanas, Satan, 4. 242.  
 Savill the graunt, Seville, 20. 326 (E.).  
 Sawagis, the Savages, 14. 521.  
 Scipio the ying, Scipio the younger, 3. 216.  
 Scone, 2. 150, 178.  
 Scotland, 1. 27, &c., &c.  
 Scottis, Scottish, 6. 459, &c.  
 Scottis se, the Firth of Forth, 9. 309, 329, 460; 16. 676.  
 Sebell the graunt, Seville the Grand, 20. 326.  
 Selcryk, Selkirk, 8. 425.  
 Setoun, Sir Christopher Seton, 2. 243\*; Setoun, 5. 156, 171; Seytoun, 2. 418, 4. 16; *and see Cristal*.  
 Slenaunch, *an error in J. for Sleu-auch*, 9. 107 (*footnote*).  
 Sleuaunch, 9. 107 (E.). *See Slevach*.  
 Slevach, highlands, 9. 107, 124, 129. *See the note to 9. 107*.  
 Snawdoune, Snowdon, 4. 181.  
 Somerueile, Somerville, 2. 239; Somerweil, 2. 410.  
 Souly, lord of, 18. 472; *see note to 18. 524*.  
 Sowlis, the, i. e. Sir John de Soulis, 14. 27, 16. 509, 18. 23, 38, 110.  
 Sowlis, the lord of, i. e. Sir William de Soulis, 19. 11—48.  
 Spaldyng. *See Sym*.  
 Spanze, Spain, 3. 688, 20. 324, 395.  
 Steward, Alexander, 9. 692, 718.  
 Steward, James, 19. 243.  
 Steward, Sir John, 14. 28, 267, 404; 15. 80; 18. 23, 31, 109.  
 Steward, Sir Walter, 4. 42, 13. 3, 187; 15. 273\*, 16. 31, 17. 499, 763; 18. 486, 19. 205; Stewart, 12. 415.  
 Stewart, Sir Allan, 14. 405.  
 Strabogy, Strathbogie, 9. 188.  
 Strathern, Strathearn, earl of, 9. 340; Malise of, 433; Stratherne, 19. 776 (H.).  
 Strevillyne, Stirling, 1. 409; Stre-willyn, 1. 484; Strewilling, 11. 534; Strewelyn, 10. 141 (E.); Streviling, 10. 141, 249, 805; 13. 429, 661.  
 Surry, Syria, 1. 539.  
 Sym, Simon, 10. 358. *See Ledowss*.  
 Sym of Spaldyng, 17. 23; of Spaldyne, 17. 89.  
 Symon (Fraser), 8. 397.  
 Syncler, Sir William Sinelair, 16. 575. *See Sancler*.  
 Syr-waryn, *put for Fitzwarine*, 14. 515; *see 15. 75*.  
 Syve-warine, *an error for Fitzwarine*, 15. 75 (E.).  
 Tarbard, Tarbert, 15. 272; twa Tarbartis, the two Tarberts, 15. 290. *See note to 15. 272*.  
 Tay, 2. 589.  
 Tayne, Tain, 4. 47.  
 Tedeus, Tydeus, 6. 181. *See Thedeus*.  
 Tevydale, Teviot dale, 10. 502; Tevydaill, 15. 329; Tevidail, 17. 185.  
 Thebes, 2. 528, 6. 183, 198, 200.  
 Thedeus, Tydeus, 6. 198, 203, 210, 267, 284; Tedeus, 6. 181.  
 The-twengue, *for de Tweng*, 13. 523 (E.). *See Betwng above, and the remarks on it, p. 756*.  
 Tholimar, Ptolemy, 3. 84.  
 Thom Dicson, 5. 279, 346.  
 Thomas Arthyn, 18. 409, 424, 434.  
 Thomas of Down, 14. 376.

- Thomas (of Ercildoun), 2. 86.  
 Thomas, earl of Lancaster, 17. 853,  
   873.  
 Thomas, earl of Murray ; *see* Ran-  
   dell and Murreff.  
 Thomas, Schir (of Richmond), 16.  
   343.  
 Thrill-wall, Thirlwall, 6. 392, 402,  
   416, 431, 451 ; Thrill-vall, 6. 450 ;  
   *pl.* Thrill-wallis, 5. 460.  
 Tomasswn, Iohne, 18. 117, 147,  
   150.  
 Torwode, Torwood, 13. 551 ; Tor-  
   wed, 11. 210.  
 Tranentis, *gen.* Tranent's, 18. 276.  
 Treile, *for* Tyre, 10. 705 (E.).  
 Troy, 1. 395, 521.  
 Turnbery, Turnberry, 4. 619, 5.  
   213 ; Turnberys, Turnberry's, 4.  
   556, 600 ; 5. 187.  
 Tweid, Tweed, 17. 191.  
 Typont, *for* Typtot, 13. 468 (E.).  
 Typtot, Payne, 13. 468.  
 Tyre, 10. 705.
- Vallanch, Schir Amery, Sir Aymer  
   de Valence, 5. 472, 6. 457, 476 ; 11.  
   176. *See* Wallang, and Amer.  
 Valter Steward, 17. 217, 257 ; 18.  
   486. *See* Steward, Walter.  
 Valys, Wales, 4. 76. *See* Walis.  
 Varane, Earl Warren, 18. 278.  
 Wardale, Weardale, 20. 2. *See*  
   Wer, Wardale.  
 Vaux ; *see* Wauss.  
 Vaveryng fyrth, 14. 33.  
 Verdon ; *see* Wardoune.  
 Vilyame Sancler, William Sinclair,  
   20. 471 ; *and see* 20. 444.  
 Vilʒame of sowlis, 19. 11 ; *see*  
   Sowlis.  
 Vipont ; *see* Wepownt.  
 Vissman, Wiseman (William), 10.  
   46.
- Vllister, Ulster, 16. 298, 317 ;  
   Ulcister, 16. 683. *See* Vllister.  
 Vmphrewell, Yngerame de, Sir  
   Ingram Umphraville, 6. 3 ; Vm-  
   phrevell, 9. 502, 12. 451 ; Vmphra-  
   vell, 19. 73 ; Vmphrevele, 19. 141.  
   *See* Wmfrawill, and Yngerame.
- Walis, Wales, 1. 100, 105 ; Walys,  
   1. 119 ; Waliss, 11. 99 ; Valys, 4. 76.  
 Waliss, Welsh, 13. 419.  
 Wallang, de Valence, 2. 201 ;  
   Wallanch, Sir Amer, 13. 295 ; Wal-  
   ence, 11. 176 (E.). *See* Vallanch,  
   and Amer.  
 Walter Logane, 20. 474.  
 Walter Steward, 17. 384. *See*  
   Steward, and Valter.  
 Wardale, Weardale, 19. 270, 509,  
   777 ; Wardaill, 19. 281 ; Wardill,  
   19. 254. *See* Wer, Wardale.  
 Wardoune, Verdon, 14. 143 ; War-  
   dun, 515.  
 Warren ; *see* Varane.  
 Wauss, Vaux, 7. 622.  
 Webitoune, Sir John, 8. 453, 488 ;  
   Webtoun, 8. 437 (*rubric in foot-  
   note*).  
 Weik, Wick, 1. 187.  
 Wenchburg, Winchburgh, 13. 587  
   (E.).  
 Wepownt, i. e. Vipont, 13. 472.  
 Wer, wattir of, river Wear, 19.  
   323 ; Weris wattir, 19. 328 ; Wer,  
   19. 316 (E.). *See* Wardale.  
 Williame of Erskyn, 19. 374.  
 Willyame de Sancler, William Sin-  
   clair, 20. 444, 471.  
 Wilȝam, Sir William Douglas, 1.  
   282.  
 Wiseman ; *see* Vissman.  
 Wllister, Ulster, 14. 81, 97, 373 ;  
   Wlsyster, 14. 81 (E.) ; Wlsister, 16.  
   298 (E.). *See* Vllister.  
 Wmfrawill, Umfraville, 2. 212, 252.  
   *See* Vmphrewell.

- Wodoune, 14. 143 (E.) ; Wedoune, 515 (E.). *See* Wardoune.
- Wokingis fyrth, 14. 33 (E.).
- Wollistar, Ulster, 14. 81 (H.).
- Wylȝame, William (of Lamberton), 1. 412.
- Wynchburch, Winchburgh, 13. 587.
- Wyndissoyr, Windsor, 19. 259.
- Wysman, 10. 46 (E.).
- Yber, Lucius Iberius, 1. 554.
- Ydymsy, O'Dempsey, 14. 329 (E.).
- Ylis, the Isles, 11. 335 ; Ilis, 18. 445.
- Yngerame Bell, 5. 483, 513.
- Yngerame de Vmphrewell, 6. 3, 12. 483, 19. 146. *See* Ingram, and Vmphrewell.
- Yngland, England, 1. 73 ; Ingland, 1. 81, &c. ; king of, 12. 445. *See* England.
- Ynglis, English, 6. 459, &c. ; Yngliß, 12. 425, &c. *See* Inglis.
- Yrlande, Ireland, 11. 100. *See* Ireland.
- Ysabell, 13. 487 (E.).
- Ysay, Isaiah, 4. 682.
- Zork, York, 19. 271.
- Zork, Archbishop of, 17. 546.
- Zorkis ȝettis, the gates of York, 18. 489.

## INDEX VI.

## GLOSSARY TO "HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER," AND "A DIETARY."

The numbers refer to the lines of the poem printed at pp. 525—536. When the letter "D." is prefixed, the reference is to the poem printed at pp. 537—540.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Abill, <i>adj.</i> apt, 228.   | Barnys, <i>s. pl.</i> children, 221, 250.  |
| Acquyntans, acquaintance, 94.  | Be mekill thing, by a great deal, 9.   |
| Ado, <i>for</i> at do, i. e. to do, D. 5.<br>See the note, p. 615.   | Beis, <i>fut. s.</i> will be, 168 ; it shall be, D. 9.   |
| Agit, <i>pp.</i> aged, D. 3.   | Belif, <i>adv.</i> quickly, D. 34. M. E. <i>beliue</i> , lit. by life, with life ; hence, soon.      |
| Aill, ale, D. 3.   | Betakynnis, <i>pres. s.</i> betokens, 149.   |
| Air, <i>adv.</i> before, 235.  | Billis of Amowris, letters of love, love-letters, 112.   |
| Ald, <i>adj.</i> old, D. 63.   | Blekyt, <i>pp.</i> blackened, tarnished, 9.<br>See <i>bleck</i> in Jamieson.                         |
| Almus, alms ; <i>almus deid</i> , an alms-deed, 138.   | Bot, <i>prep.</i> without, 120 ; <i>conj.</i> unless, D. 68.   |
| And, <i>conj.</i> if, 284.   | Both, <i>pp.</i> bought, D. 78. (Ill spelt ; see the footnote.)                                      |
| Anerly, <i>adv.</i> singly ; <i>our anerly</i> , too much alone, 171 ; <i>all anerly</i> (all only), altogether, 71. | Bred, <i>s.</i> bread, D. 3.   |
| Anton, Antony (the name of some famous physician), D. 79.  | But, <i>prep.</i> without, 197.  |
| Apon, <i>prep.</i> just after, D. 6.   | Bydding, <i>s.</i> command, 135. To <i>kep bydding</i> is to observe a command, to do as one is bid. |
| At, <i>prep.</i> according to ; <i>at hir power</i> , as she can, 146.   | Byndis, <i>pres. pl.</i> bind, 231.  |
| Athis, <i>s. pl.</i> oaths, D. 62.   | Cald, <i>s.</i> cold, chill, D. 1.   |
| Avans, <i>v.</i> to advance, 42.   | Cancryt, <i>pp.</i> ill-conditioned, perverse, 236. See <i>cankert</i> in Jamieson.                  |
| Aw, <i>pr. s.</i> ought, 39.   | Cast, <i>v. ; to cast perillis</i> , to fore-<br>cast dangers, perceive perils, 99.                  |
| Bakluking, <i>s.</i> looking behind, 208.  | Chap, <i>v. to escape</i> , 230. Short for   |
| Bald, <i>adj.</i> bold, D. 61.   |  |
| Band, <i>s.</i> bond ; <i>goddis band</i> , God's bond, i. e. matrimony, 141.  |  |
| Banyst, <i>pp.</i> banished, 108.  |  |
| Bares. See Ryn.  |  |

- eschap*; see *Eschaip* in Gloss. to Bruce.
- Chasty, *imp. s.* chastise, 247, 259.
- Chastyment, chastisement, 279.
- Cheld, *s.* child, i.e. still young, 247 (MS. B reads *child*), 251.
- Cheritabill, charitable, 138.
- Claiss, *s. pl.* clothes, 56.
- Cled, *pp.* clad, 35, 59.
- Clerk-playis, clerk-plays, miracle plays performed by clerks, 83.
- Clething, *s.* clothing, 29.
- Contrar, *adj.* contrary, D. 71.
- Contrefet, *v.* to counterfeit, 22.
- Contyrmans, *s.* countenance, 41.
- Correkit, *pp.* corrected, 194.
- Costlik, *adj.* costly, 31.
- Covat, *v.* to covet, 33; Couat, 190.
- Couatiss, covetousness, 292.
- Cowpe, *s.* cup, D. 6.
- Coy, *adj.* coy (in a good sense), quiet, 19. O.F. *coi*, which is the Lat. *quietus*.
- Crab, *v.* to annoy, tease, irritate, 60. Hence the word *crabbed*.
- Craft, *s.* trade, means of livelihood, 299.
- Creatour, *s.* creature, 24.
- Crouss, *adj.* lively, nimble, pert, 15. See *Crus* in Glossary to Have-lok the Dane; cf. Swed. *kry*, brisk, lively, pert.
- Cummys, *pres. s.* comes, 158.
- Cure, *s.* care; *in cure*, under guardianship, 251.
- Custum, custom, 179.
- Dalians, *s.* sport, play, D. 22.
- Dampnit, *pp.* condemned, 272.
- Danss, *v.* to dance, 113.
- Dant, *imp. s.* cherish, pet, 77. A peculiar use of *daunt*, to tame, Lat. *domitare*. "Dawntyng, or grete chersyng, or greate cherisshing;" Prompt. Parv.
- De, *v.* to die, 290.
- Debonar, debonair, gentle, mild, 145.
- Ded, *s.* death, 88.
- Deid, *s. act, deed*, 71, 146; *pl. Dedis*, 70.
- Delicat, *adj.* delicate, dainty, 29.
- Delit, *s.* delight, pleasure, 69, D. 67.
- Demyng, *s.* opinion, supposing, 170.
- Dew, *adj.* due, D. 77. (See the footnote.)
- Diffamyt, *pp.* defamed, i.e. having an ill name, 155; of ill fame, 237.
- Dishonorit, *pp.* dishonoured, i.e. dishonourable, 75.
- Dispit, *s.* dislike, contempt, D. 25.
- Dissavable, *adj.* deceitful, D. 23.
- Dissencioun, dissension, D. 26.
- Doctryne, *v.* to indoctrinate, instruct, 244.
- Doith, used as auxiliary; doith the *fale* = do fail thee, D. 9.
- Dowbill, *adj.* double, false, D. 25.
- Draw, *v.* to draw, 46; *pr. pl. Drawis*, entice, 80.
- Dreid, *s.* dread, 45.
- Dremand, *pres. pt.* dreaming, 182.
- Dronkyn-lew, *adj.* drunken, D. 54. An adaptation of Lydgate's *dronkelew*; Chaucer also has it.
- Dud, *for do it*, 233 (footnote).
- Dur, *v.* to last, endure, 134. Lat. *durare*.
- Dyetary, a dietary, D. 80.
- Eftir, *prep.* after, i.e. according to, 68; *adv.* afterward, 212.
- Eld, *s.* old age, 248.
- Enclynis, *pr. s.* inclines, 249.
- Ententif, *adj.* attentive, D. 45.
- Erand, *s.* errand, 173.
- Erar, *adv.* sooner, 47.
- Eschewe, *v.* achieve, i.e. succeed, prosper, thrive, D. 43. O.F. *achevir*.

- Ewe, *s.* eve, evening, D. 41.
- Eyn, *s. pl.* eyne, eyes; "what eyes see not, the heart desires not," 222. See note, p. 614.
- Eythar, *adv.* more easily, 9. A.S. *éāð*, easy.
- Faid, *v.* to fade, 65; *pr. s. trans.* Fadis, causes to fade, 76.
- Fair, *s.* behaviour, conduct, 20.
- Fale, *v.* to fail, D. 9.
- Fall, *pr. s. subj.* may happen, 104.
- Fallacioun, *s.* falsehood, D. 28.
- Fals, *adj.* false, 96.
- Falt, *s.* fault, defect, lack, 255.
- Farest, *adj.* fairest, 10.
- Fawyng, *s.* (perhaps an error for *fawning*), 192. But the reading *fauore*, i.e. favour, is to be preferred.
- Feir, *v.* to befit, beseem, 34. A contracted form of *aefir* or *effeir*. See *Afferis* in Gloss. to Bruce.
- Feir, *s.* companion, 154; *pl.* Feris, companions, 160.
- Fend, *s.* fiend, 96.
- Fenzeit, *pp.* feigned, 20.
- Ferme, *adj.* firm, 147.
- Ferst luf, first love, 198.
- Feyd, *imp. s.* feed, 78.
- Flawm, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her display, 125. I suppose the line to mean—"let her not display any flourish (i.e. marks of paint) that will fade." Mr Lumby explains it by "besmear, daub over;" but gives no reason, and leaves the rest of the line unexplained. I suppose *flawm* is the F. *flamber*, to flame, shine, give a great light; but here used transitively.
- Fleschly, *adv.* carnally, D. 5.
- Fluriss, *s.* a flourish, 125.
- Flyting, *s.* chiding, 117. A.S. *flitan*, to chide.
- Forfalt, *v.* to offend, 286. The substantive *forfalt*, an offence, occurs in Ratis Raving, l. 3295.
- Forfet, *v.* to forfeit, 200.
- Forouten, *prep.* without, 230.
- For-thi, on that account, 36.
- Fra, from the time that, 91.
- Fulis, *s. pl.* fools, 301.
- Fusioune, *s.* abundance, D. 31.
- Geglotrye, *s.* giddiness, romping; *pl.* Giglotriss, romps, 159. See *Giglet*, a romping girl, in Halliwell.
- Ger, *v.* to make, 127; *pr. s.* Gerris, makes, causes, 290; *pr. pl.* Gerris, make, 3.
- Get, *pr. pl.* provide, 265. (The nom. *thai* means *the teachers*; if these provide no instruction, nor inflict any punishment, &c.)
- Gif, *conj.* if, D. 16.
- Giglotriss, *s. pl.* romps, 159. See *Geglotrye*.
- Gredynes, greediness, 292.
- Greiff, *v.* to grieve, 118.
- Grunching, *pres. pt.* grudging, i.e. murmuring, D. 15.
- Hailsome, *adj.* wholesome, D. 3.
- Hald, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her keep, 128; *pp.* Haldin, holden, considered, 3. And see Innys.
- Hame-ganging, home-going, 184.
- Hamly, *adj.* homely, 19.
- Hant, *v.* to be together, lit. to haunt, said of two persons, 87; *imp. s. 3 p.* let her haunt, 171.
- Harmesay (an interjectional exclamation), alas! 102. Jamieson gives two quotations, which establish the meaning. It is, however, not to be accounted for (as he suggests) by any connection with the A.S. *earm*, wretched. The first part of the word is clearly *harm*. Also spelt *harmisay*, perhaps for *harm is aye*; but this is a guess.

- Hazardouris, *s.* *pl.* gamblers, players at the game of hazard, D. 56.
- Hear, *adj.* higher, 48, 55.
- Hede, *s.* head, D. 1.
- Heill, *s.* health, D. 1.
- Hew, *s.* hue, 133.
- Hew, Hugh (the name of some famous physician), D. 79.
- Honeste, *s.* honour, 144.
- Hyde, *s.* skin, 128.
- Ill liklynace, likeliness of evil, suspicious circumstance, 75. The *adj.* *ill likly*, suspicious, occurs in I. 72.
- Indifferent, *adj.* impartial (men), D. 80. See note, p. 615.
- Innys, *s.* *pl.* lodgings; *hald thar Innys*, keep at home, stay at home, 116.
- Keking, *s.* peeping, 208. Du. *kijken*, to peep.
- Kennis, *pres. s.* knows, 246.
- Kepand, *pres. pt.* keeping, preserving, 144; *pp.* Kepyt, kept, taken care of, 223.
- Ladry, *s.* rabble, 86. Jamieson explains it thus, with a reference; and derives it from A.S. *leōd-weras*, men (!), which see in Grein. It is obviously a derivative of O.F. (and mod. F.) *ladre*, a leper, lazarus; cf. F. *ladrerie*, leprosy. Here it means a set of lepers, vile rabble. The derivation is from *Lazarus*.
- Lak, *s.* blame, 74, 230.
- Lak, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her blame, 140. Cf. Dutch *laken*, to blame.
- Lakar, *adj.* more deficient, worse, poorer, 56. See 'Lak, bad, defective,' in Jamieson.
- Lakis, *pr. s.* fails, is lacking, D. 16.
- Langage, language, talk, speech, 11.
- Lauchtir, *s.* laughter, 15.
- Laute, loyalty, faithfulness, 195.
- Lawar, *adj.* lower, 46.
- Lawast, *adj.* lowest, 45.
- Lawlynas, lowliness, 49.
- Layff, *s.* the rest, 238. Scot. 'the lave.'
- Le, *v.* to lie, tell lies, 164.
- Learis, *s.* *pl.* liars, D. 54.
- Lechis, *s.* *pl.* leeches, i. e. physicians, D. 9.
- Lede, *s.* lead, 132. (Alluding to its dull hue.)
- Lefull, *adj.* anxious, very desirous, 219; fond, much given (to a thing), 25. (The senses here apparent are unusual. There are three words of the same form; (1) *leful* (better *lefful*) = permissible, from A.S. *leāf*, leave; (2) *leful* (better *lefful*) = faithful; from A.S. *geleāfa*, belief; and (3) *leful* (better *lefful*) = fond, from A.S. *leōf*, dear. We have here the last, and by far the rarest, of the three.)
- Leid, person; *all leid*, everybody, 102. A.S. *leōda*, people.
- Leif, *imp. s. 3 p.* let her trust; *nocht leif*, let her not trust, 159.
- Leif, *adj.* dear; *leif set*, to set dear, i. e. to incline to, 211.
- Leiff, *v.* to leave; *leiff of*, to leave off, let alone, 170.
- Leil, *adj.* loyal, 142.
- Lest, *pr. s. subj.* may please, may list, D. 74.
- Lest, *v.* to last out, hold out; *lest with*, hold out against, resist, 94. See below.
- Lestith, *pr. s.* lasts, D. 64. [Observe the Southern ending.]
- Lettis, *pr. pl.* let, allow, 267.
- Lik drawis to lik, proverb, 156.
- Loyf, *imp. s. 3 p.* love, 140. (In B. the reading is *love*.)
- Lufit, *pp.* loved, 198.

- Lufrent, *s.* lust, 90, 201. Corrupted (for *lufreid*) from A.S. *lufraiden*, lovingness. See Manrent in Gloss. to Bruce.
- Lusty, *adj.* merry, lively, D. 63.
- Lychouris, *s. pl.* lechers, D. 54.
- Lyffing, *s.* living, means of support, 285.
- Ma, more, others like themselves, 240.
- Mak, *s.* the make, fashion, 126.
- Makis, *pr. pl.* make, 4.
- Malicius, *adj.* ill-tempered, spiteful, D. 12.
- Malys, *s. pl.* meals, D. 67.
- Maneir, *s.* manner, 30.
- Mastres, mistress, 245.
- Maynteme, *imp. s.* maintain, D. 60.
- Mekill; *be mekill thing*, by a great deal, 9.
- Mengill, *v.* to mingle, 86.
- Menȝhe, *s.* household, 143; Menȝe, 201. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Merk, *adj.* murky, dark, D. 42.
- Mess, *s.* mass, 204, D. 43.
- Mesurabill, *adj.* moderate, D. 20.
- Met, *s.* meat, D. 2; *pl.* Metis, D. 21.
- Misfair, *v.* to go astray, behave ill, 282.
- Modreth, *adj.* moderate, D. 75.
- Mon, *pr. pl.* must, 301. Cf. Icel. *ek mun*, I shall.
- Morow, *s.* morning, D. 41.
- Mowthis, *s. pl.* mouths, D. 25.
- Moy, *adj.* affected in manners; *nocht mak our moy*, not to pretend to be too delicate, 20. See *moy* in Jamieson; perhaps F. *mou*, Lat. *mollis*.
- Myss, *s.* wrong, 259. (*Do myss* = commit a fault.) *Misse* is often a substantive in Middle English.
- Myster, *s.* need, poverty, D. 46;
- Mystair, 281; *pl.* Mysteris, necessities, necessitous circumstances, 288. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Mystis, *s. pl.* mists, D. 42.
- Mystrast, *v.* to suspect, 93.
- Na, *conj.* than, 34, 48; nor, 118.
- Nakit, *adj.* naked, 90.
- Neidliking, *s.* neediness, poverty, 287.
- Neyd, *s.* necessity, poverty, 281.
- No, *conj.* nor, 89, 117; Na, nor, 118.
- Noyne, *s.* noon, 209.
- Nychtbour, neighbour, 241.
- Nyse, *adj.* foolishly dainty, 21.
- Obeysand, *pres. pt. as adj.* obedient, 27.
- Of, *prep.* with, D. 14.
- On neyd, of necessity, 301.
- Or, ere, 104.
- Our, over, i. e. too, 21, 22; *our fer*, too far, 42.
- Oyss, *v.* to use, D. 10; *oyss of*, to be used to, 17; *imp. s.* let her use, let her employ, 117.
- Pantre, *s.* painting, 129.
- Paramour; in phr. *for paramour*, for love, i. e. for the sake of illicit love, 65.
- Passit, *pp. past*, 91.
- Paynteyn, *s.* painting; *paynteyn vatteris* = painting-waters, waters for painting, 127.
- Peir, *s.* equal, peer, 4.
- Pensiff, *adj.* too thoughtful, melancholy, D. 59.
- Perist, *pp. perished*, lost, 100.
- Plesand, *pres. pt. as adj.* pleasant, 97, D. 67.
- Plicht, *s.* danger, 297.
- Porteress, female porter, D. 53. See note, p. 615.

- Potyngary, *s.* apothecary, D. 77.  
(A poor spelling; Lydgate would have written *potecarie*.)
- Preciously, *adv.* richly, 35.
- Presoyme, *v.* to presume, suppose, imagine, 64; *gud presum*, think well, 180.
- Pure, *adj.* poor, 137.
- Pwnycioune, *s.* punishment, 266.  
*Ma pwnycioune*, inflict punishment.  
See Get.
- Pwnys, *imp. s.* punish, 275; *pp.* Pwnyst, 50.
- Pynit, *pp.* afflicted, tormented, 289.
- Pyteabill, *adj.* pitiful, kind, 137.
- Quha, *indef. rel.* whosoever, 26.
- Quhich (!), *an odd form, half way between the Southern which and the Northern quhilk*, D. 30.
- Quhilk, *pron.* of what sort, which, 2, 3. Cf. Lat. *qualis*, Goth. *hwaleiks*. Used as a relative, who, 246. See above.
- Quhill, untill, 100.
- Quhit, *adj.* white, 131.
- Raddour, *s.* fear, timidity, 11. See Radd in Gloss. to Bruce.
- Rage, *v.* to be wanton, 85.
- Raging, *s.* romping, 215.
- Rede, *adj.* red, 131.
- Reherss, *v.* to repeat, 26.
- Reirsuppers, *s. pl.* rere-suppers, D. 50. Late suppers were so called.
- Remew, *v.* to remove, D. 76.
- Repruit, *pp.* reproved, 193.
- Repruf, *s.* reproof, 199; Repruff, 212.
- Rescript, *s.* piece of advice, prescription, D. 78.
- Rew, *s.* street, 114. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Rewmys, *s. pl.* realms, countries, 109.
- Richess, riches, D. 80.
- Ross, *s.* rose, 10.
- Rowk, *v.* to crouch, cower down, sit down closely to others, 18. See *rouketh* in Chaucer, Group A, 1308; and see *ruken* in Stratmann.
- Rowme, *adj.* ample, i.e. open, free, 153. Cf. A.S. *rám*, ample. But the reading *rownd*, i.e. round, plain, open, is better.
- Rownaris, *s. pl.* whisperers, slanders, D. 28. A.S. *rúnian*, to whisper. See Rowne.
- Rownd, *adj.* round, 41.
- Rowne, *v.* to whisper, 18. A.S. *rúnian*.
- Ryn at bares, to run at bars, to play at 'prison-bars,' 115. See the note, p. 614.
- Sad, *adj.* serious, grave, D. 63.
- Sampill, example, 241.
- Savis, *pres. s.* saves, 226.
- Scant, *adv.* scarcely, 62.
- Schamfulnes, *s.* shamefastness, bashfulness, modesty, 45.
- Schawis, *pr. s.* shews, 1.
- Scheyue, *adj.* beautiful, 127. A.S. *scíne*, beautiful; G. *schön*.
- Scho, *pron.* she, 1.
- Schrewis, *s. pl.* shrews, ill-tempered women, 6.
- Seilden, *adv.* seldom, 250.
- Sempill, *adj.* simple, 19.
- Serwe, *pres. s. subj.* may deserve, 199.
- Set, *imp. s.* place, put, make it, D. 24.
- Sew, *v.* to follow, D. 74.
- Slanderit, slandered, 240.
- Slee, *adj.* sly, subtle, 96.
- Sleuth, *s.* sloth, D. 52.
- Slyder, *adj.* slippery, apt to fall, frail, 8. A.S. *slidor*, slippery, liable to slide.
- Smyrking, *s.* smirking, smiling, 208.

- Smytabill, *adj.* infectious, 227. See *smit*, to infect, in Jamieson.
- Smyttit, *pp.* infected, besmirched, 239. Cf. Scot. *smit*, to besmut, to infect.
- Sowp, *v.* to sup, D. 8.
- Spair, *v.* to spare, i. e. let alone, 92.
- Speir, *v.* to ask for, 26. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Stert, *s.* a 'start,' i. e. a moment, 188. Jamieson quotes "ye mauna bide a start, you must be back immediately. *In a start, in a moment.*" See *Styrt* in Prompt. Parv.
- Stomok, *s.* stomach, D. 72; *pl.* Stomokis, D. 70.
- Sturt, *s.* strife, discord, 117. Cf. Dan. *strid*, G. *streit*, strife.
- Sueirnas, *s.* laziness, 157. A.S. *swær*, heavy, lazy; cf. G. *schwer*, heavy.
- Suet, *adj.* sweet, 19.
- Sufficiand, sufficient, 285.
- Sufficians, *s.* a sufficiency, competence, D. 14.
- Supple, *v.* to be of service, lit. to supply, 28.
- Supposse, although, 93.
- Surfat, *s.* surfeit, D. 76; *pl.* Surfattis, D. 49.
- Suspekit, *pp.* suspected, suspicious, 73. See *suspect* in Chaucer's Clerkes Tale.
- Syb, *adj.* near akin, 89.
- Syn, *s.* sin, 295.
- Syne, *adv.* afterwards, 108.
- Taknyng, *s.* token, 38.
- Takyn, *s.* a token, 217.
- Tane, *pp.* taken; *tane a fall*, received a fall, fallen, 302.
- Tayt, *v.* to toy, dally, 218; *tayt nocht*, let her not toy, 215. Cf. Icel. *teita*, to gladden; *teitr*, glad, light-hearted.
- Techis, *s. pl.* faults; *ill techis*, bad qualities, 5. See *Tache* in Halliwell.
- Tendir, *adj.* of tender age, very young, 89.
- Tent, attention; *tak tent*, take heed, 274.
- Than; *nocht than*, not but that, 53.
- Thewis, *s. pl.* good manners, 2; *ill thewis*, bad manners, 5. A.S. *þeánw*, manner, rite.
- Thoill, *imp. s.* suffer, allow, permit, 85.
- Thoulass, *adj.* ill-mannered, 260. Perhaps wanting in *thews* or good manners rather than 'inactive,' or 'unprofitable,' as explained by Jamieson; whatever may be the modern meaning.
- Thrist, *s.* thirst, D. 68.
- Thus-gat, *adv.* in this way, 66.
- Tratlyng, *s.* tattling, prattling, 17; *pl.* Tratlyngis, tattlings, 25. "Cut-land and *tratland* in the toun;" Ratis Raving, 3039. Cf. Swed. *träta*, to wrangle.
- Trew, *adj.* true, 142.
- Trowble, *adj.* troublesome, D. 27.
- Tyg, *v.* to touch lightly, to play at touching, 218. An allusion to the game of *tig*, wherein a *tig* means a light touch; see Jamieson.
- Tymly, *adj.* early (lit. timely), D. 43.
- Tynis, *pr. pl.* lose, destroy, 298.
- Tynsale, *s.* loss, 214. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Tynt, *pp.* lost, 106, 306. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- Tyss, *v.* to entice, 251. *Tice* for entice is still common.
- Vallowit, *pp.* withered, faded, 132. Cf. Du. *welken*, to wither, fade.
- Vantoune, *adj.* wanton, 159.
- Vanvit, *s.* want of wit, folly, 150. The prefix *wan-* signifies 'lack of.'
- Variabill, variable, 69.

- Vaverand, *pres. pl.* going idly about, 148. See note to the line, p. 614.
- Vaveryng, *s.* idling about, 149. See above.
- Velth, *s.* wealth, 150; weal, good, D. 73.
- Vengabill, *adj.* revengeful, D. 18.
- Verkday, workday, 124; *pl.* Verkdayis, 123.
- Veschyn, *pp.* washen, 123.
- Vikit, *adj.* wicked, 228.
- Vikkidnass, *s.* wickedness, 306.
- Vilsumnas, *s.* wilfulness, 149.
- Viss, *adj.* wise, 250.
- Vit, *s.* wisdom, 248.
- Vit, *s.* blame, 269, 294. M. E. *wyte*, blame.
- Vnlauta, *s.* disloyalty, unfaithfulness, 200.
- Vorschip, *s.* due regard; *kep vorschip*, pay due regard, 24.
- Voyd, *imp. s.* avoid, D. 54.
- Vrechit, *adj.* miserable, 287.
- Vrechtnes, *s.* misery, 291.
- Wantonly, wantonly, 189.
- Wantownas, wantonness, 150.
- War nocth fors, lit. were not force, i. e. unless force were used, 233.
- Wary, *pr. pl.* curse, 304. A S. *wyrgian*, to curse.
- Wik, *adj.* wicked, 237. A.S. *wicca*, a wizard; *wicce*, a witch; Mid. Eng. *wikke*, wicked.
- Wise[t], *imp. s.* visit, D. 45. The Southern form is *visite*; the Northern is *vesie*, without the *t*; see note, p. 615.
- With, *prep.* against; *be war with*, beware of, D. 50.
- Withgang, *v. lit.* to go with; *withgang wantonly*, go with (them) in a wanton way, have commerce with (them), 189. Mr Lumby explains it by "tolerate;" but surely it means very much more than that.
- Wittyn, *pp.* known; *had I wittyn*, if I had but known, 101. This exclamation, in the form *had I wist*, is common in Middle English.
- Wycis, *s. pl.* vices, 228.
- Ydilnas, *s.* idleness, 158.
- Ythandly, *adv.* assiduously, 136. See Gloss. to Bruce.
- ȝarnys, *pr. s.* yearns after, longs for, 222. See note.
- ȝing, *adj.* young, 244.
- ȝouthage, *s.* youth, time of youth, 257.
- ȝouthede, lit. youth-hood, i. e. youth, 98, 99.

## INDEX VII.

### NOTES ON JAMIESON'S DICTIONARY.

---

IN the course of writing the preceding Notes and Glossarial Index to the "Bruce," I have, of course, constantly consulted Jamieson's admirable 'Dictionary of the Scottish Language.' In general, I have found it sufficient to consult the excellent abridgment by John Johnston, as revised and enlarged by Dr. Longmuir, published at Edinburgh in 1867; but in cases of special difficulty I have of course also consulted the unabridged work. The edition I have used is the second, printed in 1840, with the Supplement dated 1825.

Whilst thus engaged I have observed a few errors in the explanations or etymologies of words occurring in the "Bruce," and I proceed to make a note of these below, partly for the reader's convenience, and partly because some account of them may interest those students to whom Jamieson's work is well known. It is superfluous to add my testimony to the value of so standard a work; and it will, I trust, be understood that I venture to write these notes merely for the student's use and information, and out of respect for Dr. Jamieson's memory. They are not written out of any captious spirit, but because honest criticism is a token of reverence.

In the words commented upon, I follow the alphabetical order.

Wherever references seemed to be lacking, they are given in my Glossarial Index, which should be compared with the present list.

**ALLRYN.** There is no such word; it is a misprint for *alkyn*.

**APAYN.** J. has—"Apayn, *adv.* 1. reluctantly, unwillingly; sometimes distinctly *a payn*." (Barbour quoted, ix. 87—90); after which—"i.e. they will fly, however reluctantly, because all men eagerly desire life. The play upon the word *fley* gives an obscurity to the passage."

There is no play upon the word *fley* (*fle* in MS. C.). It means "flee" throughout.

Again, J. has—"Apayn, *pp.* provided, furnished." He then quotes Barbour, ix. 60—66, and gives a wild etymology from F. *appancr*, to give a younger son his portion.

The word in both passages, which occur close together, is one and the same word; and the *latter* explanation is out of the question, the etymology being not to the purpose. The *former* one is not far wrong, but requires slight modification. See this discussed in the note to ix. 64, pp. 573, 574.

**ARSOUN.** J. has—"Arsoun, *s.* buttocks ;" with a reference to xvi. 131. I have corrected this in the Glossary, at p. 645. Jamieson was strangely misled by the sound of the former part of the word.

**ASSOUERIT.** Omitted in the Dictionary; the word only occurs in the Cambridge MS., which was then unknown. See Glossary, p. 646.

**BELEIF.** J. quotes from Bk. xiii. 544 to illustrate—"Beleif, Belwe, *a. v.* to deliver up ;" prefacing the quotation with the remark—"It is also used as a verb neuter with the preposition *of*." He explains the line by—"i. e. gave up the castle of Stirling into the king's hands." It means nothing approaching to this, which has already been said in l. 541; but it means—"that he remained amongst the king's household," i. e. that he entered into the king's service. The reading *become* of the Camb. MS. is much plainer, and shews the sense. The etymology is not from "A.S. *belewan*, tradere," but from A.S. *belyan*, to remain. The verb to *belue*, or *bileue*, in the sense of 'remain,' is not uncommon, and occurs in Chaucer's Squieres Tale, Group F, l. 583. And this enables us to correct the following entry in the Dictionary.

"**BELENE, v. s. [sic]** to tarry, or perhaps, to recline, to rest.

— Schir Gawayn, gayest of all,  
Belenes with Dame Gaynour in greues so grene.

*Sir Gawan and Sir Gal.* i. 6.

A.S. *bilened*, inhabited; *vide* Leind. Or allied to Germ *le[h]nen*, *recumbere*."

Nearly the whole of this is wrong, including both etymologies. The right reading is, of course, *beleues*, and the article should be corrected as follows.

"**BELEUE, v. n.** to tarry, to remain, linger. Cf. A.S. *belifan*, to remain behind; also G. *bleiben*."

The necessity for this correction is really proved by the remarks upon this word in the Supplement, where we are told that, in another MS., "the reading is *by leuys*, which obscures the sense." Instead of "obscuring the sense," it is quite right. *By-leuys* is a correct reading, the prefix being written (as usual in MSS.) apart from the verb to which it belongs.

**BETANE.** J. quotes from Bk. iii. 159, with the remark that "the sense of this word is very doubtful. It cannot mean *beaten*, or *taken*, for neither of these was the case. Perhaps it may refer to the narrow place in which Bruce was *enclosed*. A.S. *betynan*, to enclose, to shut up."

I need not say that no ingenuity can grammatically twist *betane*

out of the A.S. *betylnan*. I believe the sense to be "pursued;" see Glossary, p. 650.

BOYIS. J. is in some doubt about this word; the solution "setters," which he offers, is perfectly right. He is also in doubt about the etymology, and suggests, "Teut. *boeye*, compes, pedica, vincula pedis, pl. *boeyen*; *bocyen*, compedire; Kilian." Here again, he has got hold of the right word, but should rather have quoted the French *buie*, a fetter, Lat. *boia*. Our *bwoy*, so called because chained down to one place, is really the same word as Barbour's *boy*.

BREDIS. See my Glossary, p. 652. I can find nothing like it in Jamieson's Dictionary, though it occurs in his edition of Barbour.

BROWDYN. Rightly explained to mean "embroidered." But, of the three etymologies suggested, all are wrong. The verb is a *strong* one, as shewn by the ending *-yn* of the past participle; and it is, accordingly, from the A.S. *bregdan*, to braid; pp. *brogden*.

CHAR. It is needless to repeat what Jamieson says about this word, with reference to Bruce, viii. 257. The whole is wrong, etymologies included, for the right reading is *ihar*; the reading *char* being a pure invention of Pinkerton's, who misled Jamieson in this passage. It is odd that, when the word recurs at l. 300 of Book xii., it is Pinkerton, not Jamieson, who has the right reading.

CLEUE AND LAW. J. quotes Barbour, x. 471. The whole is a misconception. The right reading is *clene*; see note to Book x. 471, pp. 578, 579.

CONABILL. J. remarks that "it is certainly formed from Lat. *conor*, *conabilis*, q. what may be attempted with any prospect of success." Where he found this Latin adjective with so remarkable a meaning he does not tell us. See this set right in my Glossary.

ENCHAUSYT. In Book ii. 395 (called Book ii. 201 in Jamieson's edition) the word *enchausyt* occurs. In the brief Glossary printed at the end of "Wallace" is the entry—"Enchausyt, pursued." Probably Jamieson found out that this was wrong, as he omits all reference to it in his Dictionary. The right reading is *enchaufyt*, i. e. chafed, made angry.

ENDFUNDEYNG. See Bruce, xx. 75. J. spells the word with an inserted *d* after the first *n*, but rightly says that the *d* is not in the MS., which reads *enfundeyng*. His connection of the word with "Su. G. *and-faadd*, cui spiritus praelusus est, ut solet asthmaticis" is very desperate. It is not likely to gain credit, nor can it be built upon for shewing that the *d* is a part of the word. See *Fundying* in my Glossary; also *Mortfundying* in Jamieson.

ENKERLY. J. explains this by—"1. Inwardly," with reference to Bruce, ii. 138, and by "2. Ard ntly, keenly," with reference to x. 534. He accepts Ruddiman's etymology from the F. *en cœur*, in the heart!

The word is little more than an expletive, and is certainly not French. See my Glossary.

FAYNDING. Referring to Bruce, iii. 289, J. says—"This cannot signify trial, endeavour. . . . Can it mean defection, flinching, or turning aside, A.S. *fundung*, *decessus*, *recessus*? Or perhaps shifting, guile, Su. G. *fund*, Belg. *vond*, *dolus*, *technæ*?" This is but all-round guessing, and by no means satisfactory. Literally, it means 'a tempting of Providence,' from the A.S. *fandian*, to tempt. And this sense suits the context very well. See quotation in my Glossary.

FAYNTICE (printed *Faintice* in the Dictionary). This J. interprets by "dissembling, hypocrisy;" and refers to Bruce, iii. 288. The meaning is very different, viz. faintness, cowardice, failing of spirit, a feeling akin to swooning. This is clear from the passage in Piers Plowman to which I have referred in my Glossary.

FORBEFT. See my Glossary; the better sense is "utterly baffled," or "forced to retreat."

FORDID. See *Fordid* in my Glossary, and see *Sordid* below.

FRONTLY. See *Frontly* in my Glossary, and see *Stoutlynys* below.

FUNDYNG. See *Fundyng* in my Glossary, and see *Eudfundeyng* above.

GYRD (spelt *Gird* in the Dictionary). Jamieson enters "*Gird*, v. a." correctly; next he enters "*Gird*, v. n." with a reference to Bruce, ii. 417, and with the explanation "to move with expedition and force." It means rather "striking about him," or "striking right and left." See the explanations given in Jamieson under the verb active.

LEFFYT. See *Leftyt* in my Glossary; misprinted *Lessyt* in Jamieson's edition, and omitted in the Dictionary.

LOMPNYT. The unsatisfactory speculations concerning this word may be disregarded. The better reading is *lownyt*, as in the Cambridge MS.

LOVERY, LUFRAY. (See *Lufre* in my Glossary.) These words have no connection with *love*, as Jamieson imagines. Nor do they quite mean "bounty," which does not suit the former passage quoted from Dunbar. The word *lovery* is due to a scribal error for *leverè*, i. e. livery, delivery, allowance; and when the scribe had once made this mistake, he proceeded to alter the word still further into the form *lufray*. The etymology is from the F. *livrer*, to deliver.

MOWENCE. The word means 'mutation,' from O. F. *muance*, mutation, change. Jamieson's explanations of 'motion,' or 'dependance' are wrong, together with the etymology from F. "mourance, motion." He does not tell us where he found this unusual French form, which should rather be *motion*. *Muance* is given in Burguy, s. v. *muer*.

NOTHIR. A misprint for *noy* in Jamieson's edition, vi. 666. *Noy* is rightly explained in the Dictionary.

PANTENER. So in the Dictionary. Read *pautener*. The explanation, however, is quite right.

PUNDELAYN. This cannot be *pantaloons*.

QUHYTYSS. The word is wrong, with all the explanations; read *quyntis*, which see in my Glossary.

REUK. Read *renk*; see my note on the line, ii. 365; p. 553.

SARIOLLY. The Edinb. MS. has *sariely*, v. 5; as J. notes. The reading "meraly" in C. is much better. See *Sarryal* in my Glossary. Perhaps in v. 5 the sense may rather be 'in full chorus,' lit. thickly, closely, serriedly; that is, if the reading in E. is to be explained at all. See the other passages referred to.

SKOWURAND. There should be no such entry; read *skownrand*, i. e. *scunnering*, the frequentative form of *shunning*. The word is rightly printed in the edition, but wrong in the Dictionary.

SLALK. So printed in Wallace, v. 661, and in the Dictionary. But it should have been printed *slakk*, and it means 'to slacken.' See this explained in my Glossary, s. v. *Valk*.

SORDID. A misprint for *fordid*. Jamieson himself prints *fordid* in another passage. See *Sordid, Fordid* in my Glossary.

STOUTLYNYS. A strange misreading; it is not in the Edinb. MS., as asserted. That MS. reads *frontlynys*; and the word *stoutlynys* must be struck out.

SYVEWARM, SYVEVARIN. Must be struck out. Read *fyswarin*, i. e. *Fitzwarren*!

TAILE. This awkward word (xviii. 238) is best got rid of. The reading *thought all hale*, found in MS. C. as well as in the editions, is much the best.

THURCH. Must be struck out, there being no such word. The Edinb. MS. may be read *thurth*, an obvious error for *thurt*, which see in my Glossary.

TORN BUT. Cannot mean "turn about;" see note to ii. 437, p. 554.

TYRE. Must be struck out. The reading in E. is *cyre*, i. e. leather; F. *cuir*. See note to xii. 22; p. 582.

VRE. Jamieson does not give the right derivation of O.F. *eur*. It is neither from Lat. *hora* nor from Icel. *urd*, but from Lat. *augurium*.

WANDYS. Explained by "v. n. to feel the impression of fear." And J. connects it with A.S. *wandian*, to fear. The word is French, as shewn by the ending -st of the past tense; it means 'to retreat;' and it is connected with O.H.G. *wentjan*, cognate with E. *wend*.

WANE. One explanation given is "s. mauner, fashion," with references to xvi. 454, and xvii. 249. It means nothing of the kind, but is the same as the word *wayn*, which J. correctly explains by

“plenty, or abundance.” In the first passage, the sense is—“in so great abundance,” i. e. so plentifully. In the second, “in very great abundance.” The word occurs in the older version of Chevy Chase, l. 74. See *Will* below.

WARISON. The explanation is not very satisfactory. See the word in my Glossary.

WILL. Under this word, J. has “*will of wane*, at a loss for a habitation.” It means something different, viz. at a loss for an opinion, i. e. not knowing what to do. J. himself rightly explains *wane* to mean “opinion” in Wallace, x. 20. *Wane* is here the A.S. *wén*, opinion, lit. a weening; it is not the same as the *Wane* at the foot of the last page.

YAR. Not in the Dictionary, and rightly omitted. It is a misprint for *thar*.

## ERRATA AND ADDENDA.

---

P. 51, l. 86. For "Dauklyne" read "Danklyne;" see note on p. 612.

P. 132. The eight lines following l. 84 should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They are not in the Edinburgh MS.

P. 138, footnote to l. 268. For "*Cf. l. 378*" read "*Cf. l. 178.*"

P. 178, fourth side-note. Transpose the words "north" and "south."

P. 190, l. 351. Insert a hyphen in "to-ga." Compare the other five passages in which the word occurs, the references to which will be found in the Glossary, s. v. *To-ga*.

P. 216, l. 522. Perhaps the reading *butill* of the Cambridge MS. is right after all. See note to the line, p. 576.

P. 238, l. 324. Add a semi-colon or a full stop at the end of the line.

P. 240, footnote to l. 361. For "Irne C." read "Irne E."

P. 271, l. 361. Delete the full stop at the end of the line.

P. 296, l. 360. For "rown and" read "rownand," i. e. whispering. See note to the line, p. 583.

P. 307, l. 46. Add a full stop at the end of the line.

P. 386. The two lines following l. 196 should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They occur only in Hart's edition.

P. 398. The four lines following l. 500 should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They are not in the Edinburgh MS.

P. 399. The sidenotes are wrong. Read—"The third was in Eskdale, when Sir John de Soulis with 50 men opposed Sir Andrew Harcla and 300 men, and defeated them."

P. 408, footnote to l. 73. Insert "&" after "Barvike."

P. 440. Lines 903\*, 904\*, 905\*, 906\* should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They occur only in the printed editions.

P. 462. Line 537\* should have been marked with an asterisk at the beginning.

P. 463, second sidenote. For "Beauvoir" read "Beverley."

P. 579, note to l. 516. Strike out the words "lit. power to avoid." See *Woidre* in the Glossary.

P. 594, note to xv. 39. Part of this note is wrong. Perhaps *barell-feris* may mean "barrel-hoops," but Jamieson's explanation of *barell-ferraris* is correct, and not (as it seemed to me) a mistake. He cites a passage from Wyntown, viii. 38. 53, which clearly proves that *barell-ferraris* were casks for liquids, of which a pair, when full of water, was considered as a good load for a horse. The word also occurs in the alliterative Morte Arthure, ed. Brock, E. E. T. S., l. 2714—"Barelle-ferrers they brochede, and broghte them the wyne." The explanation "*Ferrers*, a kind of wine," in Mr Brock's Glossary, is accordingly incorrect. In Jamieson's Dictionary, look for *Ferraris*, not for *Barell*.

P. 649, s. v. *Barell-feris*; see the remarks above.

P. 670, s. v. *Erin*. Here a letter has "dropped out." For "vyn" read "Evyn."

P. 691, s. v. *Lechis*. The accent over the *a* in the A.S. *lēce* has been omitted here in the printing, and in a few other places; as, for instance, in *lēfan*, s. v. *Leif*; and in the suffix *-rēden*, cited s. v. *Manrent*.

For a few Additional Notes to "The Bruce," see pp. 612, 613.

In a review of Part I. of the present edition of The Bruce which appeared in *The Athenaeum* of Jan. 21, 1871, some excellent suggestions were made which may well be considered here. I take them in due order.

P. 5, l. 112. "Omit *he* before *ne*."—I doubt if this is necessary. The word *he* is required for the sense, though *apparently* making the line too long. I suspect rather that the scansion is to be achieved by reading *ne* as *n'*, or rather *he ne* as *he n'*. A very similar foot to this *he n'myght* occurs in Chancer, in the line beginning *I n' saugh*; Prologue, l. 764.

P. 8, l. 165. "*Wreyth* should be *wreythyt*; see p. 17, l. 425."—This is doubtless right; the form *wreylh* is a false one, only found in MS. E. It recurs, however, in ii. 138. See the Glossary.

P. 10, l. 218. "Insert *war* after *hangyt*."—No; the sense is—"Ah! how cruelly they condemned them! For they hanged by the neck good worthy knights, for little or no reason." The scansion of the line is incomplete as it stands, no doubt; but the probability is, I suspect, that *nekkeban* should be a trisyllable; the second *e* in *nekke* is radical, the A.S. form being *hnecca*. The line is then complete.

P. 13, l. 301. "That seems wanting after *For*."

P. 19, l. 458. "For *erar* *may* read *ar mare* ;" i.e. rather more.—To this suggestion I do not agree. The word *ar*, *air*, *ere* occurs only in the sense of 'formerly,' as will appear by consulting the Glossary; the right word for expressing 'rather' is *erar*, as in the text, in iii. 266, and at p. 526, l. 47. As to *may*, it is the usual spelling in MS. E. for the word which is better spelt *ma* in MS. C. This *ma* or *may* signifies greater in point of *number*, and must obviously be retained in preference to *mare*, which means greater in respect of *size*. The only difficulty in the line is that the latter syllable in *erar* has to be pronounced rapidly in order to suit the scansion, as in iii. 266. The line means: "they (the foes) were on some occasions rather more than less (than a thousand against one)."

P. 20, l. 489. "*The* or *our* is required after *suld*."—Neither is absolutely required; for *lord* (pronounced *lor-d*, with trilled *r*) is almost disyllabic. If a word is, however, to be inserted, rather read: "And *ȝe* tharoff full lord *suld* be." For this reading we have the authority of Wyntown.

P. 27, l. 57. "*Ithandly* (Hart's reading) is certainly right."—This remark I do not understand. If it means that the word is better spelt with *i* than with *y*, so far it is correct. But if it means that *d* is an essential part of the word, this may be doubted. There is no *d* in the original Icel. word *iðinn*, assiduous. It is an excrescent letter, due to the turning of the said word into a form resembling the Northumbrian present participle in *-and*. But it is quite true that *ythandly* is the commonest form in our MSS. of the Bruce; see the Glossary.

P. 33, l. 214. "Hart's reading *fulfile* (or rather *fulfillit*), instead of *full*, would certainly improve the line; compare p. 107, l. 46, 'fulfillit of dispit and pride.' *Fulfilled* in the sense of *filled full* occurs also in Hampole's Pricke of Conscience, p. 15, l. 535."—I have already observed, in the footnote, that ll. 245, 335, are in the like case.

P. 52, l. 120. "*His* should be omitted, as in Hart's edition."

P. 62, ll. 383, 384. "*Lying* and *waking*, as participles, ought to be *lyand* and *wakand*."—But they are clearly *not* participles, but substantives, and are therefore correct as they are. The sense is: "and that he could in no way hazard (lit. dare) the cold lying in the hills, nor the long watch by night."

P. 115, l. 296. "For *manrent* read *manret*, i.e. *manrede*, homage."—Yes; but *manrent*, though a false form, was probably intended; see quotations in Jamieson. Similarly *lufrent* occurs for *lufrede*; see p. 528, l. 90; p. 532, l. 201.

## GENERAL INDEX.

---

\* \* \* For a general Scheme of the numbering of the lines in the various editions, see p. 541. For an explanation of reference-letters, see the first footnote on p. 1.

	PAGE
TEXT OF "THE BRUCE;" BOOKS I—XX	... ... 1
HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER	... ... 523
A DIETARY ... ... ... ...	... ... 537
SCHEME OF EDITIONS OF "THE BRUCE"	... ... 541
NOTES TO "THE BRUCE" ... ...	... ... 543
ADDITIONAL NOTES TO "THE BRUCE"	... ... 612
NOTES TO "How the Good Wife," &c.	... ... 614
NOTES TO "A DIETARY" ... ...	... ... 615
INDEX I.—SUBJECTS EXPLAINED IN THE NOTES	... ... 616
INDEX II.—BOOKS REFERRED TO IN THE NOTES	... ... 625
INDEX III.—RIME-INDEX ... ...	... ... 628
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO "THE BRUCE"	... ... 640
INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN "THE BRUCE"	... ... 755
INDEX VI.—GLOSSARY TO "How the Good Wife," &c.	... ... 768
INDEX VII.—NOTES ON JAMIESON'S DICTIONARY	... ... 776
ERRATA AND ADDENDA ... ...	... ... 782

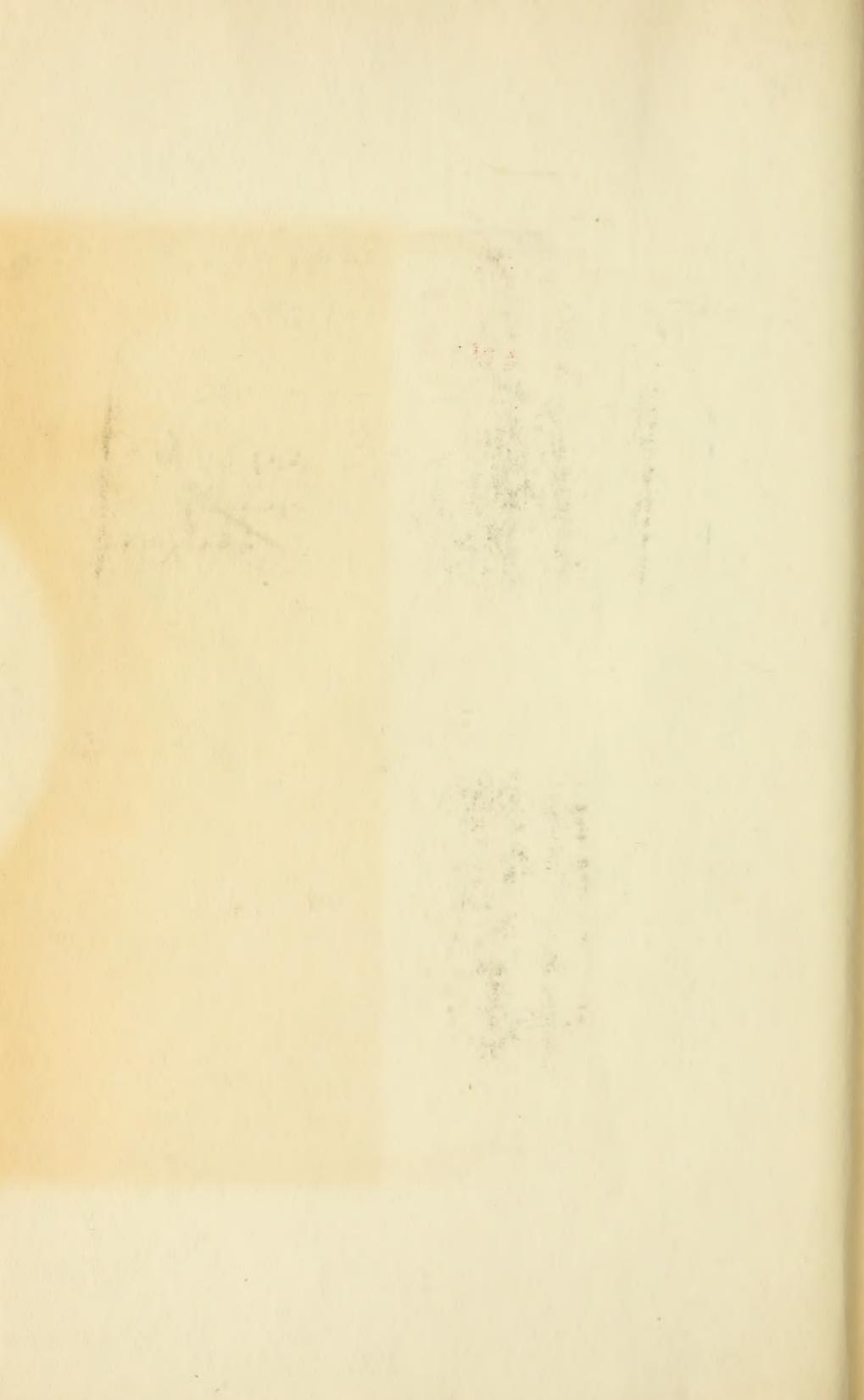
Bungay:

CLAY AND TAYLOR, PRINTERS.









PR                      Early English Text  
1119                  Society  
E5                      [Publications]  
no. 29, 55            Extra series

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

---

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH

